

# PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

## **American Society for Psychical Research**

Section "B" of the American Institute for Scientific Research

---

Volume VI

---

American Society for Psychical Research  
Tribune Building  
New York  
1912

176369

YSA98LJ 0807MAT2

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## PREFACE

1. Origin of the Report. ....	5
2. Mrs. Chenoweth's Relation to the Facts. ....	6
3. Mrs. Smead's Relation to the Facts. ....	13
4. Mode of Making Records. ....	14
5. Future Policy. ....	14

## CHAPTER I.—INTRODUCTION.

1. Nature of the Problem. ....	17
2. Personalities Involved in the Process. ....	20
3. Psychological Method of Communicating. ....	24
4. Relation of this Machinery to Apparitions. ....	30
5. Explanatory Hypotheses. ....	34
6. Relative Merits of Communicators. ....	40
7. Summary of the Facts. ....	44

## CHAPTER II.—DIFFICULTIES OF COMMUNICATING.

1. Dr. Hodgson's Hypothesis. ....	48
2. The Hypothesis of this Report. ....	50
(a) View of the James Personality. ....	51
(b) View of the Hodgson Personality. ....	54
(c) View of the Pelham Personality. ....	60
3. General Nature of the Hypothesis. ....	62
4. Relation of Hypothesis to Telepathy. ....	67
5. Relation of Hypothesis to that of Dr. Hodgson. ....	74
6. Relation of Hypothesis to Various Problems. ....	80

## DETAILED RECORD.

### PART I.

#### First Record with Mrs. Smead.

1. Introduction. ....	93
2. Detailed Record. ....	94

### PART II.

Records of Sitzings with Mrs. Chenoweth. ....	136
---	-----

### PART III.

Records of Second Series with Mrs. Smead. ....	822
Additional. ....	936



## Preface

The death of Professor James of Harvard University gave rise to a wide public interest in his return, this interest basing itself upon the hypothesis or claim that communication with the dead is possible. It was natural to feel this curiosity, partly from the growing public attention to this subject, partly from the knowledge that Professor James had long been interested in it, and partly from his reputation as a psychologist and man. But an intelligent public—intelligent on the problem of psychic research—would not have encouraged such expectations. People who have the slightest claim to intelligence—and those who make this claim are usually our most uncompromising critics—should have known that it is a thousandfold more difficult to secure evidence in the case of a man like Professor James than of some obscure man never heard of by this public. This is the first reflection which should have suggested itself to the public. But as usual it was the last thing for it to note. The nature of the problem is such that we must prove personal identity in connection with indubitably supernormal information. Professor James was so well known all over the world that it would be extremely difficult to escape the suspicion that the incidents suggesting or proving his identity were normally acquired, whether casually or otherwise. Much that might not be questioned, had he been an unknown man, would be doubtful or exposed to possibilities that vitiated its evidential character. The matter that escaped this suspicion might be less plentiful and hence measured against the rejected facts might appear exposed to chance coincidence. Intelligent people, therefore, would have reserved their interest for better evidential situations and have been less clamorous to hear from those whose opportunities of proving their existence were less than the obscure whose every word might tell. The sequel of these experiments tends to prove the contention which I have here made, and I need not more than refer to it.

## Preface.

For the best evidence which this Report presents came from persons whom it was not possible to know or whose life could not have been profitably ascertained if their names had been known. It is a delightful revenge on this public to have it so: for it may some day learn that this is a scientific and not a sensational problem.

Whatever the situation, a few persons subscribed a fund for experiments and the present volume is the outcome of the work. The two psychics used in the experiments are Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth. I do not use their real names. Both have had their work used in our publications before.

In writing this Report I deliberately refused, in cases where contemporary events did not affect the incidents, to inquire into Mrs. Chenoweth's previous knowledge. It was my desire to estimate the evidence without prejudice from any statements made by her about the facts. I preferred to estimate it from the standpoint of known possibilities that did not depend on her testimony. By this I mean that there are facts in the record which the sceptic may have a right to suppose accessible to possible knowledge of the medium and that their character as evidence must be weighed in the light of such circumstances. Consequently I wrote my notes to the record without asking whether Mrs. Chenoweth knew certain things or not, save the instances that involve contemporary events which might be forgotten. This enabled me to state what seemed to me to be the *a priori* possibilities or probabilities regarding certain incidents as I knew them. In this way I thought that many incidents might have been known or conjectured from the general public knowledge of the persons concerned. Thus I supposed that much might have been known of Professor James, Mr. Wright, Mr. Podmore and George Pelham, or even my father, simply from the fact that so much was known generally about them either because of their reputation or because of publications about them. I thus made allowance for many an incident where I knew that the facts made the information accessible. I so stated the situation in my notes, reckoning with possibilities from the standpoint of my own knowledge and so minimizing the importance of incidents thus exposed

to casual or other information. Inquiry afterward of Mrs. Chenoweth shows that I had wholly overestimated the liabilities of previous information, accepting her statements as to her knowledge, and I hardly need say that I accept them implicitly, having only to make allowance for limitations of memory. Her answers to inquiries show that I had supposed many things possible that were not true, or even possible under the circumstances. I have not found a single instance in which my conjectures as to the possibilities or probabilities were correct where they affected the evidence unfavorably. I found in all cases that she did not, or could not, know the facts where I supposed it possible that she did know them. The consequence is that the evidence is really much stronger than I represented it in many cases where I had discounted or disqualified it. Nevertheless I have left notes standing as testimony to the care with which they were made and readers may compare the facts with Mrs. Chenoweth's statements of her actual knowledge. I have appended her statements to the notes and put them in square brackets.

Mrs. Chenoweth's replies to my inquiries in a few cases surprised me, as I had supposed her casual knowledge to have been far greater than it really was, and readers who read her statements carefully will find internal evidence that they are truthful. Her ignorance about Professor James and Mr. Podmore astonished me. She did not know that Mr. Podmore was a member of the Society. I was not at all surprised that she knew nothing about Mr. Carroll D. Wright. He had never crossed her path in the subject of psychic research and I knew her life and employments enough to see that she could have had no reason for knowing anything about him unless she were interested in the social and economic problems that absorbed his life, and she was not interested in them save, perhaps, in the most general way and apart from personalities. The fact that he was president of an institution not more than thirty miles from Boston only slightly affected the matter. But Professor James and Mr. Podmore were so well known to psychic researchers, and the former the pet of the public on this and many problems, that I had

supposed even casual circumstances would bring her more information than she actually had about them. If you will assume that the minds of mediums are especially liable to errors of memory or normal amnesia you may account for her limited knowledge of them, but hardly otherwise.

To the Philistine her ignorance will appear incredible and while it astonished me it was not incredible, as I knew her life well enough to understand it perfectly. When she was connected with a publication in the interest of spiritualism she says her department so occupied her that she did not even read the rest of the paper, and now her work absorbs so much of her time that I can well understand the limited opportunities for getting knowledge of others that does not come casually through the papers and common gossip. I had supposed that more of this knowledge than is the fact would have come to her in this manner, as it came so to the rest of us, tho our opportunities and interests were more closely related to the facts that constituted this information. One would have supposed that the wide reputation of Mr. Podmore as a sceptic in this subject would have offered her more opportunities for casual information, but those of us who have formed our ideas of the subject from scientific connections can easily mistake that situation for people who do not care a penny for the scientific side of it, and Mrs. Chenoweth never even saw the scientific side of it until I began my work with her. In fact she rather resented it and looked at her work as a personal mission for the help of those in sorrow. Moreover she, like most Spiritualists, cared so little for the problem of converting the sceptic as to ignore, or even treat with contempt, such efforts as had engaged Mr. Podmore. The Societies are apt to suppose that they are the center of everybody's interest, when the fact may be that they are not known at all by large classes of men and women. It is certainly no compliment to Mr. Podmore or the leading members of the Society to be so little known as they seem to have been to Mrs. Chenoweth, tho I am not sure that they have not earned just that indifference or contempt. Intellectual jugglery (*Spitzfindigkeiten*), without insight into facts, never goes very far

in moving men's minds, and unless you have a respect for such questions you are not likely to know much about the people that engage in them. Such was the position of Mr. Podmore and most members of the Society with most persons in the situation of Mrs. Chenoweth and hence even casual knowledge would not make an impression when it came and it would rarely come to persons occupied with employments that did not require, or were not thought to require, the corrective influence of criticism or scepticism. The work of the Society appeals only to the intellectual group that recognizes the need of critical methods and we may as well admit that it is likely to be wholly unknown to people who cannot or will not wait for the slow methods of science. In this way it becomes credible enough that Mrs. Chenoweth should know so little of Mr. Podmore and other personalities involved in this Report. The same can be said of Mrs. Smead and it would be truer still of her, but for the fact that some of the Society's records are in Mr. Smead's house.

I have given in a note Mrs. Chenoweth's statement of her knowledge of Professor James (p. 162), and the reader will see how meager that was. He may estimate the whole result of his purported messages by that statement. I come now to her statements regarding other personalities.

I asked her to tell me all that she knew about Mr. Podmore before his death, and especially what she knew of his position regarding spirits, telepathy, etc. The reply was: "Absolutely nothing." This so surprised me that I sought for more detailed statements and asked the following questions.

1. Do you know whether Mr. Podmore wrote any other book than "The Newer Spiritualism"?

2. Do you know what attitude of mind he took on the subject of spirits during his life? Was it for or against, as a believer or doubter?

3. What do you know about his attitude toward telepathy?

4. What do you know about his relations to the English Society?

5. What do you know about the general relation of the man and his veivs to Dr. Hodgson and his views?

Mrs. Chenoweth's reply to these questions was as follows, without singling out each query for separate answer.

"I know absolutely nothing about these things and my answer to each question is negative. I *never* have known about Mr. Podmore in the past and about these particular questions I know nothing even now."

One indication of her ignorance of him is indicated in the account of her experience after his death and which Miss Whiting thought pointed to him. She seems to have asked who Mr. Podmore was! Cf. p. 145.

Asked what she knew about Dr. Hodgson's Report on Mrs. Piper her reply was "Nothing." The same answer came to the query about Mr. Dorr, who had had Mrs. Piper in charge after Dr. Hodgson's death.

In regard to G. P. or George Pelham, I asked what she knew before I experimented with her and whether she knew anything about his writings. The reply to both queries was as follows, which indicates all she knew of him.

"Some years ago, before Dr. Hodgson passed to spirit life, a spirit giving the name of George Pelham wrote through my hand for Prof. Van Vleck of Boston University. The message was about some work done at another place through Mrs. Piper and Prof. Van Vleck carried it to Dr. Hodgson who seemed much interested in it.

"I knew nothing of him [George Pelham] or his life or work or writings until one evening last winter when you were present with me at Miss Whiting's room and Miss J—— spoke of him by another name and from which I inferred that Pelham was an assumed one."

Of my first Report on the Piper case she says she knows nothing, and the second one I know she has never heard of. She states that she knew nothing about the effort of Dr. Hodgson, since his death, to give the contents of a posthumous letter. About Mrs. Verrall she says: "I know she is a psychic and that the English Society has had experiments with her, or rather I think I know this from references in publications to her work." She states also that she does

not know any other psychics in connection with the English Society.

In regard to the question whether she ever knew that the controls in the Piper case had limited or restricted Dr. Hodgson's diet she says: she never knew anything about it.

In regard to Professor James and his work I asked if she "had any idea or opinion about the extent to which he was connected with psychics and did she think he was very much employed and active in the work." The following is her reply to the same.

"I certainly did think that he was active in the work. As far as that goes I think so now and I suppose he visited many psychics. I have heard several say that he had visited them."

This statement is contrary to those of the automatic writing.

Of the inquiry about Mr. Myers and what she knew of him, and especially of any relation he might have had to Italy, she says:—

"I think that he was intensely interested in psychic matters and that he wrote on the subject. I do not know where he lived or if he spent time in Italy or any other place."

I asked if she knew anything about Dr. Hodgson's theory that the spirit was in a dream-like state when communicating and the following was the reply.

"No. I remember reading in some secular paper that in the first communication which he gave, he said something about feeling the delight of freedom and floating up into a clear atmosphere, but I do not recall that there was any mention made of a dreaming state."

This statement certainly shows ignorance enough of his theory. The incident to which she refers was published in the *Journal* of the American Society which she may have seen, as one copy containing some of his messages was sent to her, owing to her part in one cross reference. Cf. *Journal* Am. S. P. R. Vol. I p. 186. The incident was referred to in the newspapers, but it had no relation to his theory of communicating. It was also published in the *Proceedings*

(Am. S. P. R. Vol. IV pp. 620-621), which Mrs. Chenoweth has not seen.

Of President Harper of Chicago University she says that she knew only that there was such a person.

In reply to inquiries about her knowledge of Mrs. Smead she says: "I think she is the wife of an English clergyman with whom you have had experiments and I think she lives in a small village because I have heard you say that she did not get the large daily newspapers until some time after publication, but I do not know where that village is." Mrs. Smead is not the wife of an English clergyman.

Asked about what she knew of the English Society and its policy she replied: "Nothing."

The average reader should be able to note that the ignorance here is great enough to give added interest to the incidents of this record wherever the proper personalities are concerned. Mrs. Chenoweth's belief, for instance, about Professor James's habits regarding mediums is not correct and the same about his father being a Swedenborgian clergyman. Her ignorance of Mr. Podmore adds greatly to the interest of her communications purporting to come from him. It may not prove them veridical or specially significant of his identity, but it does show that they are not due to previous knowledge. It suggests that their defects are due to imperfections in the communications, whether caused by the condition and limitations of the communicator or by the distortions of the medium's mind as they passed through it, possibly both. In any case we have a wholly different problem to understand their nature when we have to recognize that previous knowledge was too limited to account for their form or contents, and especially when that "knowledge" or belief is directly contrary to the facts, or when something comes that is contrary to those normal beliefs. But readers will easily perceive that I have not exaggerated the nature of the evidence in this record and that I have conceded possibilities of leakage, from the point of view of my knowledge, which are contrary to facts, when we accept the statements of Mrs. Chenoweth. My notes, therefore, make the incidents in many cases much less strong than

they really are. They are left, however, as written to indicate that I have fully recognized the rights of critical methods and the possibilities of leakage so far as mere opportunity is concerned, and Mrs. Chenoweth's statements only show that casual information is not so easy or so frequent as we should naturally suppose, tho at times surprising us. In this case the surprise is that it should not be greater.

Mrs. Smead is the wife of an orthodox clergyman and receives no remuneration for her services. A history of her work appears in an earlier *Proceedings* (Vol. I, pp. 525-722). Mrs. Chenoweth, at first, had to institute a small charge to keep people away. Later her circumstances required it for her living as well as a mode of natural selection of sitters. The charge for these sittings was a modest one, only one-fourth of what was paid to Mrs. Piper. She desired not to make any charges at all and would have gladly given her services free, but it has been impossible. But the character of her work in no way depends upon her supposed honesty in this matter. I took no risks in the case. I had applied the proper tests for determining whether she could give supernormal information. I took or sent absolute strangers to her and had verbatim records made of the results. Besides I had her under the observation of two persons who could act as detectives, and the results were entirely favorable to her entire honesty and exemption from suspicion in the matter of acquiring information. In the case of strangers as sitters this was not possible, and hence I came to the present set of experiments with a psychic well tested for the work, and I may add from my several years' close acquaintance with her, that I found her a person with high ideals of the work. She regards her life as a mission in the cause of truth and has made many sacrifices for it. There is no reason to entertain the least suspicion of her motives or her work from the standpoint of fraud. She herself is well aware that she will be adjudged from that point of view and has no objections to it as a situation which has to be borne from the past history of this subject. The uselessness of any illegitimate means of getting information was demonstrated by my New York experiments with her,

and this is sustained by the fact that, where she has known the communicators, or had abundant opportunities for acquiring knowledge of them, she has been less successful in giving good evidence than where they were absolutely unknown and where it was impossible to obtain the information, if it had been desired.

In the present volume I held my own experiments, made my own records and locked them up without telling a single person about the contents until I had finished them, with the exception of some incidents about my father which I told my family in order to ascertain whether they were true or not and two or three incidents about him to a friend interested in the work. But most of the incidents from him and all those from the other communicators were kept secret and locked up. Both psychics were in a trance, tested for anæsthesia and amnesia, so that they knew, in the normal state, nothing of what had transpired in the trance. The value of the results depends on the protection which past methods of testing the psychics give and the assurance that supernormal information was obtained with them. All that I need claim for the contents of the present volume is that they are excellent evidence to me of the supernormal, and if readers are not disposed to accept this judgment they must do their own experimenting. It is not my business to convert any one to my views. I am simply experimenting and recording the facts, be they good or bad, vulnerable or invulnerable. The sceptic must convince himself if this work does not do it.

For the present writer it is the belief that the time has arrived for making a step forward. He believes that the evidence for personal identity is sufficient to convince intelligent men and that it is time to attack some of the more complicated and perplexing problems in this subject. Hitherto we have been obliged to make concessions to that self-constituted class of authorities which makes entirely false methods of experiment the standard of proof. We have before us a very delicate psychological problem and the average Philistine is no more qualified to carry on experiments than a child. We have deferred to his judgment

until it has been well nigh impossible to get intelligent study of the facts, and now it is time to ignore that class and make progress. There is a large class of people who spoil their own experiments and will never be convinced by those of others. They will yield only when the majority is on the other side and when they can no longer dispense ridicule with impunity. This class condemned evolution and all scientific discoveries that ran counter to their omniscient and sceptical prejudices, if I may combine these conceptions to describe their mental and other conduct. We shall never get anywhere if we defer wholly to that class. All that is needed to make ourselves independent of their authority is an endowment that insures work through the long future, but if endowment is to wait for the conversion of that class it will never come. Individual "tests" are not the best method of pursuing our investigations. Whatever theory we have must show a psychological unity which no "test" will illustrate or contain in the larger sense. We have problems in this question which go far beyond the matter of personal identity, and while we are experimenting for this we cannot ignore the others. The average Philistine's attack on the isolated incident gets nowhere but to obscure the real issue, while the quantity of supernormal phenomena on record is sufficient to justify going on without him. The time was when it was necessary to concede something to him for the sake of peace. But that time is past. The main territory has been won and it is now our duty to organize it into a civilized government and not any longer to cower before those who never construct but always destroy. Consequently, wherever the opportunity in the future offers, the present inquirer wishes to proceed with his work along lines which it is more profitable to investigate than it is to be perpetually trying to convert the people who are governed only by respectability in their attitudes toward the subject or by a "resolute incredulity" which is no better than "resolute credulity." Evolution had the same enemies to meet and won more by attacking them than it did by accepting their authority. It must be the same in this problem.

This Report will consist of two main parts, the Summary and discussion of its contents, and the Appendix. The Appendix consists of the detailed records and these are put in their chronological order. This necessitates the division of Mrs. Smead's work into two parts, an earlier and a later, with that of Mrs. Chenoweth between. I have not been able to give a Summary of the facts as I should desire, owing to the lack of space in so elaborate a Report. Another reason is of some importance. The communications of my father are so good and so clear in most cases that it is almost impossible to summarize them without repeating the whole record of them with the notes, and that would be an unnecessary expense. The reader will find the detailed record clear enough and by far the better account of them. The Summary of the facts will appear in the *Journal*.

PROCEEDINGS  
OF THE  
AMERICAN SOCIETY  
FOR  
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

---

---

A RECORD OF EXPERIMENTS.

CHAPTER I.

Introduction.

The problem which we have to consider in phenomena of this kind has been sufficiently explained in previous reports to merely outline it here. It is the question whether spirits exist and are the source of the supernormal information which such phenomena illustrate. The popular conception of the problem is based solely upon the idea that spirits may be invoked whenever we get any fact that we cannot explain. It feeds on the idea of miracles, exceptions to the known physical causes. It suffices with this type of mind to regard a thing as "wonderful" to make it believe in spirits. Owing to various influences in the history of the problem and the uses to which certain writers have put the theory of telepathy the solution of the question was thrown upon physical phenomena as the final escape from telepathy and various "natural" explanations. The psychological aspect of the case was disregarded or misunderstood, and the physical side made the crucial question. This has been an entirely false conception of the problem, tho quite intelligible to one who understands the development of it. To the average layman all mental phenomena whatsoever, normal, abnormal and supernormal, are equally mysterious or intelligible. To him clairvoyance and telepathy are no more mysterious than memory or sensation, and when some fact which would puzzle a psychologist is produced, the layman thinks he has only to shout telepathy or some such term and

he has solved the whole problem. He thinks he has taken all the mystery out of the fact. But he knows that telekinesis or the movement of physical objects without contact is an undoubted exception to his experience and to suppose "natural" causes seems preposterous to him in this situation, and hence his resort to it for proof of the "supernatural" or the existence of spirits. But in this he is subject to as much illusion as when explaining supernormal mental phenomena by telepathy and its congeners. Until he condescends to think more clearly he must be disregarded by all who are scientific in method and conception of the problem. The question of the existence of spirits is one of psychology and not of physics, and any attempt to solve it through physical methods is doomed to failure. We may approach the problem through physical science and its results, but in the last analysis we must recognize that spirit implies consciousness and only psychological methods will establish the existence of that phenomenon.

Materialism holds that consciousness is a function of the brain or physical organism. This phenomenon is treated exactly as other functions of the body. Digestion, circulation, secretion, assimilation, etc., are all regarded as activities or functions of the body by physiology and psychology and these they undoubtedly are, and they as undoubtedly vanish with the dissolution of the organism. They are the resultants of composition just as all the properties of compounds are which vanish with the breaking up of the compound into its elementary constituents. If consciousness, therefore, be a similar function of the body it must meet the same fate as its allied manifestations. It must perish with the body and there would be no basis for the belief in its survival. But if we have evidence that supernormal information can be obtained without the ordinary use of the channels of sense we raise the fundamental issue whether materialism is an adequate explanation of the facts. To prove the survival of individual consciousness in such cases we must not only prove intelligence independent of the normal experience of the subject in and through which it is manifested, but we must prove that it is a particular intelligence that we once

knew. This means that personal identity is the fundamental problem for the psychic researcher who believes or wishes to believe in survival after death. It is, therefore, not inexplicable facts that are wanted; it is not physical miracles that will solve it; it is not mere intelligence other than the usual one known, but it must be a group of facts which illustrate the personal identity of a specific person once known. We can conceive that a soul might survive with a changed personality after the manner of those cases of alternating personality where the past is wholly forgotten. But what is desired and needful in the solution of the problem is the belief that personal memory survives and to establish this more than general intelligence must be proved. A particular and known intelligence must be proved by facts illustrative of its memory of the earthly past, a demand which we express in the terms personal identity, a stream of consciousness which manifests a memory of its past.

At this point a good deal of confusion often arises. Most people ask what a spirit is and want as evidence some sense idea of its nature. They think, or seem to think, that in some extraordinary way a spirit should be seen or touched, and as a consequence resort to a method of proving it which is wholly unnecessary and perhaps false, certainly false in many of its forms and tends to foster an entirely false conception both of spirit and the problem of proving its existence. To the psychologist spirit is a supersensible fact, not visible or tangible, and this is as true of its present embodiment, assuming that it exists, as it can be conceived to be independently of that embodiment. Consciousness is a wholly supersensible phenomenon now and may be doubly so when freed from its bodily alliances. All that the psychologist and philosopher require is evidence that the same stream of consciousness that he once knew by inference from bodily activities survives with its memories, and he will not trouble himself with the question whether it can primarily be seen or felt. He will even be doubly sceptical of all claims to such possibilities, as it has never been spirit that to him was sensible. Hence whatever the facts are, the primary issue for him is whether the identical

consciousness survives, not whether he can get such sensible proof of it as the average layman demands or expects.

It matters not how we get the evidence of personal identity, provided it is provably supernormal in the mode of its expression. If physical phenomena will supply that desideratum well and good, but they can never do it without that psychological accompaniment which will show that a given intelligence is behind the facts. The consequence of this is that the best proof will always be those mental phenomena that have no accompaniment of really or apparently physical marvels. Hence apparitions and mediumistic phenomena, where we make no mystery of the physical aspect of them, will be the best sources of evidence. This record is confined to the mediumistic type and it purports to give facts illustrative of the personal identity of specific persons, the survival of a particular stream of consciousness with its memories of an earthly life transmitted through an organism that had not known the facts normally.

A matter of primary interest to readers will be the fact that the chief personalities in the production of the results, regardless of the question whether their own identity is proved, have really or apparently organized the incidents with reference to that end. For the sceptic the claims of communicators have nothing to do with the acceptance of them and we have to measure the facts by their relation to the ordinary theories of physiology and psychology. That is, we simply ask whether the phenomena can be explained in the ordinary way. We discount the claims of the real or alleged spirits until they are made good by the supernormal information illustrative of their personal identity. But this fact does not lessen the psychological interest in personalities that work to that end while they make no effort to realize it in their own person. Hence of deep interest in this report is the consistent and persistent claim on the part of a group of personalities that they are aiming to prove personal identity in their work and so endeavoring to satisfy the true scientific conditions of the problem. I desire that the reader shall keep this in mind when studying the detailed record. It is an important

feature of the phenomena in the case of both psychics, and especially interesting in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth because this limitation of the work is rather opposed to her normal instincts in the subject. Her primary normal interest in the work is the spiritual helpfulness and consolation which her work may afford to sitters. She is not primarily interested in the work of personal identity, so that, if subliminal prejudices be considered, this restriction of the phenomena by the controlling personalities runs counter to her natural proclivities, while it illustrates the expected characteristics of the personalities who control.

In both cases the psychological machinery, so to speak, has a fundamental likeness. There are the controls and the communicators. The controls do not make any special effort, as such controls, to prove their identity. They are intermediaries for proving the identity of others. Occasionally, more particularly with Mrs. Smead, they do endeavor to prove their own identity. This however is almost limited to Dr. Hodgson, and for all that I know there may have been an unknown intermediary there. But the efforts of Professor James and Mr. Podmore, to assume here that they were really present, tend to show that the control and communicator were more frequently one and the same person. But there were instances in which they were not the same. The record will show that and I do not require to go into details. All that I wish to do is to recognize a psychological method that is the same to that extent in both cases, with differences to be noted again. But in the Smead case there is apparent more effort to do direct communicating, or if not more effort, the only method employed is direct automatic writing with less complicated mental machinery for the result apparently. In both the control puts through the messages. But the control is more complex in the best results of Mrs. Chenoweth than in all of those by Mrs. Smead, and less successful when it is not more complex. The point, however, to be emphasized at present is the psychological machinery which distinguishes between those who attempt to prove their identity and those who, while they make no effort to prove their own

identity, profess to make this the primary problem and live up to it in the method they employ, without applying it to themselves. From this point of view the whole problem is managed intelligently and with the scientific proprieties directly and clearly considered and this, too, in conformity with the character of the personalities involved, while those communicators who had not previously studied the problem from the scientific point of view showed less tendency to conceive the issue in these terms and had a stronger tendency to wander into general ideas in their communications. For instance, there was no apparent effort on the part of Dr. Janes to prove identity, nor was there at first any such clear conception of identity in the mind of Carroll D. Wright until later sittings, as in that of Professor James, who, in spite of the wanderings from his text, showed that he had a clear appreciation of what his problem was. The older personalities involved made no attempt to prove identity and could not have succeeded had they tried. But they apparently supplied energy and assistance without which others could not succeed.

Readers perfectly familiar with the Piper records will discover traces here and there of the same personalities, tho they do not actually reveal their names. I have suspicion that Rector and Doctor were often present and aiding tho not acting as chief amanuenses as in the Piper case. In critical situations when a special effort had to be made there are apparent phrases, at times, that are characteristically Rector's or Imperator's, tho there is not the slightest claim made that they are present. We see only G. P., Dr. Hodgson or Jennie P. In the Piper case there were often evidences of the presence of others than Rector who was chief intermediary. This was manifested in the coloring which a message would often get from the style of G. P. Here G. P.'s intermediation is often colored by phraseology that was not naturally his and on this ground, along with the direct indication that he was present at times, I infer that Rector may have been assisting in ways and at times when it was not specifically stated. But no one not perfectly familiar with the Piper records would suspect this

and I do not mention it as a clear fact, but as one for the student of the two records to be on the alert for on any theory of the facts.

The case of Mrs. Chenoweth presents one of special remark. I have already discussed her case at some length in close connection with the Thompson Report, "A Case of Veridical Hallucinations." Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. III pp. 593-613. I shall not go over these complications here. The reader must go to the source mentioned for that general subject. But I must call attention to an interesting development which seems to have occurred in the prosecution of the present series of experiments.

For a long time there was the old method of trying to have the communicator either directly send his messages by automatic writing or to send them through a single control. This control might be Dr. Hodgson, or G. P., or Jennie P., also named Whirlwind. But by the time that half or more of the series was completed it was discovered, whether from reading my mental state of disappointment or by direct knowledge of the facts, that the sittings had not produced the evidence desirable. Professor James had made ~~as~~ much of a failure of proving his identity as had Dr. Hodgson, and hence, as if it were a kind of inspiration or sudden and accidental discovery, the whole machinery was changed and the work then proceeded with remarkable results.

This machinery consisted of the communicator, Whirlwind, G. P., and the entranced psychic. The communicator supplied the incidents and sent them in the form of mental pictures to Whirlwind and she interpreted them and sent them to G. P., who acted as amanuensis for the writing, putting them through the automatic organism or the subliminal of Mrs. Chenoweth. In the Piper case Rector was usually the only intermediary at least directly involved. No *double* control seemed necessary. But it was soon found by the group of controls that this method would not insure here the results desired and they hit upon what Whirlwind or Jennie P. called "driving tandem" to achieve their object. This greatly complicated the process and was the means

of bringing more to the front a method which may have been exactly the same in the case of Mrs. Piper with one intermediary, but which was not so manifest in its superficial claims. But in the most successful work of Mrs. Chenoweth this complicated machinery has been the uniform condition of getting clear and plentiful evidence of the supernatural. The reason for resorting to this method was the failure of the other method to produce results, and this other method was apparently exactly like that of the Piper case where but one control acted as intermediary.

I have said that the messages of the communicator were sent in the form of "mental pictures". I must dwell upon this and its significance in a little detail, involving further comparison with the Piper and Smead cases where this method is not superficially apparent. In the Piper and Smead cases the communicator seems to do his work directly by automatic writing, and we only learn indirectly that the control is an intermediary. The communicator seems to speak directly and we seem to have a case where he, the communicator, acts on the organism of the psychic after the manner of his own action on his own organism in his former and earthly life. It seems to be a case of "possession" by the communicator, or simply use of a foreign body by a spirit, with the control as a more or less secondary aid of some kind. But in the Piper case we had always to reckon with the agency of Rector, even when we supposed the spirit to be most independent of it. But the appearance of this control is not so evident in the case of Mrs. Smead, tho it may be there just the same. And it is not evident at all in any of the work of Mrs. Chenoweth which appears to be direct communication. This application of the method apparently applied to Mrs. Piper did not succeed with Mrs. Chenoweth. The communicator, while he could transmit all sorts of non-evidential messages seemed to go to pieces every time he tried to communicate incidents affecting personal identity. When this was discovered and recognized by the controls they hit upon, by accident or otherwise, the expedient of a double control and that worked effectively. This apparently involved the control of the writing mechan-

ism without the necessity of applying attention to the control's own mental operations. The control simply acted as a medium for automatic mental action on "the other side", and the function of getting the messages was shared by the other intermediary. Hence the "tandem" work of Whirlwind and G. P.

Mrs. Chenoweth's usual work for sitters is under the Starlight control, as that has been explained in the discussion referred to above. She never does automatic writing for strangers unless I am present. The trance for her regular work is that of the Starlight control and the messages come in pictures to this little control. I think it probable that certain other personalities are present at the same time, as the language and style would seem to transcend that of a little Comanche Indian whom Starlight claims to be. But this aside, the habitual method is to get the messages in the form of mental pictures from the communicator and the whole development of Mrs. Chenoweth has taken place along this line of action. It is trance clairvoyance in which the visual functions, or their correlates, are employed rather than the motor system of automatisms. Mrs. Chenoweth's motor system never figures in her ordinary work, except so far as the vocal organs are concerned. She has not been developed to express thought through the pure motor reflexes independent of the visual system. Apparently the group of personalities that came from their experience with the Piper case did not at once learn the limitations under which they had to work in this case until the combination of Whirlwind and G. P. was made to overcome the obstacles to evidential work through automatic writing. They seemed not to realize that the clairvoyant method was so habitual and functional that concessions had to be made to the fact. But when they discovered that exclusive reliance upon the motor methods of the Piper case for getting the messages through would not succeed best they adjusted themselves to the clairvoyant method, G. P. taking the place of Mrs. Chenoweth's motor control and Whirlwind using the clairvoyance for the transmission of the messages. This will be apparent by the study of the whole process.

In this respect the case offers a beautiful example of the combination of apparent telepathy and "possession" in the process of communication. The communicator thinks. As far as possible he holds his mind on the contents of any special memory and its associates, at least such as he wishes to send through. Whirlwind gets a telepathic phantasm or hallucination of those thoughts, just as Starlight does in the regular work of the psychic, and transmits the same in some way to G. P., who influences the motor automatism of the writing system, and the subconscious clairvoyant machinery of Mrs. Chenoweth's mind aids in the process of interpretation and transmission. That there is interpretation of the messages is apparent both from the manner of sending them and from the direct claim of the controls. I shall not go into details of the record to show this. It should suffice to call attention to the fact and then to leave the observation of it to careful readers. But the main point is to get clear that the method of communication primarily involves the transmission of mental pictures which we may describe as telepathic hallucinations, whether visual or auditory, sometimes the latter, to one of the controls who has to see that their correct meaning is obtained by the control who has to manage the motor machinery for its expression in writing. The telepathic process is between the communicator and Whirlwind and possibly also between Whirlwind and G. P., while the "possession" is between G. P. and Mrs. Chenoweth's subliminal. In that you have a definite conception of what the process appears to be, with whatever other complications the facts may imply or manifest. In the communications of Whirlwind or G. P. alone this machinery is not at all evident. Nor is it any more apparent in the direct or indirect control of any other communicator. But when the most successful attempts are made to transmit evidential incidents this complication of control and telepathic clairvoyance effected by the dead is the most manifest phenomenon.\*

---

\* I must call the reader's attention to the fact that I do not omit, in this explanation, the fact that Mrs. Chenoweth's subconsciousness is a factor in the total result. I believe that the communications are colored

One important interest in it is the manner in which it affects the limitations of the communicator. He has to choose experiences and memories which best lend themselves to mental pictures of some kind and then if he be a person constituted so that he can make clear pictures for Whirlwind he is reasonably sure of success. If he cannot make mental pictures the error and confusion will be all the greater. But it will be apparent to all students of psychology that the method of transmitting messages by mental pictures largely limits communications to those memories that are easily interpretable in imagery and that many of the more abstruse, perhaps all of the more abstruse, topics of thought are likely to get very poor expression under such conditions. We can easily perceive how difficult it would be for a person in the situation of Whirlwind to give a correct interpretation of the imagery transmitted to her in this manner, especially if it be complicated with imagery and ideas not at all familiar to her earthly experience, and such difficulties would well explain the limitations of the messages, further modified by the habits and limitations of the psychic's experiences. Only a part of our memories is clearly expressible in mental pictures. The order of their occurrence as events may be clear enough, but that inner meaning for them determined by their organic unity and various intellectual and emotional accompaniments might not find transmission at all, and often it is these that determine the whole significance of the facts for the communicator and sitter. The imagery might be transmitted, and if not converted into its proper meaning by the control might convey no evidence at all, tho perfectly accurate as a reproduction of the past. The meaning lies in the relationships of the imagery and it is difficult to get that meaning accurately expressed.

Another interesting corollary is, perhaps, the explanation of the difficulty with proper names. I have alluded to this in a previous Report. (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol.

---

by subliminal influences, and Mrs. Chenoweth herself believes this of all her work. Readers of the detailed records, if they will compare certain forms of expression in the different stages of the trance will discover unmistakable evidence of this. I shall not give examples in detail. Some day an elaborate discussion of it with the evidence may be undertaken.

IV. pp. 336-347). I need not elaborate the matter here again. But I should go over enough of it to show that further results tend to confirm the hypothesis there suggested. One of the most noticeable of the limitations of Mrs. Chenoweth's mediumship is her difficulty in getting proper names. Sometimes this weakness is exceedingly aggravating and annoying. Just when a proper name would give a good clue to the meaning of a set of facts it is wanting and you cannot insist on getting it as this may only make matters worse. But we can readily see why they are difficult with this machinery for mental pictures as the agency for getting them. Persons and things are visual objects in most experiences and proper names are auditory ones. The reader will quickly observe that descriptions of persons seem easy and frequent, but their names almost an impossibility. But if mental pictures have to be the means of transmitting the messages the transmission of names must involve a ready translation of an auditory percept or concept into a visual one and that may result in breaking the whole thread of the facts. Stopping the machinery of conjuring up a system of images for transmission only to spell out a name may break up the whole process and unless this comes as a visual attendant of the pictures the name may not come at all. Herein probably lies the whole difficulty of Mrs. Chenoweth with proper names. If the messages in the Piper case involve the same processes we may understand some of the difficulties there. But it is apparent to critical students of her phenomena that phonetic considerations enter into her processes and these may involve for the auditory processes what we find are limited largely to the visual in Mrs. Chenoweth. There is no reason why auditory imagery should not be transmissible as well as the visual and that would be the case probably with audiles for mediums, as explained in the report referred to above. Probably Mrs. Piper is more of an audile than Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Chenoweth more of a visual than Mrs. Piper. That would explain the whole difference between them as mediums and in regard to proper names and all conceptions involving auditory imagery or the predominance of it. But one thing will be clear and this is

that auditory percepts would naturally give difficulty in communications adapted primarily to visual pictures, and that is the important point to be made here.

But the most interesting feature of this mental picture process of communication comes out in a circumstance which professes to explain many a perplexity in the problem of communication. I shall not go into details at present with this aspect of the matter, as it will come up in a later chapter when discussing the difficulties of communication. But I may briefly indicate what it is.

In our ordinary communication by speech with each other, while living, we have full control over what we shall communicate. The full contents of consciousness are not conveyed to our listener. We select what we wish to communicate and suppress all the marginal or irrelevant incidents of our thoughts at the time. But the communicating spirit may have no such inhibiting power over the memories that float through his mind. As he merely thinks and as his thoughts become visible or audible, so to speak, in the form of telepathic hallucinations sent to the control, much more may be communicated than the experiences which he is intent on sending. In fact other and associated memories may get in or dominate the transmitted facts, or the confusion in his own mind may be so great from marginal ideas or the inability to concentrate sufficiently on the main incident that only a medley may be transmitted. But without going into the various conditions affecting the process or influences which would modify the messages of different persons the important thing to be expected with each communicator would be that the organic mass of memories associated with any particular incident would tend to be transmitted and all sorts of confusions and errors might occur. In any case there would have to be some criterion for distinguishing the relevant from the irrelevant data for communication and what that is may have to be determined in the future. But telepathic processes drawing on mental states which have no properly organized inhibitions, as in normal life and conversation, might well illustrate confusion and mistake, especially if interpreting processes come in to determine

the meaning of the message. But all this will be discussed when I come to consider the difficulties of communication.

The next important point is the light which these communications by mental pictures throw on the explanation of apparitions. The whole problem is not apparent in the phenomena of Mrs. Piper. There is so little evidence that the primary factor is mental pictures, tho it may be this, that we little suspect the existence of data for explaining many or all apparitions. In this report, however, on the phenomena of Mrs. Chenoweth, especially in the "tandem" work of Whirlwind and G. P., I think we have facts of supreme importance in suggesting a unity between the theory of apparitions and that of mediumistic communications from the dead. What we find in these mental pictures first is an apparent reality which after all is only mental, reality nevertheless, but not physical as apparent. This much is supposed in the ordinary theory of apparitions, but we have not yet found clear evidence that mediumistic clairvoyance in connection with the dead is the same thing. Once assume or prove that it is the same thing and a vast step is made toward a unified theory of the whole set of psychic phenomena. But the most important part of that conclusion must come from something else than the mere fact that mediumistic clairvoyance is the same process as that involved in apparitions. We require to know something of the agent involved. To this question I turn.

We have three types of apparitions to consider. They are (1) apparitions of the living; (2) apparitions of the dying; and (3) apparitions of the dead. It has been customary to apply telepathy between the living to account for the first two classes, forgetful that the same general process must be applied to all three classes. Of course, we have first to have sufficient evidence that apparitions of the dead in numerous cases are not due to ordinary and casual hallucinations or chance coincidence, but they are probably numerous enough to eliminate both assumptions. This aside, however, the perplexity in all of them has been the existence of "spirit clothes". It is not easy on the hypothesis of telepathy between the living to account for this characteristic, and it has

seemed no easier to make it intelligible on the hypothesis of "projected astrals" or the transmission of the soul from place to place. Hence if we were to believe any mystery at all, we rested content with telepathy between the living and referred to the admitted fact that hallucinations sometimes accompany telepathic transmission. But we still had the difficulty of "spirit clothes" to overcome, because it seemed incredible that a subject could either before or after death transmit a proper picture of himself and his clothes. But it seemed, credible or incredible, that it had to be believed. However, we have a clue to the explanation of the whole thing in the work of Whirlwind and G. P. In the first place, their messages take the form of apparent physical reality. In the second place, they show an agent often that is not the object of the apparition. This latter fact is the most important of them all.

I quote one apparition that indicates apparently that the apparition was not caused by the person who appeared in it. The facts briefly stated were these. A lady who was psychic began to cough violently and when this ceased saw an apparition of a man who was recognized from the detailed description to be the father-in-law of the hostess. But the father had died from a violent fit of coughing. It is thus apparent that he was the control and if he had not accidentally caused the coughing in the psychic no evidence of his presence or agency would have been discovered or known. But the fact was that he was the apparent cause of the apparition, possibly transmitting to the psychic a mental picture of the person whose identity was primarily concerned, his own only being accidentally revealed.

In another case which I have on record of telepathic experiments there were reported to me only the coincidences which illustrated or proved the fact of telepathy, but inquiry on my part showed that the man had a constant "guide" and felt that he was assisted in his telepathic experiments by some other agency than his own. It had been deemed unimportant to report this fact. Compare experiences of Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden, *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, pp. 714-741.

These with numerous other facts suggested to me the possibility that apparitions might, in all cases, be caused by another agent than the apparent one, and I only awaited further evidence to see if this working hypothesis might get confirmation. In the Chenoweth phenomena under the work of Whirlwind and G. P. there is much to support it.

Let me take first the incident in my father's communications where he was answering my previous question about what was done with his gun to which he had referred (p. 680). The answer which I had in my mind when I asked the question was "beeves, hogs and rabbits". The next day I got a very accurate and complete picture of one of our butchering events forty years ago. The medium revolted against the scene as something she did not like to see in heaven. Her trance and dream life, like the dream life of all of us, had treated as a reality what was *only a mental picture of the past*. As soon as the vision vanished she was at ease, but while it was there it was thought to be a real external world when, in fact, it was a telepathic phantasm from the dead.

This view was confirmed by another pretty incident in my father's communications. When referring to the churns used in the family (p. 813) he mentioned the old dog that had done the churning at one time and the control said: "the dog is here", as if it was actually present. This may have been true for all that I know, but I am much more inclined to think that it was only a telepathic hallucination transmitted from my father's mind, a mental picture like all the other incidents. This was probably what Phinuit saw in the Piper case when he insisted on the reply to the query whether dogs were on that side, that the sitter's dog was jumping over him. The higgledy-piggledy method of Phinuit favored the catching of all sorts of phantasms and taking them for reality. But the point here is that there is no reason for supposing the dog present any more than the churn, and as the latter is a mental picture so is the former.

Again a beautiful instance of the same phenomenon is my father's communications about my grandmother. (p. 753)

She is described as a very old wrinkled woman. But she is at the same time referred to as near and approving certain messages. It was not she that was communicating, but my father, and the mental pictures are his memories, not the actual existence of my grandmother. The pictures were past scenes and memories of my father. All this is further confirmed by the pictures which occurred with Mrs. Chenoweth representing my brother Charles as a child and then suddenly as a man. This change of figure is most easily explained by supposing that we are dealing with mental pictures, not objective realities, tho the objective realities may be there.

But the most important characteristic of all these incidents is the fact that the agent is not the person or thing in the apparition. The cause of the apparition is not the person or thing that appears. The cause is a *tertium quid*. And with this idea the whole system of apparitions with their "spirit clothes" becomes perfectly intelligible and there is complete unity in the two vast groups of phenomena. It is not the dying person that produces the apparition of himself, with the clothes that he is wearing, but a third party who knows the facts. That this knowledge is possible, is apparent in what the deceased describe of their own funerals. But the main point is that there is a unity between the mental pictures in the clairvoyant type of medium and the apparitions of the living, the dying, and the dead. The telepathy must be instigated and carried out by other agents than the superficially apparent ones, and that hypothesis suggests the conversion of telepathy into an instrument of the dead rather than a process which dispenses with their existence. I cannot go so far as to say that this is proved or even rendered probable by the evidence, but the discoverable unity of mediumistic clairvoyance instigated and controlled by the dead and the various types of apparitions so thoroughly limit telepathy between the living alone that the field is certainly an open one for the spiritistic hypothesis.

The ordinary theory of apparitions as telepathically produced by the subject appearing in them has always involved two fundamental perplexities. The one of the reality

of the apparition in a world which would have to be conceived as a replica or reproduction of the physical world as we experience it. The other, in default of the capacity to conceive or believe the first alternative, of supposing that the agent could transmit a conception of himself which was not a sense perception in his own experience. But both these difficulties vanish in the presence of the explanation which I have given. When memories and ideas produce in others the appearance of reality we may well imagine that the case of apparitions is more complicated than the ordinary telepathic hypothesis limited to the agency of the living assumes. But once introduce the *tertium quid* as the agent and all these perplexities disappear. We do not have to suppose that it is the dying person that is thinking of himself and desiring his friend to experience an apparition of the dying person, but that another agent is the cause of the phenomenon, as is perfectly apparent in the whole system of mental pictures in this record, and the issue is a clear and easy explanation of apparitions that both eliminates the perplexities of the ordinary telepathy between the living, and, tho it complicates the casual agencies in the result, nevertheless makes a large class of phenomena perfectly intelligible, and turns the mind to spiritistic agencies as a more likely and systematic explanation than the usual one. But it must remain for the future to prove what is here conceived as possible and presented only as a tentative hypothesis.

When it comes to the hypothesis which may be entertained in the explanation of the facts recorded in this volume, we may enumerate those which various persons would suggest and try. I may state them as follows. (1) Chance coincidence. (2) Guessing. (3) Detective fraud. (4) Secondary personalities. (5) Telepathy between the living; and (6) Spirits. Such a theory as tapping the Absolute or a universal reservoir of knowledge would not appear to me essentially different from the survival of individual consciousness, and so I should not admit it as an alternative hypothesis of spirits.

I think no intelligent person would be tempted with the explanations of chance coincidence or guessing. Such theories cannot be proved if advanced and any mind that can entertain them in the incidents as a whole here presented is not to be taken seriously and I should not waste time trying to convince it or in making concessions to it. One thing is certain, such a mind could not entertain the hypothesis of detective fraud while applying those of chance coincidence and guessing. Detective fraud implies previous intelligence in regard to the facts and excludes both of the first two suppositions. But if any one chooses to consider them he will have to limit them to certain individual incidents or accept the challenge to treat them in the way which is perfectly feasible without independent experiment.

I refer in this last statement to the following expedient. We may take the incidents purporting to come from a given communicator and ascertain how they would fit any other or all other communicators. If chance coincidence is possible incidents communicated by A. should fit B. or C. or D. at least now and then. I have done this with the facts of the present record. For instance, take the incidents mentioned as experiences of Carroll D. Wright. Not one of them individually or collectively will apply to my father. The same is true of the incidents narrated of my aunt Julia. This Aunt lived on a farm much of her life and in this particular a common incident might be found, but it was not asserted of this Aunt, while the other incidents would not fit my father's life, except the name Frank as that of his son. But the other incidents have no coincidental relation to my father, and especially collectively they would not fit in any way. In this way we may easily test the theory of chance coincidence in any record of the kind.

However I do not apprehend that any one will have the temerity to imagine that chance coincidence and guessing would apply in anything except the most common incidents and in these cases I have indicated no intention of treating them as evidence of the supernatural.

Detective fraud can be admissible as an hypothesis to be

considered only on the supposition that you question the trance. With that admitted the theory is thrown out of court. Secondary personality cannot be entertained at the same time you assume the possibility of detective fraud or if you admit the existence of supernormal information. It is admissible only on the supposition that the information involved has been casually obtained and that there is nothing supernormal about it. Detective inquiry would go so seldom with genuine trances and could hardly be relied upon to find expression in a trance, that it would naturally be disregarded where secondary personality or subconscious action are assumed. Hence if we accept the existence of the supernormal in the case, as the cross references make it imperative to do, to say nothing of the impossibility of ascertaining certain facts with any resources at the command of the psychics we are limited to telepathy and spirits as the alternatives.

There is an important illusion to be removed in the interpretation of phenomena like these. A large class of respectable people, not very intelligent I am sorry to say, in spite of their academic education and affiliations, reject the spiritistic hypothesis because the ideas and sentiments in the communications do not consist with their ordinary and normal beliefs about things. They reject the communications even of the evidential sort as balderdash and often assert that such and such spirits would not communicate such stuff, and they do this especially when the ideas expressed jar with their views of the universe. I wish I knew a small part of what this class claims to know.

There is no doubt that this tendency has its defence, as we have to estimate the truth of anything by its consonance or conflict with normal views of things. But the position can be very much overworked. It too often assumes that the critic knows enough about spirits to deny what they would do. But this no man who is sceptical can claim. He is obliged to be especially humble. We cannot say what spirits should or should not say beyond proving their identity. For all that we know the next life is a degenerating one. I do not believe it to be so, but in the proof of

it we cannot assume that it is a progressive one. It might be the reverse. When we have to deal also with the sub-conscious processes of the medium, logical and literary considerations have nothing whatever to do with the question and any man who allows his judgment to deny the significance of the phenomena on such grounds only proves that he is not intelligent. We are not dealing with literature in this work nor with literary standards. They are preposterous here. We are dealing with very complicated problems in normal and abnormal psychology interfused with those in the super-normal and any attempt to obscure the issue by declaiming against spirits because they do not speak like geniuses or superior beings only exposes the man who speaks in this way to contempt. The character and condition of spirits are not concerned with the first stage of the problem. It is their existence, sane or insane, progressive or degenerative, that is primary, and we shall undertake the other problem when we come to it. In the meantime men who ridicule spirits because they are not what they imagine them to be only justify ignoring them in the consideration of the issue. They are only æsthetes, not scientists. In this democratic age our newspaper editors and magazine writers arrogate authority to decide these matters by æsthetic standards. No quarter, however, will be given this class of people in this discussion.

One of the difficulties of many people with the problem is the supposition that spirits have anything to do with the facts unless they explain the whole material. They assume that the statements must all come from spirits, or none of them. No intelligent person would be deceived by this illusion. It is fundamental to the problem that the sub-consciousness of the psychic is a factor affecting every transmitted incident, and this on any theory whatever of the facts. The spiritistic hypothesis rests on the assumption that occasional extraneous messages are intromitted into the sub-conscious stream of the medium's own mental action, and it does not help the sceptic or critic to point out matter traceable to the subliminal of the psychic. That is conceded and the case made to rest on the facts that cannot be so explained.

When it comes to the consideration of telepathy as an explanation of these phenomena I shall simply throw it summarily out of court. I shall not give it the decency of any serious consideration whatever. No intelligent person would tolerate it. Respectable people might, but intelligent people would not. I have mentioned it only as an alternative which some people would present, but I shall dismiss it as an illusion of unscientific minds and as the resource of sceptical superstition and a low rate of intelligence, until some iota of evidence be produced that the kind of telepathy assumed is a fact apart from facts illustrating the personal identity of the dead. That is the most that I shall have to say about it in this volume. I have in many instances indicated what was in my mind when asking questions, just to let readers see how inadequate and unrelated to the whole problem that hypothesis is, and the slightest intelligence of psychology and of the extent to which the phenomena conform in the remotest details to the ordinary laws of mental action would induce any but respectable men to dismiss telepathy between the living with contempt. I regard the real alternatives to be between detective fraud and spirits and not between telepathy and spirits. This is not because I regard fraud as a possible explanation, but because it is far simpler and more rational to present and urge it than it is to present telepathy. It is far more difficult for intelligent minds to defend this telepathy than it is to defend the possibility of fraud. Both psychics knew that I was experimenting for communications from Professor James and there was every opportunity offered for seeking information in various ways. But I think the very meagerness of the information obtained that was so easily accessible is defence enough of the honesty of the psychics and the genuineness of the normal effort to get communications. There is no allusion on the part of Mrs. Chenoweth's subconscious even to the little information that she had of Professor James and the failure to get evidence of identity that was actually lying around loose, while so many things gotten were false or unrecognizable, excludes all intelligent detective fraud from the case. But it is the appearance of personalities that I was not

seeking that gives the facts their importance. The supposition that I was seeking messages from Professor James was the normal conviction of both psychics and I never told them I was getting facts from others a thousandfold more important than anything I could get from Professor James. From the group of my relatives I got facts which it was not possible for any amount of detective fraud, without the resources of Scotland Yard, to obtain and with those resources very many of them could not be obtained from a living soul but myself, and I was not interrogated nor the agent in casual leakage. The only supposition that would be tolerable is that I was myself in collusion with the psychics and I am not competent to refute that theory. It rests with the man who proposes it to prove it. Hence I do not give fraud of any kind here a serious consideration. I have studied every fact that came in the experiments with that possibility in view, and while there were a few facts that might have been obtained in that way, had the psychics been so disposed, even these came in a form that showed very defective work on the supposition of any sort of fraud. The things most easily gotten on any such hypothesis were false and many things impossible to obtain that way were true. Hence I have not made up my mind without thoroughly considering what the critic can say about the opportunities for normally acquired information. I did not waste a thought on the possibilities of telepathy, but my whole interest was for facts which I could say it was impossible under the circumstances to obtain in a normal manner, and most of the communications from the group of relatives could not have been obtained from any one but myself and my stepmother, and Mrs. Chenoweth thought my stepmother was not living! But it is not my place to convince the sceptic that there was no fraud. Indeed I am not in the business of convincing him of anything. I am experimenting and recording facts which seem to me worthy of scientific consideration, and if my judgment, after carefully weighing the facts in the interest of fraud and endeavoring to give opposing explanations the benefit of the doubt, is not acceptable, the sceptic must do his own investigating. The burden of proof is on the affirmative of

fraud or any other hypothesis. I have to convince no one but myself and those who are willing to examine the facts dispassionately and intelligently. To me the only rational hypothesis of such facts is the spiritistic. It may not be proved, if you wish so to contend, and I would not ask that these facts alone be accepted as adequate proof. To me it is the collective experience of the race that proves it, and all that this body of facts does is to present better credentials than usual for the genuineness of facts that are as old as the human race and as plentiful as those for the doctrine of evolution.

The estimation of the evidence is another matter. On the whole the incidents purporting to come from Professor James are not as satisfactory as was desirable. Some of them were excellent, and especially for their triviality which made them impossible of acquisition by any ordinary method. But too many of the complicated incidents, which if they had been accurate would have proved much, were false or unrecognizable. He was not a good communicator, and one is tempted to pass the same judgment upon his messages as he did on those of Dr. Hodgson. Indeed this view of them is actually expressed by G. P. in the record. It was possibly the consciousness of this failure that turned the controls to persons who were better communicators and whose messages could not be exposed to the objections to which those of Professor James were amenable. The whole work of the controls is to me an excellent revenge upon those who passionately seek evidence from well known men and disregard that from obscure persons. I was myself exceedingly glad that the issue took that turn, as it was apparent that I had to reckon less with ordinary channels of information. Highly developed minds pay little attention in life to the details that will prove identity. Their experience is occupied with high and great problems. The little and trivial incidents so important for proving identity either do not so frequently come within the ken of their attention or they are less likely to be remembered in a manner to be the subject of ready and voluntary recall. Many of the foibles or incidents that would prove their identity are well known, and the momentum of

their minds is naturally on the great subjects that occupied them, and it is an effort to recall voluntarily the little things that are not known and yet crucial. Besides there is the quality of mind that makes good messages possible. What that is we do not yet know, but readers of this report will observe that the difference was noticed by the controls and they rightly regarded my father as a "star witness" and others as imperfect. But without offering an explanation of the defects of Professor James' communications it is apparent that they are not what is desired and that the errors in so many cases considerably detract from the weight of the correct instances, to say nothing of the fact that the unproved incidents, if they had been true, would have been better evidence than those that were verifiable.

The communications from Mr. Carroll D. Wright would have had as little value but for the peculiar experiment which I performed amounting to a cross reference. Finding that many or nearly all of the best incidents purporting to come from him were unrecognizable I resolved on an experiment to test his identity. I arranged for sittings to be taken by a friend, without even indicating the sex, and chose a married daughter of Mr. Wright. I arranged for a Starlight sitting and I remained in New York, the circumstances indicating that the sitting had nothing to do with my regular series. Mr. Wright purported to communicate in these and repeated some of the incidents I had obtained and others that were recognizable. But in the record, which I publish in detail, there is not plentiful evidence of his identity. Such as it is has, perhaps, as much or more value than that from Professor James, as he had not been in the public eye so much or had not excited the same popular interest in his return.

My father's incidents are the best of the record. They in no respect repeat the incidents of my first or second Piper Report and are almost wholly confined to the early part of his life or mine, and some of them far beyond my memory and the knowledge of any person living except one person, his surviving sister. In most of them not more than four persons living know the facts and they do not know all of them. Often the memory of one person is necessary to

supplement that of another and in some incidents only a part of the facts are verifiable by any living person. In nearly all of them the physical evidence of their existence as events either never existed or disappeared from 40 to 60 years ago and no one in the neighborhood lives who might have known them and in many cases none knew them at all. There was no attempt to tell much that belonged to his later life. The main purpose seemed to go far back and in some cases the facts are not verifiable because of their age or imperfections that prevent finding a clue to the persons meant or the persons who might know the facts.

Of my Aunt Julia I knew only the name, the fact that she had moved west with the family very early in my boyhood, and that she was an educated lady. Not an incident did I know or could I know without special inquiry. Many of the incidents connected with a deceased Uncle and his surviving widow I did not know and they extend far beyond my own memory.

But the important point is less my ignorance of many facts than the naturalness of the facts for those who purport to give them. The whole machinery of the process is directed to the problem of rightly proving personal identity and the facts show the natural associations of persons intent on such a problem. This organizing intelligence is the primary and important characteristic of the facts, and makes the superficial interpretation of them the most intelligible. Until a better hypothesis is forthcoming this is the only one that can be scientifically entertained.

Taking the whole history of this problem and the facts recorded in connection with it I think the evidence of personal identity is sufficient to satisfy any intelligent man who understands the problem. We may have accessory problems to solve like that of impersonation, mistakes and confusion, the influence of the subconscious upon the phenomena, the fragmentary nature of the communications, the ethical relation of the present and the future life, the character of a spiritual world: in other words, the intelligibility of the whole process involved in the acquisition of the evidence, but these are purely subsidiary to the main question whether the facts

do not require the hypothesis of survival to explain them and we can prosecute our inquiries for the solution of concomitant problems without implying that the whole complex system shall be intelligible before we admit the territory that has been gained. We have perplexities enough still to be removed, but they are not a part of the question of survival. They are only difficulties connected with the process that limits our information, but does not impeach that which we have. We shall make no progress if we do not assume that the main contention is won, at least as a working hypothesis, and then proceed to make similar conquests in the remaining fields of investigation. All that I can do in this volume is to summarize in a sort of statistical manner the incidents that I knew and those that I did not know when the messages were delivered. I shall not give the contents of those I knew since I am summarizing them only with reference to the objection that some desire to make, that telepathy might account for the facts I knew. This summary concedes this possibility in deference to that objection, tho not admitting it to be a scientific belief deserving any serious recognition. It will interest that sort of objector to know what facts I did not know when the communications were made. In some cases it was not easy to decide what I should regard as an incident to be counted as single, so that the figures representing what I knew may be less or more than I have given them, but only because I may have reckoned as two or three what might be treated as one incident, or as one what might be treated as two or three. But this will not affect the main issue, as I have admitted none to the account which are not evidential of the supernormal and which cannot be regarded as something unrelated to associated incidents by inference. Besides nothing depends on the numerical relations of the known to the unknown incidents. All that I wish to indicate is the large number of incidents that I did not know and the still larger number that are supernormal. I have omitted all reference to very significant matter which could not be tabulated in any manner. I refer to such communications as exhibit characteristic-ideas and supernormal information at the same time, but that

would not appear so, perhaps, to any one who did not know the parties concerned or the subject discussed in the communication. If they were reckoned in they would increase the number of known incidents and also greatly strengthen the mathematical side of the argument. But their force depends on psychological characteristics that cannot be reckoned statistically at all. In fact the statistical treatment of this subject is absurd, since we have to isolate incidents from their environment to discuss them mathematically, when the fact is that it is their relation to their environment that gives them their whole value as evidence. Besides, I have reckoned in the statistical account only those incidents which show by their very nature the possibility of being due to something more than chance or guessing, whether we choose to regard them as supernormal or not. They are the kind of incident that shows intelligence, whatever its source. The number that was not known by me is great enough to have much significance, especially when we remark that it bears a definite relation to my knowledge or ignorance of the communicator's life. For those I knew well, the incidents that I knew were more numerous. For those that I did not know, the incidents that I did not know were more numerous than in the other class. The following are the results.

#### **Professor James.**

The incidents which I did not know were the reference to the Greek letter Omega through Mrs. Smead; the name Eliza; the inkstand and its being a gift; the Hodgson photograph, tho this is possibly not evidential; the calling his son in the family by the name of Harry; the existence of a work nearly finished; the trunk of papers; the talk with a man by the name of Wright, tho this was related to the wrong Wright; the loving cup in the library; the boat; the diploma incident; his relation to typewriting along with his brother and son; the several foods he used; eating a bit of bread near the end of his life; his manner of treating letters from people interested in this subject; wearing his father's watch; the possession of an English cap; the Morris chair, and his

own picture. This makes 20 incidents in all, some of them quite complex and involving several factors. Of those that I knew there were 16, some of them quite complex.

### **Robert Hyslop.**

Those which I did not know were his marking his books; my Aunt's illness; my grandmother's feather beds and pillows; the reference to the white horse; the separation from Aunt Betsy; the incidents associated with the name Ryder or Rideout; my sister's going into the room where my father's body lay; the reference to foxgloves; the description of one of the dogs that did the churning; the ram incident with all its details, and the big grey cat in connection with the name Martha. This makes 11 in all while there were 228 that I did know.

### **My Wife and Father-in-law.**

There was only one incident in connection with my father-in-law that I did not know. This was the reference to trouble with his feet. For both my wife and father-in-law there were 55 that I did know. Of course there were some that I could not verify which, if true, I did not know.

### **Aunt Cora.**

I did not know the photograph incident; the meaning of the little child; the reference to the old negro. But I knew 9 incidents against these three.

### **Aunt Julia.**

I did not know the facts involved in her description; her depletion at the time of her death; her state of resignation; the white and blue spread and its lineage; the habits of the family in connection with the sitting room; the account of the dog with details; the wide mouth of the son, called her brother; his possession of carpenter's tools and handy character about the house; the keeping of a store, and the relation of the store to the post-office. These are 10 incidents. There were 4 that I knew and two of these were her name and relationship to me.

**Uncle Finney.**

I did not know that he had to be lifted in bed at the end; the incident of the red bureau; and that of the table associated with it and details mentioned about it. There were seven incidents that I knew.

**Robert McClellan.**

I did not know anything about the elm tree near the school house; the thought of piping the spring to the house, and the spring in the woods. This makes 3 incidents but there were 15 that I knew.

**John McSweeney.**

I knew nothing regarding the reference to Ironton or that to the name Bobbie. But I knew three of the facts.

**Mark Twain.**

One incident in the case of Mark Twain was unknown to me and to the psychic and the other was known to me, but not known to the psychic.

**Rev. Edward E. Hale.**

I knew nothing whatever about the relevance of the one incident indicated with reference to Kate Field.

**Aunt Ella.**

I knew nothing about the pertinence of the name Fannie, but knew 4 incidents associated with her.

**Dr. Hodgson.**

I did not know the prohibition of coffee by Emperor; the vase incident with all its details, and the Newbold incident with details. But I knew 7 incidents.

**George Pelham.**

I knew nothing about his mother's prayers and nothing about his parents' feeling after his death, but I knew 9 incidents.

There is no use to give any statistics about Mr. Podmore, as I was unable to verify the incidents which would have had special value. The most that he said that has any value cannot be put down as incidents at all, but only as apt and

pertinent references that might be characteristic. The reference to rain in the face I did not know, while I did know many of the other matters which, if classifiable at all, might be considered suggestive. The following is a tabular account of the whole.

**TABLE.**

	Unknown.	Known.
Professor James .....	20	16
Robert Hyslop .....	11	228
Wife and Father-in-law .....	1	55
Aunt Cora .....	3	9
Aunt Julia .....	10	4
Uncle Finney .....	3	7
Robert McClellan .....	3	15
John McSweeney .....	2	3
Mark Twain .....	1	1
Edward E. Hale .....	1	0
Aunt Ella .....	1	4
Dr. Hodgson .....	3	7
George Pelham .....	2	9
Total .....	60	359

This shows that 14 per cent. of the incidents were not known to me, and in some individual cases this percentage was much higher. Take my Aunt Julia for instance. Here it is a little over 71 per cent. In the case of Professor James it is more than 55 per cent. But no special significance attaches to percentages, save to remark that the percentage of unknown incidents will hardly be due to chance in this respect.\*

The real force of the facts, however, lies in their psychological unity and relevance and this is not a mensurable quality. Its significance lies in relationships and connections which can never be estimated in figures or expressed mathematically. Each individual must see the cogency in the facts themselves and their relation to theories of chance.

---

\* Since drawing up this tabular review I have ascertained the truth of a number of incidents which I did not know so that the percentage of unknown incidents has been raised considerably. But I shall not alter the table. It suffices as it is for its purpose.

## CHAPTER II.

### Difficulties of Communicating.

I shall not discuss this problem at any such length as I did in a previous report. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, pp. 163-387. There is nothing to add to the exhaustive possibilities there examined. But the results of these experiments do something to modify one of the hypotheses there and previously defended and this must be considered here. I refer to the hypothesis that the communicator is in a trance or dream like state when communicating. I have advanced this view in a number of places, always with some misgivings as to its completeness but yet with the feeling that it made many things intelligible which no other supposition would do. The Report of Mr. Dorr's experiments in the *English Proceedings* (Vol. XXIV) offered clear objections to the hypothesis, tho the authors of it seemed not to have remarked the fact, and I took them up in the *Journal* (*Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, pp. 141-170) at some length and while recognizing fully their cogency I still felt that there were data to support it, tho much weakened in its evidence and probabilities. The results of these experiments offer an explanation which, while it does not wholly set aside the supposition of some sort of abnormal mental conditions with the communicator, at times at least, does greatly modify it and so limits the evidence for it that it may not be worth defending vigorously, tho still retaining the explanatory power assigned it. It is largely supplanted by a conception which explains the main features on which it depended and at the same time explains many other things not explained by the trance or dream hypothesis. This will be made clear as we proceed and also the limitations of the new view presented. I shall go over its development briefly.

It was Dr. Hodgson that first advanced this hypothesis. There were various perplexities which the confused and

fragmentary character of the alleged messages presented, and he looked about for some means to make them intelligible. He had been accustomed to disregarding all claims but the supernormal incidents, and in testing the right of a spiritistic theory to recognition there was nothing else to be done. But after it had made itself a rational hypothesis the next question that arose was to explain the non-evidential matter, the triviality of the incidents, the confusion and mistakes, and the general limitations of the information conveyed as coming from the spiritual world. One of the communicators gave him a pertinent hint in this matter by comparing the state apparently necessary for communicating to our dream life. This hint was taken up and the hypothesis worked out at some length. I adopted it in my first Report, extended and developed it in my second Report and elaborated it elsewhere as well. But I began to feel from the work of Mrs. Chenoweth that it was not so manifest as in that of Mrs. Piper. It was true that her mediumship is not exactly like Mrs. Piper's or Mrs. Smead's, tho not different in all respects. But it raised a question whether the abnormal condition for communicating was as necessary as it had appeared to be in the phenomena of Mrs. Piper. I saw in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth a larger mass of evidence that her subconsciousness determined the form and colored the matter of the communications than in other cases I had recorded. While my second Report was in the last stages of the press I had a sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth and apparently Dr. Hodgson made a great effort to get me a message on this very problem and the coincidence with my elaborate defence of it just going through the press, with the assurance that Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing about Dr. Hodgson's views or the pertinence of the message, made me refer to it in Appendix of that Report. (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 777). It was after this that I saw the report of Mr. Dorr's experiments and felt that a strong argument could be made from it against the hypothesis. The present records did more than anything else to clear up the whole problem, and the ideas that suggested this clearing process came from three different persons, but I did not see the

point until it was stated by G. P., the very person whose similar communications through Mrs. Piper had suggested the hypothesis.

The supposition was that the communicator had to be in some abnormal mental state, comparable more or less to a trance, dreams, or secondary personality in order to communicate with the living. There were admittedly other difficulties and limitations, but they did not account for the confusion and mistakes in the messages or the fragmentary character of them. We were familiar with the jerky associations of dreams and the more or less confusion of normal experience in all unnatural or abnormal mental conditions, and dreams and deliria offered a fair comparison for the disjointed nature of the communications as they appeared. Hence when this hypothesis was proposed by the communicators themselves in terms that suggested an explanation involving more familiarity with psychology than the medium actually had, it was but natural to test it, and to exhaust it before rejecting its fitness. The primary objection to it lay in the evidently purposive nature of many of the communications. The communicator chose his incidents rationally, answered questions pertinently, and altogether behaved himself in a way usually or often to make one think that the analogy of dreams and trances did not fit the case. No doubt there are rational dreams and the somnambulic state is often as systematic and rational as the normal, so that these discrepancies were not wholly inexplicable by the hypothesis or were consistent with it. But men of common sense would not feel wholly satisfied with it when looking at the facts superficially and without regard to little details. The large general prospect of them appeared too rational to fit the ordinary idea of dreams and chaotic mental conditions.

My own mind was therefore prepared for the modification or displacement of the hypothesis by such suggestion as this record makes. The first communicator in this series to discuss the issue was Professor James in response to a question of mine which an opportunity enabled me to put. I quote the record.

(Do you find Hodgson and I were right about the difficulties?)

I think so but it is too early yet for me to have positive conclusions.

(All right take your own course.)

I am of the opinion that some of the messages are produced without volition and that they are caught by contact. Hence the broken and imperfect utterance on paper. Actual and complete contact would make the circuit and running capacity for trains of thought. Do you understand my expression.

(Yes satisfactorily.)

I desire to have the work complete, less jerky and disjointed than Richard gave us. (p. 160).

This was on September 30th, about a month after the communicator's death and it was natural enough to disclaim sufficient knowledge to answer my query intelligently. But it was doubly interesting to note the conviction that some of the messages were involuntary and unconsciously or unintentionally sent; for this was an idea that he mentioned in his Report as a suggestion of Mrs. Sidgwick, and facts later seemed to sustain the view. It tended toward the final explanation when it came by G. P. The communicator was apparently aware of the fact that unintentional messages might occasion the disjointed character of such communications as had so often come through Mrs. Piper. But he did not succeed in giving, in our terms, an intelligible explanation of the fact. He evidently tried it in the talk about "contact" which probably meant that more perfect relation to the mechanism of communication which experience may give and which controls acquire might eliminate confusion. He came to the subject but could not get through it clearly.

The next opening for the discussion was on October 20th, nearly a month later. After the communicator almost lost control I managed the situation dexterously and the control was sustained, and after a little explanation of it the communicator continued:—

I seem to be able to reason while I am at work and that pleases me. So much of the work recorded in the past lacked that function.

(That is correct.)

It always stood between me and my theories of what ought to be and often I said: This seems more like snatches of broken recollections detached and left solitary or wandering brain . . . . [Long pause.]

(Actions?)

No, photographs. You may recall what I am trying to tell you.

(Phantasms?)

Yes, fugitive phantasms unreal.

(I understand.)

unattached floating in ethereal waves caught retained expressed as if by subliminal states not able to distinguish between the attached and unattached. The embodied or fugitive phantasms. This I was forced to consider when I would most gladly have thrown it away as inadequate. (p. 171).

Those who read Professor James' Report will see characteristic ideas in some of the language here. It is not yet clear what explanation he would offer, but he is playing around a fairly intelligible account of his own difficulties when living. The consciousness of being able to reason while at work apparently indicates that it was unexpected from what we knew of the subject before and the view consists with the previous statement about involuntary messages: for he sees that some thoughts do not get through. "Broken recollections" is quite a reminiscent idea and the reference to what past records lacked is interesting as describing the fragmentary nature of the past results and the evident reflections on it with a probable desire to throw light upon it. The allusion to "floating and unattached phantasms" is a mode of speech quite characteristic of Professor James and probably reflects that semi-panteistic conception of things which he sometimes indulged hypothetically to account for the occurrence of messages at all and the fugitive and fragmentary nature of them. His great reservoir of human memories was another simile for the same idea. But he did not get to the explanation. His mind was only working toward

the issue and did not get beyond the descriptive account of his past ideas of it. I should not have suspected that the passage had any connection with the problem but for its final issue and the persistent effort to discuss it in accordance with a perfectly natural instinct after our own discussions on it when he was living.

The next allusion to it was on October 29th, and was spontaneous. After some statements about "much of the converse being as a mother talking baby talk to an infant in arms" he took up the main question without instigation from me.

My memory is clear on past events but the recollection does not embrace each detail any more than yours does. In other words my memory is not intensified or clarified by death. I speak only for myself.

(Yes I understand.)

But neither is my memory dimmed. That is a point you and I discussed I believe.

(Yes we did.)

It has been a problem with us in these matters. I find that the light is much more responsible for good or bad or rather superior and inferior power than I supposed. That also we discussed.

[Then follow some statements about the moral character of mediums and the effect on results, but it is irrelevant to the point, as it relates only to general influence of character on messages. Then the original point is resumed as follows.]

We have suffered in the past experiments because of unfinished statements and incomplete explanations that were never afterward referred to.

(Good, I understand.)

To return to my statement of the difference in lights. I have seen several and there is a great difference in energy. In some places I am all at sea because of the lack of capacity. I found no tools to use and no power to reach for my own. It takes all my energy to hold on and then the evidence is fitful and poor, but I am there just as much as where the power is stronger. (pp. 216-217).

The communicator hardly gets at a clear indication of the problem, but the allusion to the responsibility of the medium and the clearness of the memory, for himself, suggests a correction of the past view advanced by Dr. Hodgson and defended by myself. But he almost confirms that view by admitting that in some places he has no capacity to communicate. In making the medium responsible he expresses a view which the controls have always insisted on here, and that is that the difficulty of "expression" is caused by her limitations rather than the limitations of the communicator which Dr. Hodgson's and my own hypothesis had assumed. The full explanation of it, however, is not yet forthcoming. There is only the effort to come at the problem and possibly an abortive attempt to solve it. But when Dr. Hodgson, who takes it up next, gets at it he comes nearer the explanation which G. P. later makes clear. Professor James and I had discussed the problem when he was living.

The next communicator that touched upon it was Dr. Hodgson on the date of November 10th. It was taken up spontaneously.

Sometimes in the early work at the Piper light I could not understand the movements and changes and apparent desire for changes without power to express what the changes ought to be and I learned much as one would learn the desires of a child before it can talk.

(Good.)

Now for a long time I have wished to say that many of the lessons I have learned there have been of great use to me in communicating. I knew too much to be a good communicator at first. That is literally true.

(Good.)

I knew the complications and conditions and I could not forget them when I made my first efforts and the consciousness of them together with the consciousness of the desires of my friends hampered and hindered me. You know how that might occur.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Now much of that condition is worn away and I am doing better everywhere. William was never as intimately associated

with all the forms and methods of expression as I and he had not so many ideas and understandings to overcome. His one desire is to be slow and sure and let nothing come that is not of his own. No fugitive ideas to float in unawares into the communications. This is not a new phase of thought to you and me. The fugitive expressions you understand.

(Yes, perfectly.)

But we are seeking to eliminate all that as far as we can at least, but it is almost impossible to completely inhibit one's self and thought and let nothing but the pure present expression come. Try it yourself in the ordinary conversations of life and see how the fugitive drops in and is constantly bringing misunderstandings of the idea you are trying to express to your most intimate friend. It is all the same Hyslop. It is expression of personality in either sphere, but personality so distorted and tempered by other personalities that no one is definitely apart and alone. Verily no man liveth to himself. How true that is. We are a few degrees more sensitive than you in the world of physical expression, that is all. I sometimes think that the spirits who have nothing to lose or fear by the way of reputation or understanding give the clearest messages in an off hand manner about the physical life they have lived and the people who still live in physical surroundings.

This is just a word I have long wished to give you and so I rushed to the front with my message, before the wires were crossed.

(Good.)

You do not need to have me write R. H. but I do so that there may be no question in the records.

(Good.)

Your word might not be sufficient. (p. 254.)

Every word of this passage can be studied with interest from the point of view of the explanation which he is trying to give and which G. P. made so clear later, and this too from both its limitations and the extent to which it throws light upon the subject. Moreover it has the personality of Dr. Hodgson very evident in it wholly apart from the issue whether it is evidential or not, and besides it deals with only

one aspect of the complications in the problem. It is only after understanding the conditions that determine "fugitive expressions" that we can infer what the communicator is aiming at here. What we see is the claim that previous knowledge of conditions affecting communication hinders a systematic expression of identity and makes communication appear fragmentary, and the fact that the presence of other communicators enters into the determination of what comes through. The communicator can neither inhibit—a perfectly characteristic expression for Dr. Hodgson—his own marginal associations and their transmission nor the intrusions of other minds and their thoughts when they are near, aiding. The distinction between the scientific and the ordinary man as communicators is a good one and one that I have long thought was probably needed. It was apparent that ordinary persons made the best communicators, whatever the reasons, in matters affecting identity, and also just as apparent that they did not and possibly could not give any rational account of the causes for the confusions and mistakes that occur. Perhaps they did not know that such occurred. However this may be, it was as evident that highly developed intellects had difficulties to contend with in communication that did not hamper the ordinary person when it came to personal identity and other matters like the philosophy of it, and while being subject to the limitations which all communications must bear, they have to contend with the limitations of the psychic in respect to scientific conceptions. Perhaps too the atrophy of sense experiences in their earthly life and the predominance of abstract ideas in the scientific mind, would make the production of mental pictures less easy, while clear pictures can never be given of abstract conceptions. The very reverse of this would hold true of the mind untrained in the abstractions of literature and science, and their memories be more easily confined to the sense life of the past which is so necessary to clear evidence. It may still be easy enough to think of the scientific conceptions and to communicate them where the vehicle can be obtained for it, but in most cases mediumship has arisen with people having very little experience in the ideas of the scientific and developed

mind and so not easily adjustable to the combination of conceptions that are dominant there.

But all this is only an attempt to explain more at length what the communicator apparently had in mind when trying to discuss the problem. The most of it is intelligible on its own credentials, and especially to those who recognize the "mental picture" method of sending messages and the association of assisting personalities in communicating. But the important allusion which connects the passage with the later statement of G. P. is the reference to the difficulty of "inhibiting" one's own thoughts in the process, and asking me to "try it myself in the ordinary conversations of life." Here we have a picture of a mind in which the stream of consciousness is much more comprehensive than the part of it which is apparent to my friend in a conversation. The marginal associations are often numerous and extend over a wide field of memory, but we inhibit all the irrelevant matter in the subject of conversation and select that which is pertinent to the subject or what we wish our neighbor to know. But when communication is reading the mind of the sender the whole mass of thoughts, those we aim to express or communicate and the marginal associates, is accessible to the control or the medium and those are selected which are supposed to be intended by the sender. But in this *melée* of mental states, all connected by associations, both the necessity of selecting and the impossibility of transmitting all of them make the result appear disjointed and imperfect. It would be no less, perhaps more, confusing to get all of them. Then add to this the modifying influence of the control and the medium on the ideas transmitted to them and you have a conception of the complexities of the problem of communicating intelligibly.

This conception, however, was not made perfectly clear until G. P. put the keystone into the arch and my statement of the conception is made from the later revelation. The next allusion to it was a diversion on the part of Professor James in the process of telling me what he intended to do and giving me an apology for the risks to which the message might be exposed. It was on November 12th.

I have been making notes of things to recall here and it is possible that some will be dropped in without especial relevance but with the statement that it is to be so. You understand.

(Yes, I shall.)

It may look like a French exercise book, but it is to be done with malice aforethought.

(All right: all the malice prepense you like.)

so it will be absolved from the charge of dreams, dream talk, our old theme, a theory we more than once discussed and discarded and discussed again.

(Yes, we did.)

You remember.

(Perfectly. What about 'nigger talk'?)

That seemed dream talk at first but proved as good as anything. R. H. said it was pertinent to the right man. R. H. is at my elbow and G. P. at my back. (p. 278.)

There is no attempt here to offer an explanation. There is only the pertinent allusion to "dream talk" by which we had sought to explain much and so the recognition, more or less evidential in the reference to the subject, that it was one of the things that offered a perplexity to our problem. That is to say the subject for explanation is mentioned, but no clue offered to the explanation. On November 18th he returned to the subject largely in response to a hint from me, as the record will indicate.

Each time I come I seem stronger after the first moments of adjustment and it gives me pleasure to hear you say the work has been good in any degree. I seek to open the door of memory's chamber and bring forth her golden store and place it at your feet.

(I understand.)

I refer to the golden store because so much of the evidence seems valueless to the pseudo thinkers about you unless there is a trace of the capacities of the supposed communicator.

(Yes, good.)

Not all the evidence need be twaddle nor all the twaddle evidence.

(Good.)

It is the spirit of a man which survives, all that makes up his day, his weeks and years, tone, the quality, and I desire to prove and not to give you a sample of deteriorated or disintegrated capacity. Have I made it clear.

(Yes, if I assume that you have to overcome a trance on your side.)

I am not entranced.

(All right. Is there danger of going into a trance on your side and thus of preventing communications?)

On that subject we have had conversation before.

(Yes, how much is true?)

I passed into this life and we were obliged to assume that such was the case for two reasons. First we were informed so by Imperator: second the evidence submitted implied as much in many instances. But I must confess that the trance is absent in my case. I am conscious of G. P., R. H. and a group of friends who are now present as spirit identities and I am also conscious of you and of the atmosphere and sounds of your world or the room where you now are.

(Good.)

If I am entranced then Richard and George and you are. I warrant you I can remember the past as definitely as you can.

(Yes, why can't you tell it?)

We expect superhuman capacities I fear. I think, after I learn the use of the organism, I can transfer my capacity to recall or make judgments or estimates of men and work with facility as of the past (p. 292.)

There is further explanation of the difficulty of adjustment to mediumistic organisms which is not relevant to our present problem and can be pursued by the interested reader by going to the detailed record. The main point is the denial of a trance-like state and the assertion of a clear memory. Accepting it, the statement demolishes our elaborately constructed theory of dream-like conditions for communicating. It is interesting to see G. P. the next day allude, half facetiously, to the way in which the communicator "gave a black eye to some of Dick's theories." No explanation is offered by the communicator of the phenomena, tho recognizing both

the relation of Emperor or his regime in the Piper case to the hypothesis and the scientific necessity of supposing it for the time. This was characteristic of a scientific mind and not of Mrs. Chenoweth's habits of thought. The flat denial of the trance, however, and distinct affirmation of a clear memory, without offering a way out of the perplexity, simply left the problem unsolved.

It was some time before the explanation came and when it did come it was an accident. It occurred on May 6th, 1911, some months after all the previous quotations. I had told G. P., who was controlling, that I would not badger him with questions, but an interesting situation arose when I forgetfully and inadvertently asked a question. His reply began as follows:

Your question sets thought working but after awhile I will tell you if I can.

(All right. Go ahead.)

One good thing about working with you is your understanding of the difficulties and patience with us and we are never afraid to tell you the exact situation. The mental action is just the same here as with you only our mental action becomes visible to you for it expresses in words. The body is a cloak for mental processes. Do you know what I mean.

(I can get sufficient idea not to worry about that.)

Every word from another sets a train of thought in motion and if your thoughts find visible or audible expression you would be thought wandering in your mind the greater part of the time, but the whole process is almost instantaneous and so you are saved the ignominy of the charge. But with us the thoughts are found on the paper sometimes before we know it and so it takes practice and will to keep the line steady and express only what we desire. Much of the past in various quarters can be explained in this statement.\* (p. 682.)

This is a remarkable statement and wholly transcends any

---

\*There is an interesting passage in the case of Dr. Morton Prince which represents much the same conception of the matter as presented in the statement of G. P. Readers of that work will note that it was a case of triple or multiple personality and that one of these personalities called herself Sally.

psychological knowledge that Mrs. Chenoweth may be supposed to have, tho we may have to concede a conceivable subliminal origin for it. But I care not for the question whether we can prove it extraneous or subconscious. Its interest lies in its correct psychology and the conceivable application of it to the situation for communicating. It is, too, especially interesting to have it put in the mouth of G. P. who had so influenced Dr. Hodgson and myself in the formation of our theory of a dream state necessary or con-

---

She knew what the other personalities thought and did, except in the case of B IV, whose thoughts she did not know for a long time. But Sally claimed to be "awake" or conscious all the time. Dr. Prince asked her to describe the dreams of B I, Miss Beauchamp normal, and she told Dr. Prince many incidents which B I or Miss Beauchamp, did not tell him and would not recognize when told. When this fact was told Sally she was a little surprised that many things which she knew had not been told by B I, and when Dr. Prince told her what dreams had been told him by B I, Sally explained what went on when B I, or Miss Beauchamp, was asleep. It was correct psychology of the case and identified the normal and the sleeping state with each other very definitely. I quote what Sally told Dr. Prince describing what went on when Miss Beauchamp was asleep and indicating that only a part of the events got into the dream life which consisted of sporadic invasions into the territory of normal consciousness.

"When you are writing out anything, when you are writing as you are now, for example [taking notes], you seem to think that the only thing you see is the thing you are writing. Well, it isn't so. You see and you know a great many more things. You see things out here and out there [referring to peripheral vision], and you hear the music which is being now played in the street, and you feel lots of things—the wind blowing through the windows, and the sounds in the house, and all sorts of things like that. Now while you are thinking of what you are writing these things go through your mind as images or sorts of impressions. Some of them are not quite clear, but they are all there. They are not connected thoughts, but each makes its own image or impression, or sensation as the case may be. They are disconnected from one another. All this is going on all the time."

Dr. Prince remarks that he made numerous experimental observations to ascertain the truth of Sally's statements and corroborated them. Here is a description of the marginal and central states of normal consciousness and the same synthetic complexity affirmed of the dream life, a conception quite coincidental with the statement of G. P. and independent of his. Sally added, according to Dr. Prince: "What is going on in the daytime is going on all the time during sleep." Then Dr. Prince italicizes his own summary of her view: "*When she is asleep, she hears every sound just as when she is awake and listening.*"

comitant usually with the act of communication. There was no further allusion to it. It states in a nutshell the whole situation and without complication the primary cause of a number of things in the records. In order to make the whole discussion clear I shall take up an elaborate illustration of the whole process in its various aspects and state the psychological conditions in which all the agencies in the process are concerned. (1) There is the normal mental state of any person. (2) There is the difference between what this mental state is and what it appears to be to a person in conversation with us. (3) There is the difference between communication in the physical world and that in or from the spiritual world. (4) There is the mental state of the communicator and its relation to the control in the method of communicating by "mental pictures". (5) There is the mental state of the communicator and the limitations of the medium's mechanism for communication, whether communicating by "mental pictures" or by direct effort at control. Each of these may be elaborated and illustrated.

I take up the first of these. In each of us our mental state at any time is a very complicated mass of sensations and reflections, the latter under the influence of the laws of association and the former of the laws of external stimulus, and both affected by the act of attention. Now suppose I am engaged in conversation with a friend about politics. I am sitting in the open country. As I express myself to him on the franchise, for instance, I hear the song of birds and I see the trees about me, the mountains in the distance, a lake, a carriage coming along the road, a farmer working in the fields, the color of the flowers about me, an accidental dog fight, a coming thunderstorm, and a thousand other details of the field of sensation. At the same time these sensations may arouse memories of the past either in my personal experience or my reading, while all sorts of associations connected with the subject of conversation come up. The history of the human race in its development of the franchise, the men who were connected with it, the men and places connected with the present problem before us, and indirectly the death of Socrates by a vote of the Assembly,

the condition of the negroes when *Uncle Tom's Cabin* was written, the village polling places, the struggles for European freedom, and a thousand other things. But as G. P. states it, these "are instantaneous" and are inhibited from expression as irrelevant or unnecessary. My friend knows nothing about their existence. All he knows is the stream of connected thoughts affecting the topic of our conversation, tho the instant that any passing incident that may never be caught again comes before me I may interrupt the narrative or discussion to mention it and then proceed. But usually all the irrelevant states and memories are suppressed or inhibited and nothing but the pertinent facts finds utterance. The friend takes my mind for rational because it can hold itself to the subject. I have "the will to keep the line steady and express what I desire." But if he found me disturbing the thread of discourse to mention everything that came into consciousness he certainly would think me "wandering in mind." But as clearly remarked "the body is the cloak of the mind". It prevents the full expression of the personality and my friend only gets what I permit him to get. The body shields him from a view of the whole of my mental states. Hence the possibility of deceit and subterfuge and all the vices in the calendar.

But take the situation of a communicator. He is divested of his physical body. He is not communicating by speech in which he selects the ideas to be transmitted and inhibits those he does not require or desire to utter. He simply thinks and his mind acts just the same as ours. The laws of association determine what it shall have within its ken at any moment. The same instantaneous flight of consciousness over whole myriads of memories may occur in a moment. But it may hold attention on certain ones in this stream, or perhaps better expressed, complex world of thoughts, and thus emphasize them while the others are so transient that they may not be noticeable to the more sensitive receptivity of others in the vicinity. On the other hand, attention may be interrupted or fatigued, so that it becomes for a moment concentrated on another part of the stream, relevant or irrelevant. All this takes place with the living and we only suppose

the same conditions in the discarnate mind as a mind. But now instead of having a body either to inhibit the expression of them or to prevent their transmission, suppose that the transmission to control or medium is an affair independent of the will of the thinker; suppose it to be telepathy or something analogous to it, then it would be natural for much or all of this mental aggregate to be transmitted, depending, perhaps, on the measure of prolonged attention or the relative intensity of concentration on some incidents and the minimized interest in others. The momentary flashes of thought on some may give rise to the "fugitive phantasms", of which two communicators speak, and they either are lost or come in such fragments as to distort the main stream. Possibly it is the most vivid states that are transmitted, or those most under the concentrated attention which may be held long enough to be caught by the control, and others in the marginal field, or even in the margin of the subconscious, that are too fleeting to be caught, escape whether they are a part of the whole or an irrelevant associate of it. Possibly even that which does not occupy the attention of the communicator gets the involuntary attention of the control or the medium and becomes a part of the message, making it appear wholly wrong or wrongly related, or introducing confusion into an otherwise clear message. There are a thousand variations in this melée of possibilities. The attention of the communicator is arrested by the thought of a spring and he thinks of it as a large spring. This occasions a phantasm of some size and the control—Whirlwind or G. P. (p. 704)—has his or her attention arrested by the size and thinks of a lake, which is wrong. Or the communicator thinks of a window looking out into an open space with trees not apparently an emphatic part of the phantasm and the attention of the control is arrested by the larger aspects of the scene and thinks of an open field, instead of the orchard which would be more accurate. Then marginal events not temporally or spatially associated with such a scene may arise in the ken of the communicator's mind and be caught and supposed by the control to be a part of it, or a part intended as important may be neglected in the same way. If the communicator has suf-

ficient control over his attention he may be a good transmitter. If he is not such, his messages will present corresponding error and confusion. Hence in a thousand ways the psychologist will see the causes of distortion and confusion.

When it comes to direct control, instead of the two other minds involved in the method of "mental pictures" sent to a control or to a "tandem" control, there is the more direct relation to the physical organism and here, as said by communicators uniformly, experience is necessary, as with the child beginning to control its own organism, to enable the communicator to send any definite message at all. Then come the mental or neural habits of the medium and his or her limitations generally, to say nothing of the enormous number of thoughts and memories which would no more have an opportunity for expression than they do in our own life when thinking. This is just as true when we are actually expressing ourselves. By far the largest number of thoughts get no expression at all. How much more must this be true of an organism with which we are not familiar and which we have to learn to control, thinking automatically at the same time. The mental states which come in flashes would produce no effect on the organism and only those which we could hold tenaciously and long enough would have the strength to get through.

It is apparent to the reader that the work of Mrs. Chenoweth variously combines the method of "mental pictures" and direct control. The communicators tried the latter method and failed to present evidence of identity in sufficient quantity or with proper quality to make an impression and resort had to be made to the former method before results became impressive or clear. The complexity of the conditions connected with this "mental picture" method has already been remarked, but I want to recur to it for a moment to summarize its risks. The communicator passes in review certain incidents in his past, perhaps after having thought them over beforehand, with such associations as may naturally occur with them. The whole complex system of images are accessible to Whirlwind. She has to select those which

seem to be properly connected and to ignore those which are irrelevant. What her standard may be can only be conjectured along the analogies of normal life. Suppose it is the vividness or intensity of the images, or the prolonged existence of the "pictures" due to concentrated attention. This might afford a fair criterion of what the communicator *willed* to communicate. Spasmodic moments of diverted attention to relevant or irrelevant and associated incidents might bring them into the field of Whirlwind's attention and these find expression as no necessary part of the original events. Then the facts have to run the gauntlet of interpretation by Whirlwind's mind. Remember that the "pictures" are not always self-interpreting but must be symbolical to Whirlwind and she has to surmise their meaning and convey it by her own analogies or imagery to the sitter or to G. P. who in his turn may modify it before delivery. But Whirlwind's task is to make a rational whole of the "pictures" that come to her and this must be done in the same way that we make a rational stream of our own mental states in conversation. We select the pertinent incidents and neglect the irrelevant ones. I should add, also, that I think the same process goes on in the subconscious of Mrs. Chenoweth. I think the pictures come to it after all the modifications produced by the minds of Whirlwind and G. P., with such liabilities as any one may imagine under the circumstances.

Now I have an interesting analogy to this in some telepathic experiments. I was once performing some experiments with a subject for telepathy. I used geometrical diagrams, or similar figures. The first one was a triangle with a circle in it. The percipient got a triangle and with a circle in it. The second figure was a circle with a triangle in it and within the triangle a plus mark or cross. The percipient got two sides of the triangle with the plus mark or cross within them. The third figure was a roughly drawn pig. The percipient said it was either a goat or a pig. He was practically successful in all three of them. But after it was over he spontaneously remarked that he saw all sorts of figures before him—in the form of hallucinations—and selected those which seemed brightest or most vivid. Here

we have a distinct replica of what takes place in the work of Whirlwind and G. P. Whirlwind probably depended on the "pictures" which stood out in the complex whole as most vivid or as the most prolonged and, knowing the law or habit of that action, could safely rely upon this criterion for selecting the intended messages with such mistakes as might well be inevitable in that complicated melée of thought, itself much affected by the capacities of attention and association in the communicator.

Right at this point the objector to the spiritistic theory and defender of the telepathic hypothesis may say that I have admitted the analogy of the process with telepathy and actually outlined the process which we suppose takes place in the larger telepathy. If we assume the possibility of this selective telepathy on the part of the dead why may not it be the process in the living? Why may we not suppose that the medium is the recipient of all the present thoughts and the marginal associates of them in the sitter both conscious and subliminal, and then selects the appropriate ones just as I have supposed Whirlwind to do and thus we should have the large selective telepathy which I have so vigorously repudiated all along?

I do not question the right to put this objection. It is quite natural to entertain it, at least as an important precaution against hasty conclusions. It might even be more. But it must be remembered that I have never rejected the conceivability of such a view. I have simply repudiated it as without adequate evidence. In the next place I have duly considered it in its possible application and shown that there is a whole group of facts which directly contradict it.

- (1) There are the incidents which the sitter does not know.
- (2) There is the general limitation of the incidents to memories of deceased persons, with variations in fact that have no associations with the dead but are such as they might be interested in.
- (3) There is the almost total failure to get the mental states of the sitter which he desires to have obtained and to answer his questions, or to select any of the associates of his thoughts, as would have to be the case in this automatic process of communicating the total mass

of thoughts. (4) There are the failures to get many desired communicators and the unexpected appearance of those whom you may not know, but whose presence is made intelligible by the circumstances and associations explained. (5) There is the organic unity of the facts that illustrate the natural laws of association of a deceased communicator and not the sitter's, as in cases where the sitter knows some of the facts and not all of them, or in cases where the sitter remembers one incident and the communicator seems never to have been impressed with it. (6) The nature of the mistakes and confusions indicates a discrepancy between communicator and sitter which would not appear in telepathy. For instance, the spirit or control makes mistakes which the sitter would not make in association, as relating events to a particular person that can be proved to have no such relation, or giving facts that are not verifiable or that find verification only after long and difficult inquiry of remote persons. (7) There is the mention of names and events not known to the sitter that have been learned subsequently to death and yet are natural on a spiritistic theory but too complicated to be referred to telepathy without making it much larger than the evidence permits. It is possible that I could get further types of difficulty, but they would be modifications or special instances of the types already mentioned and these suffice to make the case clear enough to intelligent students. No believer in telepathy as an adequate explanation could escape the extension of it which involves the transmission of all living memories in all persons to the psychic, and that cannot be tolerated in a scientific court until it presents some evidence in its support that does not involve the memories of the dead or the tendency to select those as distinct from the properly associated memories of the living.

Careful students will readily perceive that the limitations of the facts and the peculiar evidence of intelligence independent of the mind of the medium and of the sitter decide strongly for the spiritistic theory and all the complications tend in the same direction. I shall not point out the details that indicate independent intelligence, but leave that to the

accomplished student of psychology. It would take too much space in this report to more than touch upon it as I have done.

But having answered the objections from the standpoint of telepathy I want to mention certain features of the explanation which G. P. puts forth that are most interesting and intelligible. I have said that Whirlwind has to select the incidents from the mass of associated mental states in the mind of the communicator. But this view of it is limited also by the selection which the communicator also makes. His attention and prolonged adhesion to an incident or set of incidents must be a help, taking the analogy from the experiments for telepathy as a guide. Those which are the "fugitive phantasms" in the series are the thoughts on which no attention is concentrated. They come in a flash and are gone and are too rapid to take any place in the apperception of Whirlwind. She has often, because of this rapid flow of "pictures" to abbreviate the whole as we do in listening to a lecture, and then this is affected by the discordant relation between her own thoughts and the slowness of transmitting them by writing, or the influence of obliviscence on G. P.'s thoughts as he has to write them. The marginal thoughts, which often might be the most important ones, may pass in a flash and not reach Whirlwind or G. P. clearly, or they may accidentally seize the attention of the communicator while the main incident is lost, and error or confusion creeps into the communication. All sorts of possibilities reveal themselves here.

It is probable that view will afford some help in the difficulty with proper names. I have already alluded to the fact that in thinking of people, especially if we are visuels, we think of the face or form and the name may be a secondary matter, or recalled as a consequence of this picture, or even not recalled at all owing to the inadhesive connection between names and the person in mind. But this might be only a minor difficulty. The primary obstacle would probably be the same that we have with proper names or unfamiliar words through the telephone or in vision. In this connection it must be remembered that the transmission of proper names in the Piper case, and to a less extent with Mrs. Chenoweth.

is connected with phonetic laws. The difficulty here might arise with the necessity of adjusting the process of transmitting a name to a different method from that of visual images. If the scenes can easily be pictured the names can be made so only by the slower process of spelling them out, as takes place in the process very frequently with Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Smead, less frequently with Mrs. Chenoweth. Proper names are auditory phenomena altogether, except as written and spelled out. The ordinary process of thinking of memory pictures of men and things is natural and the association of their names with them is an auditory phenomenon, so that it would take a pause or alteration of method to convert them into their visual equivalent, and this might cause the whole "picture" and its associates to disappear. Or the proper name, when it is pictured in any form, might be in too rapid a flash to be caught. Moreover, in addition to this rapidity of occurrence there is another phenomenon worthy of notice. In our dream life we cannot remember its fleeting imagery unless we have time to concentrate attention on it at the moment of waking. The trance of the medium or the fact that the impression is subconscious may cause much obliviscence and hence with rapid flashes of pictures they may easily be forgotten even when caught. This holds good for both control and medium, so that, unless slowly spelled out, proper names might easily vanish or miss apperception. In any case the very nature of their relation to the objects of memory would affect the process of their communication.

I think it will be clear to psychologist and layman alike how this hypothesis may explain the general characteristics of the messages and the difficulties of communication. But the next thing to notice is the relation of it to the communication of G. P. regarding it through Mrs. Piper, which had originally suggested the hypothesis of a dream state or trance for communicating. It will be most interesting to see how it perfectly consists with that statement and gives it an interpretation which we did not naturally see at the time. Let me quote that statement. On February 15th, 1894, through Mrs. Piper G. P. wrote:—

"Remember we share and always shall have our friends in the dream life, i. e. so to speak, which will attract us forever and ever, and so long as we have any friends *sleeping* in the material world;—you are to us as we understand sleep, you look shut up as one in prison, and in order for us to get into communication with you we have to enter into your sphere, as one like yourself asleep. This is just why we make mistakes as you call them, and get confused and muddled, so to put it H." Cf. *Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XIII pp. 362-370, and *Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV p. 240.

Through Mrs. Chenoweth the same communicator, purporting to discuss the same subject, alluded to sleepiness and drowsiness at times. But examination of this passage from Dr. Hodgson's Piper Report will show that more than the question of the communicator's mental state is involved. The communicator evidently has in mind the condition of the medium and sitter as well, and perhaps also the phenomena of normal sleep when so many communications seem to occur with the living. But he asserts the dream state of the dead as necessary to communicate and accounts for mistakes and confusions by it and the similar state of the living, whether sitter or medium in the normal or trance state. Now let us see how the new, or apparently new, point of view applies to the older statement.

In the first place the statement that, if our own thoughts became visible or audible to a friend in conversation, we should be thought wandering in mind describes a condition of things even in our normal and waking life that is exactly like our dream life. There are few or no inhibitions on our conscious life. The inhibitions are applied to our expressed or motor manifestations of consciousness. There are also no inhibitions on our dream life. The complex of mental states is much the same in both and as we remember but a part of the dream life so we also remember but a part of our waking life, that which is in the field of attention and interest. Compare with this what Dr. Prince says of Sally in his case of a dissociated personality. Miss Beauchamp told her dreams, but Sally said that there were many more such things in Miss Beauchamp's dream life exactly like those she

told. Sally even said she did not know what Dr. Prince meant by dreams, as she affirmed that Miss Beauchamp's mind acted in sleep exactly as it did in her normal waking life and that she, Sally, could see no difference. It was conscious all the time, feeling stimuli and responding to them with a mental stream of action precisely as in normal conditions. Cf. "The Dissociation of a Personality" pp. 326-333. Also p. 60 of this Report.

Hence to an outside observer our normal state might be compared to what we describe in that normal state as our dreams, a confused chaotic and irrational mass of mental states. Now the communicator is in that state communicating and cannot prevent the control or medium from getting the whole of it or many parts of it not necessarily associated in that way during the life of the communicator, and hence in so far as we can compare the uninhibited stream of consciousness to a dream state we could compare that of the communicator to it, and G. P. may be supposed to have had exactly this view of it in mind when communicating the passage quoted to Dr. Hodgson. To the control either the confused mass of "mental pictures" or the fragmentary portion of them that comes to him or her must seem like the disjointed members of a dream and when they get to us they certainly have that semblance. Hence in describing the facts G. P., in the passage just quoted, appeared to characterize the state in which they occurred, but in the light of his later and fuller account of the conditions he makes the whole case much clearer, while it brings out the complications associated with communications, especially with the method of transmission by "mental pictures" and "tandem" controls.

I have remarked the fact that the explanation involves more or less of identification between the normal and the dream life of the individual living person. In common parlance we suppose that the distinction between normal consciousness and dreams is radical. But it was reserved for poetry rather than psychology to discover and state the exact truth about the facts.

Im holden Wahn der wachen Träume  
Geht allen fast das Leben hin.

Or perhaps better Calderon:

In dieser Wunderwelt ist eben  
Nur ein Traum das ganze Leben.  
Und der Mensch das seh' ich nun  
Träumt sein ganzes Sein und Thun.  
Kurz auf diesem Erdenballe  
Träumen was sie leben alle.

The reason that we do not ordinarily discover this resemblance or identity between the normal and dream life is the simple fact that the contents of the one seem to have a rational connection while those of the other are chaotic and disjointed. We rationalize the normal life by concentrating attention on the incidents in consciousness that are useful and relevant to the purpose in mind at the time and ignore the marginal incidents in the indirect field as inutile for our purpose. And so they are, but, as Jennie P. once remarked, they are nevertheless a part of our personality and a part of the total organic whole of consciousness at the time, and when this is examined it has the characteristics of the dream life very distinctly, unnoticed usually because the unattended incidents sink quickly into oblivion and are not remembered as a part of the whole to which they really belonged. The remembered and rational facts are those arrested by attention and held within the ken of memory. In the dream life we do not attend. We wander, tho there is perhaps a sort of seven leagued attention skipping from incident to incident as the panorama passes and retaining enough to give the crazy-quilt effect which we observe in dreams usually. But the processes of action and association are the same as in the normal life, or those in normal life are the same as in dreams, so that the distinction is superficial, a fact which has to be called to our attention before we notice it. In any case it justifies the psychological analysis of the problem which G. P. gave it.



Now before taking up how this new explanation is related to the older hypothesis, supplanted or modified by it, let us see what this new point of view explains.

(1) It makes very clear how confusion and mistake may occur and this wholly apart from the complexity of the process. It might also account for much of the so called triviality of the messages. In the proof of personal identity this so-called triviality is absolutely necessary and the term "triviality" becomes purely relative. Anything which proves a profound law in the universe is not trivial in that relation. Besides the very nature of one's sense experiences and memory limits a thousandfold, one might say infinitely, more the images which can be effective for the proof of personal identity than any of the more interesting data for the developed mind. But all this aside, the main point is the fragmentary and confused nature of the messages which is just what would be expected in this complicated process of communicating, connected as it is with the lack of inhibition on the mental states liable to transmission.

(2) The hypothesis also explains easily the differences in communicators, which the dream or trance hypothesis may not. Not all persons have the same power of clear thinking. They may have more defective memories for details, or they may have defective powers of concentration or attention, and this would affect the "pictures" which have to be sent to the control. My father, for instance had excellent powers of concentration in life and a good memory. This meant that he had access to the stores of memory and could then hold them long enough or clearly enough to make their selection from the marginal field of consciousness more easy. Now it was characteristic of my cousin Robert McClellan, a trait, too, that marked the whole connection of McClellans, that their minds were less endowed with the power of attention or systematic thinking. They were quick-minded, but association and immediate expression characterized them more than the deliberative habits of my father. Possibly this difference and this characteristic affected the nature of his messages. At any rate, whether we can apply the rule to any special case, it is clear that, where the mental

stream is too rapid and where the pictures cannot be held long or clear enough, the communications are likely to be more fragmentary and unrecognizable. This difference in results we actually find, so that the personal equation in communicators may well be explained by this new hypothesis.

(3) Another important thing explained by it is the constant intimation of communicators through Mrs. Piper that we living people are in a dream state. In the passage quoted from G. P. we are said to be in a dream state all the time. It may not be clear that this is what he means, as it is possible to interpret a part of the reference as meaning that our sleep life is the time when they can converse or communicate with us best. But one interpretation quite consistent with this also is that which indicates a comparison of our normal life with sleep and dreams. My brother Charles, or apparently he, in one of his communications through Mrs. Piper, says, referring to the illness from which he died, "I had it and when I waked up I found I had really been dreaming." This of course might refer to some supposed comatose condition after death, as this is often asserted. But immediately he adds: "Are you happy while you are going on dreaming?" (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XIII., p. 331). In this it is clear that the reference is to my normal life and from what we have seen would be the appearance of our minds to an external observer the description would be accurate enough. I do not know that such description of our normal lives is general with different psychics but it was frequent through Mrs. Piper and may have reflected the convictions of the control.

(4) It will also very clearly explain the abrupt changes of subject and incident in communication. This is just what takes place in dreams because we do not remember the connecting links of association that give rise to apparently disconnected and disjointed events. In the communications the control either does not get these links or cannot take time to tell all of them, as the stream of the communicator's consciousness goes on. In addition to the abrupt breaks in the communicator's stream of "mental pictures" the control may widen the breaks and even leave out the important ele-

ment in the whole or lose the fact which would show the connection. The whole jerky character of the messages would thus come under this explanation.

(5) The most important fact that it explains, is the difficulty of cross references. One of the perplexities of the problem has been the rarity and imperfection of cross references; that is, the repetition of the same messages through different psychics. But this process of communication with complicated relation to the mental stream of the communicator, as explained, very clearly indicates a fundamental difficulty with cross reference. It is based upon the simple fact that we cannot produce exactly the same group of mental states at any two successive moments, and this will be especially true of widely separated moments. I may have hundreds of incidents in to-day's group that would not recur tomorrow or even an hour hence, and the changes may occur every time I refer to the same incident. Even parts of an incident may not be repeated five minutes afterward. So if the control has to pick out the proper elements of the organic whole it will have the difficulty of determining which must be selected. But suppose that the control or the medium has to report more or less automatically, as seems to be the case, the incidents that are telepathically transmitted to him or her from the communicator, even if he or she knew what was intended he would have to send what automatically came to him. The same incident might not repeat itself thus in a dozen or a hundred trials. Then suppose, as is usually the case, that the control is different. He does not know what the intention of the communicator may be, unless expert in the process of selecting the more vivid from the less vivid mental states, or, where it is not a process of selection, is properly sensitive to the intended messages of the sender in distinction from the marginal and associated states which might be as easily communicated. In any case the difficulties of cross reference become perfectly intelligible in the light of this explanation by G. P., and we have only to have the means of multiplying experiments sufficiently to increase the chances for coincidences in identical messages.

(6) It is possible that this new point of view will explain

the differences that are manifest between undeveloped and developed minds. It has been noticed all along in the scientific investigation of this subject that highly developed minds have more meager results for their efforts than those untrained intellectually. Now intellectual minds not only think rapidly, but they do not think so distinctly in images. They run over the sensory data of their experience without dwelling on them. In fact they do not think in terms of them at all, or only with a selection of those that either seem best, symbolically or on which the attention may pause for a moment, and which, if sent as a message, would not indicate to another what the subject of thought is. The intellectual mind deals more in abstractions, less in sensory concretes, and in the process of thinking to communicate, the transitions of the mind will be both more rapid than the untrained and will also show a more chaotic appearance to a foreign mind that gets access to its fleeting actions, "fleeting phantasms", the sensory images lingering less time or not giving a consistent picture for the control. The common mind that has done its thinking in a series of concrete images or dwells only on its memories without abstractions at all will make the best communicator, because the "mental pictures" will present an intelligible whole to the intermediary. Less depends on the control's selection of the "pictures" than in the case of the intellectual mind.

(7) The new point of view may also throw light upon intrusions which the dream theory does not. The control must be the victim of all sorts of thoughts that may play on his or her mind. He may be in the position of a person in a social company and determines the communicator by an act of attention, just as we do in our life. We know how a loud voice or some important word will catch the subliminal and attract attention to disturb hearing and apperception for the conversation we are having with a friend. Now intensity of images or those about the communicator may distract attention for a moment and bring in "mental pictures" that are entirely foreign to the images coming from the proper communicator. Then the alteration of attention on the part of the control to change communicators may take place without

informing the subconscious of the psychic of this act and messages may thus come apparently from one person that really come from another. All that we have to keep in view is the organic mass of "mental pictures", central and marginal, in the communicator and the selective attention of the control or of the psychic.

(8) There is another group of facts which this new point of view explains very clearly. Those who are familiar with the Piper Reports in the Phinuit days will recall a number of phenomena which appeared as a great perplexity to some people and especially to the layman, but which were the subject of jeers by the Podmorean intellect. This type of mind could not wait for an explanation and rushed in to talk glibly about guessing and similar irrelevant hypotheses rather than suspend judgment. I was probably caught in that trap myself, tho I do not recall being so much perplexed as some people and certainly not so sure of guessing as the average Philistine. I refer to those incidents in which Phinuit would say to B to-day what he should have said to A the day before. For instance, A had a sitting yesterday and a number of things would be said to him which were evidently not due to chance. The next day B had a sitting and among things said to him not due to chance would be things which were irrelevant or false to him and perhaps naturally enough attributed to guessing. But inquiry might show that they were either said to A the day before and were relevant and supernormal to him, or they ought to have been said to him, and conveyed information of a supernormal kind.

This phenomenon is very easily explained by the "mental picture" process of communicating with its implied view that much is transmitted to the control that is not sent through either from intentional inhibition or from inability to transmit all that comes to him. Now Phinuit got his messages in pictures often, whether visual or auditory, just as does Jennie P. and G. P. in the present record. Now assuming, as the facts in this record teach us, that the marginal and central—latter intended—incidents are communicated to the control, we have more sent than he can transmit at

the time through the medium and some of them lie there in the mind to be recalled by associations of all kinds at later sittings, being the treasure of the subliminal, so to speak, as we would describe it in the living mind, and with the automatic or echolalic condition of the medium's mind, they might come through at all sorts of irrelevant moments, subject to inhibition only in proportion as the control can exercise that function at all. To exemplify the matter in the concrete, Phinuit would get names and incidents yesterday which he repeated to-day to a person to whom they were false, or he would give to-day incidents and names which were false to the sitter but which ought to have been given the day previous and would have been true to the sitter of the day previous. They were simply a part of the total mass of consciousness transmitted to him the day before and not transmitted or transmissible at the time, but becoming the spontaneous products of recall and transmission at later periods, under the automatic or echolalic conditions that prevailed. The whole mystery of that perplexity is removed and made a very simple matter. The very nature of the phenomena, after admitting the existence of a trance, should have suggested the inadequacy of guessing to account for them and even to have defended them against ordinary suspicions. But the Philistine can never wait. He must have an explanation of everything, no matter how absurd his explanation. The phenomena support the hypothesis that there may be in the subconscious of the medium facts which have been supernormally acquired and used at inappropriate moments just as it may use the stores acquired normally. But the chief point to keep in mind is the fact that a group of facts which had seemed a perplexity before now easily yields to the nature of the process in communicating. This process, as the record shows, at least claims to indicate that the communicator cannot inhibit the transmission of marginal facts in consciousness which may either get confused with the central and intended ones or become the material of unconscious messages later by the control. Besides assuming the limitations of the medium in the transmission, not being able to transmit all that comes to the control at the time the

communicator is thinking, we have a situation in which only a part of the total is transmitted and the rest may either be sent at irrelevant moments or confused with material that is relevant but more or less vitiated by incidents that are false in that connection, tho true in another.

Let me illustrate the situation in any case of recalling memories or instigating associations after the manner of Mr. Dorr's experiments with Mrs. Piper, cross references and giving the contents of posthumous letters.

A communicator wants to send a message about a run-away breakdown on the way home from a fishing trip. The memory of a stream of water comes into consciousness as a chronological antecedent of the main incident and as necessary to make it clear. The communicator dwells on it and describes a fish in connection with it, perhaps only as symbolical of the time and place. This awakens associations of other fishing events or even events having no resemblance to it but possessing various grounds of connection. But the mind does not dwell on them, tho they happen to flash into consciousness with some vividness, and the communicator passes to the main incident, the breakdown, and lingers on it. But the mind of the control or medium has caught the associated incidents and, while giving them, the imagery of the breakdown passes away and makes no impression on the control or medium. It is lost. But in the passage it recalls an accident on a railway somewhat resembling the one in mind, and it is told clearly.

The sitter recalls many cases of fishing and does not perceive the meaning of the one told. The associated incidents have no such relation to it as would make them useful in estimating the one the communicator was primarily occupied with, and perhaps only some of them can be verified. The railway accident has only a subjective connection with the incident which the communicator intends to send and if verifiable may be interesting, but it will puzzle the sitter to know why it was associated with fishing and he can never ascertain until he finds the missing link in the communications.

On another occasion the same communicator tries to make the matter clear by repeating the incident. He gets the

breakdown through but nothing else, not enough to connect it with the fishing, and that may recall to the sitter some other accident than the one mentioned, especially if some associates of another accident slip into the process, as they well may in such a complicated and rapid set of actions. Then when it comes to trying the incident in cross reference I may get nothing but a reference to a fish and a description of a man fishing. The same group of incidents may not even be thought of, but granting that they are, the probability that the attention of the control will be arrested by the same elements as in the first case may be very small, especially if we suppose that association is fertile in recalling a large number of incidents connected with the main one intended.

Suppose again that a communicator is trying to name a specific book in his library that is unique and would be a good piece of evidence. It is possible that the most distinct sensory image in his mind is the library as a whole. This comes into the mind and possesses it from the mere force of earlier habit, or, if it does not linger especially, this habit may give it the clearness and intensity that strikes the control's attention and the library as a whole is first described and some dominant picture in it which has no connection with the book the communicator is most interested in communicating. Then if the communicator is never sure when he succeeds in getting a message through or of what he gets through he may go away with the feeling that he has succeeded when he has not even given a hint of what he intended to do. Suppose the object that strikes the control's attention is a large white calendar and that is described and recognized as correct. Then the communicator goes to another medium and tries to mention the same book. The control or the medium gets the picture of a book and a shelf and a white paper box on top of it. The sitter recognizes the same library from the paper box and marks that incident correct. But he has not gotten the cross reference which the communicator intended, which was a special and unique book. The marginal associates may have displaced its image in the attention of the control. A third medium gets a large book with something like hieroglyphs in it and the general im-

pression of a large room with other books. A fourth gets a picture of a Bible bound in morocco and looking very old, with a frontispiece in it.

Now if the reader will imagine that the real book intended by the communicator was a very old Gutenberg Bible bound in sheep and with a frontispiece in it, while the regular family Bible was comparatively new and bound in morocco, but used much, he will understand what the difficulties are in any form of communicating, especially that of "mental pictures." Everything depends on the mental control which the communicator exercises over his recollections, their duration in consciousness or their intensity, and the intelligent ability of the control or of the medium's subconscious to correctly select from the panorama that passes before him.

I must repeat and emphasize the consideration that the communicator may know or remember very little about what actually penetrates the veil, and when we also take into account that we cannot repeat exactly the same group of incidents in memory twice over, owing to the change of mood or cue and the variation of the marginal associates, we may well understand the limitations in the cross correspondences which the English Society has presented and discussed at such great length. Then come the differences of subliminal influences on what is transmitted. The different mental habits of each medium and the different abilities of the controls with differences of selection in the group of incidents in the pictures will increasingly complicate the situation.

I should add, however, that this substitution of the new point of view for the trance or dream theory does not set the latter aside for all cases. It is in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth that the new point of view is conspicuously dominant and it may still remain true that, for extreme types of "possession" mediumship something like a trance prevails. It is even quite possible that a tinge of it exists in the phenomena of Mrs. Chenoweth and that it is a subliminal contribution that denies or doubts it. The fact that would point most distinctly to this is the apparent amnesia at times which seizes the communicator. This is often noticeable in

the phenomena of Mrs. Chenoweth as well as those of Mrs. Piper. It is possible, however, that this apparent amnesia is due to the associates of constrained attention which can completely simulate amnesia, and if allowance be made for this simulation the argument for a trance or anything clearly resembling it will be less cogent.

Another thing that must be kept in view is the fact that the two positions are not exclusive of each other. They are very closely related and the new view seems to contradict or displace the older one because of the assumption that has prevailed regarding trance and sleep that they are wholly distinct as mental states from normal consciousness when their connection may be really very close. Hence the possible difficulty of the dream or trance theory is the implication of those terms as to the nature of the states assumed to imply a cleavage between the normal and the dream life which may be less than we ordinarily imagine, and in fact I think is less. But this aside, and making concessions to the fact that these terms tend to convey an illusion as to the real facts, there may still be some conditions affecting recall and communication that create a close resemblance to dream or trance. The analogies of aphasia and the associates of constrained attention are two facts suggesting the conditions, tho not making them explicitly what we wish to know. But in the extreme types of "possession" control, which are entirely distinct from the "mental picture" method of sending messages, even tho they imply a more or less similar relation of the communicator's consciousness to the organism of the medium, we can conceive that the area of the communicator's consciousness is more or less retrenched as it is in trance and dreams. The "mental picture" process here explained in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth involves two minds besides her own and this might allow for perfect clearness of the communicator while sending messages, and the direct method might involve disturbances in the mind of the communicator, coming from various sources in the action of the medium's mind and organism, that would completely simulate trance or dreams. Hence I do not think we are forced to wholly set aside what the trance or dream theory stood for,

tho we hesitate to employ the terms in which it was embodied. It simply does not happen to apply to the method prevalent in the work of Mrs. Chenoweth, even in the direct communications, where the "possession" is very imperfect and excludes less subliminal influences than in the case of Mrs. Piper and similar cases of mediumship.

It is possible, perhaps probable, that the hypothesis of a dream state would explain the difficulties of cross reference as well as the present one and it would also account for the triviality and many of the mistakes and confusions. But it does not satisfy the purposive character of the main incidents and the evident intelligence shown in their choice and transmission. This new hypothesis covers the ground better and gives more unity to the whole process and perhaps explains some things better than the dream theory. I think, however, I may leave the application of it to the phenomena as a whole to intelligent readers after this brief account of it. The more important matter is to see how much of a change in view is involved in this new explanation.

In the first place it does not contradict the dream theory. It simply renders it less necessary and possibly not necessary at all. It certainly greatly limits the evidence for it, if it does not wholly displace that evidence. There still remain facts and statements that suggest some sort of abnormal mental state required for communicating. For instance the controls still use the language that describes an unclear state of consciousness. They say that the communicator is not "clear" at times or that certain communicators are not "clear". This is not at all conclusive or inexplicable on the new point of view, but it seems to imply more than the conditions that I have described. Whirlwind also once turns Professor James summarily out of "the witness box" because he is "dreaming" in his philosophic reflections. That too may be consistent with the new point of view, but such expressions awaken curiosity as to exactly what they mean, and some persons seem wholly unable to communicate at all, and others easily go to pieces as they communicate. All this, however, is not at all conclusive for a dream or trance state. It only indicates that we have not yet, even by the

new hypothesis, resolved all the perplexities in the problem.

There is another point also that shows how near the two hypotheses are to each other. The messages as recorded show many of the characteristics of dreams, neglecting the teleological feature of them. The confusion, the displacement of the relation of incidents, the mistakes, and the fragmentary nature of the contents present the aspect of dreams as we normally know them. Hence the dream theory had its superficial evidence at least. It had the claim of the communicators apparently. The new hypothesis also insists on the analogy of dreams and deliria, but it assigns a more comprehensive explanation of this analogy without admitting the conception of dreams which common life has of them. It concedes the descriptive functions of the comparison with dreams, trances and deliria, but does not grant the conditions which accompany dreams. In other words, the *contents* are like dreams etc., but the *process* is not like them. This is a most important distinction, tho it admits the close connection between the two theories. It implies that the resemblance is brought about by the complexity of the processes and conditions affecting communication and not due to the psychological appearances of the facts. In the dream theory we are too apt to suppose, as we do in normal life, that the whole mental contents of the communicator comes to us when it is only a part, and if the whole came to us it would be much more than the intended messages. In the picture theory we are supposed to get only a part of the communicator's mental states. In the new hypothesis we also get less, but if we got all it would be more like dreams than what we now get, at least in respect of chaotic appearance. In the dream theory we exclude the will and the intellect from the determination of the contents. In the new hypothesis we admit their function into the process. In the dream process the whimsical aspects are due to the automatic and unregulated influence of association. In the new hypothesis these associations go on as automatically and capriciously as they please, but they do not determine absolutely what we shall get. The selective agency of both communicator and con-

triel is implicated. In ordinary dreams, and hence in the dream theory, no inhibitions act on the occurrence of mental states. In the new hypothesis the inhibitions on what the communicator *would* send may act, but he cannot regulate the process by which the mental states are sent. If, then, we assume any abnormal condition at all be assumed, in fact, it may be confined to such as affects the action of memory and association and this may be due to the complications of the conditions under which any communication is possible. Of this we know nothing as yet, except in the most general way. But the primary point to be emphasized is the resemblances and difference between the old and the new theory. The new one seems to make the phenomena clearer and to offer the preferable and more rational explanation. It may leave much to be investigated still, but it consists with more facts than does the dream hypothesis and gives it the priority as a provisional hypothesis at least, and we may well await further investigations either to decide between them or to supplant both with a better explanation.

We could perhaps just as well say that the process described confirms the dream or trance theory. As it identifies the general process and contents of normal consciousness with the dream life, we might say that the condition of the communicator *is* that of a dream. The complex and whimsical play of association is there in all its contents. But we at the same time assume that the process and contents are identical with the normal life which has to be described as equally complex and whimsical when its whole contents are taken into account. This, of course is abandoning the ordinary distinction which we make between dreams and normal consciousness and for the moment at least this is perfectly justifiable. It brings into the foreground the fact that there is actually a closer relation between the two states than our ordinary distinctions recognize and explains the contents of the communications in so far as the subject's mental states are responsible for the confusion of irrelevant incidents with the relevant and for the wandering character of the communications. Of course, we cannot insist too rigidly upon viewing

the facts from the standpoint of the dream life alone, as we could just as well describe the condition of the communicator as normal instead of abnormal. In identifying the two states, normal and dream life, we must not forget that either term will describe the condition of the communicator, and we conceive of it as dream like only to mark the capricious and mosaic nature of the contents of the communications which may be subject to laws of transmission co-ordinated with the laws of their recall to the consciousness of the communicator.

The confusion, however, is increased by the law of transmission, whatever it is, and by the conditions under which communicating of incidents. This magnifies the appearance of dream life in the communications, tho it may not be there even so much as it appears by looking at the transmitted contents alone in their superficial character. Thus two things conceivably affect the contents of what is transmitted. First the laws of association and intensity of mental states in the communicator and secondly the selection on the part of the the control or the medium has to work in effecting the control or the mind of the medium from the organic mass of images transmitted.

The apparent analogies with aphasia on which I comment in a previous Report (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV. pp. 290-323) will be suggested here by the possible relation between the communicator's reproduction of his memories and the obstacles to their expression or transmission. All depends on the vividness of their presentation in the mind of the communicator or the prolongation of the imagery in consciousness, analogous to the limitations of the aphasic patient in the living. Of course, in the living we have not determined anything but the nature of the obstacles to the expression of ideas in the aphasic subject, and may be uncertain whether the ideas are ever or always there for expression. In some cases we have found, in fact, that the ideas are present, but that central neural difficulties prevent expression or transmission to the observer. The communicator in mediumistic phenomena meets a like obstacle in

the lack of adjustment to the physical organism of the medium and added to this, perhaps, will be the defects of mental imagery and states for transmission through any organism, however perfect and well adjusted it may be.

I may add here, too, another possibility. Just as the thoughts of the communicator or the control may be transferred to the subconsciousness of the medium and thus modify its stream, so the thoughts in this subconscious may be transferred to the control or communicator and modify and confuse his ideas, interfusing the two personalities in this manner. I have seen apparent evidence of this very process, and its assumption will clearly explain the fusion in personality which we so often mark in the communications and will make intelligible especially the appearance of impersonation.

A study of the laws which determine the relation between the central and marginal fields of consciousness would throw light upon this matter. One thing that we observe in the communications is the apparently sporadic and remote character of many incidents, which those who knew the communicator, would never expect as proof of identity, while they actually prove it more effectively than many intentional messages. For example, take the allusion to difficulties of breathing in connection with Professor James by Mrs. Smead when he was evidently concerned with other incidents; or my father's allusion to pollywogs in connection with the McClellan spring and the reference to picturesque scenery associated with sheep-washing. The picturesque scenery was a marginal element in the picture as a whole and while an integral part of the place was not essential to the incident which he was describing. Diversions of this sort may be due to the selective process on the part of the control or medium, but they illustrate differences between marginal and central elements of the communicator's mind, and the various conditions affecting these and the selection by the control or medium may create the apparent analogies with aphasia in the process of transmission.

It may be worth remarking also that, in identifying the waking and the dream life of our normal existence we may

also be furnishing a basis for comparison with a spiritual life. If our rational life is after all fundamentally the same as the dream life of sleep, the difference being, not in the mental contents, but in the mere absence of sensibility in sleep, we may well imagine the possibility that the disembodied life would be the same as sleep, in so far as physical sensibility is excluded from it, but having all the functions of normal consciousness. It might be attended with etherial sensibilities, if we choose so to regard its possibilities or have evidence for its being a fact, but yet it might just as well have the same marginal and central contents as we find in normal life where we neglect the marginal contents in the interest of the central which represents the utile and social elements of the whole. The dream character of such a life, therefore, would not be in the conception of its chaotic and disorderly contents, but in its domination of subjective contents, its idealizations, whatever etherial stimuli we may suppose.

The analogies with aphasia, the associates of constrained attention and the mal-adjustment to material conditions still remain intact and it may be that there is something not yet clear about the mental condition of the communicator, but it is not for us to urge that too persistently at this stage of our knowledge. If we can open the way a little into the complications affecting the process it will suffice for the present and the future may find the solution. One thing remains clear and that is the complex nature of the process or of the conditions affecting it, and perhaps it is also clear that we have two very distinct methods of communicating: one by "mental pictures" to the control and the other by direct effort to control in which the complications are different from those in the first form. Both, however, at some point involve all the difficulties of control by a disembodied spirit as compared with the connections of an incarnate spirit with its own body. They may affect the messages differently, but more or less with the same result. In any case I shall not unravel or attempt to unravel the complexity at present. It suffices to have found a clue out of some of

the perplexities and with that I shall remain content until further knowledge offers more favorable opportunities for a conquest over other difficulties.

As a measure of the difficulties in getting messages through examine the situation. (1) The communicator, if he sends his thoughts direct, must have learned to use or impress an organism that was not his own, to say nothing of the need of inhibiting the owner's influence upon it. If he has to do both his situation is a perplexing one and the obstacles to communication are greater than the layman assumes. (2) This situation is still more complicated when the control or intermediary has to receive the messages from a communicator and transmit them through the organism to the living person. It is not his own thoughts that have to overcome the two obstacles to direct communication, but he has to do this in addition to selecting rationally the proper facts from the mass of "mental pictures" and memories, central and marginal, that are transmitted to him, perhaps telepathically or by some similar process. (3) Again the control has to inhibit (a) the direct influence of the medium's mind on his own mental processes and data and (b) the tendency of the medium's mind to act automatically on his or her own organism. In this condition of things little wonder is it that subconscious influences mingle with the communications and distort or displace them. (4) Then the control has to inhibit the natural action of his mind on the automatic machinery of the medium, if he has learned to control sufficiently, and let the ideas of the communicator dominate his thoughts as far as that is possible. But we discover here also the same coloring effect on messages that comes from the subconsciousness of the psychic.

When communications have to run the gauntlet of such complicated obstacles it is little wonder that they are confused and fragmentary, and they have to pass this ordeal whatever the theory to account for them. But in the alembic which fuses them into the composite whole which we find them to be we must expect variations due to the fluctuating conditions that characterize such situations. This said, how-

ever, the important thing is to realize that we are not dealing with a simple situation like that of our own control of the living organism which we inhabit. I do not mean to say that this is simple by comparison with other things, but that it is simple compared with the conditions affecting communication with the dead. The layman assumes that if a person can communicate at all he can communicate what he pleases, but the complications indicated show that he is not wholly master of his messages. He has to run the risk of a poor control and a poor medium as well as the weaknesses of his own mental processes.

The work of Mrs. Smead presents no facts that would confirm or refute this new hypothesis. All her work purports to be more direct and there is neither the claim nor the superficial evidence that "mental pictures" are employed, unless we assume that this method is necessarily connected with the work of intermediaries. Often, possibly always, the communicator has to send his or her messages to the control. But the superficial appearance usually is that the communications are direct, that is originating and written by the communicator who is control and communicator at the same time. There is no superficial appearance of sending the messages by "mental pictures" to the control. Often enough it is clear that the messages are either sent in some way to the control or the control exercises some sort of aid to the communicator. The work seems to be exactly like that which I have called the direct work of Mrs. Chenoweth where even the apparently immediate process of communicating is accompanied by some sort of apparent assistance, tho not of the type that involves intermediation. However this may be, but for the ignorance of what the agencies really are, we might simply characterize it as direct from superficial appearances alone, and in that case we should have to describe the work of Mrs. Smead as entirely direct. Whatever difficulties attend they are to be found in the limitations of control, not in the complications involved in the transmission of "mental pictures" to the control. That problem is solved, so far as resolution of any kind at all is

possible at present, by the analogies of experience. The infant learns only gradually to control its own organism and time gives it the familiarity of expert abilities. If any disturbance to this adjustment occurs from accident or disease it has to be learned over again. It may be the same with the discarnate when it comes into relation with another than its own familiar machinery. That is as far as we can at present go with that problem.

## PART I.

## FIRST RECORD WITH MRS. SMEAD.

## 1. Introduction.\*

The following record of Mrs. Smead overlaps somewhat with that of Mrs. Chenoweth. But Mrs. Smead's begins the series that constitute this Report. If any connection between the two sets of records becomes manifest references will make this clear. Hence it will not be necessary to follow chronological considerations in printing the record.

---

\*The symbols used in this record are the same as are usually used in similar reports, but I repeat them with a few additional notes.

Matter not contained within any enclosures is that which represents the contents of the automatic writing or oral communications by the subliminal or normal consciousness as they may be indicated.

Matter contained in *parentheses* represents what the sitter said. In all but one set of sittings I alone was the sitter. In the sittings of Mr. Junot I have indicated his statements in the proper manner.

Matter in *square brackets* represents explanatory notes of various kinds. Sometimes they represent what was in my mind but not uttered at the time that I made an oral statement or asked a question. Sometimes they represent a note made necessary at the time to prevent dependence on memory for the coincidence involved. Sometimes they are simply explanatory of characteristics in the automatic writing, difficulty in reading, or of situations which needed to be made intelligible at once.

*Dots* or periods in succession indicate either an incompleting word or sentence or the isolation and repetition in the automatic writing of a word not read at the time.

In a few cases the ordinary *brackets* are substitutes for the *parentheses* inserted by the automatist in the automatic writing.

I have supplied very little punctuation and only what was necessary to prevent too much confusion for the reader. Mrs. Chenoweth very rarely uses any punctuations, tho she does so occasionally in a very distinct manner. The same can be said of Mrs. Smead. Hence I have used the period most frequently, and the comma when I felt it was necessary to avoid apparent confusion when in reality there was none.

The statements representing the extent of Mrs. Chenoweth's personal ignorance or knowledge of the incidents and made after I had written my own notes have been placed in square brackets. This has been explained in the Preface, p. 10.

I have published one Report on the work of Mrs. Smead and there stated the facts which protect the case against the ordinary objections (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I., pp. 525-722). I shall not go into details of the facts in this volume. Suffice it to say that she is the wife of a clergyman and takes no remuneration for her services. On the contrary, she has devoted them at much sacrifice of time and energy to the important cause of science. All that we have to reckon with in the case is the possible previous knowledge of the parties represented in the communications. Two of them, Professor James and Mr. Podmore, being well known to the public, expose their messages to some measure of doubt on that ground. I have in all cases, where required by the facts, allowed for possible knowledge and indicate in the notes the knowledge or ignorance of Mrs. Smead regarding the incidents, wherever it has been possible to determine it. But all the liabilities which a "professional" medium must sustain are excluded from consideration, and if readers wish to ascertain whether my own assurance on this point can be accepted or not they may make their own investigations.

## 2. Detailed Record.

The death of Professor James occurred on August 26th, 1910, and I at once wrote to Mr. Smead for sittings without saying what had happened. It was apparent that only unusual circumstances would reveal to the Smeads the fact of his death, as they are shut out from the outside world by their distance from the railway and difficult access to the daily papers. The only daily paper the family takes is the *Baltimore Sun*, and Mrs. Smead never reads that. I assumed, however, that its columns would at once reveal the fact of his death which it did, but the following is from a letter from Mr. Smead in reply to my request for sittings. It is dated September 2nd, three days after Mrs. Smead had accidentally learned of Professor James' death.

"Mrs. Smead learned of the death of Professor James last Tuesday morning [Aug. 30th]. George told her he was dead, but said nothing more about it. I got home Wednesday about noon and at once burned up all the papers, so that she could

not read them, and she knows nothing about it, only that he is dead. Of this I am absolutely positive, even tho she did not know of it until Tuesday morning between 11 and 12 o'clock."

At the same time Mr. Smead transmitted to me an account of Mrs. Smead's experiences on August 27th and the 30th, the latter the date of learning what had happened. Unfortunately the account of the experience on Aug. 27th was not written out until the 30th, after Mrs. Smead had learned of Professor James' death. At the same time the loss is not great because the experience was not definite enough at the time to identify any particular person and Professor James was not thought of at the time. But Mrs. Smead has a very good memory and as the incident was not definite enough to assure us as to who was meant by it, we have only the fact of coincidence in a general way to deal with and it may pass as a part of a whole. Her own account of the experience was as follows:—

"Saturday morning Aug. 27th, 1910, at 9.30, while I was wiping the breakfast dishes with my back to the door, I saw a very very dark shadow, coming across the floor. It had on a *long black gown* and was about as tall as Mr. S. This shadow came up toward my right side and so I turned to speak, thinking it was Mr. S. I started to say: 'Why when did you get back Will?' when the shadow, or perhaps I should say spirit, vanished. The next instant the thought was that it was the Shadow of Death.

All day Saturday and Sunday I felt as though this shadow was around and I remarked to several persons I was afraid something *would happen*, as it seemed as if the life had in some way gone out of the world, for every thing looked as if it felt dead and cold."

MRS. W. M. SMEAD.

On August 30th, some hours before Mrs. Smead learned of Professor James' death, she noted the following incident which seems to have been the experience of a friend and was written down on that date after learning of Professor James' death.

"Tuesday Aug. 30th, 1910, 4.20 A. M. I had just awakened and was trying to keep quiet when a friend that was staying

with me while Mr. S. was at the mission, called and said: 'Mrs. Smead, what is the matter?' I said: 'Nothing'. She said: 'Yes there is some one out in the hall,' and then she called Nettie several times. No one answered; so I got up and lit the lamp, and went around. The children were all asleep and everything very still. When she first found it was not Nettie, she jumped over to my bed, very much frightened. I tried to make her believe it was just the wind, but she was almost offended and said she knew better, for she could hear the pattering of the bare feet, and after we returned to the room she said: 'Well, that must be spirits.'"

MRS. W. M. SMEAD.

There is nothing in this experience to make it suggestive or evidential, and it will be viewed as a naïve and common experience by all critical students. I do not mention it here because of any value that might attach to it, but simply as an unusual experience associated with the situation after it has once been known. There is nothing in it to suggest the connection implied.

On Aug. 31st, Mr. Smead resolved on having a sitting and reported to me at once the following, originals and all.

Mrs. S. Mr. S.

August 31st, 1910

\* \* [two semicircles drawn with backs to each other so as to resemble the letter X.]

(All is well. I understand.)

we come \* \* ['we will' or 'will'] to you when we get our machine in good working order.

(I understand.)

m a c h i n e [evidently not read first time.]

(I understand. I got it all right.)

yes. [hand cramped somewhat.] [Letter of Professor James placed near hand of Mrs. S.]

H. says we can talk [not read.] better...talk better at his table

(At his table?)

[Pause and scrawls among which letter 'p' occurs.] \* \* \* \* \*

while \* \* \* \* not will [?] \* \* \* \* \* com... \* \* noise. [Sitting ended.]

Mrs. S. and Mr. S.                      September 1st, 1910. 7.30 P. M.

(All is ready.)

\* \* [Semicircles drawn as before to resemble letter X.]

L [followed by imperfect attempt at Greek letter Omega. The two signs again drawn, the Omega quite clear this time.]

(What does that mean?)

L [followed by Omega.] do you know.

(No, please tell me.)

yes. L [followed by Omega again.] we come yes.

(Yes, what did all that mean?)

Life not death eternal yes.

(Yes, good.)

[Pause.] L [line drawn to right and pencil returned.]

[Mrs. S., not yet entranced, said she heard the words "Lambda, Iota, next letter not audible, and Epsilon, and saw some Greek letters, probably the same as she heard. The effort was probably to get the word 'Life' in the Greek letters instead of the Greek word "Bios", the 'ph' for the letter Phi, not recognized by Mrs. S. tho she knows the Greek alphabet.]

we would speak with the friend, Yes. [Mrs. S. now in trance.]

(Yes, I shall be glad to learn what you want to say.)

\* \* \* \* [scrawls.] we came there [all three words doubtful.]

James do you hear [?] do you hear we came soon after, yes Tell James we came first \* \* [here ?] with the new friend onf [erased.] only a few short times after he left the earth.

(Good.) [Note 1.]

we came from the north country yes.

---

1. This record was sent to me immediately after the sitting and I had it on file. I did not take any especial notice of the Omega, as it was so closely associated with other attempts at Greek letters that I did not suspect an intended meaning. It was the later use of it through Mrs. Chenoweth that marked its significance. Mrs. Smead knows the Greek alphabet but not the language. I understand that Professor James did not read Greek. No ascertainable significance attaches to the other attempts at Greek letters in this passage.

The capital L is evidently the initial for "Life" which comes in a

(Can you give me the name of the north country.) [I knew where Professor James died, Mrs. S. did not.]

[Pause.] it was more to the E a s t. [Correct.]

Tell son J. to send a reminder that will help. yes yes yes. Tell him we came to the light so very soon after the friend came yes.

(Yes, all right.) [Note 2.]

\* \* [scrawls.] we shook the hand as we promised to but did not get a message through. we just \* \* [scrawls.] came to give greetings, yes.

(I have a letter from son James.)

good we would have told you that that was a sign [not read.] sign did we not \* \* [scrawl.] did we not tell you there was a sign yes yes. we told thee there was a sigma [written 'sign' first and 'a' added.] \* \* [scrawls.] ma. yes. we wanted to be ready.

(Shall I read James' letter to you?)

not yet. [Pause.] \* \* ['mata' ?] + + [sign of the cross made twice.] Peace be with thee. So may it be. P H I Sigma m u.

(I got it right.) [Reading the Greek letters aloud.]

Tell so we...we would come yes. Tell Son greetings talk ['talk' in mirror writing.] Talk yes ['yes' in mirror writing.]

[Parts of Dr. Hyslop's letter read, ending query: 'Can Hodgson say something?']

yes tell H. \* \* have told you that there was to be a sign from the friend yes did you get it.

moment or two. Only the Omega, as later developments will show, suggests who is present, and there is no reason in personal identity for the use of the Greek language at this juncture to give the word "life" in Greek letters; for I understand that Professor James never knew Greek, tho he occasionally quoted a word of it effectively.

2. Professor James died northeast from where the Smeads live. Mrs. Smead knew that he had a cottage at Chocorua, but did not know that he died there. The last she had heard of him was when he was in California in 1906. The reference, however, is not definite enough to make a point of it. It would apply to the general place of his life as well as that of his death.

The "reminder" mentioned is an article to hold or have present after the manner of the Piper sittings. I secured one as soon as I could.

(Yes.)

H. did H. get it. yes yes.

(I don't know. I can find out.)

we knew what was to come so soon and tried to tell you  
yes. think did we not give you the College sign, yes yes.

(Yes, you did. I remember now.)

Preparatory for this event, yes yes, but we did not get it  
all done. Sigma. yes H. will know. \* \* \* \* morning [?]  
we came in the morning early. [Note 3.]

---

3. It is possible that it was Mr. Smead's reading of the word "sign" that started the trance personality off on to the Sigma and other Greek letters. The first time the word Sigma was written the "a" was added afterward and the word "sign" had certainly been written before this. It is apparent that the communicator was referring to his giving a sign and possibly the Omega was the one in mind. This interpretation, however, is somewhat questioned by the later reference to the "college sign" in the same sitting.

Probably the origin of this diversion to the Greek letters was what occurred at the sittings of July 19th and 21st previous, which is here interpreted as a prophecy of Professor James' death. Those records are not included in this Report as they are not otherwise related to it. But in the sitting of July 19th my father purported to communicate and after remarking that I was neglecting the case advised rest like that given to Mrs. Piper by Dr. Hodgson and referred to some one trying to communicate. Of this person he said: "One put the finger [draws a crescent shaped figure.] like that up. [crescent shaped figure drawn again.] do you hear. Sign of some kind [pause and scrawls.] Sigma P H I. he knows this friend. friend we will come again, yes, be of good cheer. we will be near \* \* \* \* yes \* \* cannot help o . . . over [?] cannot keep good control with a new friend without more practice out of it. yes yes yes early. will get our forces together again. yes. we must go. Hogson [Hodgson] Hyslop."

On July 21st, the regular communications were interrupted by the following intrusion: "In sigma. [pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] who are u [you]. who are we we we are the Fraternity. See See. Don't you see. P. Sigma Fy [?] good night. not yet. I'll fix him soon soon + [sign of the cross] at the school. yes no g. . . . we will come again \* \* ." The regular communications then went on till the end.

There is no evidence in these passages that they refer to a prediction, unless the reference to a "new friend" implies this. But it is possible to interpret this consistently with the supposed communicator, as the sitter for these two days was a friend of the Smeads. But for the reference on September 1st to these Greek letters and the statement that their earlier mention was a prediction there would be no reason for comment. It is possible that the explanation which I gave of the connections at the beginning of this note is the correct one, but it is not assured.

(Can Professor James come here and try to prove his identity?)  
he came at once yes. \* \* [scrawls.] when it is not dark,  
we would bring him when it was morning. he would then needs  
try for himself. we would tell him if thou art ready [two words  
superposed.] tell him thou art ready to come to thee.

(Yes, in the morning at our time.)

yes it is better so as the atmosphere is lighter easier.

(I would be glad to greet him.)

yes he has already come. Tell James H. to come and and  
greet the friend. he will tell him of past experiences.

(I will certainly tell him.)

I will not talk for him now. it is sufficient that we came.  
ask H. about the robes [not read.]

(What do you mean?)

robes. ask H. yes. H. will know. [Note 4.]

Mrs. S. Mr. S. September 2nd, 1910. 8 P. M.

\* \* [scrawls.] coming \* \* we are coming do you hear.

(Yes, good.)

We are coming. wait for us. [Pause.]

(Yes.)

\* \* you.

(Talk slowly. I do not hear.)

does H. know I was with our friend when he left him. I  
was there to help him [pause.] yes Myers too. all of us \* \*  
[scrawls.] this side. did he not tell that we came for him.

---

On both days Mr. Smead had a stranger present and inquiry regarding the relevance in the sittings of what was written to the sitter results in Mr. Smead's statement that his friend remarked that there was nothing in the sittings pertinent to him. There were some things certainly not at all pertinent to Professor James, that were at least not intelligible to the sitter. Apart from those incidents there might have been the relevance claimed for the allusions to the Greek letters.

4. The reference to "robes" is possibly to a gown which was associated with Professor James later. It is not clear enough, however, in this case to be assured that this is its meaning.

The objection to darkness is apparently a reflection of a subliminal prejudice against "dark séances", borrowed possibly from Mrs. Smead's normal knowledge of trickery in such affairs.

(I do not know. Hyslop will know.)

yes we were there too.

(Is this Hodgson?)

the same

(Can you tell H. anything about Professor James' death. Try and tell something Hodgson.)

He has been over the Sabath [Sabbath] with us here friend do u u. d. yes \* \*

[Abbreviation "u u d" in Mrs. Smead's work means "you understand".]

(Try and do so Hodgson.)

[Pause and scrawls. Apparently control lost and hand became limp.] before \* \* [two letters 'gh'] \* \*.

(What is the trouble?)

Y \* \* [possibly attempt at 'W'] H. \* \* [scrawls.] not so fast. we are near the old tree, yes Elm, not so far the tree was near the place where my earth home was tel [tell] H. for James. W. yes W. James.

(Is this Professor James?)

No H. for P. W. J. near the old Elm [not read.] Elm tree yes. \* \* will come again. we will come again. leave one nearer leave one near to keep control Y...no yes. [evidently to corrected reading.] we will come one [and] stay near yes. we come nearer earlier this season. not quite ready. \* \* He would see them at home soon, yes, tell them.

(All right.) [Note 5.]

he will \* \* ['hr' or 'hear'] of W. J. when we get it ready for him. Paris. [Note 6.]

September 12th, 1910. 10 A. M.

Present J. H. Hyslop. Medium, Mrs. Smead.

\* \* yes do you hear \* \* we are coming \* \* yes can you hear

5. Inquiry of the son shows that there is an elm near the Cambridge home of Professor James. The Smeads never saw this home and could know nothing of the facts.

6. I do not know any reason for the reference to Paris in this manner. Professor James had been in that city, but the context indicates no reason for the appearance of it here. Inquiry brought the information that he had been in Paris on the last trip which he took to Nauheim with the hope of repairing his health.

me [Writing very fine and some of the words must be interpreted from previous habits at the beginning of the sittings.] [Pause.]  
[Writing then begins clear and heavy.]

We are coming do you hear [pause and trembling.] greetings. [long pause and scrawls.] yes [answer to correct reading of the several words which had become very scrawly and had been written very rapidly.]

[Pause.] did you get my letters (Yes.) son yes [answer to doubtful reading of the word "son".] did you [pause.]

(Yes I did.)

good [pause.] we tried to tell u [you] before

(Yes I know.)

[Pause.] we [pause.] Let this [so read and sheet changed.] the lad come [long pause.] too yes. [pause and trembling.] they will all be here soon [pause.]

(All right, take your time.)

[Long pause and scrawls.] I have kept watch yes.

[I here spent some time putting my father's spectacle case in a convenient place.] [Pause and pencil fixed in fingers, as they had slipped down.]

yes [long pause..] \* \* would [wanted?] come to you when he first came over here with us [long pause and trembling.]

Mary to [too] [name not read at first.]

M... [name suddenly read.] yes [pause.] she [pause.] is helping him [evidently intended for "here".]

(Yes I understand.)

[Pause and scrawls.] we [pause.] would tell him u [you] have come if you [last four words not read at time.] so wish [pause.] w... [we] came ... if you so wish [pause.] Mary wil [will] \* \* him ... tell...

["tell" was written above the illegible word marked by the asterisks and was read "all". The hand went back and tried to erase and made the erasure another illegible word.]

no u [you] have come do u [you] get it.

(All right.)

Mary will tell him u [you] have yes come. (Good.) if you so wish.

(Yes I do.)

and will bring him.

(Good.) [Note 7.]

[Long pause and trembling.]

Tell us Son do we help u [you] any in this cause. (Yes.)  
[pause.] we hen [when] they come over from your side. [not  
read at once.] when they ...

(Yes I understand.)

yes tell us of the unbelief still unbelief... yes.

(That, of course, is everywhere and will not easily yield.)

and we have tried and tried to help all ways and conditions  
you know.

(Yes I understand perfectly.)

[Pause and trembling. I inserted a new pencil.]

this is not mine James [alluding to pencil inserted.]

[I resharpened the removed pencil and restored it to the  
hand.]

just a whim of mine u [you] think but I never did like to  
talk much rather think yes always kept my own writing materials  
[not read at time.] writing materials always did not like the  
family using them.

(Who says this?)

Father.

(That is what I thought.) [Note 8.]

yes [hand started to superpose and was pulled down.] yes.

(Shall I fix the pencil between the finger and thumb?)

[I started to do so, but the hand firmly resisted my action. I  
ceased.]

did not like to mark my books either.

(Good.)

I used to feel that it destroyed their value and marred them  
and set a bad example to the children yes.

---

7. The passage connected with the name Mary, that of my wife, was not clear to me at the time, but later sittings suggest an explanation. Cf. pp. 903, 912. The word "lad" here associated with the name Mary and what later sittings manifested suggest that it was my brother who died about 1904 that was meant. No previous effort had been made to have him communicate.

8. In the earlier days of his life when we were children my father was very particular about his writing materials and would never allow us to use any of them. After we had grown up he made no objection to my step-mother using them, tho she could not use his pen.

(Good.) [pause.] (Yes I understand.) [Note 9.]

[Pause.] I am all alone at present and it makes me think of how the rest would let [erased.] leave when you came home so that we could talk together do you remember.

(Yes I do well. That is good.)

[Pause.] yes and how badly I felt when [hand moved over to and signified that the pencil should be fixed, the fingers having slipped down on the point.]

(Let me get another.)

[Hand resisted removing the pencil.] u [you] left me [pause.] to go so far away. (Yes.) [pause.] and all ways [always] after u [you] were different [pause.] I mean James when you went so far far away.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] One time you thought as I had taught you (Yes.) and I was happy then. can u u. d. [you understand.] me.

(Yes I do perfectly. That is correct.)

[Pause.] the west ['west' erased.] rest did not depart from my teaching.

(That is correct.) [Note 10.]

[Pause.] u [you] were the only one I had hoped to continue after me.

(Yes I understand. Go ahead.)

[Pause.] I did not believe as much [pause after 'mu' was

---

9. He was extremely careful of his books in this respect and would not mark them and brought up us children to care for them in the same way. The fear that it would be "a bad example to the children" was very characteristic of my father. Few men were so careful to be a good example to their children in all their actions, and he would make many sacrifices to avoid being misunderstood in this respect. The fact was wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead tho a similar message came through either Mrs. Piper (and was mentioned in my first Report) or Mrs. Smead, I am not at this time certain which. Mrs. Smead has not read my first Report, tho acquainted with the main incidents through conversation with Mr. Smead.

10. My father and I were left much together and alone to talk. This was more especially true after I had been abroad than before. It is correct that I had changed my early beliefs and that my father had felt keenly my apostasy from that early teaching and that it was the trip to Germany that decided the change, or at least accompanied it. It is possible that all this had accidentally come to the normal knowledge of Mrs. Smead. I never

written till I read 'much' when the hand wrote 'ch'.] then as I do now.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] I am still teaching you concerning these things.

(Good.)

[Pause, scrawls and trembling.] you always wanted me to see them differently ['see' read 'tell'.] no [pause.] no no \* [pause.] I have lost it.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I'll go back and sit down.

[Change of control.]

R. H. [pause and scrawls followed by considerable excitement and rapid illegible writing.]

\* \* [pause and excitement.] \* \* \* \* \* [whole page illegible.] [I think it is possible to read one set of symbols as "W James and Myers Hogen Hod and myers \* \* yes."]

[Pause and trembling.] greeting We [are] glad you came [pause.] must tell them ['we glad' read 'England'.] no [pencil changed.] we came O K do you hear did they get it there from W. J.

("Did you get it from W. J.??")

yes we came here first then crossed [wavy lines made for the ocean.] next.

(I understand.)

yes to the Lady there.

(I understand.) (What lady?)

[Pause.] V.

(All right.) [Note 11.]

---

talked about it to her or Mr. Smead, but something was said about the facts in my earlier Report.

It is correct that the others of the family did not depart from his teaching but remained more in sympathy with him. This Mrs. Smead did not know, tho perhaps it was inferrible from what has been said about myself in the Report mentioned.

11. Inquiry of Mrs. Verrall through Miss Johnson brought from the latter the following letter.

"Mrs. Verrall writes to me on July 20th, 1911, that she does not think there have been any references to him [Professor James] in her script. But on Sept. 12th, 1910. she had a dream impression of him which impressed her

to her after coming here did they get it.

(I do not know whether they did or not.)

W. J. came alone here first.

(All right.)

So sent him as soon as he came out.

(I understand.)

his desire was for this country to know first ['know' read 'learn'.] know yes we have not been elsewhere. [pencil changed.] yet [new pencil broken and another inserted.] we knew that if we came with him ['him' read 'them'.] him there would be confusion

(I understand.)

of personalities. do you u. d.

(Yes perfectly.) yes (That is good.)

[Pause.] he will come to talk [pause.] not this day.

(I understand. Just when you think best.)

[Pause.] we must get it in good condition so that he will not get faint as when he came out.

(I understand.)

Should we rest to \* \* ['till' or 'hold'.] the evening hour

(Yes perhaps you had better.)

[Pause.] Sorry R. H. was so disturbed. he felt embarrassed because he could not remember.

(Don't worry about that. I can wait.)

[Pause.] This eve \* g [evening.]

(Do you mean that we shall sit this evening?)

yes Mary says it is all the time we will give her.

(All right.)

[Pause.] R. H., R. H., G. H., M. H. H.

(Yes.)

going now.

Mrs. Smead came out of the trance with catalepsy in the neck and left arm, the arm being numb and anæsthetic. There were no traces of messages during the waking stage.

---

as an attempt at communication and was recorded by her at the time." Cf. Note 32 in connection with the statement through Mrs. Smead October 21st.

The sitting with Mrs. Smead was held, as the record shows at 10 A. M. This would be some hours earlier than solar time in England, so that the dream of Mrs. Verrall was some hours before this sitting. Cf. pp. 126, 184.

During the trance the right arm while writing was so inert that I had always to move it down on the pad, or up, to prevent superposing or cramping of the hand. Mrs. Smead could not move the arm down the page or up to the top when a page was finished. This slightly improved toward the end. It was my opinion that the orders were given for the evening in order to have practice and prepare "conditions" for the morrow.

September 12th, 1910. 8 P. M.

Present J. H. Hyslop. Medium, Mrs. Smead.

[Scrawls.] I ... Mother [pause.] I am coming [pause.] nearer to tell you something that I never can forget. dou [do you] know James they all are alike here concerning this work. I mean those that were most interested.

(Yes, good.)

they don't want to give us a good time talking. they said it must be scientific. u [you] remember how u [you] used to tell ["u" read "we"]. you ... me that and I would want you to be more interested in what I isaid [said] [Evidently the 'i' was intended for the first stroke of 'u' in 'used' which it was probably the intention to write for 'used to say', which was suddenly shortened into 'said'.]

(I understand.)

it brings it all back because I call this my place. I came here first

(Yes, I understand both sides of the question.) [I meant both sides of the issue between the scientific and the social aspect of the communications.]

before [pause.] they let me try at [not read] At Friend Hodgson's light.

(Yes.) [Pause.] [Note 12.]

I wanted to talk to y... [pencil ran off paper.] you and it was not there [their] plan.

(I understand that perfectly.)

[Pause.] I wanted to ask you if Father told you about my brother.

---

12. It is true that my wife tried to communicate through Mrs. Smead before she was allowed to communicate through Mrs. Piper. This was perhaps inferrible from material already published, tho not personally read by Mrs. Smead.

(He said something about him last spring, but he did not get much through. You tell it.) [Note 13.]

[Pause.] They would not let me tell it for him [pause and trembling.] he was very anxious to tell you he is here and alive. (Yes, he proved that well enough.)

[Long pause and trembling. Apparently the communicator had not said what was intended and was trying to get through something else than this remark which represented normal knowledge of Mrs. Smead.]

I will have to rest. it hurts my head.

(All right. I understand.)

[Pause and then writing began in scrawly and rapid manner.] good \* \* I must get back [very scrawly.] [Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

we will come for her. Mary's had to go [pause.] James [pause.] James this is my [read 'wrong'.] [Hand moved toward me and I inserted a new pencil.] own my own Isn't it.

(I don't know.)

[Pause and hand moved across the page to me as if something was wrong about the pencil.]

(I have no other.)

[Pause and excitement in hand. I then removed the pencil and resharpened the one that had been removed and reinserted it.]

[Pause.] She is feling [feeling] better (Good.) worked to [too] hard. that is the way she always did (Yes.) always in a hurry.

(That is true.)

yes yes [pause and scrawls for sometime.] that was why she came so soon

(Yes I understand.)

[Pause.] not like the brother.

(Yes.) [pause.] (Do you want to speak about him?)

no, she wants to help there. I would that my memory would come back.

(Yes, I understand the difficulty.)

What did I tel [tell] you last [pause.]

---

13. It is interesting to see an allusion to her brother. At this time he had gone west to settle up some of his domestic difficulties.

(Last spring.)

no it is me Father this day.

(You told me about your early beliefs and mine.)

what did I tell u [you] yes [pause.] it was about when you went [wavy lines to indicate the ocean.]

(Yes I understand.)

yes over there. it changed your ...

(Yes it did.) [Note 14.]

[Long pause and scrawls.] my [erased.] [Pencil fixed.] no [?] mine was the same.

(Yes, I hope the change did not hurt me.)

[Pause.] not as I see u [you] now. (Thank you.) ask them at home about

(Yes I shall.) [I had in mind the last message, but hand ignored my point of view and went on to draw the representation of a barrel or hogshead.] what we did with it.

(With what?)

[Figure of a barrel drawn again.]

(All right. It might mean several things. You explain it.)

it was a large one (Yes.) outside the house. (Where?)

Barn.

(Yes.) [pause.] (You can tell the rest.)

[Pause.] we did not have the cars near where our house was.

(That's right.) [pause.] (What has that to do with the thing in the barn?)

[Pause.] neighbors [pause.] united to send the [pause.] [Mr. Smead entered the room.] (The what?) to the village.

(What did they send?)

[Pause.] Pork. (All right.) yes (That's correct.)

Yes I will come again.

(That is best.) [Note 15.]

going R. Hyslop.

---

14. It was the work abroad that affected the decision to abandon orthodoxy, tho not the influence that made me heterodox.

15. The hogshead mentioned was kept in the barn, as said. It is interesting to see the statement that it was outside the house, as former allusions to it, through Mrs. Chenoweth as well, were associated with the idea that they were rain barrels connected with the house. At times my father used

September 13th, 1910. 10.30 A. M.

Mrs. Smead.

Present J. H. Hyslop.

\* \* many more [not read at time.]

(I can't read it.)

many coming [so read.] M o r e coming.

(Good.)

[Pause.] we greet u [you] this day Friend.

(Thanks to you. My greetings to all on your side.)

I \* \* [possibly 'ys' a part of it.] know [?] \* \* \* \* would  
 \* \* let us all [pause.] fix this [alluding to the pencil. The  
 fingers had moved down on the pencil. It was fixed.] yes,  
 thanks H. [Pencil then tapped on the paper.]

(I understand.)

[Pencil continued to tap on paper.] no I do \* \* friend [?]

\* \* [Wm ?] [pause.] I will get it.

(All right. Take your time.)

[Long pause.] when I was there I hated to give you my in-  
 fluence to u [you] yes.

(I understand.)

I wanted to believe and did but only partially.

(I understand. That's good.) [Note 16.]

the hogsheads in which to pack pork. Whether he intended to say this or not I cannot tell. But during this summer, while making notes on a reference to this use of the hogshead in connection with a former message I remarked to my stepmother that he packed pork in them, tho' this was not said in the message.

The neighbors did often unite in my early days to drive or haul their hogs to market. There is no reason to mention cars in this connection except that, when they drove them, they were fearful of railway trains when trying to get the hogs across the tracks. Mrs. Smead knew none of the facts here which give pertinence to the message, and also knew nothing that would suggest the message itself.

This reference to the hogs and taking them to market should be compared with the recurrence to the same facts through Mrs. Chenoweth. It involves an interesting cross reference and also an illustration of how messages become fragmentary. This incident dovetails well into the later one as it mentions factors not mentioned there. Cf. pp. 605, 680.

16. This is a remarkably interesting allusion. Mrs. Smead knew none of the facts which make it relevant and interesting. When I started to organize the American Institute for Scientific Research Professor James agreed to go on its Board and wrote a strong letter in defence of the work.

[Pause and scrawl.] helped you. I promised to return as soon as I could if I found that you were right.

(Thank you.)

and this I have done (Yes.) yes I said too that I would 'read 'wanted' and hand started to erase when I suddenly read it 'would'.] n... [having started to write 'no' in answer to false reading.] yes [answer to correct reading.] [not] fool away the time of Science unless to advantage.

(That's good.)

that I would not come only as a scientist.

(Good.)

yes as the religious aspect... aspect [written above shows the first attempt] would be all right if we could prove our side.

(Yes, that's good.)

that I know now was well so far as I went [read 'want' and suddenly corrected.] yes [answer to correct reading.] I would go farther now, knowing the whole truth.

(Yes, that is intelligent.) [Note 17.]

yes I think you will say good Philosophy too.

(Yes, is it your kind of philosophy?)

[Long pause.] mine. (Good) yes [pause.] the [read 'he'] [pause.] the better kind. (Yes.) improved on what I used to teach (Good.) yes and the kind He taught.

(All right.)

[Pause.] [H]odgson but where I went near [pause.] oh it was 30 or more years since ['30' read '3 or'] 30 yes [answer to correct reading.] or since.

---

But as I proceeded with the work he got the impression that I was engaged in a sensational undertaking and withdrew from the Board. For a long time he was very chary of lending his support to it. But long before his death he saw the undertaking in another light and supported it heartily.

The reference to his wanting to believe and doing so only partially is a very accurate account of his state of mind, and Mrs. Smead was not familiar enough with his views to put it that way. She like most other people believed that he was strongly convinced.

17. It is not possible to give specific confirmation of the statements about his coming as a scientist and the relation of a future life to religion. Readers of Professor James' work will see its relevance and only the absolute ignorance of Mrs. Smead regarding his writings makes it interesting, tho not evidential.

(Yes, I get it. I understand.)

[Pause.] [Pencil fixed.] [pause.] many over here that would like to try here but Hodgson say [says] they only fool away the light and he is as interested here as he was with the one we experimented with on your side.

(I believe it.)

yes he cannot do much there. I have talked with him concerning the little we got after he left us.

(Yes, that's good.)

and he is not much interested in the Society he left, for, when he came to us, [pencil changed] it all seemed so perfectly foolish to me at one time that I was determined to know for myself and promised to be as clear if I undertook to talk as I was when in my body.

(Good, how do you find it?) [Note 18.]

all right so far. I will talk what is most interesting to me and always was when I was [pause.] at the class lectures. they seemed to be able to understand my Ph... [philosophy] and it always way [evidently intended for 'was']. The hand was superposing and I moved it down.] was my idea to make it or myself clear.

(That's true.)

the trouble is with this work H. that so many get excited over the fact [pencil fixed.] that they can communicate that they want to tell all they know at once instead of thinking one word at a time.

(That's good psychology.)

[Pause.] I thought you would recognize it.

(Yes I do.)

Yes [pause.] Friend Myers.

---

18. No corroboration of this promise is accessible. If true it was probably a subjective resolution.

But the whole attitude toward the subject, while not evidential or characteristic of Professor James represents a natural one for Dr. Hodgson who is referred to as wanting to economize the "light". It is more than probable that Professor James did at one time think it foolish to look in this direction for enlightenment on the problem of a future life. His mental reactions at times when discussing it show what feelings had originally to be overcome to get his interest centered on the subject.

(Glad to greet you.) [I assumed from the slow writing that there was a change of control. The finishing of the message showed my mistake.]

said to keep my head clear.

(Yes, his idea exactly.)

[Pause.] I never tried to write poetry as he did at times.

(No, I understand.) [Note 19.]

[Pause.] We made a great mistake H. when we let all the automic [automatic] writings go out of our possession.

(Yes I believe that.) [Note 20.]

H and I e \* \* [undeciphered part erased.] should have kept copies (Yes.) but we were beginners [beginners] in a new field of labor.

[Long pause.]

only one idea more. Tell my son to continue my work and I will aid him.

(Good. I shall.)

experimenting for me.

(Yes, I understand.)

yes tell him it is my wish that the work be continued and not all my life work to end when I have just begun another (Good.) and higher one, existence I mean.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] I will talk with him as soon as he makes arrangements.

(Yes, good.)

[Pause.] I want to describe to you this experience.

(All right.)

as best I can. When I left the earth it was as if I were suffocating at first, then I realized I was going to leave. I was soon out of my body. it was so quickly done I did not have time to suffer but they [superposing and hand moved down.] they would not let me stay there at first but after I had been out a

---

19. It is true that Mr. Myers wrote poetry and I know of none by Professor James. It was certainly not in any respect characteristic of him. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of Mr. Myers' work of this kind.

20. This is an allusion either to the transfer of the records to the English Society, a fact most probably well known to Mrs. Smead, or to the habit of letting sitters keep such of their records as they desired.

very short time they let me return to see that I was surely living but not of the earth [pause.] I then asked Hodgson what we must do. he said go and make yourself know known [superposed on 'know' erasing it.] I tried to do this on both sides of the earth. do [pencil fixed.] you understand.

(Yes perfectly.)

then I waited for this opportunity and I came here expecting to go through all kinds of experiences losing myself.

(I understand.)

I thought to try one of my own ways I have so stated to you. (Yes.) [pause.] it is very difficult but it can be done by this method.

(Yes, can you describe the method.)

one word at a time and all other friend [friends] away [read 'always'] no all other friends here on my side away in the distance so that I will not get their [read 'them'.] their ['t' crossed and 'i' dotted.] ideas mixed with mine. They thought to help but I said I would prefer it alone.

(Yes, I understand.)

it exhausts us but by stoping [stopping.] we can get new light-energy (Yes.) and can continue for a greater time as u [you] you know there must be one of greater power that supplies the light energy and by his keeping near it remains for a period as he does not try to talk [pause.] can remain but the earth souls are so desirous of talking it causes confusion.

(I understand.)

and hence your difficulty of getting what is said from here.

(Yes, I see.) [Note 21.]

---

21. None of this account of his passing can be confirmed, as is obvious, except the allusion to suffocation. Whether this was noticeable at the last I do not know, but he suffered from difficulty in breathing during the illness. This fact was not known to Mrs. Smead.

There is no reason in any known fact of his earthly life to justify the desire expressed for his son to continue his work, at least in any incidents that I have been able to learn.

The reference to the expectation of "losing himself" when he tried to communicate has a personal touch that, perhaps, no one but myself would recognize. We had discussed the theory of a trance state and syncope for communicators and Professor James recognized its possibility, but

I have still the experience to learn [read 'leave'.] learn of leaving when this day's work is done.

(Good, I'll help.)

[Pause.] I thank you H. for your patience with me.

(Thank you.)

and it it [is] now time that I go.

(All right.)

wait I must tell you one thing more [pause.] William James.

(Thank you.)

Immediately the hand moved over to me and I laid mine on it. It became perfectly quiescent and remained so for some time. When Mrs. Smead sighed, as if recovering consciousness, I removed my hand and, after a pause, her hand arose and made the sign of the cross in the air. Then followed a pause again. After some minutes there was another sigh and the left hand trembling began to rise and to come toward the top of the table. I seized it and its manner suggested putting a pencil in it which I did and it wrote the sign of the cross, following it with the word "amen". Soon afterward Mrs. Smead became normal.

As soon as she could speak she said she had seen a man sitting at a desk writing. He was not very stout and had his back to her so that she could not recognize him. He seemed to have dark hair, but was in such a gray mist and so far away she could not be certain of the color of his hair.

September 14th, 1910. 10.30 A. M.

Mrs. Smead.

Present J. H. Hyslop.

\* \* [Scrawls. Possibly a part of them 'yes we are coming'.]  
[Pause and trembling, after which writing became clear and in larger script.]

---

was never convinced of its adequacy. He very soon alluded to it through Mrs. Chenoweth and denied the "dream theory". Cf. pp. 278, 292.

I have no knowledge that he ever resolved on the method of communication here described. He never referred to it in my presence.

The explanation of confusion is a natural one in the light of the new point of view which this Report presents. If merely thinking in the vicinity of a medium is likely to transmit impressions success in avoiding confusion will depend, somewhat at least, upon ability either to isolate oneself in the act of communicating or to inhibit influences in the neighborhood.

Why I am coming.

(Good.)

you [pause.] can come for me [pause.] elsewhere. (Yes.) call [clearly written but hastily read 'all' at first.] call I should have said. [Hand wrote 'st', evidently for 'stated' and then superposed 'a' on 't'.]

(Yes, I understand. I shall do so.)

[Long pause.] did my son send me any word of greeting [pause.] did he? [interrogation point inserted.] [pause.] from my son.

[This message was so illegible that it was not read at the time and hence the absence of an answer by me.]

[Pause.] Tell him it is not scicometry [psychometry] [word not read immediately.] [pause.] Tell my son it is not scicometry [psychometry] of things [pause] on your side Hyslop.

(All right.)

I used to think so at times of the influence theory. (Good.) but I was entirely wrong there.

(All right.)

nothing has a solid [so read and erased.] soul but man.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] the life of other [pause.] objects is of a different nature.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] your [so read and erased.] you can ask [written 'as' as first and then 'k' superposed on 's'.] of others of my thoughts on this Subject.

(Yes, I shall do so.)

[Long pause.] do you know that if the articles belonging to us over here are not carefully guarded that we soon have all of our influence in them with us.

(No, I did not know that.)

or withdrawn from the earth influence.

(That's good. What analogy has that in our science?) [I thought of the radio-active substances.] [Note 22.]

---

22. It is not known whether Professor James held to the view of psychometry here indicated. The view here expressed should be compared with the later communications purporting to come from Mr. Podmore. Cf. pp. 837-841, 850.

wait a little. [pause.] it is like the growing up of a child in the earth life. we go farther away from earth surroundings and as all these things are a part of our being or life we take the influence with us away from the earth. (Good.) and so as I have just stated, [pause until correctly read.] as I was to state yes [answer to correct reading.] the reason for fragmentary communications are due to this fact. they are not often guarded from the influence of others so that we are obliged to take ours from them.

(I understand.)

and so, as we withdraw ours from the earth, it is more difficult to return. (Good.) can u [you] see the point I try to make.

(Yes, as far as possible until I get to your side.)

no need to wait if you will think of it from our view [not read at once] point ... view ...

(Good, I understand.)

[Pause.] tell me H. do you know ... did you know my views of scicometry [psychometry].

(No, I did not.)

then ask my son [written 'som' and read 'some'.] my son.

(Good, I will. Tell all you know about it.)

[Pause.] why I just had my own oopinions [opinions] on the subject. I thought that every article used by any one carried [carried] its influence with it and that if it was taken to a sci... [pause.]

(Psychometrist?)

no not that word scicic [psychic. Written slowly and with difficulty, but clearly.] [pause.] they could by its influence tell us about the person to whom it belonged on your side and I thought it continued after [the] person left the earth. but I find now that scicometry [psychometry] is only one [so read.] on your side. that they cannot tell after we leave the earth unless we so will.

(Good, I understand.)

that our influence [not clearly written and read 'interest'.] comes with us ... influence ... and it is only as + [sign of Imperator] has told u [you] can u. d.

(I understand.)

that the statements came clearly through. it is not possible to pick up our influence. [Note 23.]

(Wait a moment.) [superposing.]

here there and everywhere about the universe on the telepathic [pause] Plan.

(I understand. What was the word you wanted to say?) [I had the word "hypothesis" in mind.]

it slipped [slipped] away so quickly. (Yes.) [pause.]

Please take your influence from me. [I was holding Mrs. Smead's elbow so as to prevent superposing in the writing.]

(That is my arm?)

yes. (All right.) yes [superposed and answer to reading.] u [you] know I never had much patience yes [superposed and answer to correct reading.] with those that believed in the world wide Telepathy.

(Yes, I know.)

and it is not true. the only way souls can influence one another or get *facts* [underscored.] from each other here is to come directly in contact *with them* [underscored.]

(I understand. Then telepathy . . .)

[The writing began before I was able to say, 'is not used in communicating with us', intended as a test of what would be said.]

does not work here.

(Good, that's fine.)

[Pause.] we either have to carry our own messages or send a messenger and Scicologists [psychologists] here are just as much Scicologists [psychologists] now as over there. can u [you] u. d.

(Yes, perfectly.)

we will not waste our energies on nonsense.

23. The family do not recall any reference even to psychometry on the part of Professor James, tho I can imagine that, like the rest of us, he was always puzzled by the influence of articles at the sittings.

Mrs. Smead knows better how to spell the word "psychic" and "psychometry" than is implied here. Hence I inquired how Professor James pronounced the words and the answer was that 'p' was silent in his pronunciation. If phonetic influences prevailed in the automatic writing it is apparent how the error in spelling might occur.

(Good.)

[Pause.] non Secre [pause.]

(" Non-secret "?)

[Pause.] non Secre tre.

(" Non secutive ", " non-secret "?)

no no, never mind it. it will come another time. [pause.]  
non sic re tre [not clear, but read questioningly 'tua'.]

u [you] do not quite get the last.

(All right. I'll be patient.)

latin pronunciation.

(Yes, I knew that.)

[Pause.] just happened to flash from my thought.

(Good.) [Note 24.]

[Pencil changed, and a long pause. Then the pencil tapped awhile on the paper.]

you see H. it would be almost as bad [read 'hard'.] to ...  
bad ... be a believer [read 'bellman'.] believer in that everlasting  
Telepathy as to believe that the devil did all this work.  
(Yes.) you know how some of our friends would say it was  
fiendish to give such power to the other [read 'outer'.] Light  
... other ... where H and I were experimenting and so many  
when they had their turn would talk so for fear they would be  
thought to be wise as to be believers in Spirits. they would  
believe (or say so) [parentheses inserted] in almost anything but  
the truth.

---

24. Professor James never treated "world wide telepathy" seriously and hence this reference here is very pertinent. Perhaps it was inferrible from his writings, tho Mrs. Smead knows nothing about them.

The limitation of the mode of getting messages delivered should be compared with the statement purporting to come from Mr. Podmore later (p. 838). It implies a rather extensive denial of any direct telepathy between the living, and the description of psychologists as being still psychologists on "the other side" seems to imply that they have the same conception of the limitations of intercommunication between mind and mind directly as they have in life. If this be true it makes havoc of the popular conception of telepathy. But we have to encounter the possibility that the passage on that point is either wholly evolved from the medium's subliminal or highly colored by it.

The attempt at the Latin words "non sequitur" does not make its meaning clear. It involves an idea that Mrs. Smead is not familiar with, and if not due to her mind, is apparently an effort to express something about

(Yes, good. [Note 25.]

I was almost as [not read] as bad myself at one time.

(I understand. We have to get hard knocks to believe.)

[Pause.] Especially before + [sign of Emperor] came to us.

(Yes.)

he opened the way in a different Light. (Yes.) the other one was earth bound and was very difficult to be made to see that he ought to go away that it (the work) [parentheses inserted.] could be done for a higher cause than the amusement of earth bound Souls.

(Good. Have you seen him?)

not yet. they sent him for a long period to another Planet. (Good.) that he could come back and work for the best interest of mankind. he has been permitted to return just once for a short time.

(Good, I remember that.)

but he was not well qui ... [pause.] ualified to take up the work. [Note 29.]

[Hand moved to me to indicate the need of fixing the pencil, which was done, the fingers having slipped down until it was too difficult to write.]

[Pause.] I do not know as I am full [pause.] ing [read 'feeling'.] no [superposed.] fulfilling my mission or as we termed it making my Identif. . . [pause.] ty [read 'identity', and hand tried to erase and rewrote.] In ... [pause.] denity [read 'identity'.] clear to you.

(I understand.) [Note 26.]

---

the inapplicability of telepathy or non sequitur reasoning in connection with it. But its later appearance in another connection suggests that it may have been an abrupt attempt here to say something that came in connection with a vision on September 19th. Cf. p. 123.

25. This discussion of telepathy as devilish, if conceived as so many do, represents an attitude of mind which was evident in some statements made in his Report on the Hodgson Control, but was not so definitely formulated as here. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. III, pp. 508, 583. But the language employed here is much more like my own expressed views well known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead from frequent conversations about it. She had not seen Professor James' statements.

26. This is a very correct statement of the disappearance of Phinuit

but you did not bring (superposed and not read.) bring any influence and so I am trying on my own resoces [resources].

(Yes, I tried to get one and failed.)

[Pause.] I have tried to recall some few points that could prove it was my soul [pause.] alone talaking [talking] to you. I would have kept my thoughts more to the point had you brought it.

(I understand and hope to get one yet.)

Send for two that you may have one here also that I may work here with Hodson [Hodgson].

(Yes, I shall do so if possible.)

and your father (Yes.) the greater light desires it.

(Yes, I shall do my part.)

they are centering their light energies more here than [waving lines drawn to indicate across the water.]

(I understand.)

they were so shut out at H's light that knowing the demand for the work to continue ing ['ing' erased.] they are willi ... [pencil ran off paper.] willing to keep open this reservoir for information.

(Yes, good.) [Note 27.]

they will only stay at one light as a continual [so read.] no that was not the word I wanted. as a continu [pause.] our place for information.

(I understand.)

they often go to other places but not to Stay.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] it is growing weaker, the light force ['force' erased]

---

in the Piper case and was not known to Mrs. Smead. It was known to Professor James. The whole relation of the Phinuit to the Emperor régime is well epitomized here.

27. The word "reservoir" is interesting and characteristic of Professor James in this connection and is not familiar to Mrs. Smead's habits. Professor James alluded in his writings to a "reservoir of information" from which the incidents might be drawn. The reference, however, was never prominent in his views and was only casual, tho representing a point of view conceived as an alternative to spiritistic interpretations. I criticized the conception in some statement of my own but I cannot recall where it was. Mrs. Smead has certainly not seen it.

when read as 'fires'.] energy, light energy. (Good.) and I will [pause.] go when you desire to.

(Yes, I shall be glad to have you report here when you can. Mr. Smead will help.)

yes but I will try to report too elsewhere.

(Please to tell the same...) [Hand began before I specified what "light" I had in mind.]

at the friend not the lady you have spoken of. she is here.

(I do not quite understand that. I expect to experiment elsewhere and hope you can come and tell the same stories that you have told here.)

which wil... [will] try.

(You have seen that "light". I shall not mention names.)

H. [pause.] W James. [written very slowly.]

[Change of Control.]

[long pause.] \* \* \* \* to meet you here H. \* \* [will ?] you \* \* [come ?] [pause.] Prof. James cannot work as easily at the next place of your meeting.

(All right.) [Note 28.]

for we shall try to help [pause.] but our helping {?} friends \* \* not always go there after [read 'often'.] since R alone ['R' read interrogatively.] Rector alone and so that is more difficult than where + [sign of Imperator.] comes.

(I understand.)

yes I thought [to] just caution you a little.

(Good.)

we try to get our light in good condition for personal scientific work yes [answer to correct reading.] good day [pause.] my greetings to all. R. Hodgson.

Mrs. Smead awakened after a long pause and reported having seen a peculiar cross. The upper end had rounded ends as we sometimes see in the cross and a light was streaming from the left side.

---

28. This statement that James could not work as easily at the next place of meeting is interesting in the light of the sequel. The record shows that he almost wholly failed there. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of my plans, and indeed they were only conceived by me and not matured.

After recovery some minutes she also said she saw Prof. James with a square cap on and asked if he wore it in his study. I said that he did not, so far as I knew, but that he had worn it on certain public occasions.

Mrs. S. Mr. S. September 19th, 1910. 10.30 A. M.

Before the sitting Mrs. Smead saw a building, as if she were in a trance. It was white in color and had marble columns. Figures like statues were in the gable end and a Latin inscription on the facade just above the columns. In connection with it she saw a cross and something more that was not clear. Then she saw a man with hair thin on top, marked features on the side of the face which were thought not to be whiskers. Heavy mustache and drawing it between the first and second fingers and pushing it through with his thumb. He was leaning with his left hand on the edge of a window sill. [Note 29.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

myers Myers do you hear me, comes to greet you. greet you.  
(Yes.)

[Pause and scrawls.] whos \* \* tell him.

(Who's drawn? I don't understand.)

\* \* \* \* [sign of the cross evidently a part of it and possibly a confused attempt at name 'Myers' the other part.] W. J. [written with difficulty.] \* \* we come often to talk to you and we would help enlighten those in doubt and I am your friend.

i...no...I am M y e r s.

(You are very welcome, Mr. Myers.)

I want to ask you if any one has ever noticed how our late friend used to smooth out the mous ta...mustache yes which would help identify him.

(I will ask Hyslop. I do not know.)

no nor does he friend.

(Who can tell me about that?)

get it on the qt [quiet] S u b R o s a. Hyslop can do it.

---

29. It has not been possible to determine any meaning in this reference to a building with marble columns. It is not even assured whether it pretends to be related to Professor James or not.

(I understand. Good.)

wait our friend wishes to correct a missp [errased.] misspelled [misspelled] word. do you please tell friend H. that it was not (nonsense) ['nonsense' and parentheses inserted.] that I tried to tell him. it was the L A T I N much like it. non sec qui ter [non-sequitur] he will u. d.

(Good.)

I could not get it when he was with you friend. [Pause.] W. \* \* \* \* \* [scrawls.] W. James. [pause.] will you Tell Him for me friend. [Note 30.]

(Yes I will. Do you remember this?) [Showing the article sent by J. H. H.]

for Hodgson. no not for Him but concerns him. he got all over it. gave up for the work. yes he was somewhat proud and what financial aid he could he give gave to the work. found he could not make it support only *one*. yes do u u. d.

(Yes I think so.)

I asked him myself since coming over why he did not consider another one and his reply was as I have stated. She was his choice and when he would not give up his work it became a matter of conscience and he felt it his duty to give up one for the m a n y.

(Who says this?)

did I not ask it of the [thee] to find out why he did not m a r r y.

(Yes, you wrote me about it. I have your letter.)

that is his reason. he is very loth to talk about it as he says she belongs to another and he to his work. yes honest as the sun is our friend Hodgson.

(I believe it.) [Note 31.]

30. The incident about smoothing his mustache was not true or characteristic of Professor James, according to information. "He occasionally pulled his fingers through his beard as if combing it, but never smoothed his mustache."

31. This is an echo of the "Huldah Episode" in Professor James' Report on the Hodgson Control in the Piper sittings soon after the death of Dr. Hodgson. Professor James knew the facts well before his death. But the Report had been published and a copy of it was in the possession of Mr. Smead. Besides this some correspondence had passed between

would not hurt any ones feelings. [Pause.] feels hurt when he thinks his work is not appreciated. [Pause.] W. James, Myers. Thank him for me. I cannot stay long this day and Richard Hodgson will come soon. he is trying elsewhere just now. did you tel [tell] son to send me a token.

(Who do you mean by son?)

mine.

(I think Hyslop has done so.)

did you tell him it would help.

(Here is something Hyslop sent. You may know it.)

[Showing article.]

I wanted it drect [direct] from home.

(We will get it as soon as we can. I will tell Hyslop.)

Everyway better. it keeps the circle unbroken. helps to help yes. I get sleepy and have a strange feeling as if I could not breath[e] so will go shake it off. Hodgson will come.

Mr. Smead reports the following incident after the sitting, the result of an experiment as described. Its value is not important under the circumstances. The situation might suggest the coincidence.

"After the sitting I showed Mrs. Smead a picture of Professor James which I had in my desk. She had never seen it before and had never seen a picture of Professor James. She at once recognized it as exactly as she saw the man in her vision."

Mrs. S. Mr. S. September 21st, 1910. 10.30 A. M.

Even so we would speak to them if it is pleasing.

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] Several [Figure drawn that resembles most a pair of lorgnette spectacles.] \* \* \* \* \* and get what is most desirable to your side. it seems to us not more \* \* \* \* \* our part. we are bringing [almost illegible and largely guessed.] to those

---

Professor James and Mr. Smead regarding the episode. Professor James wanted Mr. Smead to get a certain message, which he did not know and which the Smeads did not know, through Mrs. Smead. Hence Mrs. Smead knew the general facts. How much Mr. Smead may have revealed to her of the episode in the Report no one can now say. Mrs. Smead did not read it. But no evidential significance attaches to the passage, tho it correctly represents the facts of the case.

that we \* \* [call] friends [pause.] that can come here on [?] \* \* \* \* \* . do you u. d. have been trying to get it on the other side. [Pause.] to get a message on toth [the other] side of the O O... [ocean] do you u. d. [Pause.] at the Lady there yes, there are several but we went first to the one called VERRALL. do you get it. did get [erased.] she get the message.

(I do not know how to find that Hodgson.)

VERRALL. [Pause.] ask. tried to have our friend give his name there. [seven or more dots made, but seven probably the number intended, and possibly pointing to the seven 'lights' abroad.]

we tried at several other lights. for we wanted to be sue [sure] [Pause.] not Fakes do u u. d. [Note 32.]

(Did you go to Rev. F. A. Wiggin?)

not J.

(Did James go to the Rev. F. A. Wiggin?)

I did not take him to such a person.

[Last question repeated.]

we have only a very few lights that we can use. to [too] much sub c o n s c i o u s n e s s. it is possible that some of these friends could personate our friend. [Pause.]

why do say it Earth bound souls could no not just that but just tell that he had come. they are ever watching for a chance \* \* [he ...] but unless a guide is left would try to talk and on your side it is easy to get messages when it is a public character that has left your [s] as the Sub liminal of the M e d i u m is always on the w a t c h. conscious sub liminal. do you u. d.

yes I thought it could give a small amiont [amount] of light on the Subject. no we have only been to a very very few places with friend James. we are guarded ['ed' erased.] ing himm [him] pour... rposely ['rp' superposed on 'ur'] that evidence

32. Inquiry of Miss Johnson for the first reference to Professor James by Mrs. Verrall resulted in the following information.

"Mrs. Verrall writes to me on July 20th, 1911, that she does not think there have been any references to him in her script. But on Sept. 12th, 1910, she had a dream impression of him which impressed her as an attempt at communication and was recorded by her at the time." The reader will remark that this is just nine days before this sitting. Cf. Note 11, p. 105.

may be the kind useful to our work, not Hit a [or] mis[s] kind. not Hit a mis kind. Hit a Mis Kind. do u. u. d. yes. \* \* we are desirous of making it known buy [by] [erased.] by those not knowing much of his life and that do not know much of him as a public character. kind of home rule [evidently not read.] rule [apparently not read.] rule. [Note 33.]

He is very much interested to see all phases of this work. you know there is much more he could tell if I were over there on your side. we were so closely connected in this work. [Pause.]

ask if music was not in the room we used sometimes when we first had our experiments and something had to be done with it. [Pause.] So many pieces scattered around that Phinuit had to have them put together. not I look again, no Phinuit [evidently not read first time.] Yes and our friend here thought it nonsense n... and joked over it.

(I will try and find out if I can.) [Note 34.]

we made a mistake by not asking the friends to give us the

---

33. The newspapers had mentioned an alleged message from Professor James through a man by the name of Wiggin. No evidential interest attached to it and he was a public medium.

The allusion to "personation" in this connection is an interesting one and especially for the manner of limiting its possibilities. This limitation consists with the method of communicating, as that seems to require the action of the individual subject or person in order to escape both the reality and the appearance of lying. Compare the discussion of the method of communicating that is somewhat cleared up by this record (p. 51). This function of earthbound souls is an idea not familiar to Mrs. Smead from spiritualistic literature, as she has never read any of it.

34. Inquiry does not reveal any clear meaning to this message about music in the early Phinuit days. It was Professor James who scientifically discovered Mrs. Piper and reported on her before Dr. Hodgson came to this country. It would seem in this passage that music accompanied the early sittings or was in some way related to them. One informant thought there had been some music in another room that annoyed Phinuit and possibly Professor James, or that he thought the profession of annoyance by Phinuit was nonsense. But Mr. Piper, Mrs. Piper's father, is quite sure there was no music in the early period either for the sittings or in other rooms. But my informant writes me that there was some singing by Mrs. Piper of Pareppa Rosa's songs apparently under control, which I imagine Professor James would naturally regard as nonsense and would joke about it. But there is not enough said here to identify the singing.

manuscripts [to] u. . . use. we had an idea that if they paid a price for them they were their property. hence we lost many valuable pieces of evidence. some believed and were afraid to leave their work with us. others would destroy them rather than leave them with us in fear of public comment. So ours was indeed a mistake. We will not try to tell anything for our friend but will let him tell for himself. we will guide the light and one or the other of our company. good morning. R. Hodgson. [Note 35.]

Mrs. S. Mr. S. October 3rd, 1910. 10.30 A. M.

Myers. You [?] not many [evidently not read correctly.] no no no \* \* dou [do you] Have you not asked many times of yourself why is it that so many souls leave the Earth and never return yes. do you not u. d. the reason [scrawly and not read.] reason the new friend would she talk to thee would tell it.

(I would be glad to hear her.)

I too would and have desired her to speak but it is as she told

---

35. The thought in this passage is quite accurate, and it turns about an important incident not known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead. After Dr. Hodgson's death there was a question raised regarding the ownership of the Piper records. The question was whether they belonged to the Society or were the private property of Dr. Hodgson or the private property of the persons who had paid for the sittings. Some sitters claimed theirs and tho the records, such as were left after private claims had been satisfied, went to England, the record was made somewhat fragmentary and more or less ruined for scientific purposes. All this Professor James was familiar with before his death, as he was a primary factor in the settlement of the case.

The communications, however, are from Dr. Hodgson and represent his idea of what should have been done regarding his records before his death. He here indicates truly enough that he should never have treated the records as the private property of the sitters. This position is very characteristic and represents facts and a position not known to the Smeads. Indeed they were totally ignorant of the whole situation, both regarding Dr. Hodgson's relation to the matter and the facts of which Professor James had knowledge. It is interesting to remark that the position taken by Dr. Hodgson represents or implies what is most natural on the supposition that he had learned the facts from Professor James after the latter's death. It is a most interesting evidence of the right kind of intelligence for the spiritistic hypothesis. The whole account is correct in its details as to the ideas and motives that prevailed with sitters in regard to the records and could not be better stated for those who know the facts.

me only a short time as we just began our work this day. She says she fears to try because of her dreadful pain. does not desire to get back to it and so it is with many many souls. They fear they would have to remain should they try to talk and so the desire to do it is not right. it is only when we know it is for the best that we try to have it so. [Note 36.]

(Cannot she talk to you?)

I will ask it of her. She is one much desired to and and interested.

(Ask her if she was pleased with what I tried to do for her?)

Friend she was with the [thee] in all thy work and it was pleasing to her. she says she found father well here and looking so much younger and did not carry [not read.] the stick ... cary [carry] the stick. y... [probably to complete 'carry', doubling the 'y' instead of 'r'] he met her when she came and Emma Bessie and mother, her own mother. there were no mo... nore [more] to greet her here she says than were over on your side and they tried to have [written 'heave'] her ... leave ... but she must first go to church to thank the Lord for his goodness to her, she would keep the Sabath [Sabbath] in a way pleasing to her maker. She began her new life in this way. [Note 37.]

(Did she see Christ?)

not yet Friend. there are few able to see him when they enter this wor[ld] [pencil ran off page.] of light they must be thoroughly [erased.] thoughor ... [erased.] thouroughly [cleansed] and get away from Earthly conditions in order to meet him. he did not the things of Earth that mortal souls did. hence he went to the world of purer light than any of the rest

---

36. The communicator was an acquaintance of the Smeads and had died from cancer on October 1st. She had suffered much pain, a fact, of course, well known to Mrs. Smead.

37. The communicator's father had died about a year previous and was buried by Mr. Smead. He carried a cane, having suffered much from inflammatory rheumatism. Her mother had died long before the Smeads came to that locality. Emma, the name of a cousin of the communicator, was also buried by Mr. Smead. Bessie was the name of the deceased wife of a clergyman and a sister of the communicator. The Smeads knew nothing about her and had never heard her name mentioned, according to their testimony. Mr. Smead learned the fact by inquiry. This name probably represents the only incident not known to Mrs. Smead.

of us could do upon coming over here. then so many that come forget they have left their earthly bodies and go on living in the earth atmosphere that they still believe they are a part of the earth's populations. can u [you] u. d., but she had been so long preparing for her journey that she at once knew to whom she was indebted for the new life. She had fulfilled the commandments yes. we had had our \* \* [physician] with her so much of late that she seemed one of our company also. P H P S ... [erased.] ian. physician. yes.

(Has she anything to say to me? Ask her please.)

She has met the Bishop now. she says over here the one that confirmed.

(Does she know why I could not bring Bishop L—— to her?)

yes friend. But he she tells me was not the one that confirmed her. She desires her sister to work for her church. says u [you] know how to talk to her sist[er]. yes she says will neglect her duty and have to make them up over here. She says Mr. Smead can do it. I would have told them more had they not felt I was in a better condition than I was but I must thank Mr. Smead for opening the way for me. [Note 38.]

(Tell her I told her the truth.)

yes but they then knew it must come when he came and talked to us and prayed for my soul.

(I knew it for a month past.)

they did not she says but she is desirous that they will not neglect their duty to God. She says they only half believe she is alive in this way that they hope she is all right and with all the others, but for her to come to any one and tell them about herself. would be more than their faith could stand.. so she says tell Mr. Smead that he must do his full duty and help them to do theirs.

we wish you all happiness here and father says that he is sorry he cannot act as host for you.

(Yes, give your father my regards.)

we liked to talk with you when you called.

---

38. She had been confirmed in the Episcopal communion by a bishop that had died long before, and the lady was one of Mr. Smead's best workers in the church. The advice given to her sister is regarded as pertinent.

(Give your father my regards. I did all I could for him.)

[Note 39.]

good morning.

(Good morning. God be with you.)

and with thy Spirit. a men [amen]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

Emma Says they always thot [thought] a heap more of  
cusin cousin [written above first attempt.] S Sa... Sallie than  
they did of here [her] and uwn ['when' or 'now'] they ... her  
[correction of 'here'] ... and now when she comes over here  
they let her talk before they gave her a chance.

(Who is Emma? I don't know.)

She wants to talk [written exactly as by Mrs. Chenoweth who  
often fuses 'lk' so as to appear only as one letter.] but I prefer  
to for her. she says she did a heap for the Church.

(I am very grateful to her.)

and wants to tell Elizabeth not to neglect it but to do as much  
as she can.. she says she could talk to you better alone but  
friend I do not desire it.

(I understand.) [Note 40.]

good morning. we will go now.

Mrs. S. Mr. S.

October 4th, 1910.

[Long wait.] \* \* [lines resemble T and O.] [Long pause.]

\* \* [Lines again clearly like T and O, but no evidence of this  
intention.] [Long pause.] \* \* [lines either a cross or F.]

(Who is here. I do not know you friend?)

Troubleous [possibly for 'trouble us' the 'trouble' being  
clear.] Poundr \* ne. [the 'P' begins with lines that suggest  
the later anagram for P and F which were the sign of Mr. Pod-  
more. The rest of the word is clearly as I have given it, the  
meaning not being evident.]

line y... [yes] [Pause.]

---

39. Mr. Smead used to call on the father frequently and had long talks  
with him.

40. Elizabeth is the name of the daughter of the Emma mentioned and  
is still living.

(Had we better stop?)

yes. [Note 41.]

Mrs. S. Mr. S. February 1st, 1911. [Hour not named.]

[Possibly an inverted Omega, but like a small 'v'. Followed by a clear Omega.] we are coming nearer. [Pause.] \* \* \* \*  
\* \* wondered how long you would keep keep us waiting.  
[Pause.] we [Pause and scrawls.] we have wondered \* \* \* \*  
doing you would keep us us waiting [pause.] yes. [Note 42.]

[Pause and scrawls.] the friends would speak soon and we have waited to talk to you. [Pause.] I would they do so in the light yes. we have been here much of late for our friend ] a m e s, but u [you] are too busy with Earthly cares. u [you] should give more time to the light bringing of light do u [you] u. d. yes to the Earth from our side. yes we desire it as it will not always be so that we can use the power. u [you] know we do not hurt our light. [Pause.] we [pause.] would send a message to Friend H. but not in darkness ... in [not read first time.] we will come after the Sabbath [Sabbath] to talk to the friend. tell him we would like the influence g [apparently erased.] ift of the dis \* \* \* \* [possibly for 'discarnate'] do u u. d. [Pause.] it would help yes. [Pause.] tell him for the friend here. there is a good deal more to living here than \* \* . [Pause.] do you u. d. we will go and come again [Pause.] after the Sabbath [Sabbath] [written in mere scrawls.] [Pause.] Hodgson yes.

Mrs. S. Mr. S. February 6th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

we are coming nea....

(Yes.)

who [Pause.] \* \* \* \* [scrawls.] [Pause.] \* \* \* \*  
[scrawls.] [Pause.]

(Take it easy.)

---

41. It is possible that this short sitting represents an attempt on the part of Mr. Podmore to communicate. There was no assurance, however, of this.

42. There is a fairly clear indication here that the Omega, clearly given in the sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth for the first time on September 29th, 1910, (p. 157) and predicted by G. P. on September 26th, (p. 139) was repeated but with no evidence of its meaning. That a sign was intended is indicated earlier in the sittings with Mrs. Smead. Cf. p. 98 and Note 3.

I want to tell James. [Pause.] He has forgotten his promise to James, yes. [Pause and scrawls.] do u u. d.

(I do not know what friend he means.)

[Pause.] He son James promised to send the the ... Son James promised to send the influence to friend James. d u u. d. [do you understand.]

(I have no influence from Son James.)

Son James send it would be [sheet changed.] why don't he help when he promised.

(I don't know.)

[Pause and scrawls.] ask him then.

(Yes, I will ask him.)

that is as is I [superposed on 'is'] said it to you.

(Now I understand. Good.)

we want it. does he Son James not know that a friend can bes ... [erased.] can best talk soon after coming to us.

(I don't know about what he knows.)

we have so often reminded him of the fact.

(Are you not a little mixed up. Don't you mean Prof. Hyslop?)

Son James yes. [Pause.] Yes not \* \* [scrawl.] he [the] friends arived [arrived] near. they are anxious for the \* \* ['personality,' tho probably intended for 'privilege'] of talking yes. [Pause.] why does he neglect us. [Pause.]

(I will write to son James and tell him what you say. Do you understand.)

yes. [Pause and scrawls.] did the friend desire hep [help]. (Whom do you mean?)

It is on the Sq... [square] yes they met there. Treavled [travelled] in an easterly direction [pause.] yes. [Pause.] but when they Parted it was on the level. [Pause.] do does the friend u. d., yes. [Pause.] yes \* \* [scrawls.] would \* \* [would?] to him allone \* \* \* \*. I would talk [?] to him alone \* \* [alone and not read.] alone yes. [Pause.] I would tell him much to help him [?] \* \* \* \* some things that \* \* \* \* \* does he u. d. [Pause.] no. \* \* [scrawls.] [Pause.]

The friends here have promised me yes. [Pause.] Brother has [?] been much troubled yes about me now [not read.] now.

[Pause.] alone. [do u] you understand. Tell ome ['some' or 'him'] all about. tell him all about my side \* \* yes. ask him if I did not leave him on the [figure of triangle drawn.] L E V E L when I came here, yes. [Note 43.]

[Pause and scrawls.] we traveled the same road yes. he knows I know him [?] [Pause.] I will tell him when I am alone I told you not now. I \* \* more much to say. [Pause.] to him. we were \* \* \* \* were \* \* I am though [through] talking yes. \* \* [scrawls.] please leave me. [Pause and scrawls.]

this is different. we will let this friend try again. yes. and [?] son for me. going now. Robert Hyslop. Dr. G. take them away [?].

Mrs. S. Mr. S. April 6th, 1911. [Hour not named.]

I [Pause.] \* \* \* \* \* [Pause.] O ye of little f... O ye of little faith yes. we are coming to make our preparation with thee friend.

(What do you want me to do?)

give us a chance to talk after the Sabath [scrawls for 'Sabbath'] yes po... we will do our part.

(All right.)

Smead. We have been here waiting for the first opportunity to ask why you did not bring the friend again.

(Can you bring him the first after the Sabbath?)

we said for the 2 day after the Sab—and you did not do your part. when there is a chance you must help us. There was an important friend from across [wavy line drawn.] that we did wish to bring. he has only been a short time there. [here] over on our Side

(All right. I understand.)

I will try yes English yes.

(Yes I will tell him. I understand Hodgson.)

---

43. The sitter was a Mr. G. who was well known to the Smeads. Also it was known to both that the sitter had a brother, Dr. G., who had died long before and about whom Mr. G. had been troubled regarding the mode of his death. But the fact that this Dr. G. was a Mason was not known to the Smeads. Otherwise the sitting is not evidential.

Tell H. I would have brought the friend had I had a chance.  
Hodgson. \* \* \* \* came \* \* \* \* too late to [too] late. do you  
bear me. am going. [Note 44.]

Mrs. S. Mr. S.

May 4th, 1911. 8 P. M.

\* \* \* \* [dots and scrawls.]

(Can't read it.)

I u. d. [?] we are coming nearer you. do you hear yes.  
[Pause.] Tell H. y... [yes] that Royalty counts over Here  
if it is in the upper Story. Do you hear me. [Pause.] not in  
the pocket. y... [yes] Tell him we are watching. \* \* ['W' ?]  
we always give our Scientific friends a chance as soon as they  
arrive and the friend came on every available opportunity yes  
trying to be seen or to make himself known yes no. He wants  
to try yes.

(He is welcome.)

but I do not wish him to yet.

(All right.)

He gets over anxious yes Enthusiastic yes and I told him  
I would ask permission as he did not believe in the Light [written  
'light' and stroke added to convert 'I' into capital 'L'] when  
there. [Pause.] only fair [evidently not read.] fair. he was  
always too positive for his own I D E A S. Tell H. we came  
to your Light first on this side of [wavy line drawn.]

(Do you mean Mrs. Smead, this light?)

Yes Hyslop's Light, he calls it yes. will u. d. you. Sorry  
now he did not investigate as H. suggested [not read.] suggested.  
always the same cry—To [Too] late. to [too] late.

(I want to tell you some important things tonight.)

---

44. The allusion is possibly to Mr. Podmore whose death was not  
yet known to the Smeads. They learned of it on May 4th, a month later.

It was on the date of Feb. 1st, 1911, when a sitting was held for another  
person and no evidence of Mr. Podmore was indicated. On this date the  
vision of the anagram occurred giving his initials. This is the first indication  
after that date that he was in mind. For full account Cf. p. 132. This was the  
first sitting after that date and the complaint of the communicator shows how  
much they depend on the human will for opportunities to perform their work.  
The tone of reproach is interesting as it would not be the normal attitude of  
Mrs. Smead.

This friend wans [wants] to talk to H.  
make some arrangements, yes yes yes  
(H. will be here the 29th of this month.)  
how many Sabbaths.

4 1 1 1 1 yes.

(Four Sabbaths.)

I will tell him. [Pause.] will he brings [bring] the influence.

(I will tell him to.)

personal one yes.

(I could not hold the sitting until now. I am sorry.)

[Pause.] How is my friend Hyslop.

(He is all right.)

I want to tell him that I find more real Light here than I have anywhere else not se [so] much Sub. as in most case[s] mixed with it as we are not known personally here he will u. d. me perfectly..

(I know who you are. You are Welcome.) [Note 45.]

it is un [erased.] an unam... unam ... yes. unanamer... understood by [?] by us here. all agree on this side but we find light in others that is so mixed that it is very hard to cross it with our personality m... H, will u. d. Some knw [knew] us in the earth state. H. says better go now. W. J., Richard Hodgson. do u. u. d. us good fellow

Mr. Smead records at beginning of the sitting that he and Mrs. Smead had just learned of Mr. Podmore's death. Mr. Smead had seen it in the *Outlook* and felt it best to tell the fact.

---

## PART II.

### DETAILED RECORDS OF SITTINGS WITH MRS. CHENOWETH.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

September 26th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Starlight Control.*]

[Mrs. C.'s head fell on the pillow and in a moment uttered 'Sarcou'. After a pause Starlight spoke.]

---

45. On the theory of secondary personality Mrs. Smead should have

Hello!

(Hello, Starlight.)

[Hand reached out to shake hands and I shook hands with her.] I came to see you. I have been with you at home and when you were away. I thought I would come and say, 'How do you do?' You don't mind my coming do you?

(No, I am glad you came.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Hello!

(Hello.)

[Pause.] It seems that I have to go so far away. [Pause.] I guess if you would put my head in... [referring to head rest. I put head in rest and in a few moments the hand reached for the pencil. I inserted it and it was held awkwardly awhile, and when it began to write it was very slowly.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

My [pause.] Dear [pause.] Hyslop. We are all at work.

(Thank you. My greetings.)

and give you a good morning as we begin this part of the history of [pause.] ...pirit w... [read 'peril'] spirit communication. So intense is our interest today that you will readily

---

gotten something pertaining to Mr. Podmore. Mr. Smead knew much of Podmore's position and had his "*Naturalization of the Supernatural*" in his library. Mrs. Smead had not read it, but knew enough about the man to have said something after knowing that he was dead. But it is Professor James that appears and the statement that he came here first is apparently true. Cf. Note 32 p. 126, and Note 11 p. 105.

It may be well to quote here the statements of Mr. and Mrs. Smead regarding their knowledge of him. Mr. Smead says:

"I know his name Frank Podmore; that he was a member of the S. P. R.; that he had written two or three books, of which I have two, "*Apparitions and Thought Transference*" and "*The Naturalization of the Supernatural*"; that he was an advocate of telepathy as explanatory *contra* spirits; that he was opposed to Dr. Hyslop's theories. I know nothing else, only that he is dead."

Mrs. Smead writes: "I knew his name; that he was a member of the S. P. R.; that he wrote one book as above. I never read or looked into either. Mr. Smead said nothing to me about him. I know nothing else about him."

understand [understand.] our eagerness to express [read 'impress'] express [pause.]

It takes a few minutes to get hold of the lines but some one has to begin.

(I understand.)

and it is your old friend in this work. G. P.

(Good. Glad to see you, George.)

I am happy indeed to give some help to you or any of our friends [pencil tapped till read.]

(All right.)

Hodgson is busy preparing conditions for our new experimenter at this work. It looks easy now but we can tell nothing sure until some effort has been made. allow me to send James' greetings to you and he has asked me to tell you that it will be his pleasure to do all he can to make his records complete and clear.

(Give my greetings to him and I shall be patient.)

It was not a surprise to us when he came but to him and when he found it was all over his first interest was in regard to this expression. He is very careful and is trying to hold his energy until the time is perfectly evident as the best time. It is good to see you again and the summer has made somewhat of a hole in your stack of work, but it also piled up some new work, so you are no farther ahead.

(That's correct.) [Note 46.]

but the world waits for an expression now as never before and if it is possible we will make our dash for liberty and settle some of these misunderstood problems. [Pause.]

I think I am always tempted to recall some of my own past every time I return for I never can quite recover from the awful grilling which Hodgson gave me after my most respectable and sudden departure. You are not such a fiend as he was or we would all be in the deep deep sea.

---

46. I had the Report on the "Case of Hysteria" (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R. Vol. V.*) for a part of my summer's work and several other large tasks. Mrs. C. knew nothing of this, only that I was busy. The new work referred to is possibly the present volume which had been planned as a consequence of the death of Professor James a month previous.

(Thank you.) [Note 47.]

You get the evidence just the same and we are not so distressed. The sittings with you are so much pleasanter, so much more social, Hodgson says that will do. he wants to hear no more of such soft compliments.

(I understand.)

It is perfectly true just the same.

(I learned my lesson from him and what he said afterward.)

Yes, he is all right and he saw after he got the light but a minute before and unlike some people he placed a guide post telling which way not to go.

(Yes.)

We have a big company here this morning. Myers and Moses, James and H. and some of the familiar friends of the Piper group. (Good.) who are always interested in James because he did so much in the early days. We thought we would give James a sign or name by which he could be known if he made any attempts elsewhere.

(Good.)

and that would save confusion and be perfectly plain to you who was coming. You see he was so well known that the instant [not read.] instant [read 'misland', tho it is perfectly clear, while I was under the illusion of the first apparent attempt.] minute [read 'misrule'] m. . . [suddenly read 'minute' and the letter 'm' erased.] instant was what I wrote. the minute he gives a title or an initial it is subject for guessing on the part of the communicating spirit. I think it a good plan to give him a sign and a name. do not you.

(Yes I do. That is right.)

He will decide for himself and when it is given he will make effort to give it at various places. I mean by various, one or two or three where he would natrially [naturally] go and thus the cross references and definite identification will be helped.

---

47. The reference to the "grilling" which Hodgson gave the communicator represents knowledge which Mrs. C. did not as a fact have, as she had never read Dr. Hodgson's Report, but it was public property and the incident here has to be discounted on that ground. His sudden death was probably not known to Mrs. C. but that too was public property.

(That is right.) [Note 48.]

[Pencil broke, new one inserted.] We are all glad to use all our energy or use none as the case calls for to suit [read 'send' and pencil tapped till correctly read.] him so if we play about in a way that seems inconsequential you will know what it is all about.

(Yes, go ahead as you please.)

The conditions here seem very good and please us [pause.]. You will remember George Dorr and his connection with the Piper work. (Yes.) and also his interest in our friend and his present interest to help him get some message through.

(Yes, perfectly.)

He [not read.] believes ... He ... that there was never so important an event in the annals not excepting Hodgson, but he is not the best sort of an investigator. He is very libble [evidently intended for 'liable', but read 'little'] likely to give away evidence unconsciously and he is careless about the records, but he is good and generous as a friend if he can do it in his own way. All that you know.

(Yes, that's right.)

Now it is only a word I have dropped in regard to him. I know well how James regards him and how shocked G— was at J.'s death but the friendly and family interest must for a few times be set aside and after that all the tender messages can be given to the loved ones. They all understand perfectly and James desires it to be so. [Pause.] [Note 49.]

---

48. The allusion to a sign for Professor James repeats a thought expressed through Mrs. Smead (p. 98) and is consummated in the sitting of September 29th through Mrs. Chenoweth (pp. 154, 157).

49. Mr. Dorr's name was connected with the Report of Prof. James which was in the possession of Mrs. C. I had sent it to her because she had figured in the Thompson sittings. She had glanced at the James' Report so that we may suppose her to have seen the name, casually at least, and so to have been familiar with it. But she could not thus have obtained information to make the remarks here made about him. The statements made represent opinions of certain persons about him and could not have been known to Mrs. C. except by direct inquiry or by very unusual casual information. Inquiry of her personally brought the reply that she did not know that Mr. Dorr had anything to do with the Piper case so that the information casually or otherwise acquired by reading the James' Report could not

Dick will write a minute now. George P—.

(Thank you.)

Oh by the way you remember some bits of poetry like snatches of song that used to come now and again in N. Y. I always intended to tell you that I am still trying to express myself in a petical ['poetical' but read 'partial'] way ... poetical. You sometimes guessed it but were not quite sure.

G. P. [Note 50.]

(Good.) [Pencil dropped and new one inserted.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pencil rolled in hand of Mrs. C. to "magnetize" it. A few inaudible French or Indian sounds were uttered.]

Good morning.

(Good morning, H.)

I did not think when you were here in the spring that the next time you came I would have William with me. He is very happy and confident. Chaffed me a good bit on my inability to talk definitely to him and insists that with the conscious life he is enjoying he can make a better showing than I did.

(I understand.) [Note 51.]

All right. let him try. (Good.) It is one thing to look on at a river [not read.] river and think you can swim and another to swim.

(Yes that's right.)

---

have been very great. Mr. Dorr was an intimate friend of Professor James, and is well characterized here, as is also his feeling about the death of Professor James.

50. G. P. was fond of poetry and I believe wrote some of it. Mrs. C. knew nothing about it. Nor did I know anything about it but ascertained its truth from one of his friends.

There were two or three "snatches" of poetry in the New York sittings, but there was no evidence that G. P. was the father of them. One was directly attributed to Dr. Hodgson and one, whoever was the real instigator, was related to Mr. M—.

51. The fact is that Professor James' death was predicted in the spring through Mrs. C. It was stated that he would do one more piece of work and then pass over. I have no evidence that this work was finished, or even that it was undertaken. He sailed about the time of the prediction for Nanheim for his health and probably did no more work.

He may call for help as loudly as the rest of us, but we hope he will prove the exception and find no difficulties.

(So do I.)

It was a beautiful transition for him and the whole effect of the glory of time and place made an impression. It seemed almost a pity that he could not have stayed another year because he had left so many matters unfinished with the purpose of coming back to them about now and yet a man as active as William would never have everything done and sit with folded hands to be called.

(Good.) [Note 52.]

[Pause.] There was a pathos in the manner in which he went, for afterwards many things were unpacked that had been brought just as he had arranged [read 'changed' as hand had superposed the writing.] arranged them with the ... with no thought of it being the last time. There were so many friends to meet him that he made no attempt to talk about these matters at first. It was like a family reunion and the whole interest was in heart matters. It was most beautiful to see for he has always been dearly beloved by his own. (Yes.) That is only in passing. [Pause.] [Note 53.]

Some of your work, I refer to your conversations, have [erased.] has been strong and telling. I was with you and a little company of people a few days ago where the thought turned [not read.] turned on the plans of the future and you do right when you take no risks in changing policies. Keep on as you are and keep expenses where they are until some of these questioners are ready to assume responsibilities monetarily. You know well how much it costs to sustain an office staff and you have had more than your share of expenses in energy and time and money already. [Pause.] [Note 54.]

---

52. All this is very characteristic of the place of his death and of the man. He did leave much unfinished and a man as active and restless as he was could never have remained in idleness. But all this was not beyond the general knowledge of everyone.

53. There was no expectation of his death when he went to Nauheim in the spring and when he returned there was no apprehension until a short time before the end.

54. I have had frequent conversations with individuals, but know nothing

There are some more papers and articles [not read at time.] of mine and \* \* [probably 'lef' for 'left'] article ... concerning me which William had yes [answer to correct reading of name that was uncertain.] and they will be forwarded to you. some things are marked for you in case of his death and some for the English Society. He was never quite sure of the truth of communication as you and I \* \* [scrawl for 'were' or 'are']. He wanted to be and was more confident earlier [not read.] earlier but when he began to compare records and make careful investigation away from the influence of the spirit, I mean apart from the guides, he was concerned at the lack of evidence in words and the amount [read 'marvel'] amount of influence psychological. You understand.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 55.]

That was a sad day for him when he admitt... [not read and pencil ran off page.] admitted the doubt [read 'dribble' questioningly.] doubt to his own consciousness. His interest did not wane, but he felt he had too little gold and too much dross.

---

of their effect. A few days before this the matter of money and policy was talked over with some persons in connection with the Board of Trustees. One of them was in favor of policies to which I objected strongly. None of these facts could possibly have been known by Mrs. C.

55. No articles have turned up marked for me or any one. Professor James did not feel so sure as I did regarding this subject and this may have been apparent to any one who knew his public statements. But the reference to it may be compared with the statement through Mrs. Smead that he "only partially believed." Cf. p. 110. It is true that he wanted to be convinced, for he saw as none other, the reconstructive influence of the conclusion upon science and philosophy. He felt keenly the imperfections of the evidence and when he saw the opportunities for communications with Dr. Hodgson he had strong expectations of results that would settle it for him, but he was disappointed in the outcome. While Mrs. C. had seen the Report and skimmed it she was not familiar enough with the points of view for estimating the evidence to give so accurate a view of them as occurs in the last sentence of the message. She could have known that he was not satisfied with the results, tho her skimming of the Report may have missed even this. But I cannot apologize for this part of the message. The significant incident is the demand for exact words and psychological evidence of mental characteristics. But it is put into the mouth of Dr. Hodgson and is the reflection of Dr. Hodgson's views, or the result of conversation with Professor James.

(I understand.)

He is happy to find that the life is clear and livable [read 'liable' and pause till correctly read.] yes [answer to correct reading.] not a phantom existence as he sometimes thought. You remember the suggestion of shadows on the brain [not read.] aura [read 'avia'] aura . . . pantomimes, some such weird expressions of a past existence unreal and unnatural ['unnatural' but read 'etherial', under influence of the idea of 'aura' above.] unnatural. You must recall the conversation when these doubts were in his mind.

(Yes.)

He has referred to it several times since he came here. It was after I had made such havoc with my identity. I say havoc [read 'have'] havoc because it was so cut to pieces and incomplete. You remember it was after that after he had been weighing [not read at once.] weighing my evidence.

(Yes.)

I was there with you at this [superposing] at that interview and felt as sad as you for a moment but I recovered and now I am glad to recall it to you.

(Thank you. That is good.) [Note 56.]

Don't fret about Podmore. We knew he came here. We had more or less curiosity to see how he would effect [affect] the light and we were horrified to find the obstinate frame of mind which possessed him in life still held to his spirit and he kept trying experiments and the more he tried the more he was impressed. We asked Starlight to keep still and we were allowed by the band to go on. It proved a good thing for us and for

---

56. All this represents Professor James' mental position exactly as some of us knew him and his development in psychic research, but it is quite beyond the knowledge that Mrs. C. had of him in it. It is not in any form that is more than inferrible from the little we did know. He gave no expression to it in any form like this and it is too general to make evidence of it. The most that can be said is that it is not erroneous, while it reflects some of the peculiarities of his mind. It is conceivable that his own Report might suggest it.

The admission by the communicator, Dr. Hodgson, that he had made havoc of his identity represents the view maintained in the Report in Mrs. C.'s possession.

him and convinced me that adverse influence has power sometimes to convey [not read.] Convey distress.

(I understand. Is Podmore convinced yet?)

Convinced—he—he wants to keep [keep] right on doing the same thing. He did that all his earthly life. We answered his arguments but that did not help him and it is just the same now. I am going to let him write one day and see what he will say. It is late.

(Wait, wait. You are superposing.) [Note 57.]

---

57. Mrs. C. knew that Mr. Podmore was dead and possibly knew enough of his work, tho she had read none of it, for me to attach no special value to what is said, even tho its general character and transcendental setting did not exclude it from account.

At my request Mrs. Chenoweth wrote out her experience which Miss Whiting thought referred to Mr. Podmore soon after his death. It is precisely as Mrs. Chenoweth told it to me personally soon after its occurrence. It is dated August 30th, 1911.

"I do not now remember the date, but think it was the last week in August of 1910. I will try and get more exact time by some other events if possible, but this is the story of my strange experience.

"I awoke in the middle of the night between one and two o'clock with a strange sensation as of water coming up over my body and I was so cold and frightened I did not know what to do. I lay down again after I had walked about the room, trying to dispel the sensation, but it seemed to me that the waves were coming in through the window and would presently sweep over me and drown me, and always there was rain on my face which was wet and uncomfortable with it. I had this experience for two or three nights, and on the last night I could not control myself. I was so frightened and so cold and was so sure I was to be swept away and drowned. I got up and gathered my blankets around me, went to Mr. Chenoweth's room and told him how I felt and that I knew I was silly, but I must go to another room to sleep. I went to another room, went to sleep and never had a recurrence of the sensation and I have never slept in that room since, and indeed when I go into the room by daylight and look out of the window, the vividness of that experience sometimes returns and I half expect to see the ocean sweeping towards me.

"An evening or two after this experience I was in Miss Whiting's room and she was telling me some things which had happened to her and I said, 'I have had a strange experience and it may be psychic too, but I really felt as if it were the effect of a bad dream.'

"Then I told her about it and we went on talking about other things. After a little time she stepped into her chamber and suddenly called out to me: 'Oh, I know what your experience was. It is Mr. Podmore trying to communicate.'

It is late [not read.] I am ... late ... I seem to be losing [not read.] losing energy.

(The time is about up.)

[Pause.] I think William next time ['next' not read.] next time. Goodbye for now.

(Thank you.)

R. H. [Pencil fell and there was a long pause. Hand then reached for pencil and it was inserted. It wrote very slowly.]

William. [Then pencil dropped.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello! (Hello.) [Mrs. C. laughed and then paused.] Put my head back. [I did as suggested.] My hand feels numb in my lap [referring to the left hand. I saw it was stiff.] Take it. [I took hand and rubbed it.]

Isn't it lovely to have sittings again. Don't you love them. [Pause.] Do you love the White Mountains?

(Yes.) [Note 58.]

So do I. There are lots of people here.

(Yes I expect so.)

"Who is Mr. Podmore?" I asked.

"An Englishman, interested in these things, who had just been drowned", she said. Then she told me that he had written a book and that Little and Brown, her publishers, had sent her the proofs of it to read, with a view of taking the American rights to publish. 'I advised them to do it', she said, 'but they have decided not to for some reason and I wrote to Josephine (Miss J.—) about it and she wrote me that evidently neither Little and Brown nor I knew that Podmore was drowned.'

"She gave me no circumstances of the death for she did not then know them and she told me she would find out from Josephine about it. We have never talked of the matter since. It was merely a matter of impression with her and an incident, rather unusual, to be sure with me. Still I rush from one thing to another in my life and practically forgot it. I think I have told everything exactly as it occurred."

If Mrs. Chenoweth had known much about Mr. Podmore, his appearance after the occurrence of this incident and knowing what it might mean would have possibly accounted for more than it does. Two things stand out in the experience which she did not know apparently; the relevance of drowning and the rain in her face as I was later informed that it had rained the night of Mr. Podmore's drowning.

58. I had spent the summer in the White Mountains and Mrs. C. knew it. Professor James died a few miles from the place and Mrs. C. knew it.

I guess they are eager to give you a good showing of evidence, don't you? (Yes.) more than that like a conversation. It is a wonderful opportunity to have a man who wants to express himself. I suppose he will come bye and bye. You know to whom I refer. (Yes.) When he gets ready. (Yes.) All right. Goodbye. [Suddenly opened eyes after pause.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. September 28th, 1910. 10 A. M.

Before the sitting began Mrs. C. told me the following facts. On Monday night last and all day Tuesday she saw Professor James before a safe. He was stooping down opening it. He opened a little drawer and took out something. She could not tell what it was. She saw the vision a dozen or more times. It was not money that he took out, but she failed to see what it was every time she thought she was on the point of getting it. Afterwards she saw something like little pebbles in a paper. He did not look at Mrs. C. and did not seem to know that she was looking at him. Mrs. C. remarked in the narrative that she had been in his house, but in this vision she did not seem to be in the room in which she had been normally. The room seemed beyond this and in a hall, and it seemed set in, referring apparently to a safe. [Note 59.]

There followed this narrative a long pause and silence preparatory to going into the trance.

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear! [Head fell on pillow.] [Pause.] I guess I'll go in the place. [I placed her head in the rest and after a pause she reached for the pencil and the writing began. It continued very slow and deliberate until the appearance of Whirlwind, when it became more rapid, but not so rapid and confused as this personality usually is.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I can [pause.] not lose [pause.] consciousness. Life is

---

59. This reference to a safe, here as well as later, suggested an attempt to mention something about a letter supposed to have been a post-humous one. The newspapers had been full of references to it. But inquiry showed that he had no such safe and also that there is no evidence anywhere that he had written such a letter.

[pause.] communicable [hissing sound of voice heard.] some [pause.] definite and exact method [hand helped to left side of paper.] [pause.] I still exist as an individual with power to recall the [pause.] past and I do not desire to question how or why just yet but to keep my hold on the opportunity [opportunity] until I am convinced of the . . .

[When the hand was helped to the left side of the paper there was a pause and some evidence of disturbance. The fingers doubled under and into the palm. The pencil was held in an unnatural manner. The hand rolled the pencil about as if trying to adjust it to a normal position, but could not and owing to the condition of the fingers I did not feel justified in disturbing the situation. When the writing began in this awkward position it was with great difficulty and it was somewhat scrawly.]

possibility of definite [pencil fell out of the hand and I replaced it in a normal position in the fingers, and the writing proceeded without further difficulty.] communications. I am feeling my way slowly and cautiously [cautiously] but hope to write less spasmodically than some [hand helped back to left side of paper.] [pause.] of my confreres.

(Good. That's good.) [Before the word 'confreres' was written I thought of the word 'colleagues' and suddenly thought of 'confreres' wondering if it would be written. As soon as I saw the 'n' I saw it was coming.]

I am more keenly conscious of you than I expected to be and the sense of aloofness is absent and my [pause.] effort to keep placid relieves me from any uncanny feeling about the use of another body than my own. I am in contact through sympathetic vibration, vibration. Am I making myself understood.

(Yes, perfectly.)

I know to whom I am writing and suppose [suppose] you have reasoned it out.

(Yes, I understand, whatever the language may be, so do not worry about that.) [Said to encourage communicator.]

as to my identity.

the seriousness of the situation appeals to me.

(I well believe it.)

I would eliminate the small talk for the present. I was

prepared for the experiment as we all were and the disappointment which I felt at Richard's failure to reveal, to reveal the definite word and message gave me little confidence that I could project my thought ["Messeur" uttered by Mrs. C.] to you with sufficient clarity to prove myself to be W. J.

(Good, I understand.)

I left five different papers for the use of the Society and will make an exact reference and statement as I can.

(Good, thank you.) [Note 60.]

[Mrs. C. uttered some inaudible words like French or Indian, and then paused.]

The light moved.

(I understand.)

---

60. Inquiry shows that no such papers were found as are described in the last lines.

The reference to "Life" and survival recalls the first message through Mrs. Smead. Cf. p. 97. The statements that he could not "lose consciousness", and more clearly, that he was "more keenly conscious of me than he expected to be" are a little ambiguous, but one of the possibilities is that he expected from Hodgson's and my own theory to be in a dream state. Unfortunately this view is marred by the possibility that the last statement may refer to the fact that the difference between that life and the present one is less than supposed. The statement of his inability to lose consciousness is more probably a reference to the continuity of life than a trance state.

He was disappointed with the communications from Dr. Hodgson, tho it was clear that he knew what discount had to be made for the medium after so many years work with her by Dr. Hodgson. He knew, however, that, if he got the "definite word", evidently a reference to Dr. Hodgson's posthumous letter, he could rely implicitly upon that. This never came and so with the confusion and liability to previous information he had too little upon which to base his case.

As soon as I saw the words "sympathetic vibration", I recognized that Professor James, whom I assumed the communicator to be, would not use it, as it was opposed to his habits of thought. I would not ask a question about it because this might disturb the thread of his thoughts. But as I read the automatic writing aloud we may suppose that he or the trance personality caught the words as I read them, and it was exceedingly interesting to see what followed. Apparently there was consciousness of something wrong or calculated to produce confusion in my mind, especially as to the identity of the communicator. Apparently the communicator saw the liability to misunderstanding and referred to me as one likely to understand him. I said I did in order to prevent confusion, assuming that I could treat the phrase as subliminal coloring.

Did she.

(Yes a little.) [Moved her head slightly.]

I felt the change. [Pause.] I would have preferred to stay with my family a few years longer. I looked forward to some work long planned and some days of leisure and [pause.] special endeavors on these matters. But I broke down all at \* \* [erased.] once and could not seem to get any leverage. My wife regrets my efforts and as usual when death comes feels she ought [read 'the weight', the second word questioning.] she [superposed and not read.] she ought to have made more protest, but tell her the body was nearer worn out than she knew.

(Yes, I understand. I shall.) [Note 61.]

I cannot feel the sorrow as she does for the joy that comes from the knowledge and reality of continued [continued] life and consciousness of her life and love dissipate in a measure the shadow of the present separation. I am losing the hold but thank you thank you.

(Thank you very much indeed.)

[Change of Control.]

[Paused and pencil fell. Then some French words were uttered and the hand signified a desire for a pencil. Three were given, handled and rejected in order by a quick throw. The fourth was retained.]

So here we are and we are very glad that the dear friend was able to write just that word. he will come again. (Yes.) Hurricane you know me all right don't you. (Yes.) and I am here because the friends have . . .oken [read 'asked'] taken your friend apart for a little while. We will not stay today: the strain would be too much. It was a good connection he made and he wants to keep it. Have you something you want to say to me.

---

61. The autopsy showed that his body was in a condition in which he could not have lasted long. This was unknown to me and as equally unknown to Mrs. C.

There is much pertinence in the other features of the message, but, while they represent things that Mrs. C. could not possibly know, they are not incidents which can be emphasized or inquired into too minutely.

[I had been thinking all the while after recognizing that it was Whirlwind, from the writing, that I would ask the following question, which this opportunity offered, and I did so.]

(If right I would like to know your real name. It seems to have been given in New York and I shall not divulge it. But to get it would be a good cross reference. You do as you think best.)

Thank you. I know what you are after and when the right time comes you shall have it.

(All right.)

Goodbye now . [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal I.*]

Hello Dr. Hyslop. Who is the woman?

(I know. She is all right.)

She's swift. What a lot of people are around here. All seem so smiling. I don't see Dr. James tho. Perhaps he will come before you go.

(Yes he was here.)

Was he? I am glad. He should make the best record ever made and you next. [Pause.] Put me back. [Head put on pillow.] We ought to have a higher chair. Is it afternoon?

(No.)

It seems like four o'clock.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

September 29th, 1910, 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello! (Hello.) [Pause.] I am glad.

(So am I.)

I wish you could see the people here.

(So do I.)

[Pause.] First they look to me as if they were away off, then they gradually draw near or I draw near them, I don't know which. Anyway we come nearer together. I can see Dr. Hodgson. He is busy enough, isn't he. [Pause.] Do you know any one named Benjamin?

(Yes.)

I see a man. I mean a spirit.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Were you eager to get anything from that Benjamin?

(Anything that might come.)

Are you especially eager?

(No, not especially. Yes, one thing would be good.)

He is eager to say some special thing. He has clear blue eyes that look directly at a person. I don't hear anything yet. He moves his mouth but I don't hear his words. [Pause.] [Note 62.]

I guess we are going to have a nice long sitting today. [Pause.] I hear another name Laura. Do you know that?

(Yes.) [It is the name of a deceased sister.]

That's strange. That's my mother's name. I know it is not she. It is for you.

(What relation is she to me?) [Note 63.]

I don't know. I only hear the name and know she is connected with you. I think they are doing something while I am waiting. I see Dr. James. Is that the right way to speak of him?

(Either way.)

He looks so happy. He has a childlike simplicity with all his greatness. With him I see a little child grown up in spirit. It was little when it went away. It is devoted to the father and they are fond of each other. Did you know anything about it?

(I know nothing about it.) [Note 64.]

All the better. The dearest woman must be his mother. She is a very active woman. She has great capacity and is

---

62. My father's cousin was named Benjamin. I learned on December 26th, 1910, that he had died in the previous spring in the West. I had not known the fact.

63. I had a deceased sister by the name of Anna Laura. She was one of the communicators in my first Piper Report and passed there under the name of Anna and Annie. Her full name was mentioned on page 27 of that Report and tho it was not seen by Mrs. C. we cannot lay any stress upon it, especially as the relation was not given in response to my request.

64. Inquiry showed that Professor James had lost a child of 18 months in 1885. This was long prior to the origin of Mrs. C.'s mediumship and she would probably not know the fact without direct inquiry.

proud to have her boys do the best that is in them. It is like a family message sent to his people, his wife and his boy. He and his wife were so devoted to each other always. She was almost like a mother to him in her care of him. Do you understand?

(Yes, exactly.)

Whatever he did, wherever he went, or whoever came to him she was a sort of protector and stood between him and the world. Her hand always soothed him and helped him. She was his companion wife and mother combined in a blessed way. She is so lonely without him. He has hours of loneliness without her. He is conscious of her, is with her and goes with her. The human loss he feels at times. He says, tell her will you? (Yes.) in my effort to bring the scientific evidence I do not and cannot forget my life with her and I send great love to her and I have perfect confidence in her adjustment of everything. That's to her.

[Groan and discomfort in the chair evident. Pushed herself back a little and then proceeded.]

You are not sorry that came are you?

(Not at all.)

[Pause.] They had to go back to the cottage to arrange things afterwards. It seemed to her that she never wanted to spend any more time there again, but she will.

Then he ... you know his son Harry. (Yes.)—I know the name—He says Harry understands what to do. He will help you.

(Good.)

Gone. [Not clearly uttered. Pause.] [Note 65.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Well I am here and ready for a little work this morning.  
I am G. P.

(Good.)

I am to tell you at once who I am so there will be no con-

---

65. After the funeral, according to the information of the son, the family went back to the Chocorua cottage, not so much to arrange things as to get rest.

fusion. We all stood aside to let James write yesterday and he did mighty well for the first attempt.

(Yes he did.)

much better than our friend in N. Y. who resented the female structure. You must recall whom I mean.

(Yes I do.) [Professor Shaler had purported to communicate two or three years earlier and complained of the size of the organism he had to use.]

but strangely enough I cannot write the name myself just now and that is an instance of loss of memory while in control.

(Yes.)

James has decided on his sign and will give it to you when he comes a little later.

(All right.)

One thing about him is his even and perfectly poised spirit. That will help very much. He [read 'H' thinking it referred to Hodgson, but pencil tapped on pad till I read it 'He'.] is not impassioned or impatient but keeps a clear head and so ought to make a good showing [read 'strong' and then 'thorough', when pencil tapped for correct reading. On my failure it started to rewrite it when I suddenly read it and it was not finished.] showin... yes [to correct reading.]

We are more excited [read 'needed'] than ... excited than he is. I do not feel like using any energy which might be saved for him but if at the end there is time or strength some of us may come.

(Good.)

[Pause.] R. H. wants me to assure you that he will work as diligently as he can and he hopes this may be your bright jewel [both words not read at once.] bright je ... [read and not finished.] in your crown. No one can tell what the result will be.

(I understand. I know H. will.)

We really have so many things to do that we hardly take energy to speak like old friends and intimate associates in a common work. It is some thing like sending cablegrams. It is expensive [expensive] so we use signs and cut words. (Yes.) G. P. [Pause and pencil dropped.]

[Change of Control.]

I seem so clumsy [clumsy] and slow but you will be patient and help me.

(Yes I shall.)

I am divided between two desires. first to assure my family that I am still a part of their human existence to send greetings to my friends (Yes.) and speak of my surroundings and second to make the record of identity [identity] clear and correct. I fancy I am not to be troubled with inquisitors as was Richard.

(Not if I can help it.)

His record was distorted and much of the uncertainty was due to the adverse element of previous acquaintance and constant mismanagement of sittings.

(I understand perfectly.)

and I understand as I did not before. Have you not something for me to hold. [Note 66.]

(Yes, shall I put it in the hand?)

Please.

[I placed one of his neckties in Mrs. C.'s hand resting in her lap. The tie was wrapped in oiled silk, but I opened it so that Mrs. C. could grasp it which she did.]

hoank [thank] you. Was this taken from my bureau.

(Very probably.)

I feel with it a sense of my clothing and some other articles of this kind in the drawer from which this was taken and as I return in thought I look once more out of the window and see the trees and hear the sounds of the early summer. Strange how a touch of the past creates or recalls [recalls] pictures.

(Yes just like association in a dream.)

Yes I enjoy this experiment.

(Yes, so do I.)

It is getting down to first principles.

(Yes it is.)

---

66. This is a very characteristic allusion to Dr. Hodgson's record and the explanation of the distortion is pertinent. Whether it could be the subconscious result of what Mrs. C. saw in his Report cannot be determined.

The allusion of G. P. to "signs and cut words" is not borne out in the record of Mrs. C., but it was in the case of Mrs. Piper and is in that of Mrs. Smead.

on my own responsibility [Pause.]

You wrote a good letter and you will get consideration from Harry.

(All right.)

You know to what I refer. Since my death you recall.

(Yes I do.) [Note 67.]

Naturally I shall try where I am expected but that will in no way mar my work with you.

(Good, I understand.)

My interest is with you in your striggle [struggle]. I told you so before.

(Yes you did and I always appreciated it very highly.)

Thank you. I knew you were misunderstood.

(Yes you did and you were about the only one who did understand me.) [Note 68.]

That understanding of your plans makes me doubly interested now. I gave up the Hodgson reports at about the right time did I not.

(Yes, explain a little more.)

[In asking this question I had in mind the statement made through Mrs. Smead recently where the allusion was to the

---

67. This is one of the securest pieces of evidence for the supernormal that I could have had. Very soon after my sittings with Mrs. Smead I sent on a copy of the record to Mrs. James with a few questions. She returned it with some expressions of surprise that I had attached any value to it as evidence and stated that there was nothing whatever in it that was characteristic of him. I sat down and wrote her a long letter explaining that I was not at all concerned with the question whether there was evidence of spirits in it, and that I was studying the minds of mediums quite as much as I was the evidence for the supernormal. I had seen one incident that was true and suggestive and I did not know whether there was any more in it or not. I had to say that all I wanted to know was whether certain statements were true or not. I did not care whether they were evidence or not. A little later the son named did answer my inquiries. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know that I had written this letter without direct inquiries of the James family and readers may dismiss that probability from mind. I said nothing to her about it and it was only a short time previous that I had written the letter.

68. This interest in my struggle was not a generally known fact and manifested itself in various quiet ways which were not known to any one but myself.

sitters or to our permitting his records to leave the country. The answer to my question shows that the communicator did not have this statement in mind.]

Out of my hands before this [inaudible French or Indian spoken.] happened. the reports of his sittings

(Yes I understand. That's good.)

with me. [Note 69.]

(Yes that's clear.)

Tell Mrs. James that I am not sorry that I went across. That was not what caused my death although I can still hear her troubled tone as she said "I am sure you were not able to go and I am sorry we went."

(Good, I understand.) [Note 70.]

[Pause.] It would have been harder to stay. the anxiety would have been too great. Here is my sign. Omega.

(All right. That is good. Omega.)

I can hold no longer.

(I understand.) [Note 71.]

[Pencil fell and some French or Indian sounds were uttered and then a pause.]

[Change of Control.]

All right Hyslop things are moving on well (Yes.) enough for the start. Same cautious William but faithful and lovely as a spirit can be.

(Yes, that is right.)

take his necktie. Is it not a necktie. [Necktie removed from hand.] I saw it while he was writing. We are about as

---

69. The reference here is to his own Report which I had published. No evidential interest attaches to it.

70. The trip to Nauheim did him no good, according to the testimony of his son. Various reasons existed for not making an inquiry regarding the sentiment and expression here attributed to Mrs. James.

71. The reader will observe that the sign Omega comes out clear here and involves a coincidence with the same sign previously indicated through Mrs. Smead (p. 97) and also given later more clearly through the same source (p. 132). I did not know of the later instance until the 28th of May, 1911. The earliest instance of it on September 1st, 1910, had not been noticed by Mr. Smead and the record was not reported to me until May 28th, 1911. It was kept in his own files.

happy a quartette [read 'quarter'] 4 [still not read.] 4 quartette as you can find.

(I believe it.)

Who do you think the quartette.

(You tell.)

G—(Yes.) M—(Yes.) J. (Yes.) H.—(Right.) Good workers all. (Yes.) The time must be up for the power is waning.

(Yes we have one more meeting and I hope to arrange for others.)

We will do all we can.

(Yes, thank you.)

R. H. [Pencil dropped.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Dr. Hyslop, do you know whom I see?

(Who?)

Dr. James in a big green chair with red cushions, (Yes.) sitting out of doors. It looks like a piazza in sunset time. The sky is beautiful and a heavy shawl or steamer rug over him. It looks like such a rug. It is plaid and of dark color but heavy wool. I think it was just before he went away the last few days. He looks so ill, thin and worn, but happy. But it seems as though after the body was ready for the service it looked lovely. It looked alive almost. I had to tell you I saw it. Put my head back. [Head placed on pillow on back of chair.] [Note 72.]

He came today. He is all right now. Isn't he? (Yes.) We shall see you tomorrow. Goodbye. [Pause.]

Goodbye. It is beautiful. I always feel on the steps of the other life when you . . . [sentence unfinished.]

Your wife sends love to you.

(Give mine to her.)

She knows it but loves to have you express it just the same.

[There was some muscular shivering as Mrs. C. recovered normal consciousness, the first that I have noticed since the Shaler incident in New York two or three years ago.]

The writing of Professor James was very slow and deliberate.

---

72. No one recalls the incident here described. It seems not to have occurred at the time intimated, to say the least.

much more so than is usual in this work. It required most of the hour and a half to write the small part of the record coming from him.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

September 30th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello! (Hello.) [Pause.] What a genial smile Dr. Hodgson has? (Yes.) You remember it don't you?

(Yes perfectly.)

I have seldom seen him so happy and expressive as he is this morning. [Pause.]

Put my head in. [Head placed in rest.] Shaler was the name they could not remember. Do you know anything about what they mean?

(Yes I do.) [Pause.] [Note 73.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[The first pencil given was rolled in the hand and then rejected. I gave one used by Professor James Wednesday and it was accepted. It had been used yesterday by G. P. and not by Professor James in his writing.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

I am ready with my friends to make another trial. We are very much pleased to have William to take so rational [not read.] rational and unimpassioned a view of the situation [read 'valuation' questioningly.] He ... situation, I must be writing very badly. I am eager to pass the pencil over to him. He is happy and feels confident and wants to continue when you have time and he will try and make everything complete as possible as he goes along. We are all helping and our silence [read 'retinue'] silence and background appearance is to our credit and your gain. George P—. [Hold of pencil relaxed.] (All right.) [Pause.]

---

73. This has reference to the incident mentioned at an earlier sitting where G. P. tried to give the name of some one who had resented "the female structure" (p. 154). It was Professor Shaler.

[Change of Control]

My greeting.

(My greetings to you also.)

How soon we accept the vocabulary of the seance room.

(Yes.)

Man is the most adaptable creature in the world and it is never better demonstrated than in the case of returning spirits. Tell my friends to have no concern about the newspaper accounts of my efforts. Reports of [pencil spontaneously fixed slowly and carefully, the fingers having slipped down.] interviews with me are not of enough importance to cause one expression of indignation. The pri... [pencil ran off page.] price one pays for open interest in a new revelation [revelation.]

(Yes, that is good and characteristic of you.) [Note 74.]

It opens my eyes to some of the real difficulties in the way of actual communication to try experiment myself.

(Yes, do you find Hodgson and I were right about the difficulties?)

I think so, but it is too early yet for me to have positive conclusions.

(All right. Take your own course.)

I am of the opinion that some of the messages are produced without volition. (Good.) and that they are caught by contact, hence the broken and imperfect utterance on the paper. Actual and complete contact would make the circuit and running capacity for train[s] of thought. Do you understand my expression.

(Yes satisfactorily.)

I desire to have the work complete. Less jerky and disjointed than Richard gave us.

(I understand. That's good.) [Note 75.]

---

74. The newspapers had been full of alleged messages from him and they were just such as he would have laughed at himself about any one else. The medium knew this well enough and perhaps is capable of looking at the matter as indicated, tho in speaking of them to me she spoke almost indignantly of them. It was I who had to remark—later than this date—that they were not worth getting angry about.

75. This is a characteristic description of the Hodgson communications but probably also within the knowledge of Mrs. C. from her glances at the Report.

It may take more time but it will be better in the final efforts.

The location of my spirit entity is of some interest to me but little to you as yet. When I can prove that I am not a deteriorated personality you may wish to know about my place of abode.

(Yes I shall.)

It is more tangible and [pause and hissing sound with a shift of the body in the chair, as if resenting control.] substantial than I thought I assure you.

(Is the world one or many kinds of reality?)

Many kinds but one essentially.

(Yes, how do you find it with your pluralism?)

[Pause.] Yes yes, I understand and will talk of it later.

(That is all right. I referred to it for the reaction.)

I understood.

(Good. I am glad to know it.) [Note 76.]

[Pause.] I feel no sense of weariness as I did before [French or Indian sounds.] I died. I used the word with consciousness. died Something died.

(Yes, do you remember who used to object to that word in sittings?)

You refer to Imperator.

[There was a pause before the name was attempted and then another pause followed the writing of the capital 'I'.]

(Yes, that is good.)

That was why I emphasized it.

(I thought so.) [Note 77.]

---

76. The reply to my reference to "Pluralism" is very inadequate, whether we attribute it to the ignorance of the subject by Mrs. C. or to the difficulties of communicating.

77. I have always noticed different usages in regard to the use of the word "death" by communicators. Some show that, in life, it denoted annihilation for them and they deny dying. Others who looked at it as simply a physiological fact or change have no objections to using it in their communications. Here Professor James, if it be he, characteristically refers to it. In the Piper records it is usually referred to as "so-called death" or "death so-called", always in my experience, by the trance personalities. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing of this habit, so that the whole character of this passage in her automatic writing is at least suggestive, if not evidential.

a very little evidence if given unequivocally is better than a dozen hits towards something.

(Yes, that is correct.)

Why do you do [so read.] not [superposed on 'do' erasing it.] ask the psychic to give you a written statement of all she can recall of her knowledge of me.

(I shall certainly do so.)

It may help me in my references. I will [French etc.] tell of other [body moved and groaned as if tired.] things [groaned again as if tired.] Losing control.

(I understand.) [Note 78.]

Om... [ega]

---

78. This is a very pertinent and characteristic suggestion to me. Only Dr. Hodgson and Professor James, among all the communicators I have had, have shown this appreciation of the evidential situation. Accordingly it will be well to insert at this point the answer which Mrs. C. made to my request, without telling her why I asked it, and representing her knowledge of Professor James.

"I know that Professor William James lived at 95 Irving St., Cambridge, Mass.; that his wife's name is Alice and that he has a son Harry and a brother Henry. That his father was a Swedenborgian minister. I know that he was a professor of psychology; that he wrote books and lectures; was interested in all psychic matters; knew Richard Hodgson, and had sittings with Mrs. Piper. I know that he went to England to see his brother, who was ill, returned to America and soon after died at Chocorua, N. H., and that funeral services were held in Appleton Chapel, Cambridge.

"I have been in his home at Cambridge once. Did not see him and was in one room only where I had a conversation with his wife, during which time I think his name was not mentioned except once as she said: 'My husband and I are investigators.' I have read a portion of a report of his on the work done by Mrs. Piper after Dr. Hodgson's death, and I have read a short article in the *Boston Transcript* by his friend Mr. Putnam. I never met him personally, never heard him lecture, and never read an article or book written by him.

M. M. CHENOWETH.

Boston, Mass., Dec. 21st, 1910.

"P. S. Dr. Hyslop has asked me to designate which room in his house I sat in. It was the first room on the left as I entered and seemed as if it might be a reception or sitting room."

There is at least one interesting error in this narrative. The visit just before his death was primarily in the interest of his own health and not to see his brother, tho he did see the latter. Inquiry also shows that Mrs. Chenoweth is in error about the father being a Swedenborgian *minister*

(Yes, that is good. Thank you.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[Suspecting that Whirlwind would come I gave the pencil she had used at a previous sitting. It was quickly rejected and I then gave the one G. P. used the day before and it was accepted.]

Hyslop we are happy that the work has begun so well.

(So am I.)

The name was *entirely* his own thought and the Om today seems to me to *lend itself* to our experiments in many way[s] and the full [read 'first'] name ... full ... or its meaning may come at some other *light*.

(That is what I wanted. Has he tried with me elsewhere?)

Yes a slight *attempt* and will do so again at the same place. We do not want to *confine* him to one place for the cross reference will be valuable, but we want him to have all the freedom of well [read 'will'] *conducted* ... well ... and strong séances.

(Good.)

There will be many *efforts* in England of course, but I have a desire to make *this work* as good or better than any past to even up old scores.

(Yes, good.)

You see I still have some of my old grit [read 'gout' and 'grout' questioningly.] *grit* left in me. That did not die. We are having much fun with Podmore.

(No doubt.)

Poor thing. He dies hard too and argues and argues in a circle just the same as ever.

(Yes he always did.)

Between him and Hudson [read 'Hodgson', thinking G. P. was controlling, and pencil tapped till read 'Hudson'] we have a merry time.

(Yes.) [Note 79.]

---

79. The comparison of Hudson and Podmore is very pertinent. They both held to that "world wide telepathy" which has taken possession of many minds. Mrs. C. may have known it of Hudson, but probably did not know it of Mr. Podmore.

The phrases "even up old scores" and "old grit left in me" are characteristic of the G. P. personality as manifested through Mrs. Piper and in-

Sidgwick is most [read 'more' and pencil tapped till read correctly.] interested in James experiments. He does not care [read 'come'] so much ... care ... for Podmore's dilemma [read 'determine'] dilemma although he often argued and worked in the same direction. You know the early days of Sidgwick were filled with all sorts of explanations that gave us no end of trouble.

(Yes, I understand.)

• But S— has his eyes opened and Podmore was born blind just as sure as you live.

(That's right.)

Now I believe we have stayed long enough.

(All right. Keep watch of me.)

Yes you cannot lose us. We are in your wake and now that William is here we have a new incentive. I was mighty glad to see him all experiments aside I wish he could [read 'would' and pencil tapped till correctly read.] have stayed a while longer.

(So do I for my help.)

but he may help matters more from this side than he could have had he stayed.

(I understand.)

There is a general turning over in these matters and it looks as if the atmosphere was going to be cleared.

(I hope so.)

Money money money the eternal problem [not read.] of ... problem ... ways and means. (Yes) but it will come I am confident. Goodbye.

(Goodbye. Thank you.)

R. H. [Pencil fell.] [Note 80.]

---

formation from Mrs. C. herself shows that she knew nothing of the man living or dead.

[Mrs. C.'s reply to inquiries shows that she did not know enough about Mr. Podmore to make this comparison with Hudson.] Cf. p. 146.

80. It is true and very well stated here that Professor Sidgwick did use all sorts of explanations as indicated. It is quite certain that Mrs. C. knew nothing of this or of him more than possibly his name.

The reference to the need of money is well put into the mouth of Dr. Hodgson who is the control in this long message. He, of all others, knew best the need of it for this work and suffered most for lack of it. Tho we cannot make the reference evidential it is characteristic.

[*Subliminal II.*]

[Groans and sighs as if struggling for breath, followed by French or Indian sounds and a pause.]

Hello, Dr. Hyslop. They had to take him away. [Mrs. C. opened her eyes, looked up and sank back again on the pillow, as she said:] what is it all about.

[Pause.] I see... I see Dr. James right [on] the other side of the table facing me, with a dark grey suit on and a little sack coat and negligee shirt, no vest. He puts his hand in his pocket coat and takes out a little something and holds it to his nose more like a little thing like menthol. It has an odor and revives him. That is all I see. I have to go. (Yes.) [Pause.] So tired. [Moving head about.] Sarah.

(Who is Sarah?)

Some one with him. [Note 81.]

Again the writing by the James control was very slow and deliberate. It was quite distinct in style and manner from that of G. P. and R. H., tho the characteristics of Mrs. C's handwriting are apparent in all of them.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. H. Oct. 20th, 1910. 10 A. M.

{*Subliminal.*}

First trace of trance was a few very light noises like a mixture of a sigh and a groan and the relaxation of the head which began to fall forward. I caught it and held it for a few moments when it raised up and fell back on the cushion placed on the back of the chair. There was then a pause, before the subliminal addressed me:

Hello, how light it is.

(Yes.) [The fact was the day was gray, cloudy, foggy and raining.]

Oh [like a sigh with tinge of a groan.] The sky is beautiful. [pause.] Hello [said with difficulty. Sighs and groan like

---

81. The testimony is that he did not take menthol at any time and the name Sarah recalls nothing to the son. He had had such clothes as here described. The name is that of a living Aunt or a deceased sister of my own.

sounds.] Put me in there. [Head placed in rest.] [Hand reached for pencil and I inserted one.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Pause.] Now we are ready to begin and we hope to set the work in order for the experiments. We thank you for this. It is well for us and for you. It takes a few seconds to start.

(Yes, I know.)

We are not unconscious of your desire and effort and will meet every requirement if we can. I am G. P. as you may have surmised.

(Yes, I did.)

and the reason I come first is because I seem more readily to get the action of the muscles and find uses and opportunities for my power. I sometimes wonder why one more easily controls the body than another.

(Yes, so do we.)

Sometime I may be able to speak to you on that matter but now we have more important business on hand [‘business’ not read at first and hand paused till read correctly.]

(Yes, I understand.)

The band has come this b... [pause.] morning and we feel much interest in expressing [expressing] our confidence in you and your plans and purposes. speaking of your plans I want to tell you a little about Podmore. He has b... been making all sorts [not read] sorts of efforts to get into communication with his friends [‘with’ read ‘other’.] with ... and his efforts are rather ludicrous. [not read at first and hand waited till correctly read.] for he keeps his opinions intact. They arrived with him [‘with’ not read.] with... like a piece of baggage which he dared not check but carried in his hand.

(Good.)

and I tell you it was the most precious possession of his soul. Such an opinionated man as he is would be lost without his opinions [opinions] and the way he flaunts them about is too funny but it hinders his expression through media. He felt he knew so much about the combination [not read at once but tried ‘contribution’ hesitatingly and stumbled about when the hand began to write.] com... [‘combination’ suddenly read.] yes

[answer to correct reading.] of mental attitudes and brain forces and all that sort of nonsense which so many of us [read 'res'.] us ... wade through and leave behind. Now he must carry out his theories, but he will soon eat dirt and take his rightful place. I love to see him flounder. He made others flounder and now it is his turn. Seriously he is not so bad if he ever [not read] would ... would ever think any one else knew anything.

(That's good.)

He made some good points [not read] poi... [suddenly read.] yes [answer to correct reading.] then covered them all up with his muddy philosophy. Some day we are going to let him try his hand at the pencil but not yet.

(Good.)

You remember his why why why why if this is so does not this prove so and so always in the circle [read 'write'] circle [not read.] ci... [suddenly read.] yes [answer to reading] talking around around (Right.) Here is R. H. I will let him write a few minutes but remember I am always ready and near if you need me. (Yes, thank you.) G. P. [Note 82.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning.

(How are you H.)

I am happy an... [superposing as usual, tho G. P. seldom tends to do this.] and hope ful and believe we can make good this time. We have been working with you. William is getting better adjusted and the spirit of the battle animates him but with his usual cautiousness he makes no false moves.

(Good.)

---

82. Readers familiar with Mr. Podmore will recognize the pertinence of all that is said about him from the standpoint of his writing. But we cannot exclude the explanation by the subconscious of the psychic and there are indications in the limitations of the criticisms that her mind plays at least a part in the product.

[Mrs. C.'s statements regarding her knowledge of Mr. Podmore rather tend to show that she could not have spoken from any previous and intelligent idea of his views, so that, whatever the supposed influence of the subliminal, it must have been a general one from the idea of antagonism suggested by the messages themselves. This means that her subliminal may have caught enough of his position to react correctly on her own prejudices for the opposed view. There is no way to prove such an hypothesis.]

He would prefer to keep away rather than make a botch of the communications. He asked me the other day why it was I made so many blunders and then we both laughed and concluded that the answer might be given him directly [directly] he tried his hand.

(Good.)

So now he waits and is quite eager. We have been with you since you were here.

(What were you doing?)

Trying to communicate and in one instance William made an effort and succeeded in a measure in impressing his personality to some degree. There are not many places for us to go now. It seems as if the eliminating process [read 'powers'] process had begun, but there are 3 places in this country and as many in England where we may go with safety and assurance. One of the lights here you are famlar [familiar] with and whose mediumship resembles this here in many ways. The other is not writing but another method.

(Good.) At each of those places we feel safe. Do you know what I mean when I say we feel safe.

(Explain a little further.)

We are hindered not [when *hindered* was written and so read the hand paused and I reread the sentence and the hand at once went back and wrote "not" below.] by fears of dishonesty or substitution. you know what that means.

(No I do not know what substitution means.)

Some call it personation.

(All right. I thought so.) [Note 83.]

---

83. Whether the allusion to three places includes or excludes Mrs. Chenoweth is not determinable. Including her I had been working with three cases only. Excluding her there were three also, one of which I had not worked with but knew of. The only one that resembled Mrs. C. in method was Mrs. Smead and the one with a different method was Miss Burton. It is possible that another case with which I had occasionally done a little work for the last few years and in which this group of communicators purported to come may have been in mind. If this be a correct hypothesis it would make four, three excluding Mrs. C.

The allusion to personation is an interesting admission on any theory of the facts. But it is not definite enough to make it significant in relation to other cases.

But only the testifying spirit is allowed to express and when the power gives out there is no attempt at substitution.

(I understand.)

That is plain. Some of the mistakes have come through that method of work I am sure, but that is past.

(Good.)

We wanted William to give his sign at another place. It will be done later.

(All right, I'll wait.)

I will go now and let William try.

(Good. Thank you.)

R. H.——

[Change of Control.]

[At first I thought of changing the sheet of paper, but resolved at last not to do it, so that I would have both types of handwriting on the same page. The hand spontaneously, as if knowing my thought at first, moved over as if to let me change it.]

[Pause.] I am at peace and can wait patiently for the [pause.] strength to come for my work. I am convinced already that the time is not so far away as it seemed to me it would be when the truth of sustained individuality after death will be come an acknowledged [fact] [some such word omitted possibly because the hand had to be moved to the other side of the sheet.] by scientific bodies as demonstratable in a clear way. The average scientific student is too busy to give enough time to the question. The problems of the present press [appears more like 'puss' and so questioningly read to have it cleared up.] too . . . press . . . to [too] closely on the heels of time and these questions of the future life are left for future leisure, but it is all wrong as you and I know. I have a new zeal born of new experience which fills and actuates me to-day.

(Yes, I understand.)

I feel so much more freedom and an intimate acquaintance with the plan of work from this side now than when I came here before, but I have yet to express myself about the message ex-

---

This reference to "personation" or "substitution" should be compared with a similiar discussion of it through Mrs. Smead when Dr. Hodgson purported to be the control. Cf. p. 127 and note 33.

pected rightfully of me. When I can get control sufficiently to be clear I will try that.

(Good.) [Note 84.]

You are on the right track now and I feel confident that we will win this race.

(Yes, so am I.)

Problems everywhere confront us but when the one question of definite recollection of past plans is made sure then all the problems are soon solved. I have grown away from the disappointment of unfinished labors (I understand.) and take up the new work with ardor. After all when a man serves humanity best is of little consequence so long as he serves well and faithfully. I may be able to do more for the practice [practical] uplift through spirit communication than if I had lived to co... ['lived' read 'tried'] lived to complete my last work already in process and complete in my mind and notes. It seems a little strange [lines make it look like 'charge'] to return to the home and have no working power, but another power supplants the old. so I do not miss it as one might think. The creeping infant once conscious of the power to walk on its feet will suffer no inconvenience in the manner of circumlocution after the first feeble efforts are over.

(Yes, that is good.)

You understand my meaning.

(Yes perfectly.)

I am making myself intelligible [intelligible] am I?

(Yes perfectly. It is good psychology.)

It is well for that is my chief [chief] desire. To tell you that I am happy in renewing old acquaintances and expressing the love of family associations is simple but important to me. It has no bearing on the evidential side of the work I am aware, but those who knew me best know that the family ties meant much to me and that the joy of meeting my loved ones is great and sincere.

---

84. Those acquainted with the style of Professor James will not recognize any distinctive characteristic in this passage, but they must always remember the explanation here given of it which involves an acknowledgment that he has not yet sufficient control to impress his own personality on the organism. He is merely practising to get control, and this way of describing it is true even on the assumption that he is not present at all.

The pang of separation is softened by the joy of reuniting oneself with the lost of long ago. Tell Mrs. James this. She will be happy and tell her I miss her constant attention and companionship which was so long a part of my life. As much a part of my existence as hands and feet [feet]

(Good.)

It is not inconsistent with my desire [desire] th... to be exact and scientific that I make mention this moment of her who was a part of all my intellectual life and whose love and comradeship made possible many hours of uninterrupted work. Am I losing energy.

(Not that I notice.) [Tho it was noticeable in this question.] I seem to hve [have] list [lost] control in a measure.

[It was very clear that the control was losing power and I resolved to try and hold it by encouragement or suggestion.]

(Yes, but it will come back.)

Perhaps it was the wave of sympathetic understanding from you and my own lessening interest in the ['the' written first and then 'in' inserted below the line.] specific work in hand as I recalled the past.

(Yes, that is good psychology.)

I seem to be able to reason while I am at work and that pleases me. So much of the work recorded in the past lacked that function.

(That is correct.)

It always stood between me and my theories of what ought to be and I often said: This seems more like snatches of [pause.] [words reread.] [pause.] broken recollections detached and left as solitary or wandering brain [long pause.]

(Actions?)

No, photographs.

(Good.)

You may recall what I am trying to tell you.

(Phantasms?)

Yes fugitive phantasms (Good.) unreal.

(I understand.)

unattached floating in ethereal [ethereal] waves caught retained expressed as if attached by subliminal states not able to distinguish between the attached and unattached.

(I understand.)

the embodied or fugitive phantasms.

(Yes.)

This I was forced to consider when I would most gladly have thrown it away as inadequate.

(Yes, that is true.) [Note 85.]

I ough... [pencil ran off sheet] ought to be able to steer my bark between the perilous rocks of.

(Yes, do you remember their name?) [Thinking of Scylla and Charybdis.]

I am not sure that I catch your meaning.

(Yes, a bark and dangerous rocks were a symbol in ancient times.)

C— and S—.

(That is right.) [Not evidential, but tried to see the reaction.]

I was not sure of your meaning at first, but I am glad I caught it at last. So now we are really launched on our voyage of discovery. May Heaven smile [smile] upon our effort and may we reach the harbor of perfect knowledge.

(Yes, we will in time.)

I go now but thank you so earnestly

(Thank you, but my debt is to you.)

for your effort and your arrangements for my work.

(Thank you.)

Yours in the search for the truth. William James. Omega.

---

85. This passage about "fugitive phantasms" has a ring of Professor James about it. It is not a clear discussion of the point he is apparently trying to make, but it borders on his unique habit of making a dive at the perplexity of a materialistic mind when trying to conceive of a future existence. One of his troubles was to conceive of spirit life as a substantial existence and ghosts seemed to him so unsubstantial that he thought and spoke of them in this general way. We cannot decide whether it can be considered evidential or not.

One sentence in the passage is very characteristic. It is the reference to "snatches of broken recollections detached and left as solitary wandering brain." Evidently the subconscious did not get all of the message and jumbled the latter part of it, but his ideas of the communications as he read them in the Reports were exactly this. It is not probable that Mrs. C. was familiar enough with his views or his Report to put it so well and so true to his modes of thought.

[pause and pencil loosened in fingers and then they quickly stiffened and wrote] O. [Omega]

[Change of Control.]

Just a word from me. We all want to help and I can help best by leaving a good strength [not read at time] behind... strength [not read.] stren... [suddenly read.] yes. [answer to correct reading.] stupid stupid.

(You will have to write better.)

Yes you must be tired. Hit me again on the writing. You always tell me I am to blame for your slow stupid sight. Good-bye. Whirlwind.

[Head went back on the cushion almost immediately and sounds of French were heard. Then a pause.]

Hello Dr. H., do you know an Annie,

(Yes.)

and who she was and did you want to hear from her?

(Yes.)

She is active and is awful good. She sends greeting. Says it two or three times. Coming tomorrow?

(Yes.) [Note 86.]

I guess I want to stop today. The second is always best. I get used to it. Goodbye. [pause.] I have an awful pain in my jaw back there [feeling right jaw.]

[When the control changed I inserted a pencil which was rejected. The manner of rejecting it suggested "Whirlwind" and I tried several pencils which she rejected with equal contempt. I then picked up the one she had used at the previous sittings in September which I had marked and it was accepted at once.]

I had not recently had any sittings with another medium. The reference to three mediums is correct, with the qualification that a note will explain.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Oct. 21st, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

After some minutes of silence Mrs. C. put her head back on

---

86. Annie or Anna is the name of the deceased sister mentioned in a previous note (p. 152). Nothing is said, however, in this connection either to identify her with Laura, as it was there given, or to show that my sister is meant.

the cushion and closed her eyes. In a few minutes she remarked: "I am not asleep" and raised her head to look out of the window. As she did so, she said: "I see a funny man here. He has a big bald head. I can hardly see a spear of hair. He has a smooth face. It is not unpleasant but uncanny. It is broad and smooth as a boy's. I do not know any face like it except Ingersoll's and I do not mean to say it is his. The face is one of that type. I don't know who it is. [Long pause.] H'm [pause.] I'm going. [Note 87.]

(Shall I put your head in?)

Yes. [Head placed in rest and pause.]

[In a few moments the hand showed difficulty in moving to its place. I waited while it paused and then inserted a pencil.] [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[When the writing began it was very slow and labored and the line was vertical on the page.]

Strange we never have the pen [read 'hen'] [First three words not read at the time.]

(I can't read the first words.)

Strange we never [words connected as pencil was not raised.] have the pen. you are not familiar with the fountain pen of long ago. you are so much at ['much at' erased.] familiar with the pencil that the pen seems unnecessary.

(I understand. Who wants the fountain pen?)

I... Emperor.

(Thank you. I thought so.)

I who stood so near that she saw me.

(Good. Thank you.)

I who never leave the field till the battle is won. I who have touched hands with your lately arisen brother. I who would always so potect [protect, read 'hold'] the... protect... the expression of truth [read 'with'.] which comes from ... truth... [correction of my reading.] expression of truth which comes to the children of earth seeking knowledge and wisdom. I asked about the pen as an introduction to my personality.

87. The person here described is not otherwise recognizable than as indicated by the text.

(Yes, I understood that.)

I used it long ago because it made a readier impression on the tablet and was less resisting to my touch. Those were [read 'these were'] Those were days of experiment and trial. No smooth road was mine but I held ever to the [pause.] expression of identity. It is smoother and [delay in reading the word 'smoother'] and more flexible work now and we are helped in our powers of endurance [first read 'evidence' and then corrected.] by the addition to our band of many of the recipients of our favors in the past. You must be aware of the spasmodic and uneven experiments carried on from time to time

(Yes, I am.) [Note 88.]

with the old light and the uncertain tone it gives to our efforts but we still perse... [not read as it was end of line.] persevere and we hope in the midst of our defeats for ultimate [read 'fortunate', then 'for intimate'.] ultimate triumph. It was all wrong the methods used but what would one do in such disintegrating processes. It is all evolutionary and is far from the stage of inaction [not read] or dissolution... inaction...

(Do you refer to the experiments of a special person that were all wrong?)

Yes.

(When?)

Soon after the passing of our loved chief in the earthly work. You must know to whom I refer.

(I am not quite sure because there might be two persons. I have one in mind.) [I had in mind President G. Stanley Hall whose book I am reviewing just at this juncture and at intervals between the sittings.]

The second one after the event of change in working plans.

---

88. This allusion to a fountain pen has much interest. Imperator could not control the writing with a pencil in the Piper case. Rector could. But Dr. Hodgson had to keep a fountain or stylographic pen on hand for the use of Imperator on occasion, his touch being so light that he could not otherwise make marks or letters.

Unfortunately for the evidential aspect of the incident, the pen was referred to by Dr. Hodgson in my first sitting with Mrs. C., where it was evidential, and I explained the importance of the incident in the published account of the sitting in the *Journal*. Mrs. C. had seen this *Journal* and may have casually or otherwise seen the statement.

(I understand.) [Note 89.]

It was all so bad to have it happen as it did. The purportings were far from correct [read 'covered'] correct and made us much trouble and concern but we never lost hope. We only lost our hold of the light. That was our trouble and sorrow but with [letters separated and not clear. So I first read 'we', then 'the'] with the determination to save if possible the complete wreckage of the ship that had carried us [read 'as'] to the shores... us... of the earthly life with our messages of the life the other [not read.] other side of the grave. The wreckage would have brought so much of disrepute to your efforts the efforts of your scientific bodies [read 'brothers'] bodies that we preferred some failures and incompleteness to the drifting on life's uncertain seas of the ship of our past adventures. It would have been simple to have abandoned [sheet changed and evidently a word or two omitted, such as 'the ship'] but unwise as well as unkind.

(I understand.)

Now you will know why we did not at once desert and come to your rescue. (Yes.) Every embodied spirit has rights of choice and ['choice' not read] ... choice [read 'chance' to indicate that I could not read it.] choice and decision and no band of immortals has the right to too far [read 'for'] too far usurp the power of individual choice. Does that explain.

(Yes perfectly.)

Frequently your friends and ours exclaimed in dismay: Why do not the guides make her do what is right, and also: What is Imperator thinking of or doing. Perhaps the lesson is sufficiently taught and the whole ['who' written first and so read and then 'le' added.] circle of psychic investigators [investigators] will understand the laws governing each life ['each' read 'earth'] each... better.

(I think so.)

There is much to be said on this point to the assembled friends if they can be assembled again. The tastes [read 'lasters' know-

---

89. I had Mr. Dorr in mind when I referred to two persons. President Hall may be said to have been the second person and was the other in mind, tho the text does not say that he is meant. The general collective significance of the incidents suggests him.

ing it was incorrect, tho letters are clearly this.) and opinions... tastes... of the light had the power of decision. Great as our sorrow was and the complete failure of one set of experiments in England and one here proved how weak is the vanity [read 'only'] vanity of woman. You will know what I mean.

(Yes perfectly.)

Consecrated to service must be the motto of the workers or disaster follows as surely as night follows day. The idle the curious [read 'various' tho knowing it was not this.] curi... [suddenly read.] the ambitious tou... [my reading of 'ambitious' at first not understood. When I repeated it the hand left the repetition unfinished.] the vain glorious are not good servants of truth in any field of exploration [read 'explanation'] plora... Yes [to correct reading.] I am so glad to come in in this free and untrammled manner and have this plain straightforward talk with you. I have long wished to make explan... [read 'plan'] explanation not apology. I have never lost interest in the American work or its people and whenever I have seen a loophole through which I might send greeting or word of encouragement by vision or written word I have endeavored to do so. Your friend and good communicator Doctor James is eager that I say all these things to you for he had wondered and pondered over the matter, was puzzled [read 'higgled' tho the letters seem 'hizzled'] puzzled and disturbed and made eager quest for the truth on [pause.] his [pause.] accession [not read.] accession to this sphere.

(I see.)

You are aware of his mental questionings and it looks quite probable to you that my message is correct. I will come whenever I can to help you.

(Thank you. It has been a great encouragement to me this morning to have you say that.)

Indeed I know your need. Many times the captain stands alone in his tent and looks to the stars for an answer [pencil ran off page.] answer but the heavens are silent and God is far away. Then [read 'there'] Then the wisdom and love of the Creator is made manifest through the blessed spirit companionship and the potent influences of unseen friends but the definite and human expression reaches the human heart that beats in

human breast, so has my word brought comfort and assurance to you, my faithful laborer in the field of psychic science. Whenever I can assist our dear friend to express more plainly to you I will do so but he is as clear and calm as one could wish and he holds the right as his own to say nothing unless he is sure of his expression. No one can pull [not read.] pull him into conversation nor can an expression be wrested from him and his most intimate and loved friends do not care to do so. They wait his pleasure.

(I understand.)

If I return not [read 'returned'] return not again during this visit think not that I have deserted you but be assured that I am within communicating distance and will respond to any call for aid.

(I shall never forget the help this morning.)

May I ask the Great Father to bless you in your work and give His holy angels charge over you forever.

(Yes, I shall be glad of that.)

With fond and hopeful interest I am thine.

Imperator [sign of the cross in a circle] [Note 90.]

90. This whole passage from Imperator is most interesting and must largely explain itself, after reading the note at the end of the sitting, which was made at the time and after personal inquiries carefully instituted. Its value depends wholly upon the extent to which Mrs. C. was ignorant of the facts which give it significance, and the reader may trust her word as well as that of any one.

I myself did not know at the time what the situation was regarding Mrs. Piper, or indeed where she was, tho thinking she was in England. I merely knew from a friend that she had not been able to go into a trance for many months after the sittings with President Hall. There was no opportunity for Mrs. C. to know, except by direct inquiry. She was not in a position to get casual knowledge easily, as she had no connections with the Piper group of people. Hence the circumstances were exceptionally good to prevent casual information, tho they admitted the use of any other method which our Philistines are so ready to believe without investigation.

Apparently the text implies that Mrs. Piper was to blame for the situation. This is not accurate. It cannot be asserted, perhaps, that any one was especially to blame. It was right that every scientific man who desired to have experiments should have them, and it was desired to avoid the objection that they had been shut out from the case. But it was equally desirable that scientific men should be admitted who knew how to handle an extremely delicate machine. The manner of conducting the experiments

[Change of Control.]

[I picked up a pencil with the expectation that Prof. James might be the next control and chose a soft one because his writing was apparently difficult. The hand, however, after feeling it for a moment threw it down. I tried another, suspecting with some confidence that it was Whirlwind and intending to test her, and the same was done with it. After her throwing down the second pencil I picked up the one she used yesterday and which was marked by a sliver being cut off at the top, and this she kept without any resentment.]

Now you have had a good help have you not

(Yes.)

and I am happy and am here to relieve the tension as you know.

(Yes.)

Hodgson is so near he has hold of the pencil with me ['with' not read] with me and he says that keeps me from running all over the page.

(I believe it.)

He says I waste the power. What do you think of that.

(I don't know. He will have to settle that on your side.)

I think he will and you can imagine any sort of duel you wish but I am sure to get the best of it for Hodgson is gallant to ['gallant' not read.] gallant... to the ladies.

(All right.)

Poor Hodgson the ladies led him a merry [not read] chase. . . merry . . . sometimes but he stood it better than some folks would

---

showed that the experimenter knew nothing whatever about his subject, and the result completely justified the cautiousness of Dr. Hodgson about admitting the so-called scientific man to experiment in irresponsible ways.

This explanation will enable the reader to understand better the contents of the message from the Imperator personality. The blame applied to Mrs. Piper attaches to her state of mind about the subject which was correctly characterized in one statement regarding her vanity. She had come to be rather vain about her mediumship and it affected many a message, and after Dr. Hodgson's death she undertook the management of her own case in a manner that affected the value of her work. Apparently she was, at least for a time, less under the influence of the controls than before the death of Dr. Hodgson, or immediately after it. Indeed this loss of their influence was much like the abandonment here mentioned.

for he haf [half] [not read at first.] liked... half... it. He says this is getting serious when I make him a co-conspirator against himself. You \* \* [possibly confused attempt at 'see'] see I have the strongest end of the pencil or he would be telling you something about me but I dare him to do so. If he can he may. He is a weakling anyway about communicating. He does not \* \* [possibly 'tell'. Sheet changed.] do as well as the merest tyro in the business. I think [read 'make'.] think it was those old gloves [not read.] gloves [read 'globes'] gloves. How [not read as it was superposed.] would a man write with old ... How ... woolen gloves on any one would have thought it was a sleigh-ride he was invited to instead [not read.] of a ... instead ... séance. [Note 91.]

Poor Hodgson perhaps you all thought he was in a very very cold ... very ... [repeated because I had read it but once.] heaven where he needed cap and gloves.

(Do you mean to say it is hot?)

Why did you not bring a fur robe. Hot well you ought to be here and see for yourself. The sun never ... the ... [first 'the' not read correctly.] sets on British possessions.

(I know who *you* are.)

Of course you do. What do you think George is doing. Killing himself laughing. He thinks the extremes of this communication are rather beyond him. Dr. James is here but will not write this morning but sends a word of encouragement to you.

Things [written 'think' then 'gs' superposed on 'k' erasing] look brighter ['look' read 'work'.] look don't they.

(Yes, indeed. Send my greetings to him.)

He hears you. [words superposed.] That pleases him. He hears you. That... Yes ... [answer to correct reading.] to think he can hear and he can see. He says he see [sees] better without spectacles now than he could with them on the earth.

(Good.)

He found them quite a bother but not as you do. You poor thing. They seem to always [not read.] need washing ... al-

---

91. Nearly all the sitters under Dr. Hodgson's work with Mrs. Piper were ladies. It is possible that it was a too well known fact to make any other point of it than an explanation of facts.

ways ... Yes you must not begrudge the time you spend. My but you are busy. You will want [not read.] to lay off ... want ... when you come to heaven but your music lessons will just begin then.

(Yes, if it is hot.)

Hot [not read.] well yes ... Hot [read 'not'.] Hot [read 'not'.] H O T You may think you took the wrong train but when you see us you will know it was right. Please wear summer clothes.

(All right.)

It will be simpler for us. Now what more can I do for you. How is the time.

(The time is not up yet.)

Sometimes I am able [not read.] to write ... able ... when any one else would fail and I was not sure whether any one else ought to undertake the work.

Hodgson says that J— is so systematic that he is confident of getting good work through and he is not unhappy.

[Change in handwriting follows.]

Hodgson has released [not read] my ... released ... hand so now I can go like a streak if I want to for he cannot talk and write at the same time and he wants to tell me something to tell you.

(Good.)

What a difference it makes to a woman [both words not read.] a woman when he [read 'he' and hand wrote 'r' that was not read.] her hand is held by a man. See———

(Yes, perfectly.)

Well this is his message. [pause.] I am listening to him when I wait.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Quite a pause.]

He and William each have prepared messages which have not yet been divulged and they are going to try and give them to you. William had one prepared before Hodgson's death and an agreement [read 'argument' and hand tapped until read correctly.] with him that the one who went first would give the contents to the other. He prepared a later one much later and that is safely put away and Harry knows about it. All this you

can I think verify and when the time is just right in some manner they will give it. I do not mean in any ['an' written first and so read when 'y' was added.] they find possible and have it imperfectly done but I mean either through vision or writing or by voice whichever way seems the best to convey [read 'coming'.] convey their expression. (Good.) H—— tried [both words superposed on previous line and 'H——' read 'He'.] He tried several times to send his to W—— but failed at least he felt it was a failure because so much had to be supposed in connection with it. W—— desires to have each word that is given the right word and not a suggestion of the right word which might be interpreted as a telepathic communication. He stands [read 'sends' and hand tapped till correctly read.] up and says I am a real person with real faculties and I desire to speak as a real man and not as [a] fleck of consciousness floating in space.

(Good.) [Note 92.]

I say good too. for I think that is the only sane way of getting [getting] at the truth. all these supposings [read 'happenings' tho I knew it was not this.] supposings are Greek to me and I am no Grecian nor wear a Grecian border. Yes [to correct reading.] you being a mere man cannot understand what a Grecian border means, but perhaps you will remember the Grecian bend. Do you?

(Yes.)

That is all now[not read.] now.

I will go I think Hurricane for there was a good loss of energy with the wonderful old Imperator. He is good with all due [read 'dire'.] and ... This last is from me. I intend my des-

92. There is no known evidence, so far as can yet be ascertained, that Professor James left any such letter. Dr. Hodgson did. The son named here does not know of any such letter, or did not at the time my inquiries were made. Apparently Dr. Hodgson did try to give his posthumous letter, but no published evidence exists of his success and I have no private evidence of that success. Mrs. C. probably knew nothing about the matter, unless she may have heard it referred to in casual conversations.

[Mrs. C. states that she did not know that Dr. Hodgson had purported to give the contents of a posthumous letter.]

cription of him with good. With all due and undue admiration for a hurricane [not read.] hurricane, I am yours  
Whirlwind.

[*Subliminal I.*]

[After a moment's silence a few groans came and I took hold of her head to place it on the cushion, when she began to speak.]

Who touched me?

(I did.)

What made you wear that plaid thing on your arm?

(I don't know.)

Who wears Scotch things?

(A friend of mine.)

It is all around you. It is plaid. There is a lot of people in the room. [pause.] Oh dear! They seem happy this morning.  
[Note 93.]

(They may well be. It was a good sitting.)

Yes, they said so too. I saw Mr. Myers. He says he is still writing.

(What is he writing?)

Poetry and philosophy over in the spirit land. He has been to some people in England. He has done writing there.

(Poetry?)

No, I think messages. It seems like a woman now and then. I suppose you don't know who it is.

(Yes.)

I did know. He says if he gets something through . . . . .  
[remainder lost.] Does he go to Mrs. Verrall?

(Yes.)

I can see him there. He finds her responsive to him. She has a good capacity and he finds her somewhat helped by her knowledge of him at times. She knows how to close up her individuality and he can get at her.

Do you know her house?

---

93. No special person is recognizable in the reference to plaid and "Scotch things". I am of Scotch ancestry and the reference has that pertinence.

[Mrs. C. states that she did not know anything about my nationality or lineage.]

(No.)

Well there is a little hill back of it. She has been somewhere near the house and there is a little hill or mound near and she goes out to that place particularly at sunset and seems often as if she felt spirits, and you know that Podmore. He's been to her. She has not very much love for him, but is anxious to hear something from him. I like her. She is not either young or old, but middle-aged. All right. Goodbye. [Pause.] [Note 94.]

You are not discouraged?

(No.)

Over me?

(No.)

Would you be happy if you found a better one than me?

(I would be happy with any good work.)

Sometimes you are not satisfied with me.

(I am satisfied.)

Sometimes I want to know. Some people don't know and hence what they say does not mean anything. I won't speak to you again if you put that in the book.

(It was an awfully good sitting this morning.) [Pause.]

You remember I saw the king die in one of these conditions. Have you ever thought of it?

(Yes.) [Note 95.]

---

94. The mention of the name of Mrs. Verrall is not evidential, but she was well acquainted with Mr. Myers, a fact perhaps conjecturable, but not directly known by Mrs. C. Mr. Myers has purported to communicate through her, and this fact is too well known to make a point of it.

In regard to the incident of the hill and Mr. Podmore Mrs. Verrall writes:—

"Not far from my house there is a little hill or mound which has for me associations with Mr. Myers. I have not visited it for many years and have no associations of sunset with it. I have had no communications whatever claiming to come from Mr. Podmore; my acquaintance with him was as a colleague in the work of psychic research."

If the reader will compare this reference to Mrs. Verrall with the sitting which Mr. Smead held on the date of September 21st, he will find its coincidence with what is said here. According to Note 32 p. 126. Mrs. Verrall had her dream impression of Professor James on September 12th.

95. Some years, three or four, before this date a prediction of the death of King Edward came through Mrs. C. under circumstances that precluded suggestion from normal sources.

I once saw some things in Rome or Florence. I think it was Myers took me there.

(I don't recall.)

Goodbye.

[In a moment Mrs. C. rose and appeared to look out of the window and said: "Who's looking at me? I saw a man with big black eyes staring at me." In a moment she suddenly recovered normal consciousness and I asked her what she saw and she could not say. I told her she said she saw a face and she remarked that she remembered seeing one as she went in, but did not remember seeing one as she came out.]

The Emperor writing was slow and a little difficult at first and for a long time I had to lift the hand from the right to the left side of the page and always to help it by lifting it from the bottom of the page to the top.

As so much was said that implied knowledge of the Piper case and some of the experiments that President G. Stanley Hall made I resolved to ask Mrs. C. what her knowledge was of two things. I was struck with Emperor's pertinent reference to the subject, because I am now employed in reviewing the book which President Hall has just published containing the results of those sittings. I did not suggest it, as the reader will see, and as my mind was full of the subject and intensely occupied with the review the reference to it was at least a coincidence.

I first asked Mrs. C. if she knew where Mrs. Piper is and her reply was as follows, taken down verbatim.

"I have not the slightest notion where she is. I have not even any notion about it, tho I had an indefinite notion that she might be here, but it is not from any knowledge of anything."

I asked if she knew what she was doing and the reply was: "I don't know anything about what she is doing. This last year a reporter came and asked me where she was, as he wanted to get an interview, and I did not know. He said he heard she was there. That is all I know."

I asked her if she had heard that a scientific man of some

standing had had sittings with her in the spring of 1909. That is, whether she had heard any rumor of it. Her reply was:

"No, I have not heard a single word about her sittings except in the most general way. I did not know she was giving sittings. I wanted to ask but thought I had better not because I knew it was best not to know."

I then asked her if she had heard of any book having been published recently, within three or four weeks, on the Piper case. Her reply was:

"I have not heard of any books but that of Sage and Miss Robbins. I did not read Miss Robbins'. I have not heard that any book appeared recently. Miss Whiting is the only one who would naturally tell me about such things and I have not seen her for a long time, for more than three weeks."

I called on Miss Whiting after the sitting and she had not heard of President Hall's book.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Oct. 22nd, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Few minutes' silence and head was put back on the cushion, and the eyes closed.] Eh. [Pause.] [Cough.] Oh dear! [Pause.] Have you ever heard about Clark University?

(Yes.) [Note 96.]

Does it mean anything to you? I hear a ringing in my ears.

(Yes.)

Sometimes I get mind vibrations, not sounds.

(Do you get anything more about Clark University?)

Yes, in connection with it intense pain in my head. I could pound it myself to relieve it. It is more like a living influence. I want to get there. Oh, I am so weary trying. It is my opinion that there is some one you know, one of your close friends knows. There are three connected acquaintances. I see letters

---

96. The meaning of the reference to Clark University is explained in a note at the end of the sitting, made at the time. I supposed that it referred directly to President Hall as the one meant by the Emperor message of the day before, but the sequel showed that it referred to another person closely connected at one time with President Hall.

and correspondence passing between them in matters of importance. Do you know anything about it?

(Yes.)

Something that is quite useful comes out in this correspondence. I see a strange thing. An envelope is put into my hand. I feel through it a hard substance. It is round and hard like a medal. It is as large as a medal or seal. I can take it out. When opened I take it out. Did Dr. James know anything about it?

(Yes.) [Said with reference to correspondence and the affair associated with Clark University.]

His hand holds up an envelope and takes out this thing. He never felt the weakness before.

(What do medal and envelope mean?) [Posthumous letter in my mind.]

Do you expect me to ask him?

(Yes.)

I'll try this. I have to go slowly. I see him strip this off from a large envelope sealed. I have something else to tell you with it. There is a bit of ribbon attached to it. It is red white and blue. I don't know whether I can see it or not. There is some writing he's trying to show me. [Pause.] I am telling you all I see. It looks like a raised thing on paper and some keys. Whether that is a symbol or not I can't tell, but they are not real keys. They are pictured in the raised thing and I see a big letter E [pause.] It is almost like I wanted to use a motto. [pause.] It might mean the doors of wisdom. I haven't got it right, but there was a seal that meant something of the kind. [pause.] But I see him so white and pale and sick looking. It seems as tho he worked after he was sick trying to finish up something. [pause.] Put me up. I guess he's going to write. [Head placed in rest.] Take my hand. I can't seem to move it. [The hand which was hanging over the edge of the table in a limp and inert condition was placed by me on the table, followed by groans for some moments.] [Note 97.]

---

97. The incidents in this passage are not recognizable in connection with Professor James. It is possible that it is a confusion of several incidents that are later developed individually in a clearer manner, but I have no assurance of this.

[*Automatic Writing.*]

With all my heart I come the interest increases as the work goes forward and I am better able to impress my own distinctive individuality. It takes experience. Nothing else will prove useful. There is no royal road to c... spirit [written on 'c' so as to erase.] communication. I thought the difficulties were different and more like limitations but it is the experience and perfect connections with no lost energy which is the secret of communicating intelligibly. The present is very clear and real but the past is recalled in segments as it is in the common and human experiences of life with you.

(Good.)

No man recalls his past as a written page but one thought produces another and one recollected event recalls another. Am I writing as well as when I wrote more slowly.

(Yes, I had to change the sheet of paper. You had filled it.)

I am not able to see the articles on which I write while I am at work (I understand.) but when in the room without the definite attachment to the body which is a dead body for our use I am able to see very well. When one looks through a telescope at the stars he cannot at that moment see the fly on the back of his hand. I...

(Good comparison. Do you remember what G. P. said about the condition for communicating?) [I had in mind his keyhole simile.]

That one went into a state of trance. That is true practically but with some explanations needed for the lay mind. The work done by the Emperor group was planned and executed with reference to the scientific mind and many terms used were left incomplete with the expectation of a mind sufficiently keen as a reader to fill them out, you will recall the many times

---

The allusion to a key suggests the same incident which was referred to, whatever it means, by Miss Burton (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 618). It was not clearly associated with papers in her case as here.

The reference to a bit of ribbon, red, white and blue, and "a raised thing on paper", may be to a document more specifically indicated later (p. 262).

Whether "doors of wisdom" refer to the same incident that was apparently represented in the vision of Mrs. Smead cannot be determined (p. 123).

that explanations were suggested [suggested] by the sitter and assented to by the communicator. It saved energy and was done intelligently (Yes.) with no harm except in the appearance of the records.

(I understand perfectly.) [Note 98.]

You will also understand that I am not heedless of what is expected of me but I must work as I may and recall as I can. I . . . .

(Yes. Why did you speak of Clark University before you wrote?)

t [after the capital letter 'I' had been written above: the hand paused until I stated my question and then simply completed the word 'It' as if it had been intended when probably a very different statement was in mind.] was an unintentional communication and was only the thought lodged in my mind and my purpose to one day speak of it and the sensitive plate of the psychic's mind got the words.

(Good, I understand.)

It surprised me as much as it did you.

---

98. The prompt and correct reply to my question was an interesting incident and most probably represents knowledge which Mrs. C. did not have. She has read nothing of the report in which G. P. had stated to Dr. Hodgson that the communicator had to be in a "dream state" to communicate, and no allusion to this was made in Professor James' Report as a statement of G. P. The theory on that point was casually mentioned by him in that Report.

Readers should observe here that something like a trance is admitted, tho qualified in an interesting manner. Later he denied the trance state altogether. But "the explanations needed for the lay mind" probably makes the incident consistent with the later view which identified normal consciousness and sleep in their essential character. For studying the connection between the two statements compare the discussion in the Chapter II pp. 48-92, especially pp. 72-73 and 86-87.

The reference to the manner of recalling the past as done "in segments as it is in the common and human experiences of life" and not as "a written page but one thought producing another" is a very characteristic way of putting the matter as a psychologist would do it, tho I imagine that any ordinarily intelligent person might do the same. But what I want noted is the coincidence with expectations that it would be otherwise and the fact that it would be so natural for a psychologist to hit on this comparison at once, tho he might not mention it except as suggested by such expectations as are indicated.

(Yes and I was glad to have it.)

Yes it is good evidence but I must be exact with you and tell you when it is intentional and when not.

I have been definitely holding in my mind a group of pictures taken long ago in 1868 I believe and I intended to speak of that and you can imagine my surprise when the other came.

(Yes, that's good.)

This group was a family one and of no importance to any one, but I thought it would be a good item.

(Yes, that's good.) [Note 99.]

[Pause.] [Hand started to superpose and I moved it down.] We are obliged to stop sometimes and think after we are here.

(Yes, I understand. That is natural.)

I have tried to communicate since you were here last and succeeded in a measure.

(Good.)

The nervous tension at that particular centre is the greatest difficulty to overcome. The lady I mean. You recall.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 100.]

It will pass away and if I may be allowed to speak of my own adaptability I would say that my freedom from nervous excitement is a help. I seldom worked on nervous energy or false or stimulated effort. You know my habit of life and work

---

99. The explanation of the allusion to Clark University is interesting tho non-evidential, but should be kept in mind as a possible explanation of many irrelevant but true incidents. The "group of pictures taken long ago in 1868" is not recognizable by the family. The use of the word "item" is characteristic, as he used it in his Report at times instead of the word "incident". The latter word is the one usually used in these sittings and by other communicators. It would require considerable familiarity with his Report, more than Mrs. C. had, to make this distinction consciously.

The explanation offered for the message about "Clark University" may be studied with reference to the ideas of "personation" or "substitution" mentioned earlier (pp. 168-9), only it purports here to be "unintentional" and as such will throw light upon intrusions generally.

No one in the family recalls any such picture as is here described. It would have been an excellent piece of evidence could it be recognized.

100. There is no clear indication of who is meant in the reference to a lady. If it be Mrs. Smead the record shows that she had no sittings between Oct. 15th and 20th. If it refers to another case in mind no record was kept by the person present and nothing can be proved.

enough for this and it is a calm and steady influence I strive to bring at the place to which I referred. That is all that is needed.

(I understand.)

Wright.

(Wright. W-r-i-g-h-t?)

Do you recall the name among my friends.

(No, I do not. But some one else may recall it.)

Yes now you will I think recall Lewis

(Lewis?)

yes a friend of mine in this life.

(Good, I shall inquire.)

a friend who gladly gave voice to hope in these matters.

(Good.) [Note 101.]

I strive to place a stone now and again in the foundation.

(Yes.)

Tell George not to be discouraged. He may rest in the confident hope that I will do all I can.

(George who?) Dorr. (Good.)

---

101. In regard to the name Wright, Mr. Henry James, Jr., son of Professor James says in response to inquiries:—"In his early days my father had a good deal of communication with Chauncey Wright. Two colleagues of the name Wright, whom my father occasionally saw but was not intimate with, died within two or three years."

It is of course not clear that any of these were meant on any theory. It only shows that the name Wright was a natural one for Professor James to mention. It is quite possible, however, that another Wright, who becomes a communicator later is meant and the evidence is that he and Professor James were not acquainted. They simply knew of each other.

In regard to the name Lewis, spelled "Levis" in the record in deference to the exact lines in the writing in which Mrs. C. often makes "w" like "v", and the later Eliza, Mr. Henry James, Jr., writes: "The first names of my mother's parents are Lewis and Eliza. It would, however, seem very strange for my father to call them by their first names. He never saw my grandfather, who died young, and always referred to my grandmother who is still living, as Mrs. Gibbons."

The association of the name, Lewis with that of Wright suggests to me that it may have been intended for Dr. Lewis Janes who appears as a communicator later and who was known to Professor James. In any case the coincidence of two Lewis's in his acquaintance has its interest while we have to admit that, under the circumstances, neither of them is as evidential as is desirable. Dr. Lewis Janes did take the hopeful view of this problem



He has shown so much anxiety and is so eager to give me an opportunity. The last time I saw him the time was so brief I had not much to say but a hurrid [hurried] word or two, but his ardent hopeful spirit was always a help and inspiration to me.

(I believe it.)

I did not always approve of his methods ['his read 'this'] his... [hand went back and pointed to first 'his'] (Ali right) but there was never a doubt in my mind of his sincerity and his assurance was sometimes beautiful to see.

(I understand.)

He has said and done some graceful and helpful things concerning me since my passing but I cannot name them now.

(I understand.) [Note 102.]

The wreath was beautiful. I simply say that I am losing my hold [handwriting at the word 'my' began to be scrawly and to move vertically down the page, continuing in scrawly character to the end.] I want to tel [tell] Henry that Mother and Father are with me and Eliza also love Willi... ['love' might be 'Cone' or 'Cove', but my familiarity with the writing of Mrs. C. would make these interpretations very doubtful.] [Note 103.]

102. The passage with reference to Mr. Dorr is quite pertinent and represents knowledge not possessed or accessible to Mrs. C. It is, of course, too indefinite to be made evidential for any but those who know the inner life of the two men and their relation to each other. Mr. Dorr does not remember when he last saw him and so does not recall anything that would make the reference to "a hurried word or two" significant. But Mr. Dorr's attitude of mind and feelings about the situation are accurately enough indicated, and as unknown to the psychic as they are clearly indicated.

It is not possible to verify or disprove the statements made about their difference of methods and Professor James' disapproval of Mr. Dorr's, if he did disapprove of them. This, Mr. Dorr says, did not appear in their conversations, tho differences of point of view were manifest according to Mr. Dorr's testimony. The graceful and helpful things mentioned are not determinable, tho probable.

[Mrs. C. states in reply to inquiries that she knows nothing about Mr. Dorr.]

103. His father and mother are not living, but the Eliza, as a preceding note indicates, is living and is the mother of Mrs. James. "Willi..." is probably an incomplete effort to name a younger son still living. The

[At the effort to write Eliza the labor was very manifest and a great struggle took place to effect it, each letter being written very slowly and with evident and great difficulty. This probably made the word 'love' less assured—as well as context—than some might make it. There was not sufficient power to complete the name William.]

[Change of Control.]

Hyslop I am here and happy. I believe we are going to make a good record. I hope to heaven to have a better one than mine was and is but you know I have no feeling except for the general cause.

(I understand.)

William is keeping cool as usual but the rest of us are making fuss enough to set the old globe \* \* [undecipherable, 'to \* \*' or 'wagging' ?] [not read at time.] rocking.

(Yes, I understand.)

George is in high feather and feels as if the whole work was going to be re-energized and re-organized and re-vitalized by William's death. You poor old soldier left to fight the battle but you have a few lieutenants and faithful corporals who will help you place the flag of truth in [so read and hand pointed till I read 'on'.] the mount of hope.

(Sometimes we are least alone when we are alone.)

That is as true as God. James William always feels a sense of sorrow he did not fnsh ['finish' but read 'brush'.] his ... finish ... work with you. Some of his plans regarding your work he had left until this year but he may help you now (I understand.) more than ever.

What a bright \* \* Jennie P—is ['bright' not read at first.] St [or 'Sp'.] it is. ['bright' read.] She keeps us moving and will not let us get too tense around the light.

(I understand.)

William uses more energy than Imperator did yesterday but you understand. I am only writing a word for your courage.

---

name Eliza is most probably unknown to Mrs. C. in this connection and she seems not to have known of the son William. It is possible, however, and no special weight can be given it.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 104.]

Would you understand when I say I always liked cheese.

(Perfectly.)

I wrote that as a bit of evidence (Good.) and hoped you would remember. My dessert was more often cheese and toated [not read but suspected as intended for 'toasted'.] crackers than anything else.

(The word looks like 'toated'.)

toasted. . . . coffee of course until Emperor changed my diet.

That was a hard one for me. You understand.

(Perfectly.) [Note 105.]

These bits help us in the general way. You return next week.

(Yes, I do.)

---

104. I can detect words and images that suggest subconscious influence in this passage from Dr. Hodgson, tho there are also characteristics of his own personality in it at the same time. I remark the influence of the medium's subliminal upon it, however, to show that I am not oblivious to that most important fact in the whole of this product. I cannot put my finger down on any of it, however, and say, This is undoubtedly Hodgson's and that is undoubtedly subliminal. It requires much experience with the subject and personal acquaintance with the ideas and mental habits of Dr. Hodgson to detect any coloring at all from his mind.

105. Dr. Hodgson was fond of cheese. That I knew personally. But the fact was explained in the published record of my sittings with Mrs. Piper and was accessible to Mrs. C. in the *Journal* which she had seen, because of her own relation to some of its contents. The servants about the Tavern Club, who were there when he was living, remember his liking for Welsh Rarebit and his frequently making it, but they do not recall his liking of cheese and crackers. I happen to know that he did take these, and toasted crackers at that, in his meals frequently when I was with him. Mrs. C. could know nothing of this.

Emperor did limit him in the use of coffee, as he did me, and it is possible that the published statement may have casually come to Mrs. C.'s knowledge, but I regard it as extremely doubtful. Mrs. C. had not seen the original Reports in which the matter may have been mentioned. I do not myself recall that it was mentioned specifically in any record but my own and this did not associate it with Dr. Hodgson.

[Inquiry of Mrs. C. results in the information that she never knew anything about the restrictions placed upon Dr. Hodgson's diet by Emperor through Mrs. Piper. Consequently the allusion to coffee is stronger than might naturally be supposed.]

We will be on hand. On hand is a good term to use in this instance.

(Yes, I understand it.)

We feel these sittings have been worth the effort this time.

(Indeed they have.)

Now with good courage we bid you adieu. R. H.

(Thank you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

Who's Lena?

(I don't know.)

Sounds like Lena Moses. Helena Helena Moses. Put me back.

[I put the head back on the cushion.]

Is it time? [Said as I put the head back.]

(Yes.) [Note 106.]

What are you coughing for? [I had coughed.]

(Tired.)

Well you get rested.

(Yes.)

Goodbye. I haven't got your hand.

(Do you want it?) [I put my hand on hers.]

It is hot.

(Yours is cold.)

It is the first time yours ever felt hot. [True in my recollection.]

The mention of Clark University confirmed the statements of Imperator and my conjecture as to who was meant in the allusion to the wrong experiments. After the sitting I asked Mrs. C. "what meaning Clark University had" to her and she replied: "It has no meaning at all." She then asked me if it was not in Worcester, and I replied that it was. She then replied: "It has no meaning to me except that I had a vague notion that there is such a place." She went on to say: "Owing to the fact that I was to stop at Worcester once for a Spiritualist Convention, I knew that there was a Clark University there, but I did not stop. I passed through

---

106. The names Lena and Helena Moses have no known significance to me, nor can I conjecture a possible one.

Worcester without stopping." I asked her then if she knew anyone at the University and she replied that she did not, asking me then if I meant the President or such persons. I replied in the affirmative and she stated she did not know who the President was or any one else there.

I also asked her if she remembered anything about a pen connected with Imperator, telling her that Imperator communicated through her, and she said she did not. I asked this because I had mentioned the relation of this pen to Imperator in the *Journal*, giving Mrs. C.'s cross-references (*Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I., p. 136) with the Piper case and she had seen this *Journal* and read it. Her normal memory did not recall the incident.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Oct. 27th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

[In her normal state Mrs. C. remarked before seating herself for the trance that this was the first time she had felt the presence of Dr. James. In a few moments her head was thrown back upon the cushion. There was apparently some trembling of the table and a few very light raps, a fact that I noted, not because I had any assurance it was not the wind on the window or some casual noise, but to have a note in case any allusion were made to it.]

[Pause.] Eh. [Pause.] I see beautiful white roses. [Pause.] I see a great bunch of beautiful white roses right in Dr. James' hand. Eh. [Pause.] It is like a bouquet, you know, of them. It looks funny for a man to hold a bunch of roses. I don't know as he liked them and they don't seem to belong to him. \* \* I think they are for evidence, not because he likes them. I don't mean to say that he did not love them, but it is not because he loves them that he has them. I think a lady sent them to his funeral. [Coughs] Oh dear. I see a lot of things. You didn't say good morning.

(Good morning.)

You don't want to use your voice. [I had a cold and voice was husky.] It makes more to write, doesn't it? (Yes.) All right. Put me in the thing.

[Head put in rest.]

Do you know any one by the name of Emmeline who would be in this group?

(I am not sure.)

I see a lady, rather tall, not very stout, dark hair, dark blue or grey eyes. I should think she was 45 or 50 years old. The only name I hear is Emmeline. She is all interested talking with these people. I have got to go. [pause.] [Note 107.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

My [pause.] friend [hand moved down to prevent superposing.] [pause.] will you have the goodness to be patient

(Yes.)

with me.

(Certainly.)

It is no assumed humbleness but a full understanding of my limitations and the awkward position I am in. You are face to face with your enemy of the old days when you asserted and I denied each of us right but on different sides of the mountain of Difficulty. I was more cordially hated by the Spiritualists than you.

(That is correct.)

You had your share of the burden and you laughed while I scoffed and that gave us each an arena. What a fool Stead is. He makes me weary.

(I understand.)

you do. I thought you might approve. I was badly shattered by the event which brought me here and some of my enemies are good enough to think I was removed for cause.

(I understand. That is the way some people do.)

What idiocy. (Yes, you are right.) I would have been glad to live longer on general principles, but I cannot find much fault. I worked hard and put more energy into the years I did live than some of the longer lives contained. I have made some attempts at the communicating but it is hard for me. Hodgson was not as charitable to my work as you were.

(I understand.)

He felt I was going half cocked.

---

107. The name Emmeline and description suggest nothing to the family. Nor does it suggest anything to me.

(I understood the two sides to your method and I never wrote to you personally.)

I was just about to say that.

(I spoiled the evidence didn't I?)

I had no hint from you that you understood but your published statements were of a different fibre than his.

(I was always the Devil's advocate.)

Hodgson was an enthusiast and always expected to convince everybody because he had been convinced. He could not let others go through their own lines of argument for and against but they must enter through his gate and his gate was called Piper and Imperator, he who must be bowed down to.

(I understand perfectly.)

All that was rot and stupidity to me.

(Yes, I understand.)

and when I made protest I found myself the centre of abuse and I retaliated and the fight was on.

(Yes, I believe it.)

I may be pig headed as they have said but I am willing to work for my salvation. No vicarious atonement for me.

(I understand and I am sure that your method tended to convince people whom Hodgson and I could not so easily reach.)

Thank you Professor. that is a noble acknowledgement.

(Thank you.)

nobly made and I tell you now I would have given much to have accepted without parley some statements but they were absurd to me and I could not from a parcel of fools and say amen to any sentiment supposed to emanate from the heavenly spheres.

(I understand.)

I understand that this is not the kind of evidence which proves identity to the world but to my mind it is the finest kind of evidence and surpasses that sort of complicated memory failing slipshod stuff that had no head or tail but fell like siftings of brain power in a heap to be sorted and classified according to the understanding and theories of the sorter.

(I understand.)

I find myself. My powers and lack of powers and express my identity as a *thinking* [underscored twice.] personality.

(Good.)

and my recollections of the past [read 'part'] past depend on the situation and associations as everybody's does. To sit down and recall events and affairs and people that are entirely dissociated with the present moment and companionship is too much like gathering pebbles on the shore you visited last year. Give me an hour with my dear old mother and our common interests would or might loosen my memory.

(Good. That's right.)

That is my opinion. It may fail but it seems nearer normal. However I will try at some time to give evidence of recollection. I have already given evidence of personality.

(Yes, good.)

I thank you and would say that Hodgson is fully cognizant of my effort and will probably chaff me on my dropping of the pencil, but just now I am too far in the [pause.] [I watched to see if the word 'light' would be written.] aura of your work to heed or hear him.

(Yes, I understand. It would be like him.)

Your old adversary. Frank Podmore.

(We are adversaries no more.)

No more but united in the effort to know the whole truth of this work.

(Yes.) [Note 108.]

---

108. The only strictly evidential incident in this passage from Mr. Podmore is his calling me "Professor" which he always did in his writings. Mrs. C. never called or calls me this. She always says "Dr." Only one other communicator ever called me "Professor" through Mrs. C. and this was a lady who always knew me as "Professor". Mrs. C. did not know that Mr. Podmore was in the habit of calling me "Professor".

To me, so far as I knew Mr. Podmore in his writings, the passage is characteristic, tho highly colored by the subliminal of Mrs. C. To Mr. Piddington it did not seem characteristic when he read it. He thought, too, that Mr. Podmore would not call me "Professor" but would say, as all Englishmen would do, "Professor Hyslop". It is not necessary to argue with the misunderstanding of the whole machinery of communication implied by this view of the matter.

It is hard to pick out the suggestive incidents in the passage and at the same time to free them from doubt. But the allusion to "slipshod stuff that had no head or tail but fell like siftings of brain power in a heap to be sorted and classified according to the understanding and theories of the sorter" is quite like statements in Mr. Podmore's last work which appeared

[Scrawl and pencil fell.]

[Mrs. C. shivered a few moments and uttered sounds as one would when shivering.]

cold, so cold, so cold. [Note 109.]

[Change of Control.]

Now what do you think of that. Wasn't that a strange and unexpected message.

(Indeed it was.)

At the last moment he appeared and asked for a chance. Said he felt he could write well and so we let him try. I am G. P.

(I understand.)

and I find the hand very much worn as if it had been paralyzed but it will soon wear [read 'bear'] away.... wear... He was quite subdued when he came back from the effort. I think he is learning some things about us. We think he was very sensitive under his coat [read 'cool'] coat [read 'coal'] jacket. coat [read 'coal'] coat. (Yes, all right.) of independence and that the independence was his refuge. You see what I mean,

(Yes.)

Any way it was a good experiment. How did he get along.

(Well, quite well.)

That is good, b.... only we may have to take his conceit [read 'concert'] of ... conceit out of him. It will be a great task but we are willing [willing] to slay [read 'stay' and hand pointed till correctly read.] ourselves for a good cause.

(All right.)

---

after his death and after this record was made. The description of Dr. Hodgson as an enthusiast was probably Mr. Podmore's opinion in life and he certainly correctly indicates here that Dr. Hodgson expected others to be convinced by his methods and facts. Mrs. C. is not familiar enough with the man and his work to have known this.

[Mrs. C.'s statements about her limited knowledge of Mr. Podmore support my statement here.] Cf. p. 10.

109. Mrs. C. had an experience soon after Mr. Podmore's death which apparently indicated his presence and attempt to communicate. The sense of falling rain and water was present in it and also that of cold. It was Miss Whiting that suggested to her the possible presence of Mr. Podmore and Mrs. C. had not yet learned of his death by drowning on a rainy night. On any theory the allusion to "cold" here is a reminiscence of that incident p. 145.

Now William is here and has been all the time, but he was much interested in the work done. I will write for ...

[Pencil thrown down and another inserted.]

You see the hand has not ['has' read inadvertently 'was'] has not the usual power. (Yes.) We could not try those experiments often but I will write for W—(All right.) a little bit.

Did you discover any of the evidences from the last sittings [sittings] [read 'things' questioningly] si ... [suddenly read.]

(No answer to inquiries yet.)

He is not worried.

(What I know was good.)

I think things will work along all right. There is something going on but the interest in your work is sincere and will continue. The son will later be of some help. He is just now engaged in another way. You probably know to what I refer.

(No, I do not.)

Not any more Psychic things than here but in a measure. I am glad you are making this a regular work. It will help but I would like to see you in better shape.

(Yes, so would I like to be.)

It will be soon. Not for always are you to be hampered but a more free and even course will open up to you.

W— holds his watch. I mean the spirit [read 'short'] spirit duplicate of it. (Yes.) and he says it is not in use now but is to be given to a young member of the family. Not H—

(Good.) [Note 110.]

There [groans and French.] has been some talk of his books. . . He refers to his personal library. Some of the books are to be donated [not read.] donated to another library and there has been some work or thought about getting them ready. His wife [read 'the write' questioningly] wife dislikes to make any change and yet she is perfectly willing for this to be done. It is the beginning which is hard.

(Yes.) [Note 111.]

There are some family changes which must come by and bye.

---

110. Inquiry shows that for several weeks Professor James' watch was not used, but was then carried, in accordance with his expressed wishes, by his son Henry, who is said here not to be the one to whom it was to be given.

111. Inquiry while writing these notes during the summer (1911) re-

Do you [know] if she has relatives or friends in N. Y. which she has been in contact with.

(I do not know.)

He does not tell [read 'but'] me ... tell... that but I caught a vision of N. Y. (Good.) You know I am familiar with N. Y. and with Harvard too.

(Yes perfectly.)

Harvard looks so changed to me. So many new buildings but the old square looks about the same except for the horse cars.

(Good.) [Note 112.]

[Pencil changed, as I noticed the hand had been adjusting its actions to suit the worn point.]

I suppose it is easier to travel. (Yes.) to and from the city but it is all different than when I was there. This is the first time I think that I have referred to my life there, but I had a life there, as you know. I often recall it. I used to sit [read 'set'] sit in the common and watch the leaves fall at this time of the year and during my dreams of great fame and great things to be done. They did not come to me. My sudden death brought to an end some of those flights [read 'blights'] of fancy... fli... [suddenly read 'flights'] yes [answer to correct reading.] I read poems and poets ['poems' not read and 'poets' read 'facts'] poems [read 'powers'] verses poems and poets yes [to correct reading.] Longfellow I loved. You may not know this but I did. I had other favorites but I loved Longfellow—Lowell and Burns— It seems to be a time filling [read 'feeling'] filling [read 'fitting'] filling work I am doing now for the first communicator did not leave good nor definite strength. This is not a complaint but explanation.

(Good. What about Lowell did you like best?)

I do not understand. Do you mean which of his poems or his work[s]

sulted in the information that no such disposal of his library has been made, and nothing was said by my informant about the intentions.

112. The family has relatives in New York, but it is probable that no point can be made of the reference here. The statement is made by G. P. for Professor James, and hence the reference to Harvard of which G. P. was a graduate. As he died in 1892 the statements made about the buildings and street cars are correct.

(Poems?)

I loved his works of the higher and loftier themes, not so much the Bigelow Papers as those dreams of the strong and spiritual life and his ideas of the spirit world impinging on this. You know too his verses as a reformer [not read] reformer his hatred of cant ['hatred' not read.] hatred of ['hatred' not read.] hate ... ['hatred' read.] yes [to correct reading.] his love of truth—You recall of course—Every man loves Lowell.

(Yes.)

—Bound to [read 'Bennett'] The... Bound... The gentleman the minister—and all that.

(Yes.)

Minister to England would win me yes [to correct reading.] You know to what I refer—

(Perfectly.) [Note 113.]

Imperator did not recall that the pen had been mentioned and he desired it for evidence.

(I understand.)

Did you ever think what a bunch of Englishmen we have in our group.

(Yes.)

It is rather funny is it not. (Yes.) Even James is as much English in some ways as we are and we forgive him his Americanisms [read 'conversations'] Americanisms... That is a bit of fun of course—

---

113. Mrs. C. is not fond of Longfellow but is of Lowell, and knows nothing of Burns. The note at the end of the sitting explains this and was contemporary. The following from an intimate friend of G. P. will show to what extent the incidents are supernatural and to what subliminal.

"He [G. P.] at times sat in the Common and Public Garden, but more probably when he was living in Boston than when a student at Cambridge. I never heard of his reading Longfellow, Lowell, or Burns in that place. He was not specially fond of Longfellow. It is very possible that he preferred Lowell's serious side. I must say, however, that G. P.'s reading of poetry lay far outside of the authors mentioned above. He knew their work but they were by no means his favorites. These are not in the least characteristic touches. What he means by 'Lowell's ideas of the spiritual world impinging on this' I do not know. But I do know that he never particularly admired Longfellow's and Lowell's poetry. I never heard him speak of Burns."

(I understand.)

Many time times I make explanations not for you but for future readers. (Good.) They would not all understand and would think we believed ['d' added and separated so that it was read 'believe a'] believed that Americans were inferior but of course we do not. else why are we Harvard men. We are not all H—men but one is beside [besides] James. Now I must go, but tomorrow we return.

(Yes.)

This has not been bad, only unusual.

(Correct.)

G. P.

(Thank you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear. [pause.] I see your father, Dr. Hyslop.

(Do you? Give him my love.)

Have you a brother away from here?

(Yes.)

Is any one sick?

(I don't know.)

There is a little illness. He is not alarmed. There is an old lady off a little ways. Where he is. The old lady lives near him. The illness is connected with her. Do you know?

(I don't know.)

Well, you will hear. [Note 114.]

Have I got to go? (Yes.) Tomorrow? (Yes.)

I see a heater, a small furnace for a heater. Have you done anything to yours? Who do you suppose this is for?

(I don't know.)

---

114. I have a brother living far from Boston. An aunt of mine lives as far away and some little distance from this brother, in fact two aunts. Inquiry shows that one of these aunts was at a wedding anniversary on the 26th and caught a severe cold but was all right in a day or two. She was my father's sister. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know the fact, as this aunt writes me that she had not told a single person about it.

But the other Aunt had a slight stroke on November 4th, eight days later than this reference. If it applied to her it was a premonition. The only points in the incident are a reference to my brother's relation to them and their living at a distance and illness generally.

Does it mean that you have a furnace or steam heater? (No.)  
Furnace? (Yes.) Well put in the heat. That is how you got  
your cold. Put in the heat. You are oblivious, not careless.  
Stop it. Have a fire. Your wife wants you to have a fire. You  
don't want to be put to the blaze when you come over. (No.)  
I see through curtains. Put me back.

[Head put on cushion.] [Note 115.]

I seem to see through lace curtains. I am outside looking  
in. Do you know that Mr. Podmore we talk about.

(Yes.)

I see a light in a chamber. The curtains are blowing in, the  
bed untouched. A light there when he, a spirit came and looked  
in at the window. The light was there all night burning for  
him and he did not go Home.

Another strange thing I must tell you. (Yes.) He seems  
to pass, as he came to his room, an old place like a chimney,  
an old house, old abandoned chimney, all tangled with weeds  
and things around it. [Pause.] I can't get away from it. There  
is a long flight of steps to the house, a little embankment, a  
long flight like an embankment, two or three steps to the door.  
He was happy to sit out there. They were wooden steps, as  
I hear steps up and down. I think it is where they took his  
body. I never like to think of him. I get so cold. Perhaps he  
is going to communicate.

(He did today.)

That is why I see him. I am afraid of him.

(He would not hurt you.)

He did before. He made it rain on my face. [Pause.] I  
keep seeing so much. [Note 116.]

---

115. I had not yet started the fire in my furnace, tho most people in  
the city had done so. This was nearly 230 miles from Boston and Mrs. C.  
could not have known the fact without direct inquiry. I had a slight cold  
at the time but it was not due to the want of fire in the house.

116. Miss Johnson writes me that there was a thunderstorm the night of  
Mr. Podmore's death. The other incidents are not verifiable. Miss Johnson  
says:—"From what I know of the whole circumstances and the neighborhood  
I think it most unlikely that the other points are correct. But we cannot  
make inquiries about them." It is not clear, of course, what place is meant  
in the message, tho some statements imply that his own home was included  
in the account. But nothing is verifiable about it. Cf. pp. 145, 200.

[After the sitting I inquired of Mrs. C. in her normal state about the poets named, except Burns whom I had forgotten. I state results verbatim.]

(Do you like Longfellow?)

Not especially. I am ashamed of it. My favorites are Whittier and Tennyson and Lowell.

(What especially about Lowell?)

I don't know. I never pick him up but I find something.

(Is there any particular feature about Lowell?)

I don't think so. I could not tell you now anything special.

The correction purporting to come from Imperator through G. P. is interesting, as I had told Mrs. C. before the sitting that I had found it mentioned in the *Journal* of the Am. S. P. R. in connection with the sitting that I had with her some time after Dr. Hodgson's death. Mrs. C. does not know whether she read the incident as told in the note in the *Journal* or not. It is not evidential, however, under the circumstances.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Oct. 28th, 1910. 10.45 A. M.

Just as we started to have the sitting I recalled that I had forgotten the articles and had to go to the hotel for them, losing about 15 minutes' time. Mrs. C. reported on my return that she had hard work to prevent herself from going into the trance. She had felt very sleepy.

[*Subliminal.*]

Eh. I hear a funny name. It seems odd to me. Lettie, Lettie. Letitia, but they call it Lettie. [Pause.] Isn't it strange how names hop in that way. I suppose they are in the minds of people here.

(It may be.)

[Pause.] Do you know a red headed man?

(Yes.)

I see one with red hair. I mean in the spirit land. Well, I'll go now. I feel as if my neck would break off. I wish you

would put me in the machine. I guess that's what they want.  
[I placed head in rest.] [Pause.] [Note 117.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I will come and say a word if I may and of course it is useless to ask you for the sittings are arranged by the people over here

[The hand had been clinched with fingers in palm and the pencil was held in an awkward manner so that the writing seemed difficult. I pulled the fingers out and saw that the pencil was held more normally. It made no practical alteration in the nature and difficulty of the writing.]

without regard to your wish. I tell you this which you already know.

(I understand.)

They use discretion and are wise concerning conditions. It is a work we are all interested in and any spirit [read 'only special'] any spirit ['any' read 'only'] any spirit not interested is not worthy our attention. I have never communicated [read 'annunciated'] com.... [suddenly read.] here before and do so now because conditions are just right and I move on serenely [read 'security'] serene... and well. How I can write what I most desire to express I do not know. There are so many preliminaries and conditions one [not read.] assumes... one ... on taking control. [two words not read.] taking control of a hand to write his communication. It is somewhat different [read 'difficult'] different when one sends the message through an intermediary process but this responsibility makes me a trifle nervous. Still I can do something. It is all experience. The whole plan of living seems experience experience. It is soul practice and then the soul becomes [read 'seems'] becomes strong and active [read 'alive'] active in soul life. It seems quite true that some souls do not revive instantly after transition but lie [read 'live'] [hand pointed, but I could not read.] lie in a dormant state like hibernating [not read] hibernating creatures and the attentions of spirit friends of [erased] or new and timely conditions do not arouse them until some time after the transition. But the interest in the subject on your side of

---

117. The name Lettie or Letitia and the reference to the red headed man are not recognizable.

life awakens [not read] awakens a curiosity and stimulates desire to know even [not read] among [not read] more even among [last two words not read.] even among spirits. Your work is not confined [not read.] to the ... confined to the earthly realm [not read.] realm [not read, save the syllables 'real'] realm but its influence [read 'difference' and hand pointed till read correctly.] is felt in every sphere of life, just as ours is felt in every condition of life everywhere ['every' read 'even'] every... everywhere. The unity [not read] of life ...unity... is so apparent to us we are constantly surprised at it. One [read 'some' and hand pointed till correctly read.] body and one spirit through all creation. You probably do not care for this sort of dissertation. I suppose every [not read.] every returning spirit tells the same story and it is true to you, but it is so impressive to us that we keep the movement of the theme ever in the song of return. How glad I am to make this trial of my strength and at some time I may return again to thank you.

(Thank you.)

Levis [Lewis] J anes. You remember me.

(Perfectly.)

So glad.

(So am I.) [Note 118.]

[Pencil fell, new one inserted and rejected and another given, the one rejected being one used by Prof. James last September.]

[Change of Control.]

R. H.— Let me write a word.

(Good.)

I am so interested in these later experiments and know your feeling of surprise and joy at the foregoing message.

(Yes indeed.)

It was planned [not read] planned but we are never quite

---

118. Dr. Lewis Janes was an acquaintance of mine who died some years ago. He had invited me to deliver a paper and another address before the Cambridge Conferences, the first at Hollis St. Theatre and the second at the house of Mrs. Ole Bull. He was known to Professor James. These Conferences were somewhere about 1899. Dr. Janes died a few years later. The event of my paper and address was only a short time after Mrs. C. began her psychic development. The note at the end of the sitting made contemporaneously with the sitting shows how little any conscious knowledge of Mrs. C. could have influenced the incident.

sure of the result and when a message comes through without any difficulty we are glad.

(So am I.)

There is a new impetus and we are beset with [not read.] applications [read 'explanations'.] to ... with applications to try to send a message and so if you receive one now and then you will understand.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Yesterday's ['s' added and separated from it.] [Pencil was then fumbled as if conscious of some obstruction. It was one that had been used by another communicator before.] interested me more than I can tell you. It was right from the shoulder as usual but no one had concern for that.

By the way I have not mentioned Mrs. L. [full name given but not clearly written and tho I felt sure who it was I read only the letters 'Le'.] Kate.

(Yes, I know.)

lately but have been called into requisition on several occasions and in various places.

(Good.)

abroad at last she was able to go across. You recall what I mean.

(Yes.)

It is her way to do things as she pleases.

(Yes.)

What she ought to have is a husband who would know how to bring out all the strong good points in her character. She is all right if you know how to accept her help.

(Yes.)

The independent sp... [superposing.] spirit is not so evident after a while. Her husband over here often desires to send a word to her of his devotion.

(I shall be glad to take any word.)

It [erased.] Take this that he is always her devoted lover and husband and knows the trials and struggles of her life better than any living person ['living' not read.] livin... [word then read.] and that when she writhes under the hand of oppressing influences he is near and all the joys of the heavenly kingdom could not entice him away from her side in her hour of pain.

She accomplished some things for us that some others could not do and we never forget a kindness. That last statement is from me.

(I understand.)

Sometimes I long to sit down and talk matters over with her in the old way. She was a most admirable hostess and made the call [read 'talk'] or ... call or visit full of interest and pleasure.

(Yes.) [Note 119.]

Now William wants a word. You have not heard from the family yet.

(No, I have not.)

You will soon. They are cordial but disturbed over the passing. It was unexpected after all. They thought he was tired and worn but would recuperate. You thought so too did you not.

(Yes, until I heard of certain facts.)

Those were so late and so near the end that they properly belong to the news of death.

(Yes.) [Note 120.]

---

119. The lady mentioned here has had sittings with Mrs. C. and is well acquainted with her personally. It is possible that Mrs. C. knows her well enough to describe her characteristics in some of the features mentioned, but she would not know the pertinence of the things said about her helpfulness by Dr. Hodgson, unless some hints of it may have been given by Mrs. L. herself in sittings of which there are no records. Mrs. L. writes me recognizing the pertinence of the message, especially in the interesting psychological point that it comes from her husband through Dr. Hodgson in the "old way": for he used to send her messages from her husband through Mrs. Piper, and had many talks with her about these things. Mrs. C. probably knew nothing of these things unless they were casually indicated to her by Mrs. L. herself at sittings not recorded, of which there were several. But we cannot emphasize the evidential character of separate incidents. The utmost that can be said is that collectively and to those who know the facts the message seems genuine, but as Mrs. L. remarks about them, they are "not knock down facts".

120. There is an interesting coincidence here. About two weeks before Professor James' death I went to ascend Chocorua Mountain and could not see him, tho at the house, because he was too ill. When told that he had oedema of the lungs I remarked at the time its dangerous character and did not say all I thought. I remarked the fact to one or two persons on my return home, but Mrs. C. had no opportunity to learn the fact.

But the family had looked forward to some years of quiet and expressive life in ways William loved [not read.] loved. The life of the retired student, not inaction but action in new directions and more freedom to tabulate and make plain the facts his long life of observation and study had brought to him. A heap of documents and notes and rough drafts of lectures and papers testify to his plan for long years of work.

(Good.) [Note 121.]

It is pathetic always to see the tools left and the hand no more present to wield them, but especially so in his case, and his room is full of memories and associations [not read.] associations [read 'assonations'] associations... bad writing again I see...

(Yes as much fault on my side too.)

associations that recall old friends and old conversations and all that went to make up his life.

(Yes.)

I have been there and so have you (Yes.) and if you were to go there now you would almost feel the same cordial hand-clasp hear [read 'there'] the cheery... hear... voice and listen to the old question ["What is the news from the other side."]

(Good.)

His [read 'this' and hand pointed till correctly read.] question you may not recall but he often asked me that and I thought he might have you.

(Yes, I remember it.)

[My memory of it, however, is very vague, tho something like it is clear, but may have been mentioned in some previous record. I assented here more because I saw the hand waited for my statement and I was trying to recall it more clearly.]

Good that is a point. He is here with me now [not read.] now [pencil changed.] but the energy was excited by the advent of the [French sounds.] new comer and we want him to have only the calm and clear atmosphere. He was as interested as you in the other message for Janes was his friend.

---

121. Inquiry shows that Professor James did expect to work for some years and left much unfinished data, just such matter as is here described, tho this might be expected of him and cannot be made evidential without more specific description.

(Yes, I understand.)

Janes left out the G. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 122.]

All right. We are a a happy crowd this morning. Are you the Last leaf on the tree.

(I guess so.) [Thinking that he meant I was the last of the persons to represent the work and to come over to that side.]

No not yet. I refer to Holmes. Holmes poem [not read.] poem. You do not know it.

(No, I do not.)

Look it up. It's worth while.

(All right.) [Note 123.]

Do you want me to tell you a few points about William.

(Yes.)

I wait for him to speak. [Pause.] There are thee [three] definite messages prepared which he desires to give when he can. Hope [read 'the'] he will have b... Hope.... better success than I did.

(Yes.)

He puts in my hand two articles, an inkstand and an old pocket book. The pocket book is small with a clasp and was used to carry change in but was old and worn. The inkstand was on his desk but seldom used. It was of a past day and had some special significance.

(Yes, tell that significance.)

a gift [read 'girl'.] gift. a long pen stock w.... [read 'stuck'] stock... with cork on the pen end not much used but for the purpose of drawing lines between paragraphs and that sort of thing. was near [read 'never' and hand pointed till correctly read.] the inkstand.

He points to a picture on the wall which is a photograph of me and was placed there after my passing.

(Good.)

The room was [all three words superposed.]

---

122. The name of Dr. Janes was Lewis G. Janes. I learned that Professor James knew him.

123. The reference to Holmes' poem, tho not indicating what one it was, is probably a subliminal incident, as the later note at end of the sitting the next day would indicate.

(Wait, you are superposing.)

The room was light and full. Oh so full of everything.

(Yes.)

Nothing changed yet. No need of it. I seem to be losing power. Is it late. [Note 124.]

(Not specially.) [I had to look at my watch.]

Why is it. Are you worn.

(Somewhat.)

Perhaps we had best try no more now—but tomorrow William will come first if all is well.

(Good.)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groans and apparent sounds of raps.] [Pause.] [French sounds.] Didn't you have any women communicators?

(Not to-day.)

Do you know any one by the name of Gussie?

(Yes, once.)

A long time ago. She is not very old, is a bright, active and lively girl. There is no special thing that I see, only a bright active and agreeable girl. You know she was always laughing a merry laugh.

(Yes, tell me more as to who she is, if you can.)

Did she know your lady?

(Not that I know.)

---

124. The "old pocket book" is not recognized by the family, but the inkstand seems to have some importance. The son writes me: "He had an inkstand given him I believe by one of his classes on some occasion. It was usually on a stand-up desk and not much used."

The incident of the penstock, etc., is not recognizable. But Professor James, according to the son's statement, had a picture of Dr. Hodgson which was framed and hung up in a room in Cambridge after his death. The rooms were practically unchanged at the time of the sitting.

Inquiry shows that this picture of Dr. Hodgson was in the line of vision for any one in the entrance hall to the house. I made inquiry on this point because Mrs. C. was once at the James' home after the death of Dr. Hodgson, but was not in the library. She was in the reception room. The incident, however, should be compared with the message through Mrs. Smead, p. 865.

I go back to your young life and I get all the interest of study. I don't know whether you are younger or she. I get books. You know what I mean.

(Yes.)

I see a funny little thing in connection with a store.

(A what?)

A store window a shop and a little town. She was always looking in a store. She was not especially spiritual, an ordinary bright girl or young woman. Won't you put me back? [Note 125.]

[Head placed on cushion.]

Oh dear! What a rainbow. You got a lovely rainbow this summer. You called out your \* \* Your wife told it. You were looking at it and the hills and called the children to look at it. It was very brilliant and looked like circles around Saturn. Perhaps the references is to that \* \* circles like a rainbow. [Note 126.]

It is hard for you to takes notes in longhand. I am glad Miss Allen is not here.

---

125. The name Gussie recalled an old schoolmate of my boyhood days. She was exactly as described and her brother writes me that she was fond of looking in shop windows. She is still living, however, and never knew my wife. She was a bright and lively girl with a very merry laugh and not spiritually minded. There is no evidence here that she is meant. I have only the accurate description to confirm the suspicion aroused by the name. It is apparently implied that she is not living, this being untrue. I do not know any one in the acquaintance of my wife to whom the name and description would apply. She was one of a group of young people with whom I associated in the High School, and several of them are dead. I can explain the incident only by supposing that some whom she knew had referred to her for identification and the psychic got the impression that she was the communicator. The average type of mind would make it telepathy and for all that I know it might be this, assuming it more than chance, but it is too isolated an incident to justify the application of that hypothesis.

126. This is quite an interesting incident for its details. A remarkable rainbow had appeared during my stay in the mountains and I had called the children out to see it. It was especially brilliant and the circumstances were so unusual for the formation of it that it had something like a series of concentric circles at one end. Several of the family recall the fact. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to have known the fact as it was not talked about afterward. Mrs. C. knew I was in the mountains, but the incident had not been a subject of comment between us.

(So am I.)

She was so variable. There were a lot of things I could never tell you that disturbed me more than the work. It was not the work that wore me out. It was some other things. I was always trying to fight off some influence that would read into every action what was not there.

[I coughed from irritation in the throat.]

Did you ever put on vaseline?

(No, I am going too fast.)

Why don't you? You must not go on the other side yet. A good deal depends on you. You know the story of the little girl who said so much depended on God. Are you glad I am going?

(Yes, I am tired.)

After her recovery of normal consciousness I asked Mrs. C. if she ever knew of a man who had lectures and conferences on scientific and ethical matters here or in Cambridge. She replied that she did not. I then asked if she remembered any conferences under the auspices of Mrs. Ole Bull and she remembered nothing but music, hearing only about that. She also had no knowledge of the Hollis Street Theatre Symposium at which I spoke. I found no trace of knowledge about the man I had in mind. I did not tell her anything about him.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Oct. 29th, 1910. 10 A M.

Remarked that she had a dream about Dr. James last night. She herself attached no importance to it. Just before the beginning of the trance she threw back her head on cushion with a little hacking cough. Then apparently in a half conscious condition she began.

[*Subliminal.*]

There's the ten o'clock train. I hear it. Do you?

(Yes.)

It always makes me think of New York. [Pause.] I can't hear it any more. [Train now was puffing at a great rate.]

[Pause.] My spirit goes out somewhere.

(Does it? Do you know where?)

It seems to be released by some process and it is as if I go

floating away further from my body. I am just holding on by my voice.

(Yes.)

It is strange that the voice seems to be the last expression of 'most everybody. When the breath dies the voice is gone. Unless some other immediately operates the body it dies and no one should care for that. It is no more than a garment which has borrowed all its grace, beauty and expression from the spirit which it [pause.] was alive to. Oh here they are. Oh all so near me. Please put me in. [Head placed in rest.]

[Mrs. C. slightly moved in the chair.]

Who moved me?

(You did. You moved yourself.)

No, I did not. Father John did it. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Oh the joy of return. It seems so simple and plain and gives me great joy. It is not difficult to see and understand you but the power to extract the meaning and composition of the present state and make it comprehensible to you is where the difficulty lies.

(Yes, I understand.)

To the ordinary or average mind terms and phrases having no meaning for the scholarly student have been used by communicating spirits until the whole matter is obscure and contradictory.

(I quite understand.)

Much of the literal converse is as a mother talking baby talk to her infant in arms

(Yes, that's good.)

which is soothed by cooing tones and loving presence and sleeps [read 'steeps' and hand paused but went on and I read the word later.] on the throbbing breast of love unconscious of the real and vital issues of life.

(Yes, I understand.)

We are men, not babes, and must speak as men to men.

(Good.)

My memory is clear on past events but the recollection does not embrace each detail any more than yours does. In other

words my memory is not intensified or clarified by death. I speak only for myself.

[When letter 'b' was written in 'by' the hand paused, finished the word by writing 'y' when French sounds were uttered, the signal of restoring energy. When this ceased 'y' was written again.]

(Yes, I understand.)

but neither is my memory dimmed. That is a point you and I discussed I believe.

(Yes, we did.)

It has been a problem with us in these matters. I find that the light is much more responsible for good and bad or rather superior and inferior power than I supposed. That also we discussed.

(Yes.) [Note 127.]

It is not a question for me to answer how far the moral integrity may effect [affect] the message. That I must study later.

(Good.)

I know of course that it is more agreeable to have pure minded people in one's atmosphere, but sometimes a latent energy is released by methods which do not meet with the approval of our conscience. But the censorship is the result of education oftener than experience.

(Good.)

You will know to what I refer.

(Yes, exactly.)

---

127. I had discussed with Professor James the action of the memory and the possible condition of the communicator in the act of communicating. He knew the hypothesis which Dr. Hodgson and I defended and recognized its plausibility, at least to some extent. That we discussed it was, of course, not known to Mrs. C., and she most probably never heard that Dr. Hodgson and I had held it. It is interesting, however, to remark the same tacit correction of it which Dr. Hodgson and G. P. have made of it through Mrs. C. and the indication that the cause is more in the psychic than in the condition of the communicator than had been supposed. The importance of this will appear later. Cf. pp. 254, 278, 292, 682.

The reader should remark that the communication repeats an earlier view about his memory with details. Cf. p. 188. It prefaces his observations on the conditions for communicating.

A soldier fired with zeal exhibits endurance and energy never dreamed of and a man drunk with wine dares and does what his sober and unfired brain would flee from. I may seem to be too explicit but I have decided to make each statement perfectly plain

(Yes.)

and leave no doubt in your mind.

(Good, make it as full and clear as you desire.)

We have suffered in the past experiments because [read 'oceans' questioningly.] of unfinished b... ['because' suddenly read.] statements and incomple[te] explanations that were never afterward referred to.

(Good, I understand.)

To return to my statement of the difference in lights. I have seen several and there is a great difference in energy. At some places I am all at sea because of the lack of capacity. I found no tools to use and no power to reach for my own. [Pause and hand turned pencil moving fingers down on it.] It takes all my energy to hold on and then the evidence is fitful and poor but I am there [French sounds.] just as much as where the power is stronger.

(Good, I understand.)

[Pause.] Never before was the interest so sane in these matters. I talked with Henry about these things but now it seems to me that I did not make it very strong. We agreed to come to each other in case of death, but we little thought I would be the one. Mother my gentle and much loved angel mother has been with me to visit him.

(What Henry is this?)

My brother. (Thank you.) you must recall.

(Yes I do. But there was another Henry.)

My son (Yes.) but he is always Harry in the family. (Good.) My brother was much shocked by my death and regrets so many things as if I had been overstrained. This is not true. I am so glad I saw him and had that last talk with him.

(Good.)

He looks ill and worn out now but he will be better as he recovers his nervous energy.

(Good, I understand.) [Note 128.]

I am so glad now for all my interest in these wonderful phenomena. Wherever you place them in the end they are wonderful to a psychologist.

(Yes.)

But the reality of life and the possibilities of communicati[ng] [pencil ran off sheet.] no longer confound me.

(I understand.)

It is all experiment and experiment [read 'experience'] experiment. I intended to give you another lot of work like that you last had but my notes were not quite completed, but Harry will give it to you later.

(Good.)

Some of the Proceedings of the English Society I had and they were not complete either. I wonder if you know of this.

(No, I do not know.)

I saw L. You know whom I mean.

(No, I got only 'L'.)

Lodge. His work... It is more sure than mine, more unequivocal and his mind must have been clear [read 'less'] about... clear... some of the doubtful things in mine.

---

128. Of the reference to his brother Henry, Professor James' son Henry James, Jr., writes: "This is true in that after a certain day, during which my father was able to talk with members of the family and did see my uncle for awhile, 'talk' with any one became impossible." But there has not developed any evidence that they had agreed to come to each other in case of death. Henry James, Jr., writes that he "believes nothing of the sort occurred". This judgment may apply to the last interview mentioned, but the apparent meaning of the reference is to some earlier time when both had made the promise. I have no evidence as yet that this is true.

Henry James, Jr., reports that his uncle was unwell at this time; that he was always called Uncle Henry, and himself Harry in the family. None of these things could have been known to Mrs. C. except the names.

The statement of having suffered in the past from explanations that were unfinished and never afterwards referred to is a most interesting fact which it was not possible for Mrs. C. to know without an intimate acquaintance with the Reports which, in fact, she has not read. This has always been a vexatious incident in the records and the perplexity caused by this circumstance was one that appealed especially to the mind of Professor James and all who want first to understand the process before they give in their adhesion to the fact of communication.

(I understand.)

He has wonderful faith and patience and is a thoughtful and [French.] careful investigator. I fear I am losing hold.

(No evidence of it here.) [Note 129.]

The interest is unabating and the energy is gone

(Wait, wait, till I fix the pencil.)

[The hand had bent the fingers into the palm and was holding the pencil awkwardly, while the writing no longer separated the words after 'unabating'.]

but the energy is gone.... [Writing faded into nothing and the pencil fell from the hand. Pause.]

[Change of Control.]

Greeting from G. P.

(Good.)

It was useless. He could not get hold again.

(I understand.)

but it is good work he is doing. he is... yes... [answer to correct reading.]

I believe this week's work has been better than usual. The clear [read 'dear' and hand pointed till read correctly.] and confident air about the whole thing is quite agreeable to yours truly [not read.] truly.

(Yes.) [French.]

Hodgson is as happy as if he did it himself. He was always like that. He talked about my work as if he had done it all.

(Good.)

but he had to take back water when he arrived. I made him suffer for ['f' written and hand paused till I read 'suffer' and then it wrote 'or'] all his impertinence to me.

---

129. This is a correct account of Sir Oliver Lodge and the comparison of his position with that of the communicator. But it is not evidential, as most people know the facts.

It was characteristic to intimate the communication with the dead "no longer confounded" him, as it implies what was the fact when he was living; namely, that he could not make the possibility conceivable in terms of his materialistic physiology and unstable psychology.

There is no evidence of the data referred to here as intended for me. He may have had material in his possession which he would have worked up to the *fact* of communication.

(Good.)

If you had taken him by the muzzle [read 'nozzle'] muz... [word read.] and held him down as he did me you might have made [read 'had'] a ... made... a fairly good communicator out of him.

(We learned from his lessons.) [Note 130.]

Well William James is doing as he desires and I think no one will interfere with the work he is doing. They do not let him alone in London. They want him there. It is a fairly [fairly] good race [read 'rate'] we... race [read 'rule'] race... we are running, but the opposition is not opposition nor yet rivalry, but good natured effort.

(I understand.)

There is an evident desire ['evident' not read.] evident... to get to get the best work of the world now. A...

(How many lights have you there?)

3 there, which are sometimes used and now another, a private affair.

(Do you know who the lights are?)

Yes, but cannot tell now. Will some day. This a \* \* sort of goodbye. [Writing difficult.] Goodbye from all of us. Oh what about yesterday's message.

(That was good.)

We thought so. We want you to get some word from him later.

(Good.)

Your letter [read 'letter' and 'teller'] from your letter to Harry—No word yet.

(When I get home I may find it.)

We will be here next week.

(I come one day earlier than this week.)

Wednesday. (Yes.) All right. Same hour. (Yes.) All right. Love to all.

---

130. This is a very characteristic account of the work through Mrs. Piper and the badgering which G. P. got at the hands of Dr. Hodgson. I think it very probable, indeed pretty well assured, that Mrs. C. was not familiar enough with the facts to discuss it so well, tho I do not refuse to accord the passage subliminal coloring. She had not read the Report and these statements show accurate knowledge of the situation as a whole.

(Same to you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

Will you put me back, please?

[Head placed on cushion.]

Hello. What are you coughing for?

(A little irritation.)

Please don't get any more cold. You will build a fire, won't you.

[I here placed my hand on Mrs. C.'s to help hurry her out of the trance.]

Are you in a hurry.

(Not especially.)

I am going to see something some day about Dr. James. I see a little trunk, light yellow. It is a little cheap one for his affairs up stairs in an upper room. There is a lot of little things in it, papers, articles and various little things packed away of his. They are past things he put away as of little consequence for daily use, but they are connected with the past.

(Whose past?) [Note 131.]

Dr. James, do you know an Arthur in connection with him?  
(No.) Do you you know Prescott Hall? (Yes.) Did he know James?

(I don't know.)

Well he did. He knows the son. [Pause.] Who's Fannie?

(I am not sure. Place her better.)

Fannie Titus. [Pause.] [Note 132.]

Goodbye [Pause.] [Mrs. C. then looked up, opened her eyes, uttered French sounds, and then her head fell back on the cushion.] What's the matter? [Looked up again and rubbed her eyes.]

I don't know what's the matter with my eyes. Perhaps some

---

131. The incident about the trunk and its details is not recognizable.

But several boxes and trunks of such material were found in the attic much later, filled with earlier papers and work.

132. I find by inquiry that Professor James knew Prescott Hall and it is possible that Mrs. C. knew the fact, but Mr. Hall thinks it not possible that she would know Henry James, Jr. knew him. The name Fannie Titus has no meaning to either the James family or Mr. Hall. It has none to me

blind person came. [Then she recalled that she was thinking of General Jones when she went into the trance. He is blind.]

The writing by the James personality was slow as usual and the hand had to be moved from the right to the left hand side of the page whenever a line was finished.

I asked Mrs. C. if she knew Holmes' *The Last Leaf on the Tree*, and she said that she did know it and was fond of it. This takes it out of the rank of evidence in the sitting of the 28th.

Inquiry of members of the family results in their memories coinciding with mine about the rainbow incident this summer. It was an especially beautiful rainbow covering a large part of the sky, especially brilliant, and the interesting feature of it was the circumstance that the clouds and rain permitted the sun to shine on the falling drops in a manner to create a series of concentric rainbows. I never witnessed this before in my life, save once, if I remember rightly. The cloud and rain allowed the sunlight to penetrate far enough into the falling drops to create a number of fusing rainbows for some distance. It was in the mountains. Mrs. C. knew we were in the mountains. It might be guessed easily that we should see a rainbow, but the other circumstances do not coincide often enough to be so probable.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 2d, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Mrs. C. began in her normal state and gradually went into the subliminal state with amnesia. Just when she reached this latter I did not know, but her statement after the sitting, when speaking to her about the association of Spencer with Huxley and Darwin, showed that she did not know they had been mentioned and she had not recognized that the Herbert referred to Spencer, tho remembering that it had been given, and remarked that it was while she was normal.]

I see a man with a beard, not like Dr. Hodgson or Dr. James, but a long black beard. It is parted more like side whiskers.

They are long and more like pictures of Lord Dundreary. He is pulling them out. It is no one that I know. He seems so nervous and full of activity. He is over by the window. I get the name Herbert. Whether it is the last or first name I do not know.

(See if you can get more.)

I see his intense manner. He is constantly taking hold of his beard. He is not nervous but tense. He has a very high forehead. The hair is thin on top. There is some on top, but he is partially bald. [Pause.]

There are some little things in his hand. He puts his hand in his pocket and takes out metals. Whether they are money I am not sure, but they look like coin and he jingles them. The idea is symbolic, as if trying to impress me with weighing things. All the talk is of immortality, as if he had many arguments for and against it. He was materialistic. He turns around and behind his ear, at about where the hair comes down on the neck, there is a vivid red mark. While writing it was a habit of his to hold his hand back of his ear always and you could see the red spot always after his writing. I hear something that sounds like—it makes no sense to me—ethical immortality.

(I understand.)

All right. I get another name. It is Jennette. It seems to be connected with him. [Pause.] I guess I am going now. I seem to feel. . . .

[Head fell back on cushion.] [Pause.] Do you know [pause and sigh.]

it seems as if back of me there were Darwin, Huxley and Spencer, men of widely varying views. [Pause.] [Hand fell heavily on the pad. Pause and a sigh with some trembling.] [Note 133.]

---

133. Readers of the passage associating the names of Darwin, Spencer and Huxley would infer that the incidents were intended to apply to Herbert Spencer. Inquiry showed that none of them fitted him except the kind of beard mentioned and baldness. Remembering that Huxley, too, wore a Lord Dundreary beard I inquired about the other details and learned from his son that his whiskers were black. He regarded immortality as "possible in default of satisfactory proof to the contrary." But no one recalls that he spoke of "ethical immortality". If the name Jennette had been Henrietta it would

Hello, back again.

(Yes.)

[Pause and sigh.] Put me in. [Head put in rest.] [Pause.]  
How quiet it is.

(Yes.) [Very still outside and inside the house.] [Long pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

h... Herb... [?] [Pause. and then a few scrawls with another pause.] Good morning.

(Good morning.)

Hyslop. We [read 'the'] are as eager... No we... to get the evidential [pause.] expression of the men who opposed the spirit hypothesis as you are but the very opposition sometimes troubles them as witnesses for the living and vital truth. Now I am here for a little preparatory work.

(Yes.)

It is G. P. as you may have guessed.

(Yes, I did.)

and with all the ardor that has marked our previous work I come to you. It is all growing as fast as we can expect. If it grew more rapidly it might not be as well [not read.] well and now there is easy and yet steady expression from various people here who have lately become interested through the interest established in your world through your efforts. Spirits are often as dependent on people in the body as thei[r] people are dependent on them. It is all interwoven in a most beautiful fashion. William has been active and is making plans enough to keep him busy for a long time. He has been across since you were here, but did nothing except [not read.] to... except to look about a little. It is not as easy to express when unexpected. Just remember that.

(Yes.)

It is an important point and explains many instances where a partial expression has been given in an unexpected place. You have some more things to look up.

---

have been relevant. There was no spot behind his ear and he did not work in manner described. I was unable to ascertain any information respecting Mr. Darwin.

(Yes.)

and some [sheet changed.] and some of them will be . . . prove of use we believe. This is my preparatory work. You know how the race horse is run around [not read.] run around the track a few times to warm up and limber his muscles. that is what I am doing.

(Good.)

playing jockey for the warming up of the power.

(Yes.)

What a power of clairvoyance is coming to the light. We like to test it once in a while and so have a new face unfamiliar and yet interested and recognized by you as a possible candidate for the work.

(Yes.)

It is good to have several phases and we have the sanction of the band to do whatever we can to unfold or enlarge the work. You understand.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Why was the light so much troubled over the message from William. it is of no consequence to us. It should not disturb any one, for it is so [superposed on 'is'] foreign. It might be a tonsorial profes [pause.] essor but not our friend. (I understand.) Tell her to have no concern.

(All right.) [Note 134.]

All right. Thank you. Now what about Podmore. Have you read again his message.

(No, not time.)

It was rather more than usual and I believe he was helped by it.

(No doubt.)

Now R. H—— is here and so I release the hand for him. He has often been to see his friends in the body and tries [not read]

---

134. The development of normal clairvoyance with Mrs. C. has been recent, the clairvoyance occasionally occurred before.

Mrs. C. had expressed annoyance at certain alleged communications purporting to come from Professor James through a public medium and the annoyance was from an interest in the cause, not from any other feeling. She knows perfectly well what disrepute on the work has been caused with the public and resented it. I indicated my indifference to such things.

hard to recall incidents and facts to give you. Sometimes he can do so.

(I understand.)

[Pencil dropped and another inserted.]

[Change of Control.]

You expect me.

(Yes.)

Thank you. Sometimes when I see your family and dear friends gathered here before the work begins I feel as if they ought to have the first opportunity but they always insist on the work being done for the scientific people first.

(Thank them for that spirit.)

There is no selfishness evident in their action, only a love which looks far ahead and comprehends great issues. Your wife has a wonderful combination of poetic [read *poetic*, tho not at all feeling that this was correct, but doubtful.] poetic and scientific power, so finely attuned to the finest and most beautiful harmonious [read 'humorous'] harmonious and yet as mathematically scientific as if her whole interest were on these themes.

(Good.)

Your father always had the far seeing power of a statesman. It was a power that made him fearless and forgetful of present safety in his zeal for future good. (Yes.) That is like you. (Good.) Now about William. Have you heard from the family yet. [Note 135.]

(Yes and some things were verified and some seemed not to be pertinent.)

The pertinent may not always appear as you and I know but if there [read 'these'] th... [suddenly read, and hand erased.] is expression which leads to inquiry or discovery [not read] discovery it is all in our line.

---

135. What is said about my wife is not at all characteristic of her. She must have changed greatly to have poetic and scientific power, as she had neither of them while living. She had even little interest in poetry and none in science. My father, however, is correctly characterized, and Mrs. C. could not possibly have known it. He had remarkable far-seeing political insight, amounting to the statesman's prophecy, and was as fearless and unselfish as described.

(Yes, Harry did not know anything about the letters said to have been written for tests.)

I will not attempt to explain them. Let William speak for himself.

(All right.)

but this you and I know that the people to whom the power is given to look up the message often fail, not through any desire to do so, but through various [various] causes.

(Yes, I understand.)

It was always so in my work. I found it so hard to get the paper [proper] [read 'paper' and hand paused till I read correctly.] verification even from those who were most intensely interested.

(Yes you did and so do I.)

I sometimes doubted them but not often the spirits after I... ['after' read 'often' and hand pointed till read correctly.] I had learned my lesson. The spirits always or most always had some reason which was later revealed for any [read 'my'] an[y] suggestion which they made. [Note 136.]

(Now Hodgson, a story. You remember in your sittings for me once with Mrs. Piper that my father told an incident about an engine and cars going through a bridge, do you not?)

Yes.

---

136. This is a remarkably interesting passage and represents knowledge which it was impossible for Mrs. C. to ascertain, as it was not a matter of public knowledge. It was known to only a few friends of Dr. Hodgson, who intimately knew his beliefs, and I was one of them. One other confirms the statements here. Both he and I found that the ordinary sitters do not know how to interpret the facts in records of this kind and often deny the truth of what in fact is really true when rightly understood. In my conversation with Dr. Hodgson about my own records and some incidents which I had to say, from the testimony, were false. I have heard Dr. Hodgson say in effect: "Well, I'll wager that you will find that is true." This turned out to be correct in several incidents which I mentioned in my later Report (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, pp. 1-8), and one remarkable incident in one of Dr. Hodgson's sittings for me mentioned in my first Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 372 and *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 49n). Dr. Hodgson had learned to trust "the spirits" for real truthfulness, tho the relationship of incidents was wrong at times and the incident often distorted so that it required some reconstruction to discover its meaning. All this was not known to Mrs. C.

(Just the other day I found that was correct and was on a certain trip east, not a western one. So all things come out well. Tell father that.)

I will with joy, and it also bears out what I had just written.

(Yes, that is why I told it.) [Note 137.]

I understood and thank you. I hope William will be more fortunate and tell things more readily recognized. Myers once wrote several things which when reported seemed to have no value at home, but they were all right and he had no concern about them except as they did not bring you the \* \* [I signified I could not read it.] help in response. Myers is interested and will write here some day.

(Good.) [Note 138.]

What about the group picture of William's message.

(No one seemed to recall it or to know anything about it.)

I am willing to wager that will be discovered for W—— was so sure of it.

(All right.)

Do you want him to try now.

(When you say best.)

I say now. R. H. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[First pencil rejected. It had been used by Dr. James.]  
Good morning.

(Good morning, my dear friend.)

my friend. I sometimes feel a wave of sorrow as I approach you but it is only momentary for the joy and freedom of the life here is a wonderful stimulous [stimulus] to effort and work and work is my panacea for all sorrow.

(Yes, Arbeit, Arbeit, Arbeit.)

Yes, yes. we who have tasted the joy of constant work have the power of turning all pain to profit, all sorrow to service, all unrest to peace.

---

137. This is the incident to which the previous reference in the *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 49n was made.

138. This is a true incident in the earlier experiments with Mrs. C. It is consonant with the trend of incidents at this point and its probability will be determined by the sequel of this investigation.

(I understand.) [Note 139.]

I am not making complaint. I am seeking only the solution of the problem.

(I understand.)

I do not hesitate to give evidence. It will come I know it will.

(Yes, I am sure it will if I be patient.)

You are patient. Are you troubled that the message contained no more verifiable points.

(No, I found some good points in it and I mentioned the one not verified because I thought you might wish to say more in order to clear it up.)

Thank you, I understand.

(Good.)

I will do what I can [Sound like shsh.] [Pause.] [When writing began it was changed in style.]

Alice's brother the brother \* \* [apparently the letters are 'tom me'] tried to help and more [or attempt at 'mother'] [Note 140.]

[Hand had folded fingers under the palm and held the pencil so that it was extremely difficult to write. The last word was scrawly and tended to make the letters vertically on the paper. It was probably an attempt at 'mother', as an 'r' is made at the end, and I have supposed 'more' possible out of deference to certain resemblances to that. I noticed that Mrs. C.'s head was out of the rest and falling to the left and replaced it.]

What happened.

(The head of the light got out of the rest.)

I lost control of the hand.

(Yes, I saw that.)

It is better now.

(Yes.)

I am going [going] on better. Some of the plans I made for evidential purposes [pencil ran off page.] I had not completed

---

139. I referred to the German word "Arbeit" to see if it awakened any associations with Goethe's *Faust*, with which Professor James was familiar but it seems not to have had any response whatever.

140. Alice is the name of Mrs. James, but, as Mrs. C.'s note shows (p. 162) it is known to Mrs. C. and has no significance here.

so I am unable to use them as I expected but there are plenty of things which will serve me. Some people have an idea that I was busy all the time with [French or Indian gibberish.] psychic matters [gibberish again.] but that is not so. My interest was vital and [pause.] present but there were multitudinous matters demanding immediate attention always so many were in future [so read.] futuro [read 'future'.] futuro yes [answer to correct reading.]

(Good.)

a word I wished to use.

(I understand perfectly.)

I tel [tell] you this because the world generally believed I was seeking mediums and phenomena all the time.

(I understand.)

As a matter of fact I saw very few and seldom had interviews, but passed judgment on what others had received.

(Yes, correct.)

[Indian.] I liked no better recreation than to get out and sit and talk about these things, but you know the demands on a University [read 'elements' and 'unsteady'] man... demands on a ['University' suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] Hodgson used to come to me. [French.] I am to come again tomorrow.

(Good.) [Note 141.]

[Pause.] So goodbye now.

(Goodbye.)

O mega. W. J. I tried to write the O at another place. I will yet succeed.

(Yes, I believe it.)

[Pencil fell and after a pause I put the head back on the cushion and there was some gibberish uttered, which I could not get except the Indian grunt and the sounds 'Oh huh. Dia mo.']

---

141. This is all perfectly correct and probably not known by Mrs. C. He had far fewer experiments than the public had any idea of and he did form his opinions from the work of others very largely, and had better insight for this than the usual person who does not experiment. The reason assigned for it is the correct one, but might have been guessed or inferred from what had just been said. Hodgson did visit him as indicated and he got much of his information from him.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Oh Etta Etta.

(Etta who?) [Thinking of my sister Henrietta.]

[Pause. Clutching her throat and sighing.]

Hello. [Smiling.] Who's Marietta.

(I am not sure.)

Have you got any one near you like that.

(Not quite.) [Thinking of my sister still.]

Mary Ella. Do you know this Marietta. Is it Mariette.

She's . . . .

(What relation is she to me?)

I thought she was a cousin or like that.

(Go on with that.)

I see a little town and hear the trains all the time.

(Yes, I know who it is.) [Here recognized an aunt who might well be interested in her son who is closely connected with this work, but not in any way known by the public.] [Note 142.]

She seems so bright and so glad to come.

(What word has she to say?)

It is not scientific. She wants to get her own people. There is a lot of people connected with her. Is there any one like Jake or Jacob.

(I don't know.)

Right after that I get Fannie. Goodbye. It was not so good today.

(There were some very good things.) [Note 143.]

142. I had an Aunt by the name of Mary Ella, often called Mary Ellen, and in her early life she lived in a house right by the railway which the cars passed every hour or more. I used to visit it and watch the trains with a great deal of pleasure. The place was a small town or village.

143. Inquiry shows that there was no "Jake" or Jacob in the family or among the relatives. In another connection (p. 569) the letter J was given and associated with "Jacob", where the J pointed to the name of this Aunt's brother still living. The "Jake" and Jacob are guesses from the letter J most probably. The name Fannie has two possible interpretations. First it is the name of a cousin of this Aunt and secondly it may be an error for Finney, the name of her recently deceased brother-in-law by marriage. The basis for this possible conjecture is the close association of this name Fannie with the initials of this brother-in-law, also my Uncle (p. 661).

In connection with another relative I got the name "James or Jacob",

All right. [Pause.] Say do you know anything about the place Dr. James had, a place he called his shop up the country?

(I don't know.)

It is more like a place of which he would say 'I got to go to the shop', not shopping. [Pause.] I am going. Tomorrow?

(Yes.)

I thought I was gone for good, but I hear Bella. I think it's tomorrow morning they are going to show something across the water.

(Good.)

Have you heard from across there?

(No.)

Something will come across to you soon. Some day you are going over there.

(Am I?)

Yes.

Inquiry brought out that Mrs. C. does not remember seeing a picture of Herbert Spencer.

In the *Banner of Life* of Oct. 8th, 1910, is the message purporting to come from Prof. James. After the sitting Mrs. C. said that it had made her very indignant. She had given me the paper telling about it before the trance. She manifested her antagonism to it, but did not express any sense of indignation until after the sitting.

Writing very slow and hand had to be moved from right to left as usual, tho strength increased toward the end of the sitting.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 3d, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell back on cushion.] [Pause.] I see all sorts of the James coinciding with the right person to be named. He was the brother of the Aunt Cora purporting to communicate, and husband of my Aunt Ella. Cf. p. 566. Fannie is not recognizable in this or any other connection with the family and relatives, but if it be a mistake for "Finney", as it seemed to be in connection with the effort to get my Uncle Finney's name, it is intelligible here: for Ella was his sister-in-law. On the other hand, a cousin of this Aunt was named Fannie Torrence.

figures and letters, as in black velvet with bright gold binding around them. It looks like a cord. I see leaves, figures and letters. I wonder if they are going to show me something. [Pause.] There is one peculiar thing I have noticed ever since you have come this time. Whenever I go into the trance the back of my neck aches so. It seems as if I must scream. I never had it before. It soon passes away. Isn't that strange.

(Yes.) [Note 144.]

[Pause.] I can see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.] Please put me in. [Head placed in rest.] I am not fairly going in but I just . . .

[*Automatic Writing.*]

William James. Good morning.

(Good morning my greetings to you.)

and thank you for your patient effort in this matter. It is so important that personality is lost sight of in the endeavor. My chief effort is to [pause.] make identity plain and I agree with you that identity is proved by tone and spirit as definitely as by date and incident but to the scientific mind still unconvinced the proof is in exact and complete statement. A psychologist may believe many things that are perfectly undemonstrable at a given moment and unlike some other forms of expression he can make no test but must cite [read 'mistake' and hand paused, when I suddenly read 'must' and hesitated on 'cite' which was rewritten.] cite instances and relate experience with experience and make his chain [read 'share'] of evidence . . . chain . . . yes [to correct reading.] I understand all this and yet my desire remains unchanged by death to have exact data to ['data' not read at first and then suddenly perceived.] yes [to correct reading.] work from.

(Good, I understand.) [Note 145.]

---

144. The sequel showed that the presence and control of Professor James for a long time invariably produced this pain in the neck. The reader will notice that he purports to be the first communicator.

145. This is a very characteristic passage in its thought. It not only correctly states the case for the scientific man and psychologist, but it brings out the primary mode of Professor James' thought on this problem, namely, the collective and quantitative criterion of the evidence. He always looked at the problem as one which depended as much or more upon the

I could ask for no better condition or situation than you have arranged for me and I am not the least bit discouraged or impatient. I realize that it will take some time and practice to accomplish my purpose.

(I understand and shall give you all the time I can.)

If we can do what we propose you will have all you need to work with.

(Yes, I believe it.)

It is a sad thing to feel the sense of neglected duty and as I look over the past I am sure I might have been of more assistance to you.

(You were of great assistance and perhaps your mode of presenting the subject influenced a kind of mind that my method would not reach after I had been so positively convinced.)

How considerate of you my friend. I tell you truly it was a bad blow to me when I went over the records. Richard had a convincing [read 'consuming'] convincing manner and a form of enthusiasm which lent encouragement to the questioner. His sanguine temperament made us all believe that the mine was heavy with gold but he panned out so poorly that I feared for my investment. He is still unabashed by his profligate promises and tells me with much urbanity to make my case the record and let his shine in my reflected light. That does not make your financial burden any lighter.

(I understand and am sure that time will tell the story in our favor, whether the messages be all we desire or not. I, too, was sanguine, you know, and I suppose I had better not make any promises for myself.)

We understand each other I think.

(Yes, we do.) [Note 146.]

---

quantity of evidence than on its quality. He thought even that quantity might take the place of quality and stated it, so the idea is expressed in his Report and it would be only a question as to how far Mrs. C. had mastered the details of it to discredit this passage. She states that she read a part of it and while I doubt personally her familiarity with this fine point in his views I do not regard the fact as evidential by any means. It is only an interesting incident that is consistent with what we should expect and makes a part of the collective whole affecting his identity on any theory of the facts.

146. This again is an interesting passage and its truth can only be con-

but I feel better to have spoken freely.

(Yes, I understand.)

I know that the action of the English Society [French-Indian gibberish] was not all it should have been, but no group of people can confine the expression [hand became tense and writing heavier.] of the spirit. [Groans and movements of the body.] Some one has given me [movements and groans.] new energy from this side.

(Yes, I understand.)

Do you see the result.

(Yes, I do.) [The writing was more vigorous and the letters under better control.]

[Groans and movements.] Do not be disturbed

(No, I shall not.)

by the movement of the body. It has the effect of electric currents.

(Good.)

I am merely energized newly.

(I understand.)

It is wonderful. I see and hear better. [groans and movements.] It could not be done before without jarring [read 'passing' and hand paused till correctly read.] my poise. The work looks easier and you will be better. Your own physical body will be less drawn on.

(I understand.)

[Before the sitting I had remarked to Mrs. C. that I thought energy was drawn from me that affected my cold.]

It took time to do this.

(Yes.)

Time to get me into the right attitude. Now it will be clearer.

(Good.)

I frequently planned to leave some definite things for my expression, post mortem, but never with the definiteness that I planned did I write out my message but in three instances there

---

jectured from what we know of the facts. Dr. Hodgson is correctly described in his convincing manner, enthusiasm and sanguine temperament, and these were not directly known by Mrs. C. The imperfection of his communications was more a matter of common knowledge and we may suppose that this may have casually come to the knowledge of the psychic.

are matters [pause.] matters unknown and practically written with this situation in mind.

(Good.)

and it was those I referred to the other morning.

(Good, I understand.)

I shall not be able to pick them out out of the mass of evidence I might give and it would be amazing if I had left matters so that an immediate response [not read at first] could be given ... response ... to your questions.

(Yes, thank you.)

Am I writing too rapidly.

(No, the pencil is a little blunt. Shall I change it?)

If you like.

[New pencil inserted.]

You remember how the illegibility of the writing... ['remember' read 'determining' because there was some superposing. I had been sharpening the pencil.] remember ... at the Piper light annoyed me.

(Yes, perfectly.)

It was subject to so many interpretations. We could make many of the words what we pleased.

(I understand.)

Even the names were often a subject of discussion. (Yes.) and I did not like that appearance so I determined to make my [Gibberish sounds.] writing plain at least. I would rather stand up to a mistake than to the chance of illegibility making me right. You understand bu... this [but this] is old argument.

(Yes, I understand perfectly.) [Note 147.]

It is easier to recall our mutual interests and expressions than to recall other incidents.

(Yes, do you remember the reference to 'big buzzing blooming confusion'?)

Yes I do and that was about right. You will understand if on an impulse of recollection I interject some things now and again.

---

147 This incident about the illegibility of the writing in the Piper case, with the effect it had on our interpretation of messages, is a true one and certainly not known to Mrs. C.

(Yes.) [Note 148.]

We are practically alone today. By that I mean no one is here with an ardent desire to communicate or with curiosity animating them except myself. It leaves me with a clearer head. I never did my best thinking in the presence of any one. I was dependent on quiet and isolation. [Pause in choice of word 'isolation'.] You wonder at my hesitancy. I thought isolation somewhat rather far-fetched for a room apart for work only.

(I understand.) [Note 149.]

We have to measure every expression. It must seem like us you know.

(Yes, measuring thought is like physics.)

[Said to watch the reaction.] [Note 150.]

Yes indeed. I have had in my mind something to speak in regard to my personal affairs. They were in order of course but not in the order that one might wish for if leaving them forever. The last year I had much trouble with my eyes and my wife and I discussed it often. She thought I worked too closely. Perhaps so, but I was used to it.

(I understand.)

That is only a bit of evidence.

(I understand perfectly.) [Note 151.]

We used to have a caller at our summer home. One who

---

148. I meant by the allusion to "big buzzing blooming confusion", which was one of Professor James' expressions in his psychology that had awakened much amusement in his readers, to arouse associations. But it did not succeed, as the reader may notice.

149. Inquiry brought me the information that Professor James did require quiet for his best work. The circumstance was not likely to be known by the psychic. It might possibly be inferred from the character of the man as popularly supposed to be delicately poised.

150. It cannot be said that the expression often makes his personality clear, if it ever does. Hence I take this occasion to remark that the form of expression here, as in all the work of Mrs. C., is highly colored with her own personal habits of thought. Readers will observe that different communicators show different styles both of language and thought, but none of them wholly overcome the subliminal influence of Mrs. C.'s mind upon the result.

151. Inquiry shows that he had no recognizable trouble with his eyes and there was no remembered suggestion of the kind indicated with reference to them.

lived near and came often and talked over all affairs of state and nation in a lively and free way. A man of good and helpful influence and I have often thought I would refer to him. I wish also to speak of Charles a friend and of J—

(Yes.) [Note 152.]

My friends were scattered. One might think Cambridge held them all but aside from collegiate interests I had more in other places than there.

(Yes, I understand.)

Warm and devoted [read elevated.] devoted friends whom I admired and loved. Some of these I hope to speak of later.

(Good.)

They make [pencil ran off page and read 'must'] make beter [better] evidence perhaps than more distinctly Cambridge work would at this particular light.

(That is correct.)

You see I have my brain with me.

(Yes, perfectly.)

I will come again tomorrow and am promised the same power and isolation for the experiment.

(Good.)

I cannot stay longer.

(I understand. Thank you.)

I am very happy and hopeful. O. [Omega.]

(Good.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[After a pause I saw that no further writing would take place and I soon put the head back on the cushion.]

Oh dear. How bright it is. How bright it is. How bright it is.

(Yes.) [Dark grey day.]

---

152. Professor James had several friends by the name of Charles and nothing is here said to identify any of them. The person referred to in the J. is not recognizable or conjecturable, unless it be Dr. Janes mentioned above. Cf. p. 208.

The man meant by the reference to affairs of state is not identifiable by this passage alone, but the sequel shows that Carroll D. Wright is apparently meant, but if so this is not correct, as the two men did not know each other personally.

How swift we come. [Pause.] Carroll, Carroll, Carroll. Who's Carroll?

(I know.) [Thinking of Carroll D. Wright.]

If I could send my message to Carroll and tell him of my joy in my friendship and associations of the past and my desire to continue that relationship which was long and steady.

(What Carroll is this? I thought I knew.)

Carroll, Carroll. That's all. [Pause.] Oh I see. Eh! Did you ask about a Carroll alive? Do you know a Carroll alive?

(No.)

He is alive to me. It looks as if he had just gone over. Do you know?

(I don't know.)

Do you know whether he has been gone a short time or a long time?

(The one I thought of a short time.)

That's what I mean. You know William James and Carroll were close together. Carroll went first before James did, you know.

(Yes.)

He did not get back to James. James has gone to him all right. [Pause] I got to go.

(Yes.)

This is what Dr. James says. They had long been great friends. He had to tell him how he appreciated him. Sometimes things get twisted around. [Pause.] They worked together.

(What did he work on?)

Carroll?

(Yes.) [Note 153.]

---

153. The sequel showed that Carroll was for Carroll D. Wright, deceased president of Clark College. He did die a year or more before Professor James and inquiry of Mrs. C. showed that she knew little or nothing of the man, having little more than heard of him. He and Professor James were not acquainted, as the previous note indicates. Hence they did not work together.

It is possible that the error here is due to a confusion of Chauncey Wright with Carroll D. Wright. The former was a Harvard Professor whom Professor James knew and who died long before Professor James. It is possible that the medium's statement: "Sometimes things get twisted

Figures all the time. Dr. James was theoretical: one was on the earth and the other in the sky. Figures, figures, figures, mathematics whatever it is. His mathematics was his power. Besides this he looked at the good and welfare of the people. He could talk on the tariff if he were here. Do you know it?

(No.) [Note 154.]

Well he could. I don't know that he would. You got to take my hand. [Reached out right hand and I took it in my left.]

Do you feel better? (Yes.) I see two C's and two W's connected with Carroll. Do you know what I mean?

(Exactly.) [Note 155.]

It is funny. Are you happy?

(Perfectly.)

I know it.

The writing was slow and the hand had to be helped as before, but toward the end the control was better and tendencies to move the hand without help showed themselves.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 4th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Again Mrs. C. began seeing apparitions in her normal state and only gradually moved into the semi-trance. I did not attempt to mark when the clairvoyant trance began.]

I see a spirit on my left, a little small man. He is smaller than you are. He is dark and so active. Isn't that funny. I

---

around" is a tacit recognition of this error. An incident a little later confirms this view of the case.

154. Carroll D. Wright dealt much with statistics when he was in charge of a Washington office as Commissioner of Labor. He was familiar with tariff and economic problems. He was interested in the problems of the people. A later note shows how little Mrs. C. knew of the man (p. 338).

155. This reference to two C's and two W's in connection with Carroll is probably a distinct evidence of the confusion of the two Wrights. The names Chauncey Wright and Carroll Wright indicate this clearly. If this interpretation of the case be permissible it will explain the whole mistake regarding the relation between Professor James and the Wright said to have been acquainted with him.

wonder what he wants. It is a man, not a boy. I get a name with him. Eddie, the name sounds so boyish, but it is not a boy. It is a man. [Pause.] [Note 156.]

[Head fell back on cushion, followed by hacking cough and a sigh. It was probably the beginning of the trance.]

Hello [pause.] It is nice here today.

(Yes.) [Raining, wet and dark day.]

Do you know any one who has gone over to the spirit who played tennis and wore light flannel trousers, a belt and a negligee shirt, fair complexion, rather strong and handsome looking. Everything seems so buoyant and happy. Would it be Dr. Hodgson?

(I don't know.)

Do you know if he ever played tennis?

(I don't know.)

It does not look like him. The form suggests him: it is athletic and strong. I think it is not he. It seems more—this is my opinion—I think it is some one whom Dr. James.... [Pause.]

I got that old pain in my neck again. Isn't it funny?

(Yes.)

It seems as if I can't get my head anywhere comfortably. [Groans as if in pain and almost crying.]

Do you know any one that has a name like Barney?

(I don't know.) [Note 157.]

I get that in the same connection. I guess I can talk as well in.

[Head put in rest, and I rubbed her neck a bit. She appeared

156. The name Eddie recalls nothing pertinent to the James family, but I could fit it with a cousin, except for incompleteness of description and certain real or apparent discrepancies. Also a deceased neighbor.

157. The alleged tennis player is not recognized by any one, unless it applies to Dr. Hodgson as alleged: for he did play tennis and the manner of dress is accurate enough for him. But there is no assurance.

The name Barney has no recognizable meaning in this connection. Indeed it is not recognized in any connection by the James family. It may not be intended, however, for that connection. Only its association with his name in the record required inquiry and it may have been intended for some other connection and become confused with him, as he is at least one of the communicators at this point, on any theory of the facts.

to cry for a few moments and then the pain appeared to disappear.]

[Pause.] I want to tell something I see. Shall I?

(Yes.)

It is a loving cup. I suppose they are always silver. This one is. It is on a black stand, as if something special made for it. It is black and square, and either black marble or ebony. Do you know if Dr. James had one? I connect it with him. It is quite new as if he did not have it long. I hope to goodness it has not been in the papers. News is as bad as it is good. I suppose it would be better if I never read the papers. No one would believe it.

(No.)

What would you do about it?

(Keep on.) [Note 158.]

I had a lot of courage at first but I don't know everything. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Two pencils rejected, one the pencil used by Prof. James yesterday and one used by him three weeks ago.]

Ah but it is good to be at work and help on this wonderful mystery. We are intent on the W. J. work but there is so much of incidental work that the main issue is sometimes sidetracked for a little while.

(Yes, but those sidetracks often prove the best protection.)

Yes indeed and no one knows it better than Myers. He was a student of ability [read 'identity'] and he... ability... and he is taking great care at this point when you are not here as well as when you are.

(Good.)

The English people are very much in earnest [not read] ear-

---

158. Mr. Henry James, Jr., writes me: "I think it was his last class in philosophy which gave him a loving cup on an ebony stand. The stand was of the general type indicated. I believe that the incident was reported in the papers at the time."

An item of interest in the incident is the medium's own recognition of this possibility that it had been in the papers and hence there might thus be a subconscious memory of the fact which otherwise would have made it an excellent incident for evidence.

[Mrs. C. writes that she did not know anything about the gift.]

nest [not read.] earnest and we are all united as never before. I mean in the spirit sphere

(I understand.)

when we do most of our work. Sometimes it is possible for us to direct energy enough to make an influence at practically two places at once.

(Good.)

You may know the old phrase of roquet at the game of croquet. Do you.

(No, I know nothing about it.)

It is a method of hitting two balls and having them take different dif. . . directions while the ball which was the force still stays under the foot. You may see the comparison.

(Yes, I do.)

It is so simple to understand the law and yet so hard to carry it into effect.

(Yes.)

and more evident it is in these matters than in most other things for we are dealing with humans. It was a good point yesterday when James was a bit confused at the last over the relationship of his friend. By relationship I mean living or dead ['living' not read at once.] living.

(Yes, it was.)

It was a bit of the old recollection and a desire to tell you he had seen him. They are equally interested in these matters, but C. W. has not been identified in the same way and his personality may count mo. . . [read 'come' and hand pointed till read correctly.] more as evidence. You understand.

(Yes, perfectly.)

He and James had talked of these things many times before his passing. That you probably know.

(No, I did not know it.) [Note 159.]

---

159. The confusion about Carroll D. Wright continues. The spontaneous correction of the intimation the day before that Carroll was living is interesting, as I had not denied it, not yet being sure who it was. It was also as true as pertinent to say that Carroll D. Wright would be a better subject for evidence, as he was less known to the psychic and also to the general public in the way Professor James was known. He and Professor James had not talked on the subject.

It was a part of their friendship though not all by any means. You and H—— came into close relations with J through these matters and your friendship was built on that foundation.

(Correct.)

His was reversed. Common interests of Education and affairs brought them together and the psychic was the [pause.] element interspersed. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 160.]

I am trying to get over as much ground as possible. Everything moves so slow it gives me nervous prostration but perhaps my writing may unstring your ['unstring' not read.] unstring your nerves.

(No.)

A change is good anyway. James is as good as an angel but he took his turn [read 'time' and hand pointed till read correctly.] at being misunderstood just as the rest did and it had not the slightest effect on him. It was remarkable that he was so impervious to the opinions... A man as sensitive as he would naturally [read 'incidentally'.] more... naturally have been troubled yes [to correct reading of 'troubled'.] more or less by adverse criticism but he was not and when he really decided to take a stand he took it (Yes.) and did it so calmly [read 'cleanly'] that everybody ... calmly ... that every one wondered why it had not occurred to them before.

(Good.)

I can remember some of those things myself for I have been under his influence in the past. [read 'best' then 'west'] past. [hesitation at reading.] p... [suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] By this you will know me that I am G. P.—

(Yes, I knew it before.) [Note 161.]

---

160. This is a correct account of the way Hodgson, James and myself were brought together. But it is erroneous regarding James and Wright. Whether it may have applied to Chauncey Wright is not known, but it is possible they were associated in Harvard College.

161. This is a correct account of Professor James' course and involved an inner knowledge of his character and actions which Mrs. C. would not easily get from his published writings, especially if she never read any of his books and only a part of his Report. She would know nothing of the fact that G. P. knew some of these things, tho we may suppose it conjecturable.

The writing the writing [not read at first.] the writing must give me away. [not read.] away.

(Yes and thought too.)

It is well I prefer the thought. The writing is execrable [read 'terrible'.] ex... [suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] Now for J— You must realize that there are many here today to help. We do not let them all write for it would not do but they are interested and lend assistance by sympathetic suggestion and energy.

(Good.)

Yesterday we were much by ourselves to try the experiment of having no other influence about but today we have more. The spirits in the room bring their own memories and recollections and sometimes impress them on the [pause.] sensitive plate of expression as readily and yet unintentionally as one in the mortal form might do. Some of the seeming [read 'scenery' and hand pointed till read correctly.] mistakes or lapses in testimony of special experimenters is because of the added company together for added energy.

(Good.)

Do you understand that.

(Perfectly.)

It has never been told you before has it.

(No, but a remark by James implied it.)

Since his effort at communicating I suppose.

(Yes, he said a certain thing came through involuntarily.)

O yes Once.

(Yes.)

One thing remarkable about our power here is the way we are able to explain spirit hindrances and helps and conditions and all that sort of thing. We have never been able to speak as freely anywhere else about these things.

(No, that's correct.)

It is a specialization of that kind of power brought about by the guardianship of the one they call Madam who is pre-eminently a teacher.

---

The manner, however, in which it is interwoven with the other statements makes it more natural on the hypothesis of foreign transmission.

(I understand.) [Note 162.]

Some psychics are better unfolded for one [read 'our'] one expression and some for another and that is in passing. It is a splendid energy we have now and I think I will give the hand to J—

(I come again next Thursday, the 4th after the 1st.)

Next week Thursday. We will be ready. We would have known anyway for we have some one stationed by you all the time waking or sleeping and if there is a movement of importance we are notified and whenever you desire us especially we are notified of that as well also if you were in danger we would know.

(Good.)

It is thus that people are guarded and protected. Of course we have many duties and much work and we have this arrangement that we may be free to go on with that and yet ['and' not read.] to work and yet be in touch with you.

(Good.)

Thank you Hyslop for all your faithful services. It will tell in the annals of history.

(Thank you.)

and the truth will come more quickly to the sad world and be a light for humanity as you most desire. Your dear and faithful wife desired me to express to you her love and devotion in your work and service. This is quite enough for me.

(My love to her.)

G. P.—

[Change of Control.]

---

162. What is here said about the power to explain things through this psychic is true, and the whole passage has its interest apart from the question of its truth. I do not refer to it as more than a subliminal product, but as involving a comparison with Mrs. C.'s experience with other mediums—this being in fact very slight—that she could not make easily. Her primary difficulty as a medium is to give specific incidents as evidence, and what is said of Madam, her chief control, consists with what the trance personalities and Mrs. C. in her normal state have told me, namely, that her psychic development was made with a view to its being as near the normal consciousness as possible.

The reader should notice the reference again to sporadic messages which come from accident and give rise to mistake and confusion. Cf. p. 189.

[French sounds. Pencil dropped which had been inserted after G. P. left.] [Pause.]

Good morning again.

(Thank you. Greetings to you.)

It is becoming a habit and soon I shall write automatically without thought.

(Good.)

and have more freedom for my work. Do you recall coming to me once in the winter when snow was on the ground and we talked over these things and I gave you something to take away. (I recall the event very well.) At that time we talked of the clergyman's wife who had the power of writing automatically.

(Yes.)

Since then I have seen her or rather since I came into this life.

(Yes, good.)

and I have made an effort to write with some success but not for long at a time. She does better when you are present.

(Good.)

altho I find enough power to make some good expression when you are not there.

(Good.)

It is more spasmodic than here but that is largely a question of environment and companionship and desire. At that visit or [read 'he'] call... or... at my home you had to hurry away at last and some things were left for another time. I had been planning for a long time to see you. Indeed I was always planning for a time to talk more with you.

(Yes.) [Note 163.]

---

163. I take it that this allusion to the "clergyman's wife" is to Mrs. Smead. There is no proof of this. Professor James has purported to communicate there and Mrs. C. knew absolutely nothing of it. That he should say that he had seen her since he passed away is also a good point as involving or implying possibly some sort of previous knowledge of her. In fact he had corresponded with Mr. Smead. He never saw her while living. The description of her mediumship is perfectly accurate. Her work is automatic writing, a fact possibly known to Mrs. C. in a general way, tho she has seen nothing of her work. It is true that one of my two visits to the home of Professor James was a hurried one. The second one was hardly less so.

The incident of the visit to him and taking something away is true. In

I have a recollection of meeting you first with Richard. do you recall that.

(I do not at this moment, but may later.)

It was at some small gathering or small company and after it was over we met [not read] and ... met... talked. That was about your own work with Mrs. Piper. I do not recall whether that was my first introduction to you. But it was about that time.

(Yes, I think I recall something about it.)

It was not important enough then to make [pause.] lasting impressions.

(Yes, I think it was about the time of my talk at a certain house in Cambridge.)

I think so and I was impressed with your fervor and laughed with Richard about it afterwards.

(I expect you did.)

I said to him that you would have that high hope shattered after a while. [Note 164.]

---

the winter of 1906, after Dr. Hodgson's death and while having sittings with Mrs. Piper, I called on him when the snow was on the ground and he gave me some material to bring away and arranged to send more by express which was done. It was a French Journal.

164. I do not recall when I met Professor James or whether it was with Dr. Hodgson that I met him. But I addressed a little company of people in Cambridge at the house of Mrs. Ole Bull about 1899, as remarked above, and a larger audience at the Hollis Street Theater. Whether I met him at this time I do not know. I also addressed a meeting of the American Branch a little later when Dr. Hodgson was present and I think also Professor James was present on that occasion.

What is said about my fervor is accurate enough for what I know was the general impression about me then and long afterward, probably not at all known in this relation by Mrs. C. I have no doubt that Dr. Hodgson and he talked about me as here stated and expected my enthusiasm to be dampened as time went on. I know that Dr. Hodgson felt so and spoke of it to intimate friends, but this was not generally known. None of them really knew how long I had been forming my conclusions. They thought them the product of the Piper sittings, when the fact was that I felt myself cornered for objections as early as 1893 and took six more years to make up my mind. The Piper sittings did nothing but clear up certain questions about mistakes and confusions and gave me an excuse for speaking out. I have had no reason to repent and no reason to change my mind as

(Yes, I was converted long before Hodgson or you knew it.)

We had been through the stages of Emperor wonder and worship and still had the problem of Moses identity st... [erased.] unsol... [superposing.] unsolved You remember [remember] how we were harassed by the conflicting statements and contradictory [pause.] evidence.

(Yes, perfectly.)

It was enough to make us swear [read 'swim' questioningly.] but we... swear but we stuck to the task and hid our chagrin as best we could.

(Yes, I remember.)

This is like talking with you over again.

(Yes.)

We got our second wind and pushed on but I never fully recovered my confidence after that.

(I understand.) [Note 165.]

I am not too late to do much and hope to make records that help you.

(Thank you. You are doing well.)

---

feared here. All that is said, however, is perfectly characteristic of the two men and certainly not known to Mrs. C. in their connection.

But I was asked by Professor James somewhere between 1901 and 1905 to attend a meeting of a little company of his students in advanced work and to talk about my Piper experiments which I did. No one knows that fact but the few men present and it was a quiet little dinner and after dinner talk. I had completely forgotten it until this message came and in fact did not recall it until ten months later than the message.

165. This is perfectly true of the relation to the Emperor régime and the Stainton Moses communications. The fact was not a matter of public knowledge and Mrs. C. could not know it without direct inquiry or casual information of a very unusual kind. The whole thing here is too intimately related to the message about myself to be discredited without distinct evidence and of that we have none to make it certain that subliminal knowledge on the part of Mrs. C. could be so specific on matter largely the possession of the two minds concerned, Professor James and Dr. Hodgson.

[Inquiry of Mrs. C. brings the information that she had never read the "Spirit Teachings" of Stainton Moses, and hence she would have little or no knowledge of the Emperor group of personalities and their ideas. Mrs. C. told me that her "guides" told her not to read in this field, and she has generally followed that advice, departing from it only to glance at a few things in our *Journal* and *Proceedings*, where she happened to be interested in her own work and not otherwise knowing what she had done.]

I know when you stop to write and will wait if you wish.

(No, it will not be necessary with you. It might with George once in a while or Jennie P——)

I understand. I am a slow coach.

(All the better.)

Yes over this rocky road. (Yes.) I am feeling good and hopeful. Is it late.

(No, fifteen minutes yet.)

I recall an event of some moment directly after Richard's death. [French.] The funeral service was beautiful in its simplicity and as soon as I could afterwards I arranged to have a sitting at the Piper [Mrs. C. exclaimed: 'Oh dear'.] light. Do you know about this.

(I am not certain but I inferred it from your Report.)

Something was given me then and I felt sure I was to get much. I sent a wreath. [writing showed signs of difficulty.] I am losing ground now but I will come again.

(Yes, thank you.) [Note 166.]

Is this of any use.

(Yes it is.)

O. [Omega.] [Pencil fell.]

(Thank you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[French sounds at first followed by Indian for some time.]

Hello. Please put me back.

[I placed head on cushion.]

What is that I got? [Clutching the necktie of Prof. James and pressing it to her breast.]

(That's all right.)

It's mine, mine, mine. [Then threw it on the table.]

[Pause.] Hello.

(Hello.)

[Pause.] There is water running somewhere.

(I think so.)

Can't you hear it drop? (Yes.)

---

166. Professor James had a sitting or two with Mrs. Piper after the death of Dr. Hodgson and the Record was published in his Report, which Mrs. C. had seen.

[Pause.] A new man came yesterday. (Yes.) He is here today. He should not have died. Did you know that? (Yes.) He was right in the prime of life. It is horrible to go out so early. Do you know some great scientific men are bent on certain problems and lose hold on the physical unless kept. You are kept. An ordinary man would be dead, but you are kept. Your name is Moses, not Stainton, but the Moses to lead the people. I call you St. James. Mrs. Devereux calls you St. Thomas because you have to see the print of the finger nails. This is just a joke. [Note 167.]

Goodbye. Are you coming next week?

(Yes, next Thursday.)

You know I thought you would be here to work a little and I told Mabel to bring up a dish of soup to sustain you.

[I had arranged with Mrs. C. to do some work until train time, but as it was raining I had given it up.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 10th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell back on cushion, and then a hacking dry cough.] Eh hem. [pause.] Did I ever tell you about any one named Edith?

(No.) [Pause.] (Who is saying that?)

[Pause.] [No reply.]

Oh dear. [Pause.]

Dr. Hyslop, Hello.

---

167. My answers to the medium's statements were to draw her out into details. I do not know who was meant by the "new man". Mrs. C. in her joking moods with others calls me St. James and her friend here named speaks of me in the language mentioned. This is all subliminal, of course, and is explained only for the benefit of the reader.

I call the reader's attention to the phrase: "This is just a joke." Here it is nothing but a subliminal explanation of what was just said. In the automatic writing the phrase occurs in the personality of others, more especially Whirlwind, G. P., or Hodgson. This circumstance will show how subliminal habits may color genuine messages by interpositions of the kind. It is thrown in when it is feared my sense of humor might not discover the joke.

(Hello.)

Have you got a little brother in the spirit land?

(Yes.)

I see a little boy in dresses. He is very decidedly a boy. He has a little skirt on. Beside him is your mother, your own mother I mean.

(Yes.)

And I see her pat his head and smile and look toward you. All at once like a moving picture it changes quickly and he grows larger. I see him appear larger and at once he seems grown like a man, a big man. In the spirit he was such a helpful person to your father. It is the same boy and not another. They move back again now. They were right in your atmosphere. [Note 168.]

[Mrs. C. began to complain of pain in the neck and raised her head showing signs of apparent pain. There were some groans and I held the neck a moment and placed the head in the rest.]

Some one else comes.

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Where is the brown one.

(Brown what?)

pencil. [A yellowish brown pencil was already in the fingers. I replaced it with another darker brown and softer.]

(Do you mean that?)

Yes, that feels better in my hand. It is a trifle larger and

---

168. This is probably an allusion to my brother Charles, who figured rather prominently in my first Piper Report. He died very young, four and a half or five years of age, and would have been 46 years of age at this time. The manner of indicating this has much psychological interest, on the supposition of the genuineness of the message. The fact, however, cannot be treated as evidential, owing to previous publication and the fact that he was similarly described through Mrs. Chenoweth at my first sitting with her. (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 728.) She has never seen either Report, however, and the incident may pass for what it is worth.

The name Edith is not intelligible unless I interpret it as a reference to an intimate friend of my wife. The fact that family connections are apparent here in the general passage favors that view, but there is no other context or associated incident to enforce it and so we cannot feel assured that it is more than a wandering guess.

heavier. I never used to think of the weight of a pencil but it makes a difference under some conditions. We have varying [pause till correctly read.] sensations with varying conditions.

(I understand.)

and those things have to be taken into account. Sometimes in the early work at the Piper light I could not understand the [pause till read.] movements and changes and apparent desire for changes without power [read 'have'] to express... power... what the change ought to be and I learned much as one would learn the desires of a child before it can talk.

(Good.)

Now for a long time I have wished to say that many of the lessons I learned there have been of great use to me in communicating. I knew [read 'know' and hand paused till read correctly.] too much to be a good communicator at first. That is literally true.

(Good.)

I knew the complications and conditions and I could not forget them when I made my first efforts and the consciousness of them together with the consciousness of the desires of my friends hampered and hindered me. You know how that might occur.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 169.]

Now much of that condition is worn away and I am doing better everywhere. William was never as intimately [not read at first and hand paused till I read it questioningly.] yes [to correct reading.] associated with all the [pause.] forms and methods of expressions as I and he had not so many ideas and understandings to overcome. His one desire is to be slow and sure and let nothing come that is not of his own. No fugitive ideas to float in unawares [not read.] into the communications... unawares...

---

169. This account by Dr. Hodgson, as the sequel shows the communicator to be, is very pertinent and accurate, representing, however, an inner life which only a few of us knew personally and which Mrs. C. did not know. The view expressed that he knew too much to be a good communicator is directly the reverse of what the public thinks and also contrary to what Mrs. C. normally thinks, as I had occasion to learn in conversation with her. The reason for this hindrance to communications by one's knowledge of the subject is not apparent in the passage, but it is suggested by what follows. It will be made clear in the discussion of the problem and I merely note the fact here. Cf. pp. 51-61.

[not read.] un... [suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] This is not a new phase of thought to you and me. The fugitive expressions you understand.

(Yes, perfectly.)

but we are seeking to eliminate all that as far as we can at least, but it is almost impossible to completely inhibit oneself and thought and let nothing but the pure present expression come. Try [read 'they'] it y... Try it yourself in the ordinary conversations of life and see how the fugitive drops in and is constantly bringing misunderstandings of the idea you are trying to express to your most intimate friend. It is all the same Hyslop. It is expression of personality in either sphere, but personality so distorted and tempered by other personalities that no one is definitely apart [read 'part'] apart and alone. Verily no man liveth to himself. How true that is. We are a few degrees more s ... [pause till 'degrees' was read.] sensitive than you in the world of physical [physical] expression. that is all. I sometimes think the spirits who have nothing to lose or fear by the way of reputation or understanding give the clearest messages in an off hand manner (Good.) about the physical [physical] life they have lived [read 'hold'] lived [not read.] lived and the people who still live in physical surroundings.

This is just a word I have long [not read.] wished ... long... to give you and so I rushed [read 'wished'] rushed to the front with my message before the wires were crossed.

(Good.)

You do not need to have me write R. H. but I do so that there may be no question in the records.

(Good.) [Note 170.]

---

170. There is in this passage an explanation of the "fugitive expressions" and the difficulties which Dr. Hodgson had more than others. It is not clear, however, to the layman what this explanation is. I have discussed it above (p. 48-92). The explanation was made much clearer in a later communication by G. P. (p. 60). It turns upon the entire difference of method of communicating compared with our normal methods. We inhibit a part of our thoughts appearing in the margin of consciousness and our hearers get only that part of them which we intend them to get, tho we sometimes mar the unity of our conversation by irrelevant associations. The spirit communicator does not seem to have this power of inhibition and

Your word might not be sufficient.

(No, especially with those who perform bad experiments, as one did with the other light.)

Yes I know I know. Have I told you how happy we are. It is a happiness that only comes when one is in the work which appeals [read 'appears', and hand paused till read correctly.] to the best and strongest instincts of the soul. Yes [to correct reading of 'instincts'] The companionships and sweet human [human] loves are steps which help the soul upward, but the perfect peace and pure happiness comes only when the soul serves [read 'seems'] serves [pencil changed.] in the work that satisfies and endures. We could not be content [read 'evident'] in ... content ... in the theological heaven. Work and not psalm singing is more in our line.

(Why did you discuss that after my allusion to those bad experiments?)

Because so many of those experiments referred to conditions entirely out of harmony with any of us.

(Good.)

There were reasons for the expressions. They were so far fetched. Do you know what I mean.

(No, not exactly.)

You do not know that the reasons were Inharmony my boy (Inharmony with what?)

inharmony with the conditions about the light and the experimenter and all the mind or mental attitude. Have I made it plain.

(Yes, so far.)

There is more. I know so much but I am not sure just what you wish me to recall. There is nothing of any moment except the whole bad management of the affair from beginning to end.

the organism or mind through which he communicates is as likely to get the marginal thoughts as the central ones.

It is significant that the word "inhibit" is used by the communicator, Dr. Hodgson, for I happen to know from conversation and discussions with him that it was technically the word he constantly used for just this psychological situation, and Mrs. C. probably never heard the word in its scientific usage, if in any other.

The expression "distorted and tempered by other personalities" is an important one as reflecting the unconscious influence of assisting communi-

(I understand.) [Note 171.]

How can any one speak freely and definitely if there is a muzzle on his mouth. There was another thing about those experiments. Sometimes we are unable to get a direct [direct] message and some one assumes the responsibility of speaking for us and neither the language [not read.] *lingua*... [suddenly read] or thought is ours, but the one presuming to speak for us. You understand that all right.

(Yes.)

Perhaps you have sometime had a telegram delivered [not read.] delivered [d] to you from some man like William but the capitals were all misplaced, the language was illiterate and obscure but one thought was conveyed to you —I—come—William.

(Good.)

You understand my specimen copy.

(Yes.)

It is rather hard to make it all plain to you but I think we are getting [getting] on famously, growing I mean... ['growing' not read.] growing [not read.] I mean ... growing ...

Shall I go now or is there something I have neglected to say which you asked about.

(No, it is all right.)

[It was not clear in answer to my questions, but I knew that pressing the matter meant confusion and suggestion on my part and so I remained content with what I got.]

I want to give [superposed and not read at first.] I ... [suddenly read.] give some one else a chance.

Oh by the way. did you not send the word to Kate. I have been there and thought she seemed a little more cheered and I

---

cators and throws light on the interfusions of Rector's and other personalities in the Piper case with which Dr. Hodgson was familiar enough.

171. There is nothing definite enough about this explanation of the failure of President Hall to make it evidential, but if we could publicly state the facts it would be clearer. Possibly the personal matters, alleged to be irrelevant and omitted from the published records, might throw light upon this. We do not know. But there was certainly lack of "harmony" and an indelicate management of the trance that might have been avoided, if the sitters really expected to get anything. Mrs. C. knew no more about the affair at this time than at the first mention of it.

felt she had heard but I did not see the letter. Sh[e] was writing. Sometimes I can almost write definitely through her own hand.

(Good, I sent the word and she recognized its pertinence.)

It was right then. I did get the right feeling from her as she wrote. She is so sensitive and yet as [erased] so independent and high strung a wonderfully contradictory sort of personality. but true as the hills that rise around her home. You can tell her this if you care to.

(Good, I will.)

She has often helped me since I came over here as well as many many times before.

(Yes.)

I send her the kindest greetings and tell her that courage is the most beautiful crown with which to adorn [not read] adorn her troubled head

(Good.)

R. H. [Pencil fell.] [Note 172.]

#### [Change of Control.]

[Pause.] Entre. [pause and pencil dropped. New pencil inserted.] I said that and told him to come but he hesitated and so I am here. You can just wait a luttile [little] til [till] I say a word. I am your long lost and straying friend but I return to you once [not read.] more.

(The writing tells who it is, but please make that word clear) once... Yes you know me don't you, but I am only here to

172. The lady here mentioned writes me regarding the passage concerning her as follows:—

"Thanks for message through Mrs. Chenoweth. Of course it is not specially evidential. I don't know what Mrs. C. knows about my *hills*. R. H. knew, for he had been here with me and greatly admired the country. and I am very glad to say that, tho it is a flattering opinion of me, yet I am sure it was—and is—R. H.'s opinion. I had something of such an opinion—after his death—from Dr. Newbold. R. H. had expressed his entire confidence and *trust* in me to him."

Inquiry of Mrs. C. showed that she had no knowledge of the hills about the home of this lady, and she would know less about Dr. Hodgson's opinion of her.

help your famous friend. He thinks I am in an awful rush but he gets left and I got in. It is like your rapid transit. some get left to wait while some move on to glory [not read] and ... glory... and New York one and the same thing.

(Good.)

Conservative Cambridge Co... [starting to repeat 'conservative' when I read it.] can not rush except perhaps G. P— He is more in m... class [not read.] my class. He can rush about and get somewhere.

Oh this is all nonsense but it helps to make good conditions and that is enough for me.

(Good.)

Really Dr. James [not read.] Dr. James is doing well but such a fuss [read 'first'] fuss. fuss and feathers. don't you know such a fuss is made about his message.

(Yes.)

You would think there had never been one given by anybody before. Shall I hold his necktie or let it fall to the floor. The honor [not read.] is ... honor is almost overwhelming but I think I can survive since I have survived death. Do you think we are all dead and buried and waiting [not read.] for... waiting for Gabriel over here. Well I guess not. No trump [not read.] et. [written some distance from first syllable and not read.] trumpet [read 'banquet'] trumpet sounded [not read.] for me... sounded. just opened my eyes and there I was without even an alarm [not read.] clock... alarm clock. It was all as quiet as a Sabbath morning and I was glad to be alive and conscious and that is the way with most of us. Some are rushed into print without time to get a decent [not read.] robe to appear... decent ... in. It is awful but what can one do.

You will have a nice time of it when you decide to ascend. yes ascend. Don't you expect to go up or do you think the lower region is better adapted to you.

(Why, you said it was hot and I thought I might go down.)

All the fires are not below. There is a sun as well as a hot center to the earth. You can take your choice. I would fly sunward if I were you. It is lighter airier [not read.] airier [airier] and much more agreeable.

(All right. You will be there to help me.)

Help [superposing.] Help you. Well indeed I will be in the crowd that gives salute when your ship sails into port [read 'part'.] port yes [to correct reading.]

Without any foolishness you may be glad to take my hand \* \* [let?] some of. . . let . . . the heavier burdens of these weighty fellows rest for a while.

Now what about the dear W. J— He is not much troubled over what he has already said. He says his record is not very bad so far but the definite movements of his family he has not begun to mark [read 'word' and then 'make'.] mark yet but soon will. Are you pleased wh [with] what he has done so far.

(Yes, I am.)

There are many friends to whom he would send greeting. He does not forget forget [repeated because incorrectly read from changing sheet.] them, and is much interested to give them the satisfactory proof in a complete way and let the individual [not read.] individual and personal element wait til [not read.] till he can give the explicit expression to each.

What a sentence that was for me. W. J— has been to another place. They have tried for him at som[e] other sittings when you were not present. I mean in another town.

(Yes, identify it if you can.)

and he has made effort to give some sign or something of that sort to them to be sent to you. [Note 173.]

England is interested Yes [to correct reading of 'interested'.] in him and some effort is being made there and you may be able to get the cross reference over the sea which will help matters greatly.

(Yes.)

There is [both words superposed.] another woman there. I do not refer to the Hodgson light but another. She has already had a message, a slight one from W. J—

(Good.)

173. I have had several alleged communications from Professor James sent to me, but nothing that would justify either a belief in their genuineness or a coincidence with this. One from a western city had some probabilities. I was directly mentioned by name by the communicator alleged to be Professor James, with some traces of characteristic ideas and not previously known by the psychic.

It is the V— one I think, for she was quite shocked and felt the world lost a great man and one night he—r [not read owing to mode of writing.] her guides, she has guides you know they invited [read 'wanted'] him W. J— ... invited ... to visit her which he did and made an effort to communicate. This was about 7 days ago.

(Good.)

She is very careful and accurate and desired to get more and will get more and when you hear from her there will be two messages. I mean the two attempts. She is in many ways the best adapted. I mean better adapted than the Hodgson light for W. J—

(Why is that?)

a clear [superposed and not read.] and ... a clear and reasoning mind which makes what comes logical and plain. He can use the Hodgson light too but of that we or rather I will write later.

(Good.) [174.]

His son is getting anxious to know more. He is a good boy. at first [not read.] he was so busy ... first ... busy and concerned that this was of secondary importance but soon he will wake up to the significance of what has been done and said already. I must fly. I am losing my hold. [Last two sentences written with increasing difficulty.] Jennie P— [written after a pause and with much effort.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Is it over?

(I guess so.)

[Pause.] Who were the people?

(Friends.)

Put me back. [Head put on cushion.]

Do you know if Dr. James had a boat?

---

174. Inquiry results in the fact that Mrs. Verrall has, to date, had but one impression and no automatic writing purporting to have its source from Professor James. Cf. pp. 105n and 126n It was a dream.

The description of Mrs. Verrall's mind is correct and Mrs. C. knows absolutely nothing about her except that she has done psychic work in connection with the English Society.

(No, I don't know.)

It is a small boat. I see a little boat. It looks like a motor boat and it seems as tho it did not belong to him. It was not at Cambridge, but at his summer place, you know. There is a lot of things he tries to show me, but I don't see them very clearly yet. You put this down.

(Yes.) [Note 175.]

I see a roll like a diploma. It would all be in French except his name and it is something very recently come into his life. It has never been hung up, but is still in the roll as if sent to him. He takes it out of a pasteboard case and holds it up. I can see it. It is an honorable thing. It pleased him very much. He saw it only a little before he went away. Is that very good?

(Yes.) [Note 176.]

Then there is something else. I wonder if ... [pause.] Do you know of another man with him—it is nothing that I know—a man with him much taller than he and old. There is an A that connects with him, associated with him. I think he has a brother in the spirit. Did I tell you?

(I think so.) [Note 177.]

Well, I get that. I feel as if I would scream with him [pause.] [Showed signs of pain in neck and I placed hand on it. Soon relieved.] Oh it is funny. [Soon opened her eyes and spoke broken French and Indian.]

A few minutes after she recovered normal consciousness she described a man as visible about me, superposed on me as it were. She said his beard was curly and silky and short and dark. I asked what about his forehead, and she replied

---

175. Inquiry brings the statement that Professor James had a small rowing boat, not a motor boat, and it was at Chocorua, his summer place, not at Cambridge. Mrs. C. could not know this without direct inquiry.

176. Of the incident regarding the diploma the son says: "He received an honorary degree from the University of Geneva in 1909 after July. It was in French and is still in the roll." It is apparent that Mrs. C. would not possibly know anything of this unless we supposed the possibility of knowing that the degree had been given.

177. Professor James lost two brothers, one less than a year before his own death, the fact not being known to Mrs. C. in either case. The letter A does not point to either one of them.

that it was as high as mine, his eyes clear and wore spectacles. He did not seem to use them all the time, but reached for them as if needed in reading. He was not a large man but a little larger than I am.

The description is of my father, especially the beard. He may have been a little larger than I am, but I think not.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 11th, 1910. 10 A. M.  
[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell on cushion and long sigh.] [Pause.] Who are these people?

(We shall find out.)

[Pause.] Oh! [Pause.] I think it is the Society for Psychological Research in the spirit land. It is just as if a door opened and I looked in and saw all these people assembled and talking about all sorts of experiments sitting around a table. I saw Dr. Hodgson and Prof. James step out and close the door and when it was closed there was a sense of being alone. The noise ceased and the light died away and they moved on toward us. Already there were some people waiting. It is so real. Oh but I feel so funny. [Slight groans for some time ending with repeated Oh's in low tones.] Oh, Oh. C'est moi. [Indian sounds and shook her shoulders with a grunt.] [Groans ceased.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[First pencil rejected and another given.] [Indian sounds.] Do not fear I am here and know what is being done. I am G. P. as you may know but I feel as if I had not my right pencil. Is it one used by some one else.

(At some time.)

Yesterday.

(I don't remember.)

It is so strange and

(Try this.) [Handing another pencil.]

Better that is rather a strange incident in my career. I am not particularly sensitive about the pencil but that one felt like a stick of cord wood in my hand so unwieldy [not read.] unwieldy [read 'inevitably'] unwieldy yes [to correct reading.]

you know how a strange penstock sometimes feels. It was like that. I am only making conditions right for W. J.

(Good.)

He is about as enthusiastic as you could wish and I am glad it is so for it will help matters. There is no room for half heartedness in this work. It is all or nothing. Have you had anything like a zigzag writing from some other source that might resemble a series of inferior Zs.

(Not that I recall.)

W. J. has been in some communication at some place lately where that was his desire. Not a desire to write them poorly and they came out rather poorly. Be... ['poorly' not read.] imperfectly... Be on the lookout for Zs.

(All right. Nothing has yet been reported to me on that.)

You know the significance of the letter without suggestion from me.

(No, I do not.)

Omega.

(Yes, that I do.) [Note 177a.]

It is suggestive is it not all right. Beginning and end [some difficulty in reading 'beginning']. (Yes.) Yes [to correct reading of 'beginning']. There may be variations of the same sign

(Good.)

but it is all the better so, as we are now telling you of the possibility. There have also been some things attempted at other

---

177a. On December 5th (1910) I received the records of a lady who has done considerable automatic writing more or less under my direction and general supervision and on the date of October 10th previous, which as the reader will see was a month before this sitting, the writing shows some zigzag lines associated with a peculiar form of the cross. There is no assurance that they coincide with the statements made through Mrs. C., and only time will tell. They occurred at the end of the sitting and are signed with the name Rector. Professor James had purported to communicate at earlier dates, but on this one while reference was made to him he was said not to be present. In the record of Mrs. C. it is not said that he was sponsor for the sign, but this is more or less implied.

It should be noted that "Z" is the last letter of the English alphabet as Omega is of the Greek, and the lady who gave the zigzag lines does not know Greek.

lights to have repeated here or wherever you may go. The message of course was meant for you without regard to the particular instrument you were using. It is not like a message sent out without definite end [difficulty in reading.] yes [to correct reading.] but it is like the wireless only one pitched to that vibration may catch some part of the message.

(Good.)

Many many people are constantly receiving messages but to them they have no meaning and are never of use but have simply been caught because the Key was right. You understand.

(Yes.)

The effort we make is to get only such messages as are definitely attuned to a few instruments.

(Good.)

You see the pertinence of that. it is not so common and cannot be met with.

(Yes.)

Oh I have felt and thought just such things many times. Now here is W. J. all ready for work. (Good.) G. P. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning my friend.

(Good morning.)

and good cheer to you

(The same to you.)

I hear your voice and feel the earnestness of your spirit and am impressed with your devotion and am pleased. I have to grow accustomed to the use of the pencil.

(I understand.)

The conditions are not all misunderstood by me but the actual contact and expression is the hard part of the task.

(I understand.)

I have a recollection of saying many time [times] to my friends I shall know more about this probably when I make the attempt to communicate but it is strangely unintelligible now why the matters talked about are of so little interest and the most important and expected messages are not forthcoming.

(Isn't it difficult to hold attention to the machine and at the same time recall voluntarily the past?)

It is a part of the problem but I fancy one might grow so accustomed to the use of the machine that the difficulty would disappear. I could never use a typewriter to do my work and I remember speaking to Harry about typewriting at one time and he said many good writers, good machine writers I mean, could not compose [read 'compare' and hand paused a moment until read correctly.] and write at the same time.

(Good.)

It is something like that I presume.

(Yes, exactly and that is about the same as what I meant.)

Yes but it gave me opportunity for reference. Henry my brother Harry my son and I each had much typewriting done for our several kinds of work and we each had different methods. My manuscri. . . [pencil ran off paper, but I read the word as if completed.] manuscripts were carefully prepared for the one who should copy. Harry often dictates [not read.]

(Rewrite please.)

dictates to the one at the machine direct not always (Good.) and Henry does both ways sometimes prepared sometimes dictates to a stenographer who afterwards writes it on the machine. I am explicit because I want no loop holes and I hope I have made it plain.

(Yes, perfectly so.) [Note 178.]

I have sat at table at home so many times since I came here. That is one of the hardest places my wife has to pass. The settled and definite tone of being alone is ever present there. If she might know my near and close proximity she would be at peace.

(Yes we are all so much influenced by our senses that we find it hard to appreciate the invisible.)

It is true true. I am wondering if you knew of my simple tastes at table in my daily home life.

(No, I do not, but I shall be glad to have details.)

---

178. Inquiry results in the following facts. Henry James, Jr., very rarely dictates directly onto the typewriter. His uncle Henry thus dictates directly as a rule. Professor James sometimes dictated letters to a stenographer, but not his manuscripts. These facts would not be known to Mrs. C. According to her note her knowledge of him was too small. p. 162.

Bread and mlk [milk] and berries often made the meal at night in the summer and the vegetable kingdom furnished a large part of my food always. I was fond of apples and some kinds of fish. These may seem remarkable things to return from heaven to talk of but you will appreciate their value.

(Yes, perfectly.)

I can see the headlines in the newspapers now if this were given out but if I had said I had broken bread with the Saviour or Saint Paul there would have been many who [read 'ahs'] would . . . who would have believed

(Yes, correct.)

it the part of the life of a man of my reputation in my new sphere.

(Good.) [Note 179.]

How stupid and insane the world always appears enmasse [not read] enmasse (Good.) to the thinking and studious brain.

(Yes.)

They have no popular notion to verify. Only the stern mistress of Truth do we serve. .

I have made a record of several things of which I wished [read 'talked'.] wished to speak to you.

(Good, I shall be glad to hear.)

One was of a ring worn long and of little value except sentiment.

(Good.)

I think it was put away with me. Another thing was of my watch. I trust Harry completely with the whole business. (Good.) He knows my will. It was all inclusive [read 'conclusive'] in. . . [suddenly read.] and for his [pause.] care and direct disposition as he knew I would [French.] have it. The

---

179. Of the statements about his food, the son writes: "For some years before his death my father was a small eater and ate little meat. He was fond of apples and of course had his preferences in fish."

It was characteristic to refer as the communicator did to the triviality of the facts, as he fully appreciated the position which the average man took on that matter and disregarded it himself. This was most probably not known by Mrs. C.

[Mrs. C.'s statement about her knowledge of Professor James tends to confirm this judgment and but for her seeing his Report, tho examined in a sort of casual way, this would be assured.]

stone must be a simple memorial and the books go to the ones designated long ago. (Good.) [Hand appeared to show tendency to lose control, but soon recovered it.] [Note 180.]

It is best for me to change the tone of communicating just now. [I put necktie in left hand.]

The interest is so great on this side. You remember Wright and my long friendship and admiration for him.

(Which Wright?)

C.

(Good.)

It is one of the rewards of old age to have old friendships and to find on the arrival of death the old friends waiting. He...

(Yes, there were two Wrights with the initial C. Which one of them is meant?)

was younger than I. a brave and strong thinker as yet unconvinced of our [pause.] philosophy till death touched his eyes and gave him sight.

(What kind of work did he do the latter part of his life.)

[I thought of his connection with Clark University.]

[Pause.] You must refer to his interest in economics.

(That's good.)

It was an all absorbing topic and led [read 'held'] him directly ... led... to co-operative and industrial [pause.] problems. Do you know to what I refer.

(Yes, perfectly.)

and Washington (Good.) als [also] had to listen and it seemed a pity that he could not have stayed to complete his last reports. Reports enough there were but always more and I felt not only a personal loss but a national one.

(Yes, I agree.)

He is a strong and ardent advocate of exact statements and like a true nobleman abhors a lie. Had he stayed he would have been of service to you. Now he sends greetings and assurance of help. [Note 181.]

---

180. My information is that he never had a ring. The incident is thus wholly false.

The son named here is the administrator of the will and estate.

181. The account here fits Carroll D. Wright completely, but the usual mistake about his relation to Professor James continues, unless

(Thank you and give him my greetings and I shall be glad to have his help and to meet him when I come over there.)

Yes yes I go now. your friend. (Thank you.) O. W. J.  
[Pencil fell.] [Indian sounds for some time.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Carnegie has got to die. Do you know it. What is the matter with him?

(I don't know.)

He is a spunky little Scotchman. Have you ever talked with him?

(No.)

If he had been approached rightly he could do something.

(Yes.)

He is so obsessed with certain notions.

Oh dear! Oh dear! Such a dreadful neck he puts on me. What do you suppose it is for? [Feeling her neck and twisting her face as if in pain.]

(He does not intend it.)

No, of course not. I would stand it ten thousand times. Do you know Dr. Eliot?

(No.)

Do you like him?

(I know nothing about him.)

I like him. Oh dear. I got to go. They are going to make a great effort to-morrow morning. Was it good to-day?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] This is better, the table.

(Yes.)

Do you feel better?

(Yes.)

Why don't you make me shut up so I won't make you write so much.

---

A new table was brought in to make my work more com-  
we suppose it applies to the newly made acquaintance after death, and that we cannot assume here. Mr. Wright was a student of economics, spent a part of his life in Washington as Commissioner of Labor, and had not completed some of his work at his death. He had been interested in psychic research from his early days, but only in a personal and private way.

fortable. The writing of Prof. James was slow as usual and I had to move the hand as on previous occasions.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 12, 1910. 10 A. M.  
[*Subliminal.*]

Do you know anyone named Jackson, a woman. [Mrs. C. looked at her left.] It sounded like Mrs. Jackson.

(Where from?)

I don't hear her speak again. I can see her. She is a bit taller than I but not so stout. Rather young perhaps 35. She is very bright. I think her name begins with E. I can't get hold of it. It is like Bessie. The name as written is E. It might be Elizabeth. A man is with her that has gone out but a little while. They are moving away. I don't feel her any more. But I think the man was her father. He is older than she. [Pause.]

I am awake and just see something.

(Can you get it?) [Note 182.]

There are . . . . strange looking people of another country and strange garments. I seem to be in another country, more like Florence or Rome, a city where there are so many Italians. I . . . but among them is a man dressed like an American, fine looking. He turns around and looks at me with piercing eyes. He is looking straight at me as if like a hypnotic look. I don't know how to describe it. I can hear what he says. Put my head in the rest and see what comes. [Head placed in rest.]

Now I am going asleep. [Pause.] [Note 183.]

---

182. A gentleman by the name of Jackson had a sitting some years ago in New York with Mrs. C. and, tho she never knew his name before or after that event, I assumed that, as no other significance of the names Elizabeth and Jackson could be found, they might relate to him, but inquiry showed that they did not.

183. The reference to Italiaus and Florence would be explicable by supposing it an unconscious message from Mr. Myers, as he "came in", to use the phrase of the séance room, somewhat like the allusion to "Clark University", which was said to have surprised Professor James at an earlier sitting (p. 189). The reason for this supposition is that he becomes the control in a moment. It is spontaneously indicated a few moments later.

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I [made in manner of Mr. Myers] have come at last.

(Yes.) [Note 184.]

and I am eager to give you my greeting in personal fashion.

(Thank you; my greetings to you.)

for in the preceding sittings I had only given my word in an impersonal way still you know I am and always shall be interested and a worker in this philosophy. I am not too much engaged [read 'lugged' questioningly] engaged or engrossed in the affairs of the spirit country to be active and a part of the work with you.

(Thank you.)

I knew [read 'know'] you could [read 'would' and hand paused till read correctly.] ... knew you could rest in confidence on my last appearance and I wanted James to have a free field and no competitors for honors,

Push the small table further toward the window. [So done.] That is better. thank you. I have an idea like yours that the normal movement is easier for the communicator.

It is strange that some of the associations of the past cling to our spirits like old garments and are seen by the onlooker even when we are unconscious of the presence. I was not thinking of Italy but the past associations hung about me I suppose and that was what the light saw.

(Good.)

I am more pleased than I can tell that the regular experiments are going on. You ought to be so supported that there would be no question of the possibility but we understand and take what opportunities we can and work along as we can. There are a few of the faithful left but young blood is constantly maturing and maturity [read 'maturely'] maturity brings interest in spiritual things in many instances, so we hope the future will

---

184. In the sittings held some years ago, Mr. Myers, supposing it to have been he, adopted a certain method of making the capital letter I as a distinctive evidence of his presence in the work of Mrs. C., as a sign, so to speak, somewhat like Omega for Professor James, tho this was to be at the end of the communication, while the Myers sign was to be a constant usage in the writing. Another personality adopted a certain method of making a final "t" for the same purpose. We shall come to this later.

find you reinforced and strengthened both financially [read 'materially'] and ... finan... [suddenly read.] and physically. It is the work of a machine which you do now and it is not right for you are still the most valuable asset we have outside the direct [direct] avenue of communication. There is only about so much we can do but that much we do with [?] all our hearts.

I will not stay for J [read 'I' and hand paused until read correctly.] is to come but I wished you to know of my ever increasing and constantly ab ... ['constantly' not read at once.] abiding [not read.] ab... [suddenly read.] interest

(Thank you.)

in your personality and in the work which you so faithfully perform. Your friend M yers.

(Thank you. Yes, I knew it.)

I wished you to remember the sign I [made like reversed L.]

(Yes, I did.)

and the M [made with four separate strokes.] and you did.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell.] [Note 185.]

[Change of Control.]

Increasing is the loveliness of him whose spirit is attuned to the harmonies of spiritual life. Sweet and fair is the path where his feet must walk and the song triumphant is music to his soul far beyond in its wonderful clearness the hiss of the angry crowd who know not God and who kill the servant who proclaims his message of infinite wisdom and love. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

W. J. again. I come and will make effort to tell you of the

---

185. There was nothing evidential in the communication and it may be said that Mr. Myers never succeeded in earlier attempts to prove his identity satisfactorily. He has not tried it in this series. The reader will note the allusion to his sign and the mode of making the capital I and also capital M, which was always made as described, and for the purpose of a sign.

If the explanation which Dr. Hodgson gave of "fugitive ideas floating in unawares" (p. 254) and which G. P. also gave more clearly (p. 682) be true, this occurrence of incidents coming involuntarily, as intimated by Mr. Myers, will be easily intelligible. Cf. pp. 51-61.

past. My own friends have wondered if I knew the change was coming and I wish to tell them yes and no. There were moments at the last, not the final hour, but the last of the efforts when a sort of premonition of the event came to me. I had put [pause.] those fancies away a [read so] as a sick man's shadow but...

(Let me change pencil.) [I did so, thinking that the use of it by the previous communicator might act as a hindrance.]

I could not get hold again.

(What were the special signs that gave the premonition?)

a bad [read 'fact' and 'back' and hand paused till read correctly.] heart action which gave a fluttering sensation. I heard my wife say over and over again You will be better to-morrow William. She had a hope and so had all that the rest and quiet and air would bring strength to me.

(Good.) [Indian sounds.]

[Pause.] I have been making notes of things to recall here and it is possible that some will be dropped in without especial relevance but with the statement that it is to be so. You may understand.

(Yes, I shall.) [Note 186.]

It may look like a French exercise bok [book] but it is to be done with malice aforethought.

(All right; all the malice prepense you like.)

so it will be absolved from the charge of dreams [read 'treasons'] dre... [suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] dream talk our old theme, a theory we more than once discussed and discarded [read 'discussed' and hand paused till correctly read.] and discussed again.

(Yes we did.)

You remember.

(Perfectly. What about 'nigger talk'?)

---

186. All that is known and that is relevant to this alleged premonition of death is that Professor James knew he was seriously ill. The reference to a bad heart action fits his case, but the weakness of his heart was publicly known, and besides, this is a natural association with death in any case and that idea is dominant here. It is almost certain, the son writes me, that Mrs. James often used the expression attributed to her here, tho we cannot treat the incident as evidential, and so my informant also regarded it as non-evidential.

That seemed [read 'concerned'.] seemed dream talk at first but proved as good as anything.

(Yes....)

R. H. said it was pertinent and clear to the right man.

(Good.)

R. H. is at my elbow and G. P. at my back.

(That's good.) [Note 187.]

and all in all I feel rather like the man at the ball in a football game. The interest is different but the push and pull of mental energy is about the same. [Note 188.]

(More like Varieties of Religious Experience.)

Yes, why do you refer to that. Is it because religion was once a topic of our conversation.

(Yes, I wanted to ask whose experiences, four of them told in one chapter of that book; in the chapter of Unseen Reality. A well-known man gave you four of them. Who was it?)

Let me recall. I knew you were leading up to some point.

(Yes.)

and I could not catch the drift. But I know that R. H. told me of his own religious convictions after long investigations with the Emperor Group.

(Good.) [Note 189.]

---

187. The allusion to "dream talk" again is characteristic and so also was the recognition of the reference I made to "nigger talk". But this incident, as it occurred through Mrs. Piper, had been published in the Report which Mrs. C. had seen. Whether she saw this incident cannot be determined now with assurance, unless affirmatively, and we have to assume it, if she had forgotten it, in our estimation of the case as evidence. But the mode of connecting Dr. Hodgson with it would be quite natural on the hypothesis that it was not wholly subconscious memory on the part of Mrs. C.

188. I have no evidence that the use of the phrase "push and pull" has any coincidental meaning, but it is a peculiar expression and recalls that phrase in the Piper case remarked for special reasons at the time. Cf. *Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 340, and *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, pp. 231 and 330.

189. My question was not relevantly answered. If he had said Dr. Hodgson told him the incidents, instead of talking about the religious character of the Emperor communications and its relation to Dr. Hodgson he would have given the answer I wanted.

But the reference to the influence of the Emperor communications on

No one could sit through a series of those sittings and fail to be impressed with the religious import and ardor. Am I writing anything you wish.

(Yes. One question more definite. You remember the chapter on 'Unseen Reality'?)

Oh yes.

(Good. One well-known man mentioned four instances of the consciousness of presence in the room. You did not say who it was in that book. Can you recall who told you the four instances of that consciousness of presence in the room?)

You do not refer to S do you. The 'S' was probably intended for 'L', but I read it 'S'.]

(Who is S?)

a friend of the work. I fear that is not a question I can fully answer. You yourself told me some things like the above when we talked of it. [Note 190.]

(Well, it may be that S told some, but another person known to both of us told four of those experiences.)

It [pause, and read 'W'.] It [pause.] useless now.

(All right. Go on with what you wish.)

It will be better so and the other will come. Is it L, to whom you refer.

(No, not L. Who is L?)

Lodge was the man I had in mind. He served as a reference in one or two instances.

(Good.)

I have never known him to doubt or flinch. He is sure [Complaining groans and Indian.] and hepful [helpful.] [Note 191.]

---

Dr. Hodgson is correct in its implications, as they had profoundly affected the life and thought of Dr. Hodgson. The fact, however, was implied in a statement by Professor James in his Report and may have caught the eye of Mrs. C. in her fugitive glance at the Report. Besides it was stated in my biographical sketch of Dr. Hodgson in the *Journal* (Vol. I, p. 8), but this was not seen by Mrs. C. It was pertinent to mention Dr. Hodgson for he furnished four incidents.

190. I do not recall telling him any incident of the kind and very much doubt my doing so. I would deny it positively but I know that my memory might be mistaken on this point. But I do distinctly remember giving him some reference to Boëthius and others for the writing of that book.

191. Sir Oliver Lodge writes me that he did not personally give Pro-

I have been at work on the records of other work looking at them from here and find the need of definiteness as great there as any I ever felt. I have a lar... [pencil ran off paper] large black covered book with many loose leaves and clippings and written facts unsorted but all bearing on the subject which I think might be of use to you.

(Good.) [Note 192.]

It is among my ["c'est moi" uttered.] papers and books ['Soo' uttered.] and will be found later and you can have it. (Thank you.) There was not much to give in that connection for I had given you the last reports the verbatim reports a short while before. You probably recall.

(What reports do you refer to?)

Hodgson.

(I thought so.)

I see now that I might have left a small endowment at least but I had not planned definitely for death or life either in that particular regard.

(I did not expect that. You had helped otherwise and you did make a slight gift to the endowment.)

That is a small sum you refer to the first 100 [erased.] [pause.] subscription.

(Good, that's right.) [Note 193.]

I always intended to do more sometime [Mrs. C. coughed and almost choked, but the writing continued with difficulty until coughing and choking ceased.] but you know I wished to see

---

fessor James any incidents or material for the "*Varieties of Religious Experience*", but remarks that he may have taken material from his published incidents and discussions on the subject of psychic matters. There is no way of verifying or disproving this with assurance.

192. No such book has yet been found in the remains of Professor James. The incident might be another version of the one given in connection with Carroll D. Wright and due to subliminal intrusion.

193. He had paid his first subscription to the endowment fund of the Society. This could not be known to Mrs. C. I alone knew the fact. But its value is affected by my own statement just before.

The only point is the use of the word "first" which was correct and perhaps the erasure of the 100 was a spontaneous admission that it was incorrect which it was. The sum was \$10.

what the rest would do. It looks cowardly now but that is between us.

(I understand.)

I was your friend but sometimes doubted if you could do what you proposed.

(Yes, I. . . .)

and with customary collegiate cautiousness [hand paused till I read.] went too slowly.

(Yes, I was a wild ass you know.)

I fear I felt that way too much but give me credit for not hindering if I did not help.

(Yes.)

Wild and Woolly West had to convert conservative East.

(I understand.) [Note 194.]

Now my mind is clearer. I have not written as well as I wished because confession hung on my pencil and now it is over.

(Yes, you have done well.)

I shall be free to work next week.

(Yes.)

You forgive my hesitancy [hesitancy] and accept my post mortem confession

(There was nothing bad to forgive.)

and service and we go on brave [not read.] and . . . brave . . . sure for the ultimate triumph of Truth. W. J. O. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian gibberish for a few moments.] [First pencil given rejected.]

---

194. This whole passage with reference to myself is perfectly characteristic of Professor James' mental position toward my effort to organize and carry on the work. He had seen the long and almost futile struggle of Dr. Hodgson to get means and sympathy and he knew the American public as few men knew it. My methods were regarded by many people as "wild and woolly" and I was perfectly conscious of being regarded the wild ass that I here indicated. No wonder he alludes to the "customary collegiate cautiousness" in this connection, as it described him, without implying any cowardice on his part, for there was none of it in his nature. I do not believe that Mrs. C. knew enough of either of us to make the fabrication of this passage possible and she certainly did not know of the relation between us to make the language so characteristic and relevant.

My but that was a good bit of work Hyslop and I am glad I had to be helped myself. the light was so dead [read 'clear'.] dead the body the hand like clag [read 'daily'.] clay [read 'clog'.] clay. It is getting better now and I think the work will go on fine later. This has been a good week for us. We do not know just how much we got through to you this week but we all feel good.

(So do I.)

much and more than you expect. We give you of our regard and love. R. H.

(Thank you. The same to you.) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian gibberish and held her neck and groaned as if in pain. I placed my hand on it and found it tense and stiff. It relaxed in a few moments. Then came a smile.]

How pretty it is. What's Richard M—— doing here. [Full name given.]

(I don't know. Let him give you a message.)

Yes. [Pause.] Tell Bess [pause.] I am growing stronger and stronger and am helping her more and more. She is not to be troubled. I know the change. . . I am with her and long to talk with her face to face, and thank you for all the light you brought into her life and mine. [Note 195.]

[Mrs. C. raised her head and sighed, then smiled.]

Hello.

(Hello.)

What did Miss Allen do with lady Violet to keep her away?

(I don't know.)

She came herself you know. (No.) Yes you do. (Oh yes.)

[Then followed a lot of subliminal talk about Miss Allen which has no importance here and was not taken down as it was neither evidential nor important. Miss Allen had been the stenographer at the sittings in New York and was well known to Mrs. C.]

---

195. Mrs. M. had had sittings with Mrs. C. long before, so that the name "Richard M——" is not evidential here. Mr. M. did not call her Bess, but a friend does so call her.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 17th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[While talking in normal state both of us heard what seemed to be raps possibly like sounds on window glass. We thought it the door, not latched, but we found all the doors tight. The wind was rather strong and so it may have been some shaking or blow on the window.]

[Long pause.] [Cough.] [Pause.] I keep hearing two names. Nellie and Siris. They seem to belong to the same situation.

(Can you give more in mind?)

I don't know as they belong together. Nellie is modern and Siris is an old person. It may be only my mind. I only hear the names. I do not see the people. It may be association entirely. I see Nellie. I suppose she is here. She has dark hair, parted directly in the middle, a little bit of a curl in front. Her hair is cut a little in front and curled a little, like a curl bang I guess. That is parted too with the rest of the hair. Her face is long. She has blue eyes, dark lashes, clear skin, slender and is sitting at a table and working over something. The table is a long bare one and seems as if it might be in a sort of laboratory. It is a room devoted to a particular purpose. I see different specimens of things. She puts her hand out and touches them and writes in a book with loose leaves. She is making notes. It seems to be a business. I don't know whether it is her business or study. It looks as if it were \* \* [note illegible.] I am not clear about it. It is strange she does not seem to be conscious of me. It is like photographing. She gets up. She has a big apron on, with two pockets in it. She shows me herself at work and the work is something she must protect her dress from. I don't hear any noise. Over the table is a long row of windows.

I see a man conscious of me. He looks toward me the first moment not me as a person but as an instrument for you. Do you understand.

(Yes.)

and he he.... Do you care for my going on and telling you about this?...

(Yes.)

This man is over 50 years old. He is stooped shouldered a little, not very tall. He walks with his shoulders rounded a little, I think it is from work. He was strong and well, and stooped and was not from this part of the country. It was some other place away off. I think you know the man. He seems to be in some school or college. At any rate he knows about you. The desire on his part is to get a message through when he can. He may wait for an opportune time.

(Yes.)

Henry, that's his name. [Pause.] That is all I get with it. I see Dr. Hodgson touch him and say. That will do for now, as if he would get more later. Do these things ever come out all right?

(Yes.) [Note 196.]

I won't fret then, will I?

(No.)

[Pause.] [Indian.] [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Hand fumbled the pencil as if not liking it and I took it and rubbed it a few moments when it was accepted.]

I am not an old visitor but I hope I may not be an intruder at this hour.

(Certainly not. You are welcome.)

Thank you. Your voice is clear and resonant and I hear you distinctly.

(Thank you.)

It surprises me some for a moment ago I heard nothing and now I am apparently in a world of sense. It is strange to return to such conditions. The air feels [feels] damp and cold to me but I presume I am wrong about that.

(It is clear and cold with us.)

Is the room in which you sit [sit] a cold one.

---

196. None of the names, Nellie, Siris and Henry, and none of the incidents have any meaning to me, but inquiry showed that "Nellie" is the name of Pres. Harper's daughter, and Henry may be a confusion for "Rainey" which was a part of his name.

It has not been possible to ascertain anything about the incidents here associated with the name Nellie.

(No, out of doors it is cold, but in the room it is warm.)

Thank you. I wondered about the atmosphere for I am so chilly but I have no sensation of nerves. Is the [so read.] at [for 'that'] not a possible solution of my feeling.

(Probably.)

It seems like a cold and inanimate thing which I use for an expression.

(What do you use for an expression?)

I took hold of the pencil as if it were alive but there seems to be a cold handle to it. That I know is a human hand by the shape but in no other way.

(Good.)

My thought comes clearly but apparently independent of the accompanying head. [Read 'hand' at first and hand paused till correctly read.] I do not know how much I am borrowing of life elements here but I know I am thinking and as you read I know I have written what I desired to write. This is a new and unfamiliar power to me but I am following closely Hodgson's directions and the pencil [not read.] moves . . . pencil seems to move of itself. You are perhaps wondering who I am [Pause.] and why I come.

(Yes, I am.)

when there are so many who desire to write and who fail more often than they succeed. You know that some people have a special amplitude [so read and so written, but hand paused till read "aptitude" when the word was not rewritten.] for certain expressions.

(Yes.)

just as musical genius or language finds expression through some fingers or tongues [read 'belongs'] more . . . or tongues more readily and perhaps I may have an unusual adaptation for this or I may be helped more than I know. I am glad anyway [not read.] anyway to be here. Hodgson says I am prodigal with your paper and that your means are limited.

(I can stand the paper.)

All well then if I go on a little longer. It is fascinating in the extreme. But there again Hodgson reminds me that the fascination may cease when I find myself pumped [read 'pimped'] for . . . pumped for facts concerning my past career.

(Good.)

I will let the future take care of itself. I am having a glorious time exercising my power now and will do the work later.

(Good.)

It is good to find [not read at first and hand paused till read.] a machine running so smoothly yes [to correct reading of 'smoothly' for which there was a pause.] I find it slipping along without special thought on my part. So now I want to tell you that my name is W. H. H— of Chicago University.

(I would be glad to have your full name.)

Do you know who that was. Chicago University.

(I got only the initials.)

Yes but that...

(Wait a moment.) [Superposing.]

What did I do. What did I do when you said Wait a moment.

(You superposed.)

What do you mean. I wrote one line.

(You wrote over other words.)

How can I omit the error. I cannot see the paper.

(I must watch carefully and direct the arm.) [Note 197.]

---

197. Allusion at an earlier sitting, several years ago, was made to President Harper through Mrs. C. She probably knew of his death at the time. The name is therefore not new now.

The interesting incidents are the references to the way in which he communicates, his ignorance of the writing, his manner of knowing the delivery of the message, and the perplexity at the superposing. The psychological interest of this must be apparent to all, and it will be more so when I say that this is the first communicator that has ever referred to the matter in this manner, and it duplicates what was well known to Dr. Hodgson when working with Mrs. Piper. Mrs. C. knew nothing about it, and it would not be more natural to put these ideas into the mouth of a stranger than others. The striking feature of it is that the observations occur in a speaker who was, when living, a stranger to the work and who was communicating directly for the first time, with the natural curiosity of one who had not been familiar with such facts.

But one of the most interesting psychological incidents is the interplay that goes on with Dr. Hodgson. The handwriting had been large and the lines wide, and it is curious to find the confession that the communicator says a little later when accused of superposing that he could not see the paper and yet Dr. Hodgson is made to be aware of his prodigal use of it, implying a knowledge of it on Dr. Hodgson's part. This is quite consistent

Thank you. Too bad Rockefeller would not endow your work. He has his limitations though. I mean he limits [limits] his gifts in the expression. But there is a way to get around those things as we college men know too well. Many times a gift for specific purposes finds its way to other channels of usefulness. I had no time to spend on problems outside my own work at least I felt so at the time my life and energy was spent in getting into working order, the University of my special care you understand

(Perfectly.)

about that I think.

(Yes, perhaps you might be able to work on Mr. Rockefeller's mind and get his attention to the needs of this work.)

That is a clear case of mind reading on your part for that is why I am here this morning.

(Thank you.)

The Society for Psychical Research over here begged me to come and see for myself and then if I were satisfied with the results to use my magnificent power of persuasion of [so read.] on [superposed on 'of' erasing it.] him of many millions, my past friend and benefactor R—. You see how schemes are worked up on this side of life with the same sly and cat like [read 'call-like'] ... cat... manner which marks the professional beggar.

(Good.)

be the begging for new dormitories or medical equipment.

(I understand.)

It seemed hard to me to have to de [die] just as I had completed some good plans and got things waking ['working': so read after a pause.] as I wished, at least working toward the end I planned. Some of us de [die] some are retired with wih... [erased, as I had been slow in reading.] money from Carnegie fund some have masses of wealth \* \* [probably intended for 'found' but not clearly legible for this and read questioningly as 'provided'.] o... [or] placed at their disposal by booming [?] and admiring friends and yet continue to lecture and some enter

---

with the situation and theory that, when communicating, you know less of the physical conditions affecting the phenomena than when not communicating. Cf. Professor James' remark in which he noticed that he could see more clearly when not communicating than when he was communicating (p. 188).

politics. You see we have varied careers opened up to us. If I can help you I know you will understand my desire to do so if your work is important. I see no reason why it is not but I am eager to see how far you have gone. It is so easy and smooth now that it all looks simple. It would be of no use whatever for me to attempt the family message now.

(I understand.)

There are some people who have hard work to comprehend how a spirit can grow a new set of interests after death. They are more easily convinced by a message which confirms their opinions of the past interests and the very fact of an expression about an unknown and uncared [read 'unrevealed'] uncared for project or plan or work would stamp the message as spurious. You understand. To such people the influence is a personal one that is I mean to get hold of them personally and let them have the experience alone and then the conviction comes. You may not be aware but I am that many men who are and were interested in these subjects [read 'regards'] subjects have wives [not read.] who believe ... wives who believe nothing and who will accept no message.

(I understand.)

Myers has hard work to give his wife any definite proof. She seems courteous but unreceptive and surely no man ever made the truth more plain and acceptable, so I am told.

(Correct.)

I am moving along like an adept but my work is to be on this side largely but Hodgson wanted me to tell you of my new plan to help if it is worth while.

(I think it is worth while, because the proof of survival after death carries in its wake a new civilization.)

I do not doubt you or your sincerity and I know of the life here and its added possibilities. My difficulty is to understand how you can hammer a truth so delicate and subtle [read 'simple' and hand paused till read correctly] into the hard heads of money makers whose God is Wall St.

(I understand. But it makes no difference whether I can do it in my time or not. My duty is to begin the work and others may finish it.)

Yes yes, I understand how we all work for posterity if we

work at all and you may be assured that I will keep at the nut [read 'need'] until... nut until I find the meat and I have not much doubt of my cooperation [read 'operation' after a pause and while the writing went on.] with your friends ... cooperation here.

Yes your spirit friends. William James ought [read 'wright'] ought to be able to give the right kind [read 'hand'] of... kind of evidence. I leave much to him and I trust him as we all do you know.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] I am your friend. Harper.

(Thank you. [Note 198.]

[Pencil fell and Indian gibberish began.]

[Change of Control.]

[Two pencils rejected and when I handed Whirlwind's to the control it was held a moment and rejected and I gave another which was examined a little and then the writing began, with signs of her style.]

So so you have been having an interview with another [not read at first.] ano... [suddenly read, and then 'ano' erased.] old friend in working days. You of course did not know him as

---

198. The whole communication purporting to come from President Harper is characteristic of him, references and all, but it is not possible to make it evidential. He and his calling and his associations were too well known and Mrs. C. too intelligent a woman to urge the ignorance necessary to make the passage important.

What is said about Mrs. Myers here is perfectly true. I knew it from statements made to me by Dr. Hodgson before his death and Mrs. C. could not possibly have known the fact. It is curious, however, to see the statement put into the mouth of President Harper who was at least not at all familiar with either the general subject or this incident in particular and probably not even interested in it during life. As Dr. Hodgson is apparently helping we may have one of those intrusions which I have previously discussed. Cf. pp. 189, 247, 270. The reader will notice that Dr. Hodgson follows in control.

[Mrs. C.'s statement that she merely knew that there was such a person tends to strengthen the impression which the characteristic statements of the communicator might make. She would have to know much more to reflect so intimately the ideas conveyed and so characteristic.]

well then as now. I have seen him before one [probably for 'once'] in N. Y.

(Yes.)

He appeared for an instant or two at an afternoon sitting. Do you remember [remember]

(Yes, I do.)

All this good work this morning and we are glad. I am so excited. [Looks like 'vited' but read doubtfully as 'evident'.] excited I can hardly write. For I see so many results that may come from such interviews. Your Whirlwind friend J. P. helped me to assume control and I am here R. H.

(Good.)

You do not know how it pleases us to have [?] an especially good exp... [superposing and hand pulled down.] experiment like that one.

(I enjoyed it and much, I hope, may come of it.)

Later a little later. [not read at first.] later.

Rockefeller does not want [not read] to be ... want... behind on the plans that make for progress and he is getting [getting] old enough now to think of heaven and you may be able to work up an interest, you or your friends. Carnegie was a prig about it but he too has given it some serious [read 'seems' and hand paused till read correctly.] thought since his last approach. [Note 199.]

If James can only make good we will have a foundation. Everybody [not read.] Everybody believes at times in spirit return but it is the return of a philosophical [philosophical] spirit like J— which they all want. They have had enough of babble [read 'trouble'] babble. They want [Read 'sound'] good sense. w... want yes [to correct reading.] not to blame either. But after they get some good sense they must recognize limitations.

[Pencil thrown down and Indian gibberish.]

199. Nothing is known to confirm this statement about Mr. Carnegie and it certainly cannot be inferred from what is known about his attitude toward the subject.

Mr. Carnegie had been approached three times on this subject and dismissed it with contempt. Mrs. C. could not possibly have known the facts in the matter.

[Change of Control.]

I will come to you for a few minutes to bring about a better and more placid condition ['cond' at end of line read 'and'] condition. A great amount of nervous energy had to be supplied from somewhere that the experimenter might go on

(I understand.)

without loss of time or energy on his part.

(Good.)

He was so ill and weak when he left the body it was feared he would bring uncertain conditions so every one contributed toward his success including [not read at first.] in... [suddenly read.] you and the rest of the friends as well as the psychic.

(I understand.)

but it was right for this time. But it forbids [pause.] your friend J. this morning. He will come tomorrow. (Good, I understand.) I have not been here at this series but you will know by my sign that ...

(I saw it the first time it was made and recognized you.)

[Note 200.]

I wondered if you would recall. You know not how many of your former friends and co-laborers are with you now but it is a joy to come. We believe this work will surpass the former work and nothing will be left undone on our side of life. George Pelham and Stainton Moses and some more of the English friends Edmund Gurney and the like are here this morning as well as your more intimate friends of whom your spirit is conscious.

(Good, thank you.) [Pelham's real name written.]

I go now but my heart is full of joy and hope for all you have done and will do. Thine Teacher.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell and Indian gibberish followed for a short time. Then the fist was clinched and shaken twice, as if trying to affect the hand or arm, not at any one.]

[*Subliminal II.*]

[Head placed back on cushion.] Is it over?

(Yes.)

---

200. The sign with this personality was a curve at the end of a final "t", and it was he to whom I referred in an earlier note (p. 271).

It didn't last long, did it?

(Not any longer than usual.)

Who is Helen, do you know?

(I am not sure.)

Helen, Helen.

(Find out about her.)

I? (Yes.) [Pause.] She is Helen H.

(The rest of it.)

I don't know. It is some name like that. I can't hear. May I tell you some other time?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] It is funny I never told you about Charles.

(No.) [I thought of the Charles mentioned by W. James.]

It is some one connected with you in spirit.

(Yes.)

I mean your own friends and family. Do you know him?

(Yes.)

I call him Charles. I never heard it that way before. I feel a comfortable and good influence impressing you and he wants to help you. Goodbye. [Note 201.]

(Goodbye.)

[Pause.]

[*Subliminal I.*]

Hello, say do you know Mr. Grant had a man from New York for a sitting. He came to the door and came afterwards. The man never believed in this. He thought Mr. Grant daffy. But he had a good sitting. Among other things his Aunt Lucy told him about the seed cakes she used to give him. When Mr. Grant came and called for Starlight the man sat with his hands on his face. Mr. Grant laughed at him. He said How can you laugh at that Walter? He would not talk but wanted to walk. He could not laugh he was so overwhelmed. It was most remarkable. You never know. Are you glad?

(Yes.) [Men and events mentioned known to Mrs. C.]

---

201. The name Helen H. was not intelligible but inquiry showed it was the name of Pres. Harper's daughter changed by herself when half grown from Nellie. But that of Charles is the name of my brother, deceased, and prominent in the first Piper record. He was always called Charlie.

Everybody changes like that. Isn't that good?

(Yes.)

Each one has his own way. Yours in philosophy and I in my way. We are people working in dark places for diamonds.

(Yes.)

Perhaps you and I are that. I see your wife. She is glad you are going to stay at home for Thanksgiving. That is the place for you.

(Good.) [I had intended to have a sitting but before this one arranged not to come.]

You have got to have a little home life. That is as much as she scolds. That is what she says. What I would say is that it is your duty. I am not going to say it. She did. You are a pretty good fellow after all is what the spirits say. [Pause.]

Will you take a message to Lillian Whiting?

(Yes.)

Kate Field says to her: It's London. She need not be afraid of the climate there. Sometimes it is beautiful in winter. Washington, is not the place for her this year. That with love to her.

[Message pertinent, but not specially evidential as some of Miss Whiting's plans were known to Mrs. C.] [Note 202.]

During the past week I have seen certain parties about Mr. Rockefeller and 'phoned another about Mr. Carnegie. There was some apparent evidence that the latter was thinking about the subject but it was not such as to justify any belief in the earlier message. Correspondence with another person concerned Mr. Rockefeller.

A most interesting feature of the Hodgson control in this sitting was the interfusion of the personality of Jennie P— or Whirlwind with his. When the writing began I was certain it was Whirlwind and I was surprised to notice that the Whirlwind pencil had been rejected. Gradually the characteristics of Whirlwind's handwriting disappeared and those of Hodgson took their place, and the reader can im-

---

202. All this of Subliminal I represents what was in the normal knowledge of Mrs. C., except the incidents about Miss Field. A part of that may be supernormal but it is too refined to make a point of it.

agine the interest awakened by Hodgson's statement that Whirlwind had helped him to get control. The incident explained perfectly the interfusion of their handwriting with the domination of her own at the start.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 18th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I keep seeing something around you. It is another face and looks like a picture of a double head. The face is lighter than yours. It looks like a woman with rather short hair and parted in the middle and brushed back. Do you know any one by the name of Anna Fielding, Ann or Anna Fielding. [Pause.]

I feel a man about myself. I want to finger a mustache. I found myself doing it unconsciously. I wonder who you are. The name sounds like Don or Dorr, Don. It is a little short name like Don or Dorr. He is quite an old man and has a beard. I can't hear the name distinctly. I think some one is trying to see if I can hear. [Pause.] [Note 203.]

I feel an awfully strange influence. If I were not a medium I would think I was going crazy. I see a basket of flowers lowered from the ceiling in front of me. I wonder if you know if anything like a basket of flowers was sent to Dr. James' funeral, a high brown basket filled full. There is a tall handle and it seems odd for a funeral. It is filled with roses. A little card attached to it. The card is in an envelope. I can't read it. [Pause.] It looks like Mrs. ... [Pause.] A little card in an envelope. Mrs. James C. Dobson. I am not sure of it. [Note 204.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh.] [pause.] Eh! Eh! [pause.] Why? [pause.] Why?

203. There are no means of identifying the names Anna Fielding and "Don" or "Dorr" unless the latter is a wandering reference to Mr. George Dorr's relatives.

Inquiry of Mr. Dorr shows that the name Fielding has no relevance to him and none is discoverable in any other direction.

204. Mr. Henry James, Jr., does not recognize the name Dobson or the basket of flowers mentioned.

[pause.] Oh! Who? Who? [Smile.] Why don't they take Frank away? I don't want him.

(Frank who?)

Some one they call Frank and I don't care for him. I guess they don't want him either. They told him to wait. You know who Frank is.

(No.)

Yes you do. He communicated.

(Oh yes.)

He says he made a howling success of it so far as he went. There were not many open doors. He is all right. I'll have to go in here.

[Began spontaneously to move head to rest and was missing it when I guided it to its proper place.]

Frank is all right, but he is such an argufier. You know what that means.

(Yes.) [Note 205.]

That is a farmer's term. He starts wrong and you can argue out anything if you start in certain places. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[After a pause the hand began to make the motions of writing without having signified its desire for the pencil. I waited a moment and gave the pencil. It began with the word 'friend.']

\* \* \* \* friend. [pencil fell and I inserted it again, but saw that a change of control had taken place and exchanged the pencil for another.]

[Change of Control.]

William began without a pencil

(Yes.)

and did not realize until you spoke the third word. I am here and glad to give a greeting this morning. Yesterday was rather an unusual interview but it was worth while. You may not always see the immediate value but later events prove [read

---

205. The Frank evidently refers to Mr. Podmore. The attitude of mind manifested and its relation to past efforts are the evidence of this.

'have'] prove the wisdom of the policy of allowing a visitor now and again.

(Yes.)

We are careful over here as you about having outside influences but we must all work for the future good of the cause we serve [read 'save'] serve. I am going to give my chance to James and you will understand if I do not come again this morning.

(Yes.)

R. H.—

[Change of Control.]

• My dear friend. Since I last wrote you I have been better and feel that I may be able to give such evidence as will be of use to you.

(Much that you have given has been good.)

Each time I come I seem stronger after the first moments of adjustment and it gives me pleasure to hear you say the work has been good in any degree. I seek to open the door of memory's chamber and bring forth her golden store and place it at your feet.

(I understand.)

I refer to the golden store because so much of the evidence seems [seems] valueless to the pseudo thinkers about you unless there is a trace of the capacities of the supposed communicator.

(Yes, good.)

not all the evidence need be twaddle nor all the twaddle evidence.

(Good.)

It is the spirit of a man which survives, all that makes up his day [read 'clay'] day, his weeks and years, tone, the quality, and I desire to prove and not to give you a sample of deteriorated [deteriorated, but not read] personality ... de [read 'C'] de [read 'C'] De teriorated or disintegrated capacity. Have I made it clear.

(Yes, if I assume that you have to overcome a trance on your side.)

[Pause.] I am not entranced.

(All right. Is there danger of going into a trance on your side and thus of preventing communication?)

On that subject we have had conversation before.

(Yes, how much is true?)

I passed into this life and we were obliged to assume that such was the case for two reasons. First we were informed so by Emperor. Second the evidence submitted implied as much in many instances.

(Yes.) [Note 206.]

But I must confess that the trance is absent in my case. I am conscious of G. P. R. H. and a group of friends who are now present as spirit identities and I am also conscious of you and of the atmosphere and sounds of your world [read 'vocal'] world or the room where you now are.

(Good.)

If I am entranced then Richard and George and you are. I warrant you I can remember the past as definitely as you can.

(Yes, why can't you tell it?)

We expect superhuman capacities I fear. I think after I learn the use of the organism I can transfer my capacity to recall or make judgments or estimates of men and work with facility as of the past. I began with fear and halting but I grow bold with exercise of power. The spirit faculties lie dormant with most men and on [read 'in'] transmission ... on ... the power is feeble and infantile and is reinforced or augmented [read 'segmental'] au... [suddenly read 'augmented'] by the borrowed powers of sutter [sitter] or psychic. The two forces or three or more as the case may be do not always readily blend and the result is cosmopolitic. you understand.

(Yes.)

The best instruments and sitters must have like qualities or those which readily blend. I believe some work is sporadic and spasmodic but we would deal with the full and entire prob-

---

206. It is true that Emperor described the condition for communicating in a manner to imply a trance and the evidence in the communications suggested it or the confirmation of Emperor's statements. Mrs. C. was not familiar with the Piper records in this respect.

lem. I have been busy [read 'heavy'] since... busy ... I came here on the particular question of trance and the foregoing is the result of my research to date.

(Yes, then I shall have to give up some views I have defended, shall I not?)

Most emphatically. They may cover some instances but those are in a group by themselves and can be classified as dream or trance cases. You will recall that I frequently [French.] found it impossible to make the dream or trance state a clear or sufficient theory for the matter.

(Yes.)

and that balked me again and again

(Yes, and it gave all of us our troubles and I have never been sure about it.) [Note 207.]

Without this knowledge of the complications I set forth on my journey and the investigation of the subject demanded my earliest attention. You will be helped in your researches I believe by this new theory of mine.

(Yes, and I shall know to hold hypotheses in solution about the matter.)

Most certainly and I will work with you as I best can. A friend here has suggested that the dream or trance theory is the refuge for the forgetful the careless and the lazy but that the scientific man has no right to be either of these.

(I understand.)

It does not seem the least strange to discuss these things with you. I believe with you that the moral and ethical development of the world hangs on this spiritual knowledge.

(Good.)

It becomes an incentive for righteousness in its best and truest sense and make[s] the brotherhood of humanity a real and dominant note in the progress of civilization. Heretofore the world has risen [read 'resen' supposing it was unfinished 'resented']

---

207. Professor James did fluctuate in his relation to this theory, now recognizing that it explained various things and at other times feeling sceptical about it. Mrs. C. knew nothing of this. Indeed she did not know that he tolerated such a view as possible, tho it was alluded to as a theory in his Report but not defended there.

to new power ... risen ... on the neck of its fallen brothers which at best is but volcanic progress.

(Yes, we want pacific movements to bring the world to its unity and sense of brotherhood.)

[When I made this statement, vaguely expressed, as readers will note, I had in mind Prof. James' interest in the pacification of the world and hoped thereby to call out appropriate associations. The result speaks for itself.]

The emerging [read 'energizing' and 'emergency'] of one ... emerging of one peak from the tumultuous sea of distress which sinks another portion [read 'harbour'] portion of the far land ... fair ... is not drawing the world to God.

(No, we should have universal peace for that.)

It can never come until [until] men learn the truth of immortality. the struggle for the present day power is so tantalizingly universal. I am philosophizing but my soul is optimistic even if my word has a touch of the pessimist. This has been a good hour for me. I have gained in strength, but I fear the specific evidential value is not here. I mean the references to men and plans and things. I think I can move my pencil across the block myself.

(Good.)

let me try.

[I let the hand alone and the pencil went off the paper two or three times before there was any attempt to go to the left side of the page. When it did go it was by little jerks making slow progress, but succeeded well enough.]

(Good.)

Is that the proper place.

(Yes.)

Thank you. [Pause.] I was thinking if I might recall some point but I am tired now.

(Let me recall one incident. Do you remember anything about pink pajamas?) [Question repeated in clear tones.]

Yes I do and smile as I recall the occasion when the allusion was made. It was some time ago but I still remember about it. They were not mine but were referred to as such. You are waiting for more.

(Yes, but if you cannot give it this time you can give it again.) [Note 208.]

Yes I am slowing up.

(I understand.)

Your friend. W. J. O.

(Thanks.)

[Change of Control.]

Hyslop I don't want you to think I have forgotten you. I am G. P.— and I want to be in on this. James is very particular and anxious to have everything just right. He is improving we think. Do not you.

(Yes, I do.)

When he can push the pad around to suit himself he will be geting [getting] pretty near into my class, but not yet. I still hold the pennant and I don't intend to let any emigrant [written 'emgrait'] from little Cambridge get in ahead of me.

(All right.)

You see there are some of us who still have a streak [read 'stake'] streak of human cussedness in us. It makes life over here more spicy and livable. I want no tame heaven [read 'team' with no feeling that it was correct.] for me ... heaven ... We must have some activities [delay in reading.] yes [to correct reading.] You will understand the spirit of this.

(The Bible says even God laughs.)

I am glad of that but I hate to think of a hippopotamus with a broad grin on.

(All right, George.)

It is almost too much of a good thing.

(Yes.)

Now we must go but the experiment has been good. James knocked down some of our nine pins this morning but we can set up some new ones. Goodbye for now. I think J [read 'I'] will ... J ... come tomorrow. What about Turkey day.

---

208. Through Miss Gaule, Dr. Hodgson had referred to Professor James when the latter was at Oxford or Cambridge as wearing "pink pajamas" and inquiry proved it to be veridical. I referred to it here to arouse associations. All that I got was that they were not his which I am not able to verify. But I am informed that he always wore them, so that the probability is that the allusion here would be false, tho it is possibly true.

(I shall be at home that day but intend to come here for the day after and take three sittings, one on the Sabbath.)

Good J can preach to his heart's content on Sunday, but the Sabbath school class must be given me and Richard can manage the choir.

(All right.)

G. P.— [Pencil fell.] [Note 209.]

[*Subliminal.*]

That looks like the Sphinx over there. Have you ever been to Egypt?

(No.)

Who has. Did Hodgson go?

(I don't know.)

I see Egypt and the Sphinx. Oh aint that funny. Isn't George Pelham funny.

(Yes.)

What is he laughing about at you?

(What is he laughing at me about?)

Just a joke [pause.] Goodbye. [Pause.]

What have I got? [Holding up the article of Prof. James.]

(Don't you know?)

Yes. Do you know how I know?

---

209. Readers may have noticed G. P.'s tendency to humor at times. It was characteristic of him in the Piper phenomena and Mrs. C. does not know enough about him to represent him so. She has a sense of humor herself and it perhaps resembles the type manifested here, but I never knew her normally to indulge in semi-irreverent manners in this way and it was probably assumed by G. P., if we have any right to suppose him present, for the purpose of sustaining the same characteristics which he manifested through Mrs. Piper, perhaps to make his personality distinct from that of Imperator and Rector whose religious seriousness was greater than his. I commented on this in my first Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, pp. 181-182). This instance of G. P.'s humor is an extreme one and my remarks about its relation to Mrs. C.'s knowledge and sense of humor will apply to all of his indulgences in this respect. Readers will find that his characteristics, both serious and humorous, are consistently sustained throughout, tho I think they may remark that similar humor is put into the mouth of Dr. Hodgson, when, as a fact, his humor which was keen, was not of the same type so far as I know. The resemblances suggest subliminal coloring from the medium. Her humor, however is receptive, not productive.

(How?)

Well there are some letters on it. J, Dr. James right on it, J. and Harry. I suppose the son gave it to you because I see both letters on it.

A funny thing. I see Dr. James in a dress suit, cut away vest, a shirt front showing some little shirt buttons in it. They don't seem to be gold but as if pearl and it seems as though Harry had them. I don't suppose they are of great value, but they have gold backs and are connected with Harry. They are little pearl ones with a gold back. What do men wear?

(I don't know.)

What do you wear?

(I don't wear any.) [Note 210.]

Who had the trouble in the back of the neck?

(I don't know.)

They must be trying to control my brain and it is not big enough.

(I suppose so.)

Well it can grow. Perhaps I am being stretched. You glad I am going?

(Yes.) Are you tired? (I had enough to do.) [Pause.]

I keep seeing a bride. [pause, and suddenly awakened.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 19th, 1910. 10 A. M.

We talked a while in the normal state about the position of mediums in reference to money and Mrs. C. made an allusion to Mrs. Smead and her freedom from pay. She expressed the wish to be in the same situation. Soon afterward she closed her eyes and began to go into the trance. I put her head on the cushion and soon in a half childish way she began to talk

---

210. There is no known relevance to the reference to Egypt and the Sphinx in connection with Professor James, and the necktie which I used at the sitting had no initials on it, and I do not think the reference to it in this way implied this. It was evidently a symbolic mode of indicating the ownership and the source of my possession of it. If I remember rightly it was sent to me by Mrs. James, not by the son.

Inquiry develops the fact that he had no such pearl buttons with gold backs. The reference to his dress is not evidential.

about her own desire to have money enough not to make charges and said she was writing a book with the hope that it would give her the means to avoid taking money for it. She soon ceased, however, and there was a long pause.

[*Subliminal.*]

I see Mr. Myers. [Pause.] It is funny how I usually see him with a cloak, isn't it?

(Yes.)

Today he takes that off. I see him in an ordinary suit of clothes, his hat off. He has most remarkable eyes and a beautiful voice. The voice is clear and magnetic. I hear it like the tone of a bell. He is talking with Dr. Hodgson. Dr. Hodgson says with several minor poets, and points to George and Philip Savage. Did Philip Savage write poetry?

(Yes.)

They laugh as if each versified a little. They turn to Dr. James and he says 'Not guilty'. Isn't that funny? [Pause.]

Put me in. [Head placed in rest.] I wanted to get in before I was gone so that I could get into shape. See?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Do you know I hear wonderful music. I never heard it before. It seems like a wonderful spring morning, as if the gates of the world had been thrown wide open and this marvellous music comes floating through. It falls softly on my ear that I am wafted away into another realm. All sense perceptions are dulled and I hear and see only the eternal beauties. God is so near the soul in such an hour. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I will not stay. I go I go to the realm of eternal \* \* my soul is free to wing its way to the bosom of the Infinite. P \* [O ?] S., [Pause.] R. R. B. [Note 211.]

[Change of Control.]

The last was nothing of importance.

---

211. P. S. evidently represents Philip Savage, and later explanations indicate, as I suspected, that R. B. was for Robert Browning. There is nothing evidential in the allusion to Philip Savage, as Mrs. C. knew something of him.

(I understand.)

but the first is like a song of a rising soul, Lovely indeed but I do not know who wrote it. It seemed to emanate from the light without [pencil changed.] a visible personality and I am wondering [not read.] if ... wondering if the combination of influences did not unconsciously make an imprint on the spirit as it was leaving the body for our use. I am G. P.

(Did you know whose the last initials were?)

P. S., was it.

(No, R. B.)

Browning.

(I thought so.)

He was here and he ha... has been before but never tried to write for us. It may have been his predominant thought. that I will [read 'wrote'] will leave for the future. We can make more experiments later.

(Yes.) [Note 212.]

It is good to have much [so read and hand pointed and reread] this [when read hand was not satisfied and wrote 'much' above it.] It is good to have this much. [rewritten to show that the order of the two words should be "this much" which I had read as written.]

The minor poets included R. B— you remember!

(Yes.)

That is all right then. What about yesterday's work. It was a sitting of unusual length.

(Yes.)

We tried to get James away but he was glued to his post and never left until he got ready. We gave him a cup of coffee when he got through. He needed a stimulant and he revived and is ready for work again. You can't lose him now. He has his nerve up for work and I guess the result will be good. He gave a black eye to some of Dick's theories.

(Yes, and mine too.) [Note 213.]

---

212. Mr. Browning purported to communicate through Mrs. C. to Professor Corson sometime before his death. Hence there is nothing of importance in the allusion to him here.

213. I take it that the reference to the black eye for Hodgson's theories refers to the position taken about the trance. Cf. p. 293.

Well he must have his way. You can fight all out with him. He is amply able to take care of himself in an argument. He always led. He seldom followed. He was a mighty bad follower anyhow wasn't he.

(Yes.)

It is good to see him with his old pluck and assertiveness but all in a strong and convincing way. He does not know that I am giving him such a recommendation but it is all right is it not.

(Yes, and a good point.)

Did he make clear to you that he knew what he was talking about.

(Yes.)

Good again. I am leaving him in the atmosphere of the place for a little adjustment before he begins. He may not write as much as yesterday but he wants his chance before you go.

(Good.)

We have got hold of the lines in good shape I think and it makes us all feel very courageous but we do not forget that you are working out problems that need our coöperation in other ways and so we sometimes use energy in other directions. You will have help bye and bye but we want it to be the right kind.

Do you know anything about the smal [small] room with lights lighted and shades drawn and work something like this but with another light, at another place. The room is on the first floor, the shades are white, the surroundings are simple not at all elegant or in [pause.] special taste but quiet and still and around the place all is still so quiet and still. The light is a lady.

(No, I do not know anything about it.)

You have not been there.

(No.)

I thought you had sometime ago, and think so now, only I have not made it quite plain.

(That may be. What kind of phenomena there?)

Some trance [both words superposed and I had to ask for rewriting.] Some trance work oral and an effort to use hand but not with much success, only a slight indication of automatic

power, a lighter complexion than the light here and a slender lady.

(I do not recognize it.)

Strange. It is some one where your father tried to come but did not get there very well.

(Wait a minute. Is it near or far from here?)

not very far away. That is not a great distance, not South. South. You know what I mean by South.

(Not sure.)

Of course N. Y. is south but I mean further South really South.

(Yes I know.)

but this is not that case.

(No.)

another. The really South is rather [read 'better'] familiar ... rather ... to all of us.

(Yes.)

and the kind of work done is like this with a slight trace of oral.

(I never got the oral there.)

yes yes now and again a slight trace a word or mumble now and again or a bit of clairvoyance.

(Yes the clairvoyance.)

that is what I mean, not confined entirely to the writing, other phases could be developed but there is also a trace of imagination in some of the work. You know what I mean I think.

(Yes.)

a little catalepsy and a trace of hysteria at times. (Yes.) All these things are evident to you and to us and would have to be outgrown or superseded [read 'separated'.] sup... [suddenly read.] if long and definite experiments were to be continued. It is not possible to do much without great effort but when the power is just w... [evidently started to spell phonetically the next word or to write the word 'write'.] right it is splendid.

(Yes correct.)

you know all this but it is good to have me tell you about it.

(Yes, that's good.)

It makes a little evidence ... little ... [not read the first time.] yes [to correct reading of 'little'] [Note 214.]

Now about the other case, but first let me say that I have been South and so has W. J.

(Yes.)

We knew about that light before he went and we also knew about this one and he tried his experiments of presence at each place before you were present.

(Good.)

All this is sufficient for that. [Note 215.]

(Yes. I expect to try to experiment on the second and third after the Sabbath and I hope you will all be there and that James will try his sign. Also I hope Emperor will try to mention that fountain pen. The light knows nothing about it.)

Yes that is next week.

(Yes.)

and we will all try and help W. J. Emperor is able to help himself. And then we will see how much more can be done.

---

214. All this account of the new psychic is correct. I did not recognize who was meant at first, as readers will see. But as soon as it was distinguished from Mrs. Smead on the one hand and Mrs. K. on the other I saw who was meant. I had not yet seen the case but some friends were having sittings. Her apartment was on the first floor and the window shades were drawn to make it slightly dark when sittings were held, and the shades were white. Mrs. C. knew none of these things and neither did I. The facts were told me by a friend after this sitting. I had never been at a sitting with her. Her work was trance and oral, with occasional attempts, not good ones, at automatic writing. She was better at clairvoyance than in the automatic writing. There had been trace of my father there. She lived in New York. Since this time I have discovered traces of the "imagination", or subliminal in her work, but not more of this than is usual. Mrs. C. knew none of this and did not even know of the existence of the case. She did not know what was true that these same personalities were familiar with the case in the "South", tho she might have guessed it. So far as I know there is no trace of catalepsy in it, but there is of some hysteria. The catalepsy is in that of Mrs. Smead and had been referred to at earlier sittings with Mrs. C.

215. It is true that G. P. and Professor James had purported to be present at the Smead case in the South and that it had occurred there, as in the New York case, before I had been present. Mrs. C. knew nothing of this.

It is good that you have an opportunity to try this work. It makes the sign work in all right. You know.

Now to return to the first case.

(Yes.)

Strange you do not recall but you may later. It is not important except as a reference. Now too I want to tell you that England has been invaded once more by your standing army.

(Good.)

We marched on the citadel [read 'aladed' doubtfully] citadel [not read] citadel [read 'aladed'] citadel [read emphatically.] sure sure. and tried to overpower the leaders [read 'laders' doubtfully] leaders and run up our flag but our presence was noted our purpose ignored and the real test we wanted to give is postponed. That is not [pause.] a [pause.] good way to express it perhaps. The ignore ing [read 'ignore way'] ignoring was not to repulse us but we could not make strong [read 'stung'] sometimes ... strong ... and so must try again but our presence was really noted and it was not simply a coincidence. Mrs. V— also has had a visit from W. J. and we were in h... his wake but so far our work is strongest here. I tell you that for your comfort.

(Good.) [Note 216.]

More about that later. Here is W. J. What about Harper. Did you read him over afterwards.

(Yes.)

Was it good stuff.

(Yes.)

All right. We planned that.

(Good. It gave me an idea or two on which to work.)

G. P. [Very indistinct, as if losing power.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian. Pause. French.] W. Good morning.

(Kind greetings to you.)

So we are here and [?] [pencil ran off paper.] again and I feel stronger. I feel confident that you prefer to have me try

---

216. Unless this is a reference to the same effort that was mentioned earlier (p. 261), there are no facts on our side to prove it true or a coincidence. The sign Omega was given through Mrs. Smead.

my power and yet when I see so many around who are interested in you and your work I feel as if I ought to forego sometimes and give them the place [French.] But today I accept and try the [French.] hand.

[After 'who are' the hand showed signs of a desire to move itself across the page and I yielded. It went by short steps and jerky movements stopping at short distances and tapping the paper as if feeling its way. But it made no subsequent attempts, as if conscious of the loss of power in so doing, and hence did not resent my help.]

I hope I did not disconcert you by my statement of conditions yesterday.

(No, not at all, because I have latterly not been so sure I was on the right track. In my last report I discussed other limitations to the messages and hence I am prepared with evidence to give up the older view. Hodgson just before I published it sent word through this light which showed he had changed his views on it. So do not worry about that.)

I cannot worry except as I subscribe to an erroneous [erroneous] conclusion and my concern in the last few months of my life was that I might have been too ready to accept the spiritistic [spiritistic] theory when the phenomena should have been rightly classified with subliminal activities. This you guessed at by my letters [letters] and conversation.

(Yes.) [Note 217.]

but one thing I now know without question or surmise. I am a conscious being with body of expression and capacities normal and rational and I have found fewer limitations than I expected.

(What kind of limitations do you find?)

A lack of power in impressing [impressing] what is in my

---

217. It is not known what Professor James' feelings about the subject were the last few months of his life, except as published, and one would not infer from his published material that he had held to any such views as here expressed. His own conception of the subconscious forbade him to explain the supernormal—and he admitted the existence of this—by the subconscious alone.

I said "yes" in this connection to encourage the communicator, not to admit that his letters and conversation had verified the statement. I had very little conversation and very few letters from him.

mind. You remember a short talk we had about telepathy and you were impressed with the lack of power to impress on a sensitive mind the thought on yours. I am studying the problem from this view point. The light presents me with a dead brain or at least an inactive one. I cannot use the hand as if it were a hatchet but must have it function as nearly normal as possible. One may pull the tendon of the leg of a dead fowl but the foot makes only spasmodic response. [Note 218.]

(I understand. Then . . .)

The brain is as a dead planet reflecting only, but if I can infuse sufficient life into it then I write normally. [Two groans as if in pain.] do you see.

(Yes, I imagine that the relation of the body to the light is like reincarnation. One has to get the same kind of adjustment that he had to his own organism before he left it. Is that right?)

Yes exactly and a point we all missed. Now when I once get that hold many limitations will disappear. That is what the familiar guide or control does, so Madame tells me.

[Notice French spelling of this. In the past it has been 'Madam'.]

(I understand.) [Note 219.]

Is it very late.

(No, fifteen minutes yet.)

I seem to have less power. [Indian.] I wondered about it. [pause.] I will try and give you my sign as you ask.

(Yes and can you mention the pink pajamas there too?)

Will try. I have never referred to my cup [spelled 'cip', the 'u' being written as usual like 'i', but the letters looked like 'ap' and the word was not read.] the one . . . cup [read 'ap'] cup . . . the one presented me kept in the library, (All right.) and also

218. I did have a talk with him about telepathy, but the ideas expressed here do not correctly represent the content of it, tho it involved the general limitations of that hypothesis as an explanation.

The reader should note the persistent insistence on the claim that the limitations are not in the mind of the communicator but in the medium and the unfamiliar relation to it which the communicator bears.

219. Dr. Hodgson had recognized the point here made, namely, that adjustment to a new organism was essential to good communications, but Professor James never indicated in his published papers that he felt its importance. Perhaps this was because he was too wavering towards the theory.

some rare coins brought me from far off [sudden loss of power.]  
W. J. O. [Note 220.]

[Change of Control.]

Here I am and I must take a hold for a minute. The friend suddenly lost control in his effort to recall. but it is all right. ask his friends about Abyssinia [both words not read.] about Abyssina [not read.] abbyssinia. The place where the niggers grow [delay in reading.] grow. Where do the dark continent [not read.] people live ... continent... There is ... yes [to correct reading of 'continent'] something he had from [not read.] there... from ... yes [to correct reading.] and he tried to recall it. He is a good man all right and will do all he can but he is slower than you and he makes up his mind to prove [possibly 'know'] everything root [not read.] and ... root ... branch and he takes [not read.] takes time and that stalls the engine. ... stalls ... [not read first time.] Yes you are no automobile fiend or you would know what staling [stalling] the engine means.

(I have to do this work instead of riding automobiles.)

Better for you. You are more sure of earth and better fitted for heaven. People who ride in automobile [s] sometimes die early and sometimes too soon, but they go out in a blaze [not read.] of ... blaze of glory but the poor devil cannot afford [it]. He go... groopes [gropes] his way by the flickering light of a candle through the dark purgatorial streets ... purgator... [not read first time.] and the rich man flares in on gasolene brightness and a blare of trumpets not [read 'nor'] blown... not ... by angel bands [not read.] bands [not read.] ba... [read.] but squeezed [read 'squelched'] out of ... squeezed ... of his own horn [not read.] horn by a rubber bulb—You know enough about

---

220. Inquiry shows that the cup was kept in the library. Mrs. C. did not know this, but probably knowing that the cup had been presented to him we may suppose that she might guess where it was kept.

[Mrs. C. in response to inquiries, says that she did not know that a loving cup had been given to Professor James. As she actually alluded in her communications, subliminally, to the possibility that the incident was mentioned in the paper (p. 243) and as the son thinks it was mentioned there we should have to assume normal amnesia to disqualify the incident.]

automobiles for that—Goodbye Hurricane. Your Whirlwind, Jennie P— Mary Ann. [Note 221.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] It is all over isn't it. Who is that jabbering?  
(I don't know.)

[Pause.] Didn't they go quick.

(Yes.)

I guess some one helped the automatic writing.

(Yes.)

Do you smell pinks?

(No.)

They are in your wife's hands. She liked carnations. Did you know it?

(I don't recall.)

She did. She didn't make much fuss over anything.

(Yes.) [Correct. My wife was not fussy about her pleasures.]

They, your people, are coming some day to talk.

(Good.)

Goodbye. I feel your are pushing me out. [Pause.]

Sedgwick, Sedgwick.

(I know.)

Is it William P? Do you know any one named Cotton?

(No.)

He is in the same group. [Pause.]

Oh dear [feeling her neck as if in distress. I rubbed it.] Thank you. [Pause.] I see some one just like Grover Cleve-

---

221. Whirlwind occasionally goes by the name of Mary Ann, as well as Jennie P. Both of these names suggested to me who she is from some things that have occurred elsewhere, but a later attempt to verify this resulted in failure.

But I wish to call attention to the talk about automobiles and the evident familiarity with them which would not be natural for the personality suspected in the case. She has been too long dead to know anything about them. The whole passage has a strong flavor of the subconscious, especially in its contents. Its manner is not especially characteristic of Mrs. C. in her normal state, but the contents are suggestive only of her, and we would have to suppose easy posthumous knowledge to apply spirits to it.

land. [Suddenly opened her eyes and was awake and exclaimed normally:] Funny, I thought I saw a cow. [Note 222.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 25th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear! I see such a funny little woman here, not funny in the sense of ludicrous. Only it is unusual in a place like this where they are all men. She is dressed in black as can be. She wears a little black shawl and bonnet tied under the chin. Her hair is dark and she is quaint and old-fashioned. She is busy and brisk. She puts her hand on your shoulders. It is some one interested in you and connected with your family. An Aunt Susan, Aunt Susan. Do you know any one like that. Do you know any one that sounds like Aunt Susan?

(Not that I remember.)

It sounds like Oo. She is active and not the least bit like a dead person or like a returning spirit. She is interested in you and has been gone a long time. She puts her hand over your back and then looks at me and says: I have ever so much to do, as if straightening you up, to relieve the cough. Isn't that funny. [Pause.] [Note 223.]

[Before the sitting I had coughed considerable and Mrs. C. had expressed concern about it and I explained that examination showed I was all right.]

I'm ready. [Head put in rest.] It is almost better to get in before I go because I can get into a better position.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Isn't it dark? [Foggy and raining outside.]

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Do you know... Do you know... [Pause.]

---

222. The name Sedgwick is probably for Professor Sidgwick. The William P., and the name Cotton are not intelligible to me in that or any other connection. Whether the reference to President Cleveland is to him or another resembling him is not indicated, tho the resemblance is remarked. I know of no reason for his appearance, save such plans as the controls have stated and occasionally carried out.

223. The name and person here described are not identifiable. I had no such aunt that I can recollect.

(Know what?)

John, John.

(What John?)

[Pause.] [Note 224.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl. Probably first part of 'W' in next word.] We are here ready for work but there is a spirit of an unusual character trying to impress himself on the light and the atmosphere around, so we are a little slow but it is all as it should be. There are many kinds of experiments which may be made from time to time and you are not to be disturbed as indeed we know you will not.

(No, that's all right.)

You cannot seem to take a day to rest or rather your rest is in new work but you forget we might like Thanksgiving Day to ourselves might we not.

and yet we are expected to present ourselves a living sacrifice to the cause of Truth at all times. After Thanksgiving comes Sunday and still ['Sunday' read but last two words not.] Sunday and still no rest for us. We have been making unusual effort and some things came through all right. We were pleased at the opportunity and William tried and succeeded in a measure.

(What did he get?)

The circle came and some points but not the full name which he assumed here but enough to make it evident that he was present. You were aware of what I am telling you.

(No, I did not get anything assuredly at all from him. Indeed not any indication of his presence at all.) [In first part of statement I was thinking of experiment with a child: in the last of Mrs. Stiles.]

He was sure [superposed.] sure that he made a circle. Was there not some round and circle movements made.

(No none.)

He came back with quite an assured temper about the whole thing and he left the matter alone. Perhaps I should have let

---

224. This John is not recognizable. One of the "band" of guides of Mrs. C. is called "Father John" and it is he that often interposes to give energy in a critical situation.

him tell his own story and he may later do so. But we all got an impression of good results.

(In which case do you mean?) [Thinking to have distinction made between the two experiments.]

The last.

(Well many things occurred at the first, but only one communicator at the last.)

It was the last to which I referred for it was last that he came back with assurance. We cannot always tell just how much has been done by each other unless we make special notes and [r]eferences and that we had not done and I dropped in to the matter quite unconsciously this morning. I had not intended to discuss it. Well you know how easy it is to begin consideration in that indefinite way.

(Yes.)

I am quite willing for William to do his own work and he seems amply able to take care of himself.

(The arrangement I made was only partly carried out. The lady could not give the second sitting and hence I had only one. The only communicator was Emperor.)

That you are telling me for my knowledge.

(Yes.)

Thank you. but there was a second effort was there not, a sort of dividing the sitting. (Yes there was.) I mean an effort between the work as if a new personality might be making effort and then a return to the old and first method

(Yes.)

That is what he referred to as first and last.

(Good.)

In that short pause or interval or change whatever you call it an effort was made for William and if he did not do all he desired he certainly came back with an assurance of success.

(I understand.) [Note 225.]

---

225. The text shows that I got no trace of the sign or a circle at the cases in mind. But it is interesting to note that after the Emperor personality had written there was a pause and apparent change of control with a second effort to write, but it was a failure. Mrs. C. could not possibly have known the fact normally.

It was most likely a promise [last two words superposed and not read.] a promise that the future would give better results.

(Yes.)

and in that effort the only thing William had on his mind was the O.

(Yes.)

Now I think we can go on with the regular work. If Imperator wishes to write during this stay of yours the [evidently the 'th' is intended for capital 'H'.] will come. (Good.) He has a watchful [read 'faithful'.] watchful eye on the work everywhere.

(Now George, I . . . .)

Why do you call me George. I am R. H.

(The writing and its freedom were like George's.)

All right I don't mind that sort of a compliment but I am myself and glad to be here and ready. it is perhaps a good thing that you made the mistake for it gave me a chance to tell my identity. (Yes.) and not the [read 'be' and hand tapped pencil, but word was not read.] the identity your mind was set on.

(Good.)

You see when you always know by the writing who it is there is a slight chance for suggestion of your mind (Yes) and this was a definite contradiction. It is good. I score one this time.

(Yes.)

You had something to say and I interrupted you I believe.

(Tell George that I found who the lady was that I did not recognize the last time. I had never really been at a sitting and had to ask my friends who it could be and the facts told were all correct and identified her well.)

Good for George. He will be pleased. He is working every precious minute and says he knows he will have to do so as long as you live. The only way for us to escape the penalty of constant work is to kill [read 'keel' doubtfully.] you . . . kill you off.

(All right.)

You survive everything though contrary to our expectations. That is only a bit of fun for we want you to live and get the results we have all longed for.

(Yes.)

William has done well has he not.

(In many things he has, but I have not heard from the family for some time and hence do not know about some things.)

You are [read 'see' and hand tapped until read correctly.] not disturbed about that are you

(No, not at all.)

It is nothing to be considered for a moment. They have the conservative cautiousness that they believe would be the wish of William (Yes.) and many things which might be good evidence to you or to him will seem inconsequential to them.

(I understand.) [Note 226.]

but when he is able to make some specific impression more specific than he has yet done it will bring quick response.

(Good.)

Nothing is wrong so far and we think it is good. Let them get other results and then you can make some comparisons [read 'impressions'.] all right.... compa ... [suddenly read.] It is all in the way you look at evidence.

(Yes.)

You know how I used to harp on that string [read 'story'] string. People do not know evidence when they get it.

(That's correct.)

It is the sad [superposed.] sad thing about the whole matter. They ask for the age of Mary Jane or the middle letter of Aunt Sarah's name or something equally non-evidential and if it comes they are quite sure of the presence of spirits.

(Yes.)

It is terrible but common and common indeed among some of our own members.

(Yes.)

What a man knows himself is never the best kind of evidence. one point which he never knew and must inquire about is worth a hundred pet names and the like.

(That's correct.)

---

226. The truth of this has been well manifested in the correspondence. The best evidence—none of it strikingly good— has not been reported to them at this date, as I knew the facts, and much that I have had to inquire about has evidently appeared inconsequential.

That I always had to explain and fight about and for and that often made the sittings seem of no ['no' written first and so read. Hand went back and inserted 'of' in its place.] importance and the future proved them to be most excellent [read 'evident'.] excellent. Yes I am referring to the past [read 'first'.] past more or less for I find myself dwelling on that realm when I am concerned about the work

(I understand.) [Note 227.]

There are many friends here to-day. Do you know any one by the name of Ruth.

(Yes, go on.) [I thought of the wife of an uncle's brother, and also the Ruth mentioned in my first Report.] [*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R., Vol. XVI, p. 319.*]

a lady by that name is here and desires to communicate I think. George will be her interpreter and I will give him the hand but I am here in [the] [sheet changed.] spirit of devotion just the same. R. H.

(Thank you.)

[Pencil fell and Indian gibberish occurred.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Greeting.)

So I am here to tell about the lady who is eager to send a message. I will do my best.

(Good.)

Just let me get my working boots [read 'tools'.] on ... working boots yes [to correct reading.] It ought to be working gloves in this case. [Hodgson's gloves lying on the table.] unless I intend [read 'named'.] intend to write with my feet which I do not. It is enough to write with the hand. We could write with both hands but that circus work ['circus' read 'wrecks' and hand paused for reading but I could not decipher.]

---

227. This is a very characteristic passage about people's conception of evidence, tho colored with the beliefs, probably, of the psychic. This coloring, however, is not detectible except perhaps in the names chosen for an example. But the distinctions in evidence are very natural for Dr. Hodgson who is the supposed communicator. Dr. Hodgson did have always to explain and fight about this point with sitters and Mrs. C. could not have known this fact.

circus work is done. You [read questioningly.] remember some ... you ... some work of that kind and it was all right but it is a feat not a regular performance.

(Yes.) [Writing done in the Piper case with both hands.]

The lady named Ruth is here with us. Do you know about her past.

(Practically nothing.)

She is very much alive to the work and is often with her own people of whom she has many on the earth. She is not an old lady nor very young but had a life of many and varied experiences. She was always the one on whom the duties fell and she assumed her responsibility without [read 'with but'.] question or ... out ... or murmur [read 'numerous'.] murmur yes [to correct reading.]

She has with her a gentleman and a small child. She has been gone some time and do you know about this.

(No, I am not certain.)

Have you met her [all four words superposed and not read.] and do ...

[I have noticed a marked tendency recently in G. P. to superpose when ever I have to give attention to making my notes.]

Have you met [not read.] met her.

(Not that I recall.)

You do not know her.

(Not personally.) [Still thinking of my uncle's brother's wife.]

Nor her appearance.

(No.)

Well then I tell you. She has beautiful dark eyes, is slender but well built if I may be excused the term and has very lovely hands and many jewels. So much for a start. She is interested in a circle of people who are interested in these things. Do you know anything about that.

(I am not certain. If you could make clear who those friends are I might tell.)

[I here suspected the Thaws in connection with whose name that of Ruth was mentioned in my Report.]

A little more about herself and then I may. (Good.) She holds a package of letters very old and faded put away [read

'but every'.] put away and never seen now. There is a lady living who has these and to whom she was much attached. The lady is very psychic and has had some experiences of a psychic nature. Ruth has a father with her. She writes an M—— as if that had a significance. Also a letter L. Those are the only letters I see in connection with her. Have they any meaning for you.

(I could place them but it is not yet clear enough to be sure.)

Yes well I go on. She shows me a small child living [read 'loving'] alive ... with fair hair and round chubby face that she is attracted to and I see a [Pause.] large man with the child. She must have lived some distance from here and she was so fond of light and air and freedom. All those things are shown me. Sh[e] is rather inclined to a religious life but more as a formality than of real and vital importance. It is following a family custom [first read 'ancestor' tho there was no excuse for this, and hand paused till read correctly.]

That is all. Who is T—— connected with her.

(I think so.)

There is a long stretch of water. It looks like ocean and as if she loved ocean and spent some time by it for I see her sitting [sitting] where the sound of the water is in her ears and her eyes are gazing at white capped waves.

(Good, does Hodgson know the family?)

Yes he says so but with his usual capacity for making everybody else work insists on keeping still while I find evidence. I begin to believe that R. H. is a lazy dog.

(I wanted to get a clue as to who it was. If I can make this perfectly clear it will be a most excellent point.)

You need have no fear about my deserting you. I stand by like the boy on the burning deck.

(Good.)

but my name is not Casabianca. Yes [to correct reading.]

Well to return to the evidence. [Pause.] I see bracelet [not read] bracelet [read 'bracketed' with certainty that this was not correct.] wrist [suddenly read.] held in her hand. It seems a very much loved trinket of hers and I also see her reading poems [read 'palm'] poems. She loves sentimental and dainty poems ['dainty' not read.] dainty [read questioningly 'dandy'] deli-

cate... dainty was the first word yes. [to correct reading.] Everything about her is of that delicate and beautiful type but a strength of character speaks through her voice and eyes quite unusual. She has some one like a sister alive with whom she often attends [read 'alludes' and then 'attends'.] yes attends places of pleasure and all that sort of thing. Her death was quite unexpected and a severe blow to all her friends and I see as she lay in the casket so much white everywhere. It seems to be her choice. And flowers, oh how she loved roses, flowers were almost like people to her.

(Good.)

Her friends have never ceased to mourn for her untimely? yes [to correct reading which was delayed.] death. I put a question mark after untimely because I see that her death opened many doors toward the realm of truth. It is a wonderful spirit she possesses and Dick has a special regard for her appearance here.

Strange that I called him Dick but it seemed to go with the situation. I think she must have communicated before elsewhere. Yes [to correct reading.] for this does not seem quite new to her and she seems familiar with the Emperor group. Either she was familiar before death or after and that I cannot yet tell.

(All right.)

It is all right anyway. I go quite a distance for her home and find different conditions than I find here. Do you know anything about a bell [read 'bill' and 'will'.] bell. It looks like a large church or school bell. I hear it ring and it is in a quiet little town or isolated place. Everything is so still and quiet and it is as if this bell is heard near where her body is laid away. (Good.) I also see some very old stones that are near where the marking for her own grave is. They belong to some one near her. It is all so hard and sad but now it is light and joyous.

Do you know anything about her mother.

(No, nothing.)

There is a woman alive who was as a mother to her and a woman in the spirit also who is in the relation of mother.

(Good.)

Now I hardly know what to say more. You know how hard it is to pick up special bits of the past. Wait one moment.

(Yes.)

She holds before me a small picture of herself in a small oval frame and tells me that R. H. was shown that when he was alive. and that it was pronounced good of her.

Now again I see a cottage more like a camping . . . cottage [read 'college' the first time.] and I see a group of people out of doors and her among them.

[I suddenly thought here of a picture of a Mr. J—— that I have of a family group alluded to by a communicator through Mrs. C. in New York.]

I am losing this connection. Let me talk of something else.  
(All right.)

Who is this bald pate with her. He is short and stout and bald just a [f]ringe of hair ['fringe' read 'ring'.] . . . frin... [suddenly read.] around his head, a good man with a will of iron but a head of gold and a true and faithful friend.

What did you tell H—— about me.

(I said I found who that light was. I had really never been at a sitting but I found you identified her well by the facts and my friends recognized her at once.)

Good. It is always good to find you have discovered evidence. What is the hour. Yes it seems late is it.

(Time is just up.)

Is that not strange. I felt a lessening of the pressure for my help at just that instant. Tomorrow again.

(Yes.)

Yours G. P.— [Pencil fell.] [Note 228.]

[*Subliminal.*]

---

228. I have not been able to ascertain who is meant by this Ruth and the associated incidents. I tried later to get further information, but it was not obtained. It will require a clue to the person meant even to make inquiries about the incidents.

[It happened that the next year, before going to press with this record, I had an opportunity to tell G. P. in a sitting that I had been unable to ascertain who this Ruth was and I requested him to bring her again. Some time was taken and he indicated that he would have to work a little longer on it. A few days later he returned with the statement that her mother had asked Dr. Hodgson for sittings with Mrs. Piper before his death. I have not been able to verify this statement.]

[Cough and apparent stoppage of breathing which was resumed with a sigh in a few moments, followed by Indian gibberish, and then a smile.]

Hello.

(Hello.)

Everything is rushing by me so fast. As fast as if I was a railroad train. [Pause and reached her hand for mine and I took hers in my left.]

Bessie, who is Bessie?

(I am not sure.) [Thought of Mrs. B.]

Do you know any one alive by that name?

(Yes.)

Is she a psychic?

(Yes.)

Why don't she do some work.

(I don't know.)

Is she afraid of it?

(Yes.)

How stupid. Her real power you know. Tell Bessie not to give up. She gets so blue at times but tell her to go on with it. She is rather nice looking.

(Yes.)

I suppose you would not know anyhow and others would have to tell you I guess.

(Yes.)

Do I know her?

(No.)

Have I ever seen her?

(Oh yes.)

She seems familiar to me. (Yes.) Any one call her Bess?

(I don't know.) [Note 229.]

---

229. This Bessie had a sitting with Mrs. C. and the record was published in the *Journal* (Vol. III, pp. 468-490). Mrs. C., I believe, never met her personally but once and that after the sitting. She did not know at this time whether she was living or not. In the summer Mrs. Smead purported to have gotten a message from her as deceased. Inquiry showed she was still living and that her two aunts had died some time before. It is possible that this reference is an attempt at some sort of cross reference, tho there is no trace of this purpose. She was quite psychic, but Mrs. C. did not know it normally. I had tried to induce her to develop it but she would not.

There are two Bess's we know. (Who is the other?) I think Mr. M. called his wife Bess. (Yes.) It was not him I meant in this Bessie. You will hear from her. Goodbye. See you tomorrow. [Note 230.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 26th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

[Normal.]

Do you know any one by the name of Cora?

(Yes.)

It seems as if some one kept speaking it. All the voice said was Cora, Cora, repeating it over and over. Cora and May, a little group of people together. Cora and May and Hattie and some one like Rob.

(Who is the Hattie?)

This little group all comes together and I don't get any more to Hattie.

(I only wanted it a little clearer.) [Note 231.]

---

230. Inquiry shows that Mr. M. did not call his wife Bess, tho he might well have done so, considering that her name was Beatrice. Bessie was the name that Mr. B. called his wife, assuming that the reference is to the person in mind, and the facts on any theory imply this. But Mrs. M. has a friend who calls her Bess. I did hear from Mrs. B. much later.

231. I can identify the Cora as an aunt, May as a cousin and Rob as a cousin or a brother, but the Hattie I do not identify. If Hattie were a mistake for Retta it would be Cora's sister, Rob's mother and May's aunt. There is no evidence, however, that this is the intention of the communicator. Later developments may suggest what was attempted. Cf. pp. 566-575.

That my conjecture about the possibilities of the name "Hattie" is correct I may refer to an incident in my first Piper Report. In the attempt of my father to get the name of my stepmother which is Margaret he got "Har" and "Hat" once. In an attempt to give the name Margaret in a connection that suggests James McClellan, whose second wife's name was Margaret, I got "Har" before I got Margaret which came immediately as in correction of it. (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI pp. 481, 482 and 491.) This established a tendency on the part of the control to get "Har" or "Hat" for Margaret. Now this Aunt was called Aunt Retta by all of us, and so Hattie might be a natural mistake for it, in which case the relevance of it with the other three names would be strong. One interest would be that this is not the first time that the same mistake has been made with the same name in both psychics.

I tell you all I hear. [Pause.] I don't hear anything more. I just caught that. I keep getting a sound like popping corn and a merry condition of life as if all was fun and merriment and laughter like fun over a fire and popping corn. [Head put back on cushion. I found the pillow had fallen and had to replace it.] Thank you.

[*Subliminal.*]

Have you had a long letter in a long envelope?  
(When?)

Lately. It is close writing and not typewriting. It is important and laid aside to read. Something on this line. There is so much to it. Some one gave it to you.

(I don't recall it now. I may reach it later.) [Note 232.]

Do you see Mr. Jones often?

(Yes.)

Has he disagreed with you?

(Yes.)

It seems he passed something like that to you. It seems as if he passes it to you, a lot of writing in it. [Not correct at this date.] He is not cross to you is he?

(Sometimes.)

Has he disagreed with you?

(Yes.)

Not separated?

(No.)

You are going to be together again. Some differences between you will be made up. There is a lot of things he can do. He sees people you don't. I think he knows what people

---

232. [As I copied these notes I recalled that, on my return from my last sittings I found on my desk a long summary by Mr. Prescott F. Hall of his experiments with a medium and some of his experiences. I laid it aside, written and not typewritten. The handwriting is small. A week or so before receiving it I had requested Mr. Hall to make such a summary, after running over his records with him. It is the only long letter of any kind that I had laid aside to read later and answers very well to the account of Mrs. C. in her subliminal state. She knows nothing whatever of the incident.]

think. He knows in his way and you in another way. It is all made up. He is true blue.

(I know that.)

He has true comradeship. You have no time to feel bad about things, but it affects your spirit. [Note 233.]

I guess I had better put my head in there. [Some signs of distress, and I placed her head in the rest.] It seems funny. I saw Madam. She sends greetings to you.

(Give my greetings to her.)

She thought she would speak before this personally. It was not that her word was important but as assurance of hearty cooperation with you and your band of workers on this side.

(Thanks.)

[Pause.] I am going off now, a long way. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawls with apparent attempt to write the letter M among them, but not certainly. Soon the hand seemed to get complete control of itself and to begin the writing with comparative ease.]

There are many who would gladly accept the theory of spirit presence and communication if no effort were made to idealize and exalt the ['exalt' not read but to show my doubt I spelled 'cra11'. The hand wrote 'ex' under it and I at once read it when the writing went on.] the communicators. They desire to keep faith in God and His angels, His heaven and hell and holy writ and have these communicators only people with a power augmented by death to assist them in material ways. They desire no religious training or teaching outside the theological schools [written 'school' first and so read when hand added 's'.] of the world in which they live. How stupid and dunce like such attitude. If men and women survive death and enter a new realm of consciousness the importance of life itself is the supreme interest and the accessories are less important and

---

233. The man named, a member of the Institute Board and a friend, and I had differed somewhat on certain matters rather radically. Mrs. C. knew nothing of it, and had no opportunity to know it. He lived in New York and she two hundred and thirty miles distant. The subject matter of dispute was a private affair entirely.

absorbing. As long as men insist on having spirits act as advisors in material matters they will have none of the beauty and delight of spiritual contact. [T]he life of spirit identity is real conscious and exacting in many particulars and the spirit side of mortal life is most readily touched, consequently artists poets preachers and philosophers thinkers of all kinds are more readily inspired by unseen influences. The highest and best in life becomes a part though [so read and then 'through' and again 'though', feeling that the next word made this latter wrong.] co-operation... through ... read what I wrote preceding.

(Out loud?)

No just before through.

(Yes, I understand.) [Read sentence aloud.]

of the real spiritual life which we know and are a part of. Yes I may not be able to make you understand how often the influences are so intermingled but you will know that my belief is that spirits are often held in bondage so to speak of the desire of their earthly friends as if any one should say Find my wandering boy ... Fin... ['find' not read at first but suddenly read now.] but do not talk to me of God. I know all about Him. You comprehend my meaning.

(Yes. I would ask how a spirit is held in bondage as described.)

Suppose your wife were to come to you and you by your attitude sealed her mouth as to the spiritual condition under which she lived but received her gladly, her every message of material purport. All the sweetest [not read.] and best in ... sweetest ... and highest would be kept away and her spirit held in bondage, not able to express the things best for you and yours. She might go away, there would be no bond to keep her from her perfect spiritual freedom over here but her love and interest would hold her in your circle of life and yet the spirit would have no freedom of expression. [Read 'impression' and hand tapped till read correctly.] Do you understand.

(Yes somewhat, tho I imagine it would have to be made definite in our ways of thinking.)

Explain.

(The detailed process by which that holding her down would have to be described in terms of our earthly experience.)

I see but I have said she might have perfect spiritual freedom but not expression. Your attitude of indifference or of denial might seal her expression.

(1 sec.)

You can have anything you like from our side. There are spirits who love to enter the world's atmosphere to find out all sorts of things experimenting with their power becomes a game at which they play with intense interest and eagerness [not read, because syllables were a little separated tho word is actually clear.] eagerness. If you desire to know about this one or that one they gladly seek information and fetch and carry at your will.

(Can they impersonate the identity of others both mentally and physically, so speak?)

In many instances yes but the impersonation is easily detected by one who seeks to know. Impersonation is not as easy a trick [read 'brick' doubtfully and hand pointed till read correctly.] as some people think.

(Then it has the same limitations as with the living.)

Yes that is where most people get into trouble. They make the capacity of a spirit unlimited. It is always subject to limitations and laws of the realm in which it survives.

(I understand.)

A materialistic person insists on certain things being accomplished by the aid of money but finds one day to his horror that money will not cannot ... cannot ... [rewritten to make me see that 'can' was substituted for 'will'.] never has never will—brought health or [pause. I thought *happiness* might come next.] morality. money has reached its limitation. Many a millionaire would pay for a new stomach but it is not in the market or he would pay for an upright servant but his money may not purchase one from a former master. Th[e] same law of limitation is with us. a spirit may do almost anything until the limit for him is reached. If then he will say so there is safety in his service but if through pride of [so read and hand tried to erase.] or conceit or fear he fails to speak and allows the idea to remain that he is all powerful mischief is done irrem

... [read 'even' questioningly.] [pause.] irredeemable. Yes [to correct reading.]

I did not intend to write at such length but the argument creates thought and thought creates desire for expression. My idea was simply to speak of the idiotic attitude of the average person placing the truth and circumscribing it with conceits and notions of their [their] own

(I met an exhibition of that recently.)

[Lectured before the Brooklyn Philosophical Association last Sunday and the ideas here expressed about money power and desire for particular kinds of phenomena were represented there by critics of my position, and I had this in mind when I put my question, desiring to see the reaction.]

It may have been that which called forth my opinion. We cannot always tell what starts a train of thought with us any better than you can. To tr ... trace a thought to its source is a fine art and few can do it.

Yes, your friend W. J. is here. I will omit further conference but I am always Your friend. Madam.

[Change of Control.]

[Indian.] Good morning.

(Good morning.)

my friend. I am glad to be with you again. I am using the energy generated by the last communicator.

(Good.)

and slip along almost without thought. I was not disappointed that I could not write pink pajamas as you suggested.

(No, nor was I.)

for the writing was all right as it was and I was rather relieved than otherwise.

(The case has not developed as much as is necessary for good work.)

Yes that is what I meant by relieved for the outcom... [pencil ran off sheet] outcome would have been of little use and you remember I desire [Groans.] to make few failures.

(Yes, I understand.)

I was pleased because I compared results here with those and Imperator even was unable to do what he wished.

[This is correct. No attempt was made to mention the "foun-

tain pen". I made no allusion to his failure when the subject was mentioned yesterday.]

Do [you] remember Mellin

(Mellin?) [Repeated and spelled to be certain.]

Yes yes a man whom I knew but slightly [Pause.] (Yes I shall inquire.) but for whom I entertain a regard for a specific reason. (I shall be glad to know it.) I love [read 'have'.] a good ... I love ... horse. yes [to correct reading.] I like driving so much better than automobiling. Yes [to correct reading.] (Good.) R. H. is laughing at that and also at my R. H.

(I know him.) [Note 234.]

you don't know how he can bravely face ignominious defeat and come up smiling. He is just as assured as when he fought the Blavatsky.

(Good.)

I was always interested in his work there and wrote him to that effect long ago. I have been asked at another place to come here with a message (Good.) and as soon as I can I will deliver it in part or whole. Greece that is an interpolation for a reason.

If I can grow to be able to drop in words which seem irrelevant it may help the message.

(I understand.)

You are a good receiver and that is important.

(I understand.)

I have said little about my friends. Do you remember the experience you had with one Shaler (Yes.) and my thought about it.

(I do not know the thought.)

I laughed when I read it and I knew the meaning of passing between the light and the connecting current for we had been taught at the Piper light. It was not so realistic a lesson but we got it. [Indian.] [Note 235.]

234. The name Mellin does not recall any one known to the family of Professor James. Professor James had no particular interest in horses and no one seems to be aware of any preference on his part for driving. He did little of either driving or automobiling, the latter no doubt as a guest.

235. The incident here mentioned is that of a sitting several years ago in New York. Professor Shaler had attempted to communicate through Mrs.

I am slow and not well seated but cannot refrain from going on. [pause.] I have recently been to see a mutual friend of ours, a man in another city, C— and I intended to bring good points. He was reading a magazine article. It was evening late. I saw him, his surroundings and even the clock. the time was ten 05 and the room was vacated except for him. he yawned and closed his eyes, looked at the clock, thought of me for a moment or two and put down the book, turned off the light and went to bed. This was Monday I am confident.

(Was it last Monday?)

I should say a week before.

(Good.)

It was an article which recalled me. [Groans or cries like distress.] I must not stay but tomorrow. Do not fear. Harry will \* \* ['wrt.']. write soon. W. J. O.

(Thank you.) [Pause.] [Note 236.]

---

C. and an accident put a stop to the sitting. I had walked behind Mrs. C. to open the door, the sitter being late and the writing having begun. It suddenly stopped and there were no more communications at that sitting. Shaler got locked up in the organism for a time, to use spiritistic phraseology. I told Professor James the facts and he was quite amused at them. Mrs. C. knew nothing of this fact. She did not normally know that Shaler had tried to communicate at any time and nothing about my having communicated the facts to Professor James.

It is true that similar phenomena occurred in the Piper case. Once Rector complained of my walking behind the light and in front of the communicating spirit, and disturbances of the kind were probably familiar to Professor James from conversation with Dr. Hodgson, but no such realistic an incident as mine with Shaler was ever reported to me by Dr. Hodgson.

I have not ascertained any meaning for the interpolation of the word "Greece". It is possibly a relic of some effort at cross reference, but I have no information to that effect at present.

236. I inferred that Mr. Carrington was meant by C. here as he was a mutual acquaintance of Professor James and myself. Inquiry brought the following reply.

"Re the extract from the sitting you sent me, there is no clock in the house except an old one in the kitchen, which has stopped for months. None in my room. On Nov. 14th I was not at home: on the 21st, I was reading various psychic books, for quotations. In this connection I naturally thought of James. However I did not go to bed for quite a time after this, 10.05. Mrs. C. was in the room part of the evening and I was alone part of the time. I think I read no magazines."

[Change of Control.]

Carrol Wright [The symbol for C was written with a swoop of the pencil and I did not recognize its meaning until I got the rest of the name. The whole was written slowly and with much difficulty. The letters were large and written and read one at a time. Indian gibberish occurred for some seconds after the writing of the name.]

[*Subliminal.*]

How anxious they get, don't they.

(Yes.)

Who is that man with an apron on?

(I don't know. Did he write his name?)

Did he or can he?

(Did he.)

Yes, why has he an apron on?

(I don't know.)

Did he ever work in a laboratory?

(I don't know.)

What has D got to do with it?

(Middle initial of his name.) [Note 237.]

I have got to go. Why are they pulling me out?

[Pause.] Hello.

(Hello.)

You are not discouraged are you?

(Not a bit.)

Are things going all right or are they slow?

(Oh no.)

It is slow work. (Yes.) Well it is all whirl and pink pink pink every where. [pause.] Oh my!

(Yes.)

I was not waiting for you to say that. I just wanted to ... [pause.]

I can see the front of Professor James' house and I see a

---

In my inquiry I had made allowances for errors of dates and asked for Mr. C.'s actions on the 14th as well as the 21st which was Monday.

237. The note at the end of the record of Nov. 27th (p. 338) explains the interest attaching to the name Carroll D. Wright and the letter "D" interjected here in the subliminal work.

lady going there with flowers for Mrs. James. She opens the door and the lady stays only a few minutes.

(Did you say 'a man and a lady'?) [I understood it so.]

No just a lady. Perhaps I said *and*. She has a big bunch of flowers. I think she is taking them for Thanksgiving. They are big flowers and look like chrysanthemums. not all yellow but some violet ones. Mrs James looks at them but tears come to her eyes. She is awfully lonesome sometimes. I don't know whether I am right or not, but it seems that way. [Note 238.]

[I coughed from mucus in my lungs.]

You will have to take more medicine. White Cloud will give you daisy heads.

(I need rest.)

Yes, but when you can't get it you will have to take medicine. Take my hand. [I did so, as usual to help her out of the trance.]

Did you ever see my dog?

(Yes.)

Do you like dogs?

(In the right place.)

Where is that? Not in your presence.

(Out of doors.)

What do you have, cats, or children?

(Children. They are nearly as good.)

That's your joke. [Smiling and a pause.]

What is that thing in my neck every time? [Signs of distress. I put my hand on it.] [Pause.] That's all right. Thank you.

Before the sitting I talked with Mrs. C. some time about the relation of fraud to mediums and explained how hysteria released mediums from that charge until proved by better evidence than is usual. I referred to my investigations of the Burton case in general terms and without mentioning names or any incidents, saying only that I had found her doing the things herself but in a trance and not responsible for them. I also compared the condition to sleep-walking and it was

---

238. Reply to inquiry brings the following facts: "A friend of my mother's, a lady, made a short call just before Thanksgiving leaving chrysanthemums. She was let in by a housemaid." She was not admitted by Mrs. James.

clear to her in that way. She told me of a friend of hers who did the same things and that she could have no mercy on her. I explained that if she were hysterical at all she might unconsciously do the things herself and not be censurable. This was new to Mrs. C. and she remarked that it was funny to find me teaching her to be kind to frauds.

This conversation occupied twenty or more minutes. The reader will see that it had no effect on the record. There is not a trace of it in the record.

The allusion to a stomach in the market, or rather not being there, is possibly a relic of the stories about Mr. Rockefeller's digestion some years ago.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Nov. 27th, 1910. 10 A. M.

Before the sitting Mrs. C. told me that the name Putnam kept coming to her every time she thought of Prof. James or felt his presence about. She says she knows the name well enough but not that it has associations with Prof. James. She then asked me if I knew a Putnam and on my affirmative reply, asked if he was not a short and stout man, and a gentle kind person. I replied that he was and asked if she had ever seen him. She said she had not to her knowledge and had never seen him to know his name. She asked me if he was still alive and I replied in the affirmative and she said that if this was true it meant something that Prof. James was eager to tell him, something that involved an unfinished condition.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell back on cushion with a hacking cough.] [Pause, and then a sigh.]

Oh how beautiful. [pause.] It is like a great world without a sound of the struggle and strife of life. Every moment is like sweet motion, grace [last word whispered.]

People seem so free, unloosed. It makes little difference who binds them, whether custom or habit or condition or situation, if they are all bound over here. All those binding influences are cut and life becomes fluid. flows. It is so hard and unyielding in the world, so flowing and responsive in the spirit. Why one

feels like making a prayer to have the life made fluid while still in the body. What is a railroad train to a fluid condition. It is all hard and noisy.

I see approaching us a little band of people. They seem to come into our atmosphere and close a little gate. It is not literally closing anything but is a sign that no one else is to come now. A gate here is a sign. Do you understand?

(Yes.)

It is beautiful to see them. Please put my head in. [Head placed in the rest.] If I can move it. [Shifted herself in chair to comfortable position.] I would rather come into contact and knowledge of spirit life and conditions in this abnormal way than not to have anything at all.

(Yes.)

Believe me there is a law that regulates all these things and by and by we will get hold of that law and then work will be simple and plain. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

My greetings to you friend of the earthly realm.

(My greetings to you.)

[Pencil was held in a peculiar manner, the first finger being around it and the second finger under it, tho it started between thumb and fingers. Its relation to the thumb was not altered during the writing.]

How good is faith which like a lamp in the hand of Reason lights the pathway to complete and perfect knowledge. Such faith the angel soul alone possetheth [possesseth] and through dark ages [read 'eyes' and hand pointed at it till correctly read.] of miserable doubt or horrible [horrible] despair he walks toward God unfalteringly and becomes another Christos. Blessed are the feet of such and where black unyielding rocks bring sacrificial blood or burning sands melt sinews [read 'saints', as pencil ran off page.] sinews [hand pointed at word read 'saints' to show that 'sinews' was its meaning.] yes [to correct reading.] the bloom of flowers and beauty of placid pool tell the story of the passage of saintly [read 'sandy'.] saintly souls to him who would read the history of the world. such a soul we seek and serve and call our friend and brother {written as if losing control

and hence slow in reading.] frate[r] [hand pointed to word brother, and I spelled 'frate' to see if it would add the 'r', but it only continued to point to 'brother' till I repeated reading it.] Doctor [pause.] r \* \* [scrawl] [I read the 'r' with the hope that it would be made clear.]

[The writing was very slow and labored and I had always to move the hand back to its position at the left side of the page. The name Doctor was written very slowly and with difficulty.]

[Change of Control.]

Do not study too hard over the name. It is a friend of the group who has been working long and hard with you and desired to express his interest in that way. Do you not know one in the Emperor Group like him.

(Yes.)

That is who it is.

(Thanks.)

and the effort was to write an R as an additional friend in his company.

(Good.)

whom you also know.

(Yes.) [Note 239.]

It is all very helpful from our side. They are helped by expressing and find more power after they have been in the atmosphere of the place to do the things desired both [read 'better'] here and ... both ... and elsewhere.

(I understand.)

You know how the plan [read 'one place'] the plan is to have cross reference established between here and England particularly in the James case and all these experiments are for that purpose.

(Good.)

It must be an associated people who bring about such grand results and so the effort goes on.

---

239. The "R" is evidently for Rector, the chief direct control in the Piper case. Doctor is the other associated with the group and had just communicated. Mrs. C. could possibly have known of them, tho not from reading the Piper Reports, except that of Professor James. She might have known something of the same personalities in the case of Stinton Moses, but she tells me she never read his "*Spirit Teachings*."

You know me all right but I am not fooling much now. It is Sunday and I have on my Sunday manner and so would not disturb the mighty peace which prevails. [Pencil changed.]

Here is a big company and they all want to do just the right thing and of course I have to fit in and keep the fire burning. You would not think of me as a cinderella would you.

(No.)

but I am really playing servant to those who put on the high and lofty manner. Ah but it is fine ['ah' written 'Oh' and so read.] ['fine' not read.] fine to have them so dependent on me. How would they hold control but for me.

(Good.)

Was the message good.

(Yes.)

Did it make you feel like a saint or a sinner. I suppose you just felt a new inspiration to do and dare and that wh [erased.] was what they wanted to do. It is lovely lovely lovely [not read each time.] lovely, lovely lovely 3 times lovely—lovely—

(Yes.)

Jennie P— says goodbye that some one else may come.

(Good.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Jennie P— says you always say good when she says she is going and she says she never had such insult heaped upon her before, but as she attribute[s] it [to] your ignorance of her grand personality she waits in patience for her day of triumph when she stands revealed before you.

(I can say 'Good' again when I meet her.)

Yes she is a wonderful personality whatever her name or nation. W. J.— is here and desires to send a message or two while it is fresh. I think he will write himself. at first I thought he was going to send it through me, but he likes to take hold himself pretty well. You know me all right this moment G. P.

(I thought so.)

You are seldom far off in your opinion of our personality. It is wonderful to see these old spirits who worked so long with me in the other place take such active part in the newer work

here. It looks like a revival [read 'real' hesitatingly, tho the letters are clear enough.] revival doesn't it.

(Yes.)

All this is good for many reasons which I cannot explain now. It seems as if the work was better here now than ever. more definitely strong— Goodbye. George Pelham [Real name written.]

(Good.) [Note 240.]

There so much for the name. Heaven knows how much longer we can keep it from the light and so I write it once for evidence.

(Yes.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

W. J. I am here and know that I am welcome and expected.

(Yes, thank you.)

The day is one of calm and serenity. I always loved the Sundays in life although I often worked and frequently had callers in the afternoon. [Indian.] Maggie is a name I wish to recall. I find myself falling into the old ways of reasoning and thinking about these matters. It is curious how the mind reverts to its past beliefs and understandings (Yes, habit, habit, habit.) even if those understandings are misunderstandings they have at one time built for themselves a theory which never quite loses its hold on the bran [brain], like threads interwoven in a fabric or bastings in a garment. They may be coved [covered] by the finished article but are still lodged somewhere and creep into sight at inconvenient moments. Sometimes in the midst of my writing I find these arguments of mine like little demons popping out. Still I am able to compare my past and present with comparative ease. We who know the destructive power of haste are not concerned that we cannot return with all knowledge on our minds immediately. I find a strange thing happening at times. My thought will perhaps rest for a moment on some friend or event and it seems to fall through layers of consciousness till it reaches the bran [brain] of the light and then it is repeated

---

240. I here got the real name of G. P., as I had done once before in the personality of another communicator. Cf. p. 287. Later inquiry showed that Mrs. C. had not known his real name.

vociferously. Much h... [hand evidently supposed it had not finished the previous word when it had to move to the left side of the page.] like the reverberations of sound between hills or buildings.

(I understand. What do ...) [Note 241.]

Putnam was a case in mind.

(Good.)

Your question.

(What do you mean exactly by layers of consciousness?)

I am sometimes near and sometimes far when I have tried experiment. It is as if there were waves of consciousness about each person, thought waves. As these advance and recede sounds from our finer ether are caught and carried to the brain and the degrees of consciousness are like zones and record the sounds, but there is ceaseless activity and only one in myriads is [pause.] recorded on the lowest plane of vibration. Have I made it clear.

(Yes, I get an idea sufficient to understand it. Is the sensation comparable to our threshold?) [Question repeated to make it clear.]

Our threshold, yes it is.

(Good.)

I am so absorbed in the wonder of it all. We dream and dream and wake to find the tangle of dreams an orderly and plain matter of living progress. My dreams were toward the truth but not the truth itself.

Hyslop the last thing I remember eating [read 'taking'] eating was a bit of bread. I had some light food and then no more and then a bit of bread which I dd [did] not eat except a taste or two.

(I understand. That is good.)

---

241. I am informed that Maggie was the name of a housemaid that the family had the year before the death of Professor James. There is no known reason for the mention of the name. If we suppose Professor James communicating at all, we should have to treat the name as an automatism, one of those wandering associations which might characterize either a trance condition for communicating or the margin of consciousness.

The phrase "layers of consciousness" is very like the conception which Mrs. C.'s subconsciousness sometimes uses to define the various stages of depth of the trance. The continued discussion of the same topic may have a similar meaning, tho I never heard Mrs. C. talk about it in that manner.

[Indian.] Eggs Eggs but uncooked. That is all about that.  
(I understand.) [Note 242.]

[Pause.] I know that those I loved wonder if I am with my own and I say Yes. Tuo [?] [most probably 'two'] mothers and a brother T. [read 'F', tho a clear 'T'.] T [made clear by straight line at top.] and father who always tried to make life a real and tangible expression of God. His idea and mine was so different and he was so firm in his conceptions. His death was longer coming than mine but he welcomed it for himself. O. [Just before making this sign the hand showed it had lost control and it was with great difficulty and slowness that the sign was made, and the pencil fell.] [Note 243.]

[Change of Control.]

How did that happen I wonder. I think he suddenly lost his hold.

(Yes.)

I am R. H. What is the hour.

(Nearly up. It is ten to twelve.)

That was it. he had used the vital force in his effort to recall. He is going [so read, but evidently intended for 'gaining'.] gaining though I think.

(Yes.)

You are coming again.

(Yes, next week, or rather this week.)

Thursday.

(Wednesday. Oh yes, Thursday.)

All right. We want to keep exact [not read.] exact account for we are trying some things for evidence.

I see a blackboard all marked and marked with much use as if old and worn. It seems to have been one connected with William. It was in his earlier work and belonged to him personally.

242. The younger son did not remember any facts of this kind, but the older replies to inquiry with the statement: "Not true as to the eggs, but he ate a part of a piece of bread the morning before his death."

243. Professor James had no stepmother and hence the reference to "two mothers" is incorrect. But perhaps the terms "mothers" and "brother" were written in the wrong order: for he had two brothers who were dead, one of them dying less than a year before himself.

(Good.) [Note 244.]

I also see a cane round smooth [not read.] smooth wood rather brown than black and a gift from some one from another country. He brought those two things and another parcel [read 'parent' knowing it was wrong.] parcel which he is opening now for me to se [see]

(Good.)

I laugh when I see it for it is a cheese, a kind he liked exceedingly and one that was sent him. It is an Edam. Shining [?] Funny is it not.

(Yes.) [Note 245.]

I must go now but we will try and have some special things next week.

(Good, thanks.)

Goodbye. R. H.

(Goodbye, thanks.) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] Do you know any one named William, William, William [uttered with difficulty.] that he liked?

(I am not sure.)

[Pause.] I don't mean James: I mean Hodgson.

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] Do you know Harvey?

(What Harvey?)

Just Harvey. [Pause.] Goodbye. [Sigh.]

Oh say, Dr. Hyslop. Do you know whether they are making or got a bust of Dr. James?

(No.)

I see something like a bust of him. It is all white like marble. They seem to be pushing me back. I don't know why.

[Indian.] Old well had to be covered up.

(What well?)

On the old place and now they use a new one.

---

244. No special significance attaches to this allusion to the blackboard. He had one, as inquiry shows, in his laboratory, but this might be guessed and even if it were not there is no known reason for referring to one.

245. Professor James had a cane, but none such as is described here. No one recognizes any meaning in the reference to Edam cheese.

[Mrs. C. suddenly opened her eyes with more or less surprise.]

What happened?

(Nothing.) [Note 246.]

Did something happen?

(Oh a little. What did happen?)

It seemed as if somebody pulled me away from something.

Apparently this feeling that something happened is a transfer of what had occurred in James' loss of control. I have never witnessed this transfer to the normal consciousness before. It happens to the subliminal often enough, as the record shows. Perhaps it was the sudden awaking this time that caused it.

Before the sitting I asked Mrs. C. if she knew Carroll Wright, omitting the 'D' purposely, to see if she would recognize the name and supply the letter. She did not recognize him or supply the letter. She replied that she knew nothing about him, but thought she had heard of him, and asked me if it was not he that had talked about the causes of high prices. I said 'No', as he had died long before this question arose, tho I did not tell her this. She still had a vague idea that she had seen the name in the street cars in connection with an advertisement, but soon she recalled that it was John Graham Brooks, getting the name Brooks first, and then said it was he that she thought was Wright. She asked me if I

246. At the time the names William and Harvey had no meaning to me and they would never have obtained any significance but for the allusion to the "old well that had to be covered up" and the later communications regarding a cousin in connection with whom this well was mentioned. The father's name was James, so the William and Harvey would be brothers. The circumstance gives meaning to the two names. The well was an abandoned one on the farm of this cousin and the names William and Harvey are names of his Uncles. They have no relation whatever to Dr. Hodgson. Absolutely nothing could have been known by Mrs. C. to make either names or incident relevant, and it was certain that there was no excuse for associating them with Dr. Hodgson, who may be supposed to have been the helper in sending them.

There was no bust of Professor James, but one was made of Dr. Hodgson by his friends. It was not marble I believe. It is not probable that Mrs. C. knew anything about it. The confusion in this passage reminds one of the old Piper messages.

had not said something about him yesterday. I said I had not and asked her why she thought so. The reply was that the name seemed familiar.

This was apparently another transfer from the subliminal, as the record shows that his name was written automatically at the close of the sitting just before the subliminal work began. But she had no knowledge of the man that she could recall.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 1st, 1910. 10 A. M.

In her normal state just before putting her head on the cushion Mrs. C. said "I hear the name Anna." There was a pause and in a few minutes she put her head back on the cushion.

{*Subliminal.*}

[Heavy breathing two or three times and then a slight groan and a pause, followed by a sigh and slight groan, and a pause again.]

I can't seem to get away from the world. There is something they are trying to show me. I see a boat and some water like a little lake or river. I can't get away from the place. I am just held there. Do you know of any one drowned?

(Yes.) [Thinking of Mr. Podmore as reference was made to "drowning".]

Drowned in still quiet water, not the ocean or surf and not a wreck. It is more like . . . . [pause.] Oh dear! [Pause.] Oh [groan.] I can't see any more. Do you want me to?

(Just as they say.)

Why do I not get away? It is all rushes and sedge grass. I try to grasp it. I don't get the right name of it. Big blades and rushes. I tried to pull them but lost my hold and am sinking sinking. [Pause.] I shall die. I shall die and no one will know. I think I see my father's place. [Pause.] [Note 247.]

---

247. The name Anna is that of my sister, but whether intended for her or some one related to the person associated with the drowning is not determinable by the text. It is only the reference to my friends that suggests a connection of the name with my family and that without evidence.

The incidents about the drowning person probably refer to Mr. Podmore who died from drowning in a lake.

Now I feel better. Now I see your spirits.

(What does it look like?) [I thought she said "spirit" referring to my own, but next sentence shows she meant my deceased friends.]

Your friends that come with you. [Pause.] I heard George say....

(George who?)

[Pause and twisting mouth as if in contempt of the question.]

George P. No use to try any longer today.

(Who's that?)

To the one talking about drowning. You don't mean he is referring to you.

(No, I meant some one else.)

You are not afraid of my cheating you.

(No.)

You are never afraid of anybody.

(No.) [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

We are here and are trying a few experiments but nothing which will hinder the free use of the pencil. I am G. P.— and ready for work. It is not always easy to begin at once [read 'first'] once but when we can do so we will. I have been called upon to give evidence here once before this week. You will remember the Morse case.

(Yes.)

She was here and as the report was taken I felt I might say a few things. She is under the impression that J. comes to her and is being as... ['being' read 'very' and hand pointed till correctly read.] assisted by her power. This of course is ridiculous but we let the matter rest because of her peculiar fancies [not read.] fancies. She has some remarkable power but it is unsteady and unreliable but we are eager to hep [help] her out of her difficulties and place her where she belongs. I tell you this that you may ask for the report and give some good advise [advice.]

(Yes.)

after you read it.

(What place does her own mind have in the appearance of James?)

Immediately after his passing she was sure that he was in a very weak and enfeebled condition. She felt a desire to help him as she always has desired to help [help] the work, a very good and laudable desire, but he could not use half the help which was offered him in all good faith by numbers of psychics as [erased.] all over the world. She kept him in her mind quite unconsciously and at last a phantasm was projected by her own thought. You understand.

(Perfectly.) [Cf. *Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, pp. 564-589.]

We were perfectly conscious of this and were powerless to prevent it and when she came here for her interview we asked Starlight to pass that matter by as lightly as she could and we believe she did. still you had better get a copy of the report and see just what was done.

(All right.)

I have been with her on one or two occasions at the place where she imagins [imagines] im... [not read first time and started to rewrite when I suddenly read.] great strength [read 'straight'] and ... strength and forces are combined for her help and for the help of such as us. [read 'as'.] us. Now the place may be all right but it is not the kind of power which James or Hodgson desires to use or needs [not read.] needs [spelled 'neicds' but read 'needs'.] yes [to correct reading.] It is not always the physical [read 'psychical' and hand pointed at it till read correctly] power which helps. sometimes a weak sensitive is better than a strong one if the power is of the right quality. You know this. But the place is good physically for her.

(I understand.)

There is only one fault. She grows quite sure that she has the cream of the dairy and no skim milk but no dairy is all cream.

(That's right.)

It is no use to advise her but keep her checked so that she does not lose [read 'use' and hand pointed till read correctly.] her identity as she was in danger of doing. She has phantasms of her own creating mixed with near... [mixed read 'merged' and hand paused and I reread it 'merged' and then it went on as if that would do.] with nearly all her manifestations. But it is an interesting case to study from our side. Do you understand.

(Yes, and from my side too.)

Yes indeed and you can keep her near for study with what we are able to do. She is not unruly but egotistical and does not know it. One may be egotistical for truth and about truth. All prophets and great leaders of masses had a large amount of egotistical matter in their brains. [hesitation in reading.] yes [to correct reading.] you know egotism is a horse which carries many good things to market and is all right if driven by a ['driven' not read.] driven [not read.] and . . . driven by a good master. Have you anything you want to ask about her.

(Nothing that I recall now. What I did ask was to understand how the process of impersonation arises and goes on.)

I see I think what you are after. A spirit identity may be present and yet be clothed by her imaginative power quite aside from any desire of her own. There is another phase in her case. She talks with a little spirit, a guide of some one who knows her desire to be connected with the mighty ones of this work and that guide is unconsciously looked upon by the thought of the lady or by the spirit who wishes to please the lady and come in disguise to keep her in the work.

(Good, then impersonation may actually take place without the presence of the person.)

Yes in some instances and in many instances an imperfect sight might produce [produce] the impression that the person wished for was present. For instance James lends himself to a very ordinary description. Suppose Mrs. Morse goes to a psychic and a description of an old man with gray beard and blue eyes and & & is given. Mrs. Morse can see no other [other] personality present except James who is on her mind.

(Good, an illusion.)

Yes the man present may be her grandfather as far as that is concerned but she never thinks how impossible that James should come and how probable that her grandfather should but thinks of her desire to help you and the work, and says I know who it is and then the trouble begins. It takes more than description to be sure of a spirit. There must be a combination [read 'communication' and hand pointed till correctly read.] of evidence, yes. [to correct reading.] You see do you not.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Now when she is alone and sees what she thinks is a certain

spirit she may be wrong or right. It has to be proven. Her simple say so that she saw James or Hodgson or me is worth nothing at all.

(I understand.)

and yet she may be honest and kind and desirous of helping you. As a matter of fact we have been there a number of times and are eager to help her if it can be done.

(Good.)

Have I covered every point.

(Yes.) [Note 248.]

All right. Have you heard from Harry.

(Not yet.)

It is rather strange is it not.

(Yes.)

Never mind. You know how to wait. You are the most patient and hard working waiter [read 'brother'] I ever saw ... waiter ... but you get no tips [read 'cups'] from ... tips from me. You give none either as I understand you do not believe in the tipping system.

(No, not for spirits till sceptics quit quarrelling about unimportant things.)

Well keep your money. I could not use it over here any way. The skeptic is a hard lot but we will bowl him out if we keep on.

(Yes, now George, is there anything to report from New York?)

Yes and elsewhere. don't be in a hurry. We know what is on all right.

(All right.)

You know we told you we were trying to get something through in England and I believe we have done something.

---

248. No evidential value attaches to the discussion of this case. It has been an interesting one, but Mrs. C. knows all about it and we shall have to assume that all said here is subconscious. The discussion, however, is extraordinarily relevant and characteristic of those who understand the scientific side of this investigation. Mrs. C. understands its general evidential nature quite well and may be familiar with the finer points of the discussion, tho they never turned up in our conversations on the various aspects of the problem. Nevertheless I have usually found her acquainted with the problem in a way to make points of this kind unimportant for evidence.

There has been so much lost faith and courage over there about the Piper light that it is like beginning all over but we shall win [read 'be in'] win... You know to what I refer.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Note 249.]

it was their [read 'thus'] fa... their... fault largely but they do not understand that the great mistake was made when the light herself refused to work for you. You were sure of it but could say nothing. It is a past condition and I only refer to it because it has a bearing on the present.

(Yes.)

James sees now where he might have made a stronger protest and helped to win the battle for you and he is annoyed that the attitude he took has some effect on the way your messages are now treated. You understand that also I know.

(Yes I do.) [Note 250.]

I will let H— talk of N. Y. for I am about used up, that is I have written so long. But first let me tell you that I was there. Do you know I seem [written like and read 'Sam' questioningly.] to be ... seem to be in evidence almost everywhere as H— was at one time but I hope I don't make the fool of myself that he was wont to do. He says he will have me muzzled if I keep on but what good would that do. All Society dogs wear muzzles when dining out. Put that together if you can.

(All right.)

Well I was at the place in N. Y. and some good things were apparent. It [not read.] It takes a little while to get at the work but after a little it came all right. You know what I mean.

(I am not sure to which you refer.)

The second.

(With whom?)

[Pause.] Not you but another. It was rather slow at first and other things crept in but the main point was good and I was there. also in fact the whole band tried to help as it was an ex-

---

249. Mrs. C. knew nothing at this time about matters in England and neither did I, save that I had incidentally heard that Mrs. Piper had not been able to go into a trance since the Hall experiments.

250. There is nothing verifiable in this. I know nothing of the attitude he took after Dr. Hodgson's death, save in the most general way. Mrs. C. knew nothing about it or that he was even related to it.

periment [experiment] well worth our effort. It is not a steady light if you know what I mean. It is all right for a time and then suddenly goes down and then relights [read 'blights'] relights. yes. [to correct reading.] It is good power but unsteady. The sitter was good but a little anxious. yes [to correct reading which was delayed.] for the perfect work. Do you know if James made his sign.

(No there was no apparent effort at that. Only one personality seemed to try.) [I was thinking of my own sitting with Mrs. Stiles. There had been two by Dr. Bull previously.]

I know who you mean by the personality but that one represents us all. That you know.

(Yes.)

It is sure or ought to be to you that where the King goes his subjects follow bithely [blithely, not read.] blithely. yes of course [to correct reading.]

(Good.)

Now I must go as I said. G. P.—

[Change of Control.]

[Several pencils rejected before one was approved.]

Greetings son of mortality. The [writing with hard pencil seemed difficult and I exchanged it for a soft one.] light waines [waned] but I come to give you word of courage and good cheer. The day dawns and the sun of Truth is rising to fill the dark recesses of eath [earth] with light and glory. The established order passes away the old chains fall apart.

(Another end of the world is it not?) [Put to awaken ancient associations in communicator whom I took to be Imperator.]

Yes the end of the reign of terror and Death of eror [error] and fear. Love and life and peace and progress make garlands of hope to crown the head of man. How lovely the light the work the plan for service. Losing hold of opportunity in one direction we eagerly seek this open door and seking [seeking] find and finding enter and speak the word. With ever ready acceptance of the challenge for the b... ['for the b' erased.] to the battle for truth.

We have come in another place at another time and sought to give the word of assurance that the work is on a better basis than

before. The weakness [read 'darkness'] was gradually... weak... [suddenly read.] overcome and we grew stronger and hope to come again. You will recall [recall] the lady of some little time ago when we attempted to do work but it soon failed yes [to correct reading.] You know that I am Imperator.

(Yes.)

and that the old light has failed us and that work must still go on for the world. We did not fail the old light the old light failed us and the constant demand and question as to where we could be and whether we had lost our power of control is well known to us.

(What is the present condition of that light?)

not very promising. The breaking of old ties and associations in many directions have left [after reading 'have' hand went back and wrote 'has' under it.] shattered nerves and frayed conditions all about. It was so unnecessary that it gives us pain. The time may come when you will have opportunity to do what you asked permission to do before but it is not wise to plan too much on that particular light for the ways have parted and the path is not easy. If you could have done it at first you could have won but the old reputation can never be recovered

(I understand.)

and the lost ground is lost to our work forever. It was not our fault. That I assure you. Each soul has a right to freedom of choice for souls are supreme in the order of the universe and that soul blinded by false hopes and ambitions sought material freedom at the expense of service for us and the result was disaster for both as far as present conditions were concerned. But we waste no hours in useless repining. Up and on must be the cry of the reformer. [I coughed several times.]

(Yes.) [Note 251.]

251. All that is said about the "other light" identifies it with Mrs. Piper and is quite true to the facts so far as known on this side. It is not possible to confirm those indicating the "other side". Mrs. C. knew nothing about the case at this time, as my inquiries showed. Only those familiar with the whole subject can estimate its value.

The reference to "false hopes and ambitions" and seeking "material freedom at the expense of service for us" has a meaning which I cannot fully explain here, and represents facts which Mrs. C. did not know and which

It is late, you are weary. I will come again but for this hour

Adieu

Imperator + [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Do you wear sandals?

(No.)

Who does?

(I don't know.) [Still I thought of Imperator as relevant.]

I see some feet with sandals on them. Is it time to go back on the cushion?

(Yes.) [I put head on cushion.]

Don't hurry. You think I am impatient. [pause.]

Do you want me to tell what I see?

(Yes.)

It looks like a strange iron thing, more like wrought iron. You know what I mean.

(Yes.)

It is like a tripod and [pause.]

(More.)

Yes as soon as I can see, and on it are some things that I am looking at. It is a ... [pause.] like strange writing and it ... I throw it over and it comes down on sheets. The paper is strangely thin. It looks now like a scroll. There seems many sheets and rolls back over this thing. Before it is an immense man. He is so large and looks to me and he is dressed in a robe. He looks like a stage character. Of course he is not this. He has sandals on. In his hand is another roll and he is reading from this as if it was something left for him. There is a great rug, fur rug, like an animal skin on the floor. Everything is wonderfully beautiful as if a picture of the past. Strangely enough on this paper is written like things of today and I see some numbers 10 and 30, as if that were an hour and after that the letter B. and a ... immediately I am taken to another place a small room and this is not so far back as if a house and not so deep. You go in the door from the street and up steps and back

---

very few people in the world at the time knew, and in fact very few now know. A more interesting incident can hardly be imagined in connection with Imperator.

a little but there is one room and there I sit down with a lady. I see all the spirits around, group of spirits. She is rather slender, not especially old, rather young than old. Funny I see an inkstand, some paper and a woman sitting opposite exactly like a woman going to have a sitting with another woman. Spirits are around and her eyes are closed. The writing is like here, but no head rest. Do you know the place?

(No.)

That is what I see. Isn't that funny?

(Yes.)

Has it anything to do with you?

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] On this woman I call a medium I see a white pointed thing as if it was a dress cut down in front with a chain on. No it is not the medium. It is the other woman. She has a white shirt waist. That is all I see. I don't feel much interest in it. I guess I must go. Goodbye.

What's the matter?

(Making notes.)

You need not be cross.

(I am not.) [Note 252.]

All right . . . . . [irrelevant talk I could not take down.]

[Reached for my hand and I took hers. In a few moments she opened her eyes looked at me a moment, then looked about and said: "What is it all about"? Then closed her eyes again and placed head on cushion, awakening a few moments later, not to remember anything about what she had said or done.]

252. Imperator purports to be an ancient and hence the reference to sandals is very pertinent in this connection. This will be true on any theory of the source of the illusion.

The description of the man applies well to Imperator as he has manifested through several psychics with whom I am acquainted. He has always appeared with a robe, but the other habiliments have not been mentioned to me before. Mrs. C. could not possibly know of these things normally, and I do not know that any public statement has yet been made of Imperator's appearing in a robe elsewhere. But the known fact that he is an ancient might affect the matter without such knowledge of his appearance elsewhere.

It is not possible to tell what woman is meant in this passage. It is probably an attempt to describe what Mrs. Piper was doing at this time and I have not yet had any means of verifying the account.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 2d, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Do you know any Sarah especially interested in you?

(Yes.) [Thought of an aged Aunt by that name living, and a deceased sister.]

I saw her a moment ago standing by the sofa and she came behind me. She spoke as if the term implied she knew you. She had a very plain dress and hair plainly fixed and was all as simple and . . . . I think some affair among the living calls her and she is anxious to speak about it. She is not old, but middle aged woman, rather strong and active. Another name is spoken by her, Bertha. That is all I hear. Mrs. C. then closed her eyes and sighed, and then came a pause.] [Note 253.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Eh or Hm.] [pause.] [Head fell back on cushion.] Oh hum! [Pause.] There is so much activity here. [Pause.] Sometimes when I come into this state everything seems so peaceful and still like the Sabbath. Today it is a busy and active time. I see movements of people and things. There are some new people you know. I see a picture of a seat on a common like our own Boston Common. There is one there without a back like a long bench it is. I didn't know they have them. They used to. I see Dr. Hodgson on it talking to some one. He has his leg around as if facing the person he is talking to and using his hand and arm in an expressive way. He is telling a friend something he has found out and that . . . . It is summer, more like spring than summer and a man with him. They get up. That man has to go away and has only a few minutes to wait. It is strange I thought he was going to the South Station, but he goes toward Park Square. The old station was there. This man is going to take the train at Park Square Station. I can't see him. He is smaller than Dr. Hodgson, slighter and shorter. Did you ever do that with him?

(I am not sure.)

The man is about your size and then I see Dr. Hodgson come back from there and goes out through a side door at Church St.

---

253. The names Sarah and Bertha are not identifiable by me.

and across the corner of the public garden and down the street as if going home. It seems that it was the six o'clock train in the evening. He goes toward his home. Was that the direction of his home?

(Yes.) [Note 254.]

It is funny that should come here. [Pause, and groans.] Put me in. [Head placed in rest.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Handled and examined pencil, rubbing it a few moments.] [Pause.]

I have been here some time thinking of the many experiments. [read 'experiences' and hand pointed till correctly read.] in the past and have dwelt with pleasure on some of the work which it was my privilege to see accomplished. I can never lose my interest in the theme for it grows more and more impressive in its expression and opportunity. I wish I had known more of the general work as you have tried to understand it. I had no time. I was forever at certain phases and could not seem to get away from them.

(Neither can I get away from the same phases now. I had all my training in the general work while teaching.)

Yes I know but you seem to have naturally dropped into an understanding of various expressions. I believe it may have been your work, your calling or profession which gave you an insight into some possibilities I felt and do [not read.] feel ... do ... a sadness whenever I think of the changes that have come to the light through whom so many things were revealed. It is no common case and I cannot feel reconciled to the situation.

(How would you compare the merits of that case with this one?)

I see so much that is superior here that I find myself rather surprised that I did not know more about it before but it was not

254. This is a very likely set of incidents and might apply to more than one person. I have a vague recollection of being accompanied by Dr. Hodgson to the old station mentioned—now torn down—but I am not sure. I have sat with him in the Common, and I remember leaving Boston at that station once or twice. Of all this Mrs. C., if it relates to me, could not possibly know normally unless she guessed it.

in the way of comparison but as a past condition of service that I felt a gratitude and grief combined. I think you have much more and better things in shorter time than I ever had. do not you think so.

(I know too little about your whole record to make comparisons.)

It is a hard thing to do but the methods are clearer. that is the one point which stands out plainly to me. We had striking and remarkable things now and then but some that were utter [not read.] and ... utter... and complete failures without the definite reason being made plain to me. I had to work on both conditions and results and that is not exactly the best way to get a clear and comprehensive view of the work. One's mind is bound to take the conditions into account. You understand what I mean. When I knew that the whole family was up in arms over some household affair I was bound to see that as a limitation and make a passive excuse for some lapse but that came from knowing too much of conditions. [Note 255.]

---

255. The references to the Piper situation again represent more than any normal knowledge of it at this time. The statement that he "saw so much that is superior here" represents more than he, Dr. Hodgson, would say in life so that it would have its genuineness questioned on that account, to say nothing of the suspicion of personal vanity on the part of Mrs. C. This interpretation of it is the most natural one to make and it may surprise the reader to learn that I happen to know from personal conversation with Mrs. C. in her normal state that she always supposed Mrs. Piper to have been not only superior to herself but superior to any other medium because of the noise and fuss made about her. Besides Mrs. C. has no personal vanity about herself and in the Starlight trances, while she can and does do good things, she would never impress the average student of the subject with anything like equality with Mrs. Piper, tho at times she did as well. But Dr. Hodgson had nothing to do with her personally in life and knew of her only from a few reports sent him by persons whom he had sent to her. He saw nothing to impress him and his surprise here is a natural thing judging from what I have seen of the case and what this record indicates, especially the latter part of it.

The allusions to his having to adjust family matters as well as study the phenomena are true to his experience, but how far it may have been guessed by the subliminal of Mrs. C. any one may determine for himself. All that I can say is that she knew nothing of it normally.

Possibly the term "superior" refers, not to a comparison with Mrs. Piper,

(Have you found that her subconscious affected the results at times?)

You refer to the P—— case.

(Yes.)

Many many times and I did not give that side of the question sufficient time or thought.

(What about the experiments to tell whether other persons were lights or not?)

I know to what you refer and I think there were mistakes made there, almost unconsciously the effect was produced of judgment over the rest of the psychic world. Do you know what I mean.

(A little more definite please.)

The questions themselves involved or presupposed a superior knowledge and conditions or standing and that acted on the subliminal ego just as it would on a person only in slighter degree and a sense of superiority was created and often a judgment was given quite unfair because of it. In a way it was vanity. Do you see now. [Note 256.]

but to the better quality than expected, in which case it would remove the suspicion of vanity that would naturally attach to the language, and might also reflect something almost evidential by suggesting what he actually thought when living, as he did not have any special confidence in the case, tho sending strangers to her. The reference to the "striking and remarkable things now and then, but some that were utter and complete failures without the definite reason being made plain to me" is exactly true and its aptness is not known to Mrs. C., and few persons know the incidents which make the statements so apt. There were certain failures in the Piper case which were wholly inexplicable on any hypothesis that we know and I could name one that had vexed Dr. Hodgson very much, partly because of the absolute failure in the main incidents and partly because of its premature publication in the papers by the sitter. Mrs. C. never knew this fact or the chagrin mixed with perfect confidence in the substantial correctness of the phenomena in spite of the errors, and she would have had to know the facts intimately to summarize the case so briefly and accurately.

256. This admission of the extent of subliminal influences on the results in the Piper case and the statement that he had not taken sufficient account of it in the Piper case is true. How far Mrs. C.'s subconscious may have affected the whole affair at this point I cannot determine, but as she firmly believes herself that no message can come through without being colored by the subliminal, we may suppose that this influence acts here. But it is so rationally discussed in the passage and represents language which

(Yes. Do you remember one light I brought there after you passed out?)

Yes I do remember and I know some of the things which were said and some which were omitted [read 'untold'] omitted. You can never realize how much I was hindered by the very conditions I had created by my attitude of [pause.] surety [not read.] [pause.] confidence toward that light and doubt toward others. It was not a real and tangible doubt but was sufficient to impregnate the aura about the light. It was a lesson I have learned in humility and through failures. William will have none [not read.] of that ... none ... to work through for he was completely disillusionized [not read.] disillu... [suddenly read.] yes [to correct reading.] and only had to begin all over at any place when he found you or his friends. That would always be best to trust the friend to go to the right place and then do the best one could at that place. Imperator was rather autocratic anyway [not read.] anyway and helped me to the decision that we had the most remarkable one to work with. We compared with some of the foreign ones rather favorably for the whole air of respectability was about us. All that made a(n) impression [read 'it impressive' and hand pointed till correctly read.] on those who experimented. Look at Palladino for instance and several of that class [not read at first.] I ... cla ... [unfinished because suddenly read.] I wanted and tried to keep up the respectable appearance as a part of the work. I am sure you understand that.

(Yes I do.)

Although you lay little stress on that form yet I know its effect on the investigator.

(Yes, and I think you were right and I do as much of the same as circumstances will allow.)

I understand you and I know you understand me. I leaned [read 'learned'] leaned too far perhaps especially when I was encouraged to classify all the rest. It is true [read 'time' and hand pointed till correctly read.] that the power comes to all alike just as the gift of song may be in the prisoner's garb or the reflects so much larger amount of knowledge of the subject as a whole than she has that the coincidence with what would be true of Dr. Hodgson has its rights. This view of it is sustained by what follows.

palace of the king. We can choose which way we will. The whole matter rests on which will use the gift of song to the best advantage and for the best service for humanity. Have I made it plain.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 257.]

I long to speak out on these matters many times but we must have just the proper time and place for specializing our work. I might drop into a center [not read.] center and give a most excellent test of my identity and that helps to establish the truth of identity but the philosophical [philosophical] and reasoning power only comes in right conditions. You will see that more [not read.] and more... more ... as you go on with the work. Among our own members we had a large number of psychic people. They were [not read.] were drawn to the subject by their power whether consciously or unconsciously and made up a large body of influence and if we could have had recorded experiences from them with the same precision and ease [intended for 'care' and hesitation in reading.] care as we used ourselves

257. When I asked about the "light" that I had brought to Mrs. Piper, I had in mind the young lady whom Dr. Hodgson and I had visited together. The entire reaction here is correct. I had published the record the previous July (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV., pp. 100-101, 626-628, 676-680, 683-685), but Mrs. C. has not seen that Report and if she had the contents of it would not supply the views expressed here. It is quite true that his own confidence in Mrs. Piper and doubt about others, both of which were quite characteristic of Dr. Hodgson and probably known by Mrs. C., did affect, or could affect, Mrs. Piper's subconsciousness to a large degree and "impregnate" it with his ideas. But it does not seem to me to explain the fitness of the discussion in regard to that special case, tho I have no means of protecting my own judgment against doubt on that point. It is possible that Mrs. C.'s knowledge of Dr. Hodgson's policy was sufficient to give rise to the whole discussion in this passage.

The allusion to Imperator and his autocratic manner is correct and probably not within the knowledge of Mrs. C., and it is very characteristic and true that he had insisted on respectability as a condition of impressing a certain class of people. It is doubtful if Mrs. C. knew anything about this personally or as more than an inference from the general policy of the Society. This possibility weakens the circumstance as evidence, and hence I can only mention it as interesting and true, allowing each person according to his or her experience with the subject, to estimate its value as an alleged message from Dr. Hodgson.

our archives would have been the most valuable contribution to science.

(Yes I understand.)

You are awakening your people to the fact that their own experiences are as valuable as any and that is as good work as can be done. I do not want [read 'mind',] you ... want ... to think of me as grieving seriously [not read at first.] se. . . . over the outcome of the P— light. I had a strange streak of reminiscence and felt a genuine sorrow but the future [read 'failure' and hand paused till correctly read.] always calls one to duty and duty well done is a panacea for regret. [Note 258.]

(Duty in the future is one's penitence or penance.) [Said to watch the reaction.]

Yes. If I pay penance for my lack of understanding, my ignorance in another way of speaking, I do what is the manly and right thing.

(Yes, I understand.)

Ignorance always has the price but the ignorant do not always pay it. It comes out of the heart [read 'head' and hand dissented and was then read 'heart', when writing continued.] of the people. But ignorance grown [read 'grows'] grown wise pays its own debts and redeems its own dark past by a bright future.

(Good.)

Is not that a good thing to report from me.

(Yes.)

---

258. I certainly have tried to do the very thing here asserted of my policy, namely, to awaken members to the fact that their own experiences are as valuable, if recorded rightly, as our experimental results. But I am not at all assured that I have succeeded as here stated. How much Mrs. C. knows of this policy I do not know, but it is certain that she could not obtain the information from any one but myself, as it has not been a prominent part of the work as publicly known. But I might have casually mentioned it to her. I do not recall that I did, and it may have been inferrible from things said and done.

Dr. Hodgson did have among the members of the American Branch a large number of people who had had psychic experiences and the fact was probably not known to Mrs. C. Her interests were wholly apart from the Society.

I can see my admirers howl at that but you understand that I am not on my knees eating [read 'acting'] dirt eating [read 'acting'] eating dirt but am standing upright speaking the truth.

(Yes and perhaps I may have to learn similar lessons.)

You may. I do not know but you are more humble than I was and then again you have been knocked down several times and that may be a part of your penance.

(Good.)

We do not all have to learn in the same way. You have had such dreadful helpers first and last they had ambition enough to satisfy Cæsar but you did not see it until they started out to command your own forces and then they had to abdicate because you have the independence of no salary. I was rather more dependent than you but I had a better helper [helper].

(Yes correct.) [Note 259.]

It is not long I hope when you can have a good woman or man to take up some of the minor work and leave you free to do the big work of classification which awaits your hand and brain.

(Have you in mind any one that might help in the minor work?)

Yes we have been trying to arrange some things from here but it is not quite right yet, soon will be. You know you have failed to prove predictions made for you by the croaking prophets of evil. you should have failed long before this. You dog every one opposed to you. say [erased.] saw just where you were making mistakes but you still live and succeed and are drawing [read 'drawn'] drawing friends to your banner.

How is this. I see Billy [read 'Betty'] Billy [still read 'Betty'] Billy. Yes [to correct reading.] Billy working away on some affairs of his own in regard to this work. Did he have some reports to look over.

(Yes.)

---

259. This about my helpers is quite accurate and the comparison with his own is also as accurate. I cannot explain the details that make it so pertinent, tho I must say that I am not at all sure that it is beyond the subconscious knowledge of Mrs. C., she knew normally the persons referred to, and tho she knew nothing of Dr. Hodgson's helper, I must not urge the point too strongly. The allusion to my independence of a salary more than probably represents normal knowledge on the part of Mrs. C.

I saw him at them and he was rather pleased and I am sure we are to have more help [not read.] from . . . help from him. I think I must be writing poorly. I feel so. [Note 260.]

But I wait [so read.] to . . . want to speak of Eliza. Eliza. Do you know to whom I refer.

(I am not sure.)

My friend Eliza. Eliza who lives far away and just now I recall Julia also. Strange how these memories crowd in and when that is [so read the three words.] when there is nothing to bring them out apparently. I was only intending [not read.]

---

260. The sudden change to a different and evidential kind of matter is interesting here. It happens to be a good incident as the following confirmation will show. Professor Newbold, whom the Billy means as indicated in the Piper Reports, writes on the date of December 6th, postmarked December 7th, 1910:—

"The allusion is very pertinent, indeed it could hardly be better. On November 7th Miss Verrall wrote asking me to let her have certain of my sittings which were not to be found among those sent to England. When I received the letter it must have been about the 14th or 15th. I was very busy and as I did not remember where I had put those sittings I did nothing for some days. Finally I unpacked a box which I had originally packed in April of 1907, just before going abroad and there I found them. I spent some hours reading them over, decided that I must take out certain sheets not relevant to the subject in which Miss Verrall was interested, and then wrote Miss Verrall that I would try to get them in shape for her as soon as I could. The next night, I think, I read them and arranged the sheets, but since then I have not had time to do anything more with them. The exact date I cannot fix, but I think it must have been about Nov. 20th or 21st. If Miss Verrall has my letter that will fix it, for I wrote her the first night—I am quite sure—and continued looking the papers over the next night or the next but one.

"The peculiar value of the allusion lies in this. So far as my recollection goes this was the *first time* I had read those sittings over since I was working on my report in the summer of 1896. They certainly had not been in my hands since May of 1907. Before that I kept them filed on shelves in a locked bookcase at the University. Of course I *may* have looked them over in the intervening years, but I certainly have no recollection of it.

"The phrase 'he was rather pleased' is also, to my mind, very striking. I found certain statements which I had quite forgotten and which have been abundantly verified in the course of fifteen years. They were pleasant statements and the verification pleased me very much. I regret I cannot give you details for publication, but will tell you all about it when I see you."

Miss Verrall writes me that the date of the letter which Professor Newbold thought was the 20th or 21st was the 24th of November. This dis-

to . . . intending to speak of Billy and the other names came along and so I write them.

(Yes.) [Note 261.]

I wonder if you recall John.

(Who? John who?)

John C——

(To whom related?)

a lady of my acquaintance [pause in spelling.] in life.

(Good. Go on.)

It is so long since I tried to recall about them that I only desire to give the name now.

But here is an incident I wish to give. I had an umbrella given me by a friend and when I passed away it was sent with some other things of mine across the water. Some of my things were sent across you know do you not.

(Yes, but that umbrella. Was it sent across?)

I thought it went with the other things. At least it was talked of and may have been retained after all.

(I do not know anything about it, but would like to know who gave you the umbrella.)

I have the thought and memory so definitely with me of my pleasure and appreciation of it. It was given me by a lady who still [read 'said'] still is with you (All right. Go on.) and she has often thought of it and wondered about my expressing nothing about it. Only as a bit of evidence. That is all.

(Good.) [Note 262.]

---

crepancy in his memory does not affect the case, as the sitting was on December 2d and his letter to me, as indicated above, was on December 6th.

261. Professor Newbold writes me that the names Eliza and Julia have no meaning to him. Their close association with the incident related to him made this inquiry necessary, but I can place the Julia in Dr. Hodgson's acquaintance as the name of an old friend of his who had sittings with Mrs. Piper. The Eliza I cannot place.

262. The John C. is not identifiable by me. It suggested a friend of Dr. Hodgson who had had sittings with Mrs. Piper and to whom a John had communicated. Inquiry shows that his name was not John C., but John H. This friend had never given Dr. Hodgson an umbrella. The sister received no umbrella sent as affirmed.

[While reading proofs yesterday it occurred to me that Dr. Hodgson was an intimate friend of Col. Bundy and as a consequence I to-day tele-

I was once visiting with some friends when I had a severe of [attempt to erase.] attack of acute indigestion and was given some simple household remedy which soon relieved me. That was taken when away in the country and I have often thought I would recall that also.

(Can you indicate who it was by any evidence or who gave the remedy?)

Not just now. I am going to begin some day just as James has and slowly and carefully recall some of the past.

(Good.) [Note 263.]

I may be able to do some good things yet. Do you know Lucy P—

(No.)

It is like Palmer a lady over here. She seems eager to get to her friend who is connected with us in a way. You know this. I am losing strength [writing showed same.] but it seems as if I had done more this time [not read] this time than for a long while.

(You have had the whole hour.)

Thank you. I hope it has been of some use to you.

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about Iron Works. Gilmanton Iron Works.

(No, I do not.)

You were never there.

(No.)

William just gave me the name and gave it as evidence. [Note 264.]

---

graphed to Chicago to the Editor of the *Progressive Thinker*, asking if Col. Bundy's name was "John C.", and the reply was that "John C. Bundy" was the correct name. He was the Editor of the *Religio-Philosophical Journal* and died a number of years before Dr. Hodgson. I did not know his given names, always knowing him only as Col. Bundy. Dr. Hodgson never spoke to me of him in any way except "Bundy". Mrs. C. would not know anything of Dr. Hodgson's relation to him, especially as the man died before she became a psychic. March 9th, 1912.]

263. The name Lucy P. or Palmer is not identifiable.

264. Gilmanton Iron Works are not identifiable in connection with Professor James who purports to refer to them. Henry James, Jr., however, writes me:—"The old name of Chocorua Post Office and village was Tam-

Oh by the way Wright is at last on the right track. He is rather slow to come to conclusions but he has turned [read 'timed'] his ... turn..... face toward the light at last.

(Good.)

He had more or less influence with W—— I think, do not you.

(I do not know.)

Some of his conclusions while in the body troubled [read 'enabled'] troubled W. J. and yet he knew they were far from careful, yes. [to correct reading.] Do you know what I mean.

(No, I do not.)

C—— W—— had some conclusions erroneous about these matters (I expect so.) you know that and W. J—— knew it. W. J—— was a friend of C—— W—— and the conclusions annoyed him to a degree but he could not do anything and he wished after C. W. ['C' not clearly written and so not read. Only 'W' read, and hand tried to erase.] C—— W—— passed away that he could know how he looked at things.

(Good.) [Note 265.]

I go now but I thank you. Yours R. H. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What is this big vase I see? Was Dr. Hodgson fond of vases?

(I don't know.)

He has got a great big one. Were things sent to his sister?

(Yes.) Personal things I mean. (Yes.)

---

worth Iron Works. The name was not changed until after we had spent several summers there. I can think of nothing else of the character of the above." Chocorua was the summer home of Professor James.

The mistake of "Gilmanton" for "Tamworth" may be stretching the case more than the circumstances allow, but it is not greater than many mistakes of the kind in the Piper case. It is certainly not correct and only the fact that Professor James' summer life was associated with Iron Works of any kind suggests the possible error.

I had been at Chocorua village and knew that it was once called Tamworth Iron Works, having learned it incidentally the summer Professor James died, but it never occurred to me to suspect the mistake.

265. The facts here stated are not true with reference to Carroll D. Wright. They might possibly be true of Chauncey Wright, but I have not at the date of this writing (July 10th, 1911) verified this hypothesis.

• I see this vase among some things sent. There is a piece broken out of it. I don't know whether it was broken on the way or since. Anyhow I feel badly. Goodbye. I stayed long didn't I? [Pause.] [Note 266.]

[I took hold of Mrs. C's hand to aid her in coming out. In a moment she sighed and after a pause spoke broken Indian.]

I don't want to get up yet. I'm sleepy. It isn't time for me to get up, I can get ready before ten. Oh you tell Dr. Hyslop I can't do it. I am going to give up the sittings. They're no good. You tell him, Mabel. [Smile and in a moment awakened, with no memory of last statements.]

This was the first evidence I have had of Mrs. C's being on the borderland of sleep. I told her the circumstance when she came out and she remarked that she had said to herself recently that she felt like giving up the sittings. She has her times of discouragement, but gives less expression to them than she used to do.

The reference to me as possibly the man associated with the incidents of the seat and going to the train has its apparent pertinence. I am not sure that I was associated with any such incident in connection with Dr. Hodgson. I think it more likely that it was some one else, if the incident has any truth at all, and it very likely has on any theory whatever. I remember once going to the station named and only once in my memory. It was in the early days of my interest in this subject, but I do not recall sitting in the park with Hodgson or feel sure that he went to this station with me.

---

266. Inquiry of the executors of Dr. Hodgson's affairs did not result in recalling anything about a vase. Neither did two other rather intimate friends know anything about it. Inquiry of the sister in Australia resulted in the following reply:—

"I have a little vase of very rough workmanship. It looks like polished clay, white with blue markings. It might be Japanese. It has a crack down one side, about five inches high. It is very unfinished and very weighty for its size. This was amongst Richard's things."

At some earlier sittings with Mrs. C. allusion was made by Dr. Hodgson to something Japanese which I was unable to verify by any one that knew about his affairs. Perhaps this vase was what was meant. The incident is made clear here.

I have a vague memory that he did, but this may be an illusion. The station long since went out of use and has recently been removed.

Dec. 2nd, 1910. 10 P. M.

Present Miss Whiting, Mrs. Rice, Miss———, J. H. Hyslop and Mrs. Chenoweth. Last happened in at a social gathering.

Talking about the subject, she saw Dr. Hodgson in a brown suit behind me. Then a man with blue eyes, dark hair, mustache and light beard lighter than mine and then it suddenly disappeared, meaning to Mrs. S. that he had not always worn it.

Then a lady with hair in knot on head, black dress, delicate hands, alert and active and saw what she thought was small letter 'o'. Then something like a medal or a watch, not a locket, but uncertain if it was a watch.

Mrs. Rice recognized a deceased friend of hers in the description and the details, having had the watch mentioned by another psychic. She had been talking of the lady during the evening but not of her description or things. Only experiences she had had in connection with her since her death.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 3d, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I see a little baby in some one's arms. It is in a man's arms. I wonder if you know any one by the name of Robbie.

(I am not sure. Not in that form.)

It is Robbie's baby.

[Mrs. C. then paused to make a remark or two about a lady she met last night where I also was present and criticized her briefly.]

I am awfully sleepy, goodness. [Head fell back on cushion.] [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear. [Hacking cough.] [pause.] [Asked to have head put in and I placed it in rest.]

Do you know something I keep hearing Ira Ira Ira Ira. A name, Iron or Ira, Ironton. I can't get it. Some one is shouting it in my ear.

(Keep at it.)

Ire.. Ire... Ironton. Do you know anything about that?

(No.)

It is an old man and he has come in front of me to look at me. He is a very ungainly looking man, scraggly beard and farmer like clothes. He is perfectly furious because he can't seem to say all he wants to and is not understood. All the rest are laughing. He is not laughing. He is irate. Do you know any one by the name of Sweeney?

(Yes.)

He looks like the man described.

(Yes.)

That is who it is. I seem to be released from his wrath. He is funny. They can't help laughing at him. He goes at everything in that tremendous way. If he wanted to lift a mountain he could not use any more energy. Is J connected with him?

(I don't know.)

Put it down. That looks as if it belonged to him. Hodgson motioned that they couldn't give him any more time. If I named him I would call him Irate Sweeney. [pause.] [Note 267.]

(Yes.)

Do you want me to tell you what Dr. Hodgson says?

We have cooked Frank's goose.

(All right.)

[Pause.] He puts up his right fore finger and says there will be something doing immediately. There is a desire to hear from him and he desires to speak but we can't have him around here dictating terms. He did so all his life and now he must take our

---

267. As soon as the name Sweeney came I recognized the person described. John McSweeney was a gifted lawyer and orator in Wooster, Ohio, where I had gone to college. This was all that I knew, save that he was dead. I learned by inquiry that he had died in 1890. He was a very large and burly man with an extraordinarily shaggy beard and immense voice. He did go at things in a tremendous manner. John McClellan, whose death was predicted in the Piper sittings (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 471) was intimately acquainted with him. This I did not know, but learned from his son, as well as other facts here mentioned. From this son I learned that

terms. I don't think Dr. Hodgson liked him much. Did you know it?

(No.)

There seems to be a natural antipathy to him from early encounters. This antipathy had started out with ideas similar to Frank's but he became a turncoat. That is Frank's idea. He laughs. I better not talk any more. You have to write and use up your energy. They want it.

(Yes.) [Pause.] [Note 268.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[Hand moved about the pad twice, and then followed for some minutes attempts at shorthand. This I could not read. At the end of it the pencil was thrown down and a pause ensued.]

[Change of Control.]

\* \* [scrawls. The first is a clear figure 2 and the other a wavy 'M', tho there is no reason to suppose it intended for this. It might even be a continued effort at shorthand, or attempt to make the letters R. B., which followed almost immediately. Before writing clearly and at the end of the scrawls the hand made a sort of voluntary shake.]

---

one of the intimate friends of Mr. McSweeney lived in Ironton, Ohio. I got into communication with him and he writes that Robbie was the name of an important client of Mr. McSweeney. His name was Robert, but he was always called Robbie by Mr. McSweeney, and he tells me certain facts in the life of the man that make the reference to him pertinent.

It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know these facts by any conceivable process of casual information, or otherwise except by a detective bureau of very large proportions and plenty of funds, which she does not have.

268. It is probable that there is more of the spirit of antagonism in this reference to the relation between Dr. Hodgson and Mr. Podmore who is meant by the Frank than was true to the facts in life, but its general spirit is what I know from personal conversation with Dr. Hodgson to be true. It was Dr. Hodgson, Professor Sidgwick and perhaps others that educated Mr. Podmore into his sceptical ways and out of his optimistic hopes for spiritualism in his Oxford days. I had this from Dr. Hodgson's own mouth, and hence we may well understand the allusion to "turncoat" here which would apply to both of them. Mrs. C. could know nothing about this unless we suppose it guessed which is extremely improbable. The "antagonism" was probably a subconscious interpretation of good humored banter between them at the moment.

R. B. again. I come to test my strength and declare my attitude and add my name to the list of immortals. I would give joyously [not read.] of ... joyously of my new and enlarged powers to you and those who seek to know the truth. How wonderful is the interrelatedness of life and effort. God is a spirit and we in spirit and truth [read 'with'] truth alone discern him, not in grasses green or flowry [flowery] almond trees do we see [see] God, but [not read.] but in the spirit of life embedded in the dark earth where germ of grass and flower unite with Him and burst [read 'first' and hand paused till read correctly.] into full and per ... [end of line.] pefect [perfect] accord and expression. So from the dark grave this spirit of God united with ... united [read 'termed' at first.] ... the germ of soul springs into expression beautiful and complete and makes glad the life of humanity.

I live I love I am content. I sing my songs of love and life to tones of truest harmony and grow to likeness of the eternal Peace as the heart beats serenely neath [read 'with' questioningly.] ... below ... the stress and activities [read 'adversities' tho knowing it could be this only by great abbreviation and guessing.] of ... activities [not read.] activities... of the struggling members of the body of life.

Thank you and my gratitude to my friends and confreres in this work.

Yours hopefully

ROBERT BROWNING.

[The writing was difficult, slow and unusual in style. There was a pause after almost every word until rightly read and for some time I had to help the hand over to the left side of the sheet. Finally it acquired power to do this alone, but with a jerk. [Note 269.]

[Change of Control.]

[Cough and groan.] I am here and am glad to have helped you to get this word: for it has been a long time coming. He has been active in many ways but desired to try this experiment of actual use of the hand and will be a help. You understand that every new center that is allowed a demonstration, if successful ... if [read 'of' first time.] is so much added energy for us and

we are working for world wide interest and growth. It is good to have scholarly men who have m... have [read 'know' first time.] made for themselves a name and a place in the world's affairs.

(Yes especially when it throws light on Sludge the Medium.)

Surely surely and it all goes into the makeup of the work. You could hardly find blame for a man who loved truth entirely and completely and his wife as his soul to find some excuse to draw that wife from the contaminating ? [interrogation point inserted.] influence of the low and mean tricker [pause when writing as if conscious of some mistake and then without suggestion or hint from me the hand wrote " (trickster[ ]) "].

(Yes.)

and that has gone into history and while the man had perfect faith in the woman he did not wait [want] to see her duped. yes [to correct reading as I paused a moment.] the fear of seeing our loved ones made fools of drives [not read.] us... drives [not read.] us... made fools of drives us all to extremities.

(Yes I understand.)

even to versification in questionable meter about a questionable affair.

(Good.) [Note 270.]

I was glad to show myself last night and what did I tell you about the name.

[At a social gathering of a few persons the evening previous Dr. Hodgson purported to be present, was seen in brown suit, this not being known as characteristic of him by Mrs. C., and another man was described but not recognized by me, tho recognized by one present as G. P., and his real name divulged to Mrs. C., who told me she had never heard of him before, and had to be told that George Pelham and this person were one and the same.]

It is all right sometimes to take time by the forelock and pull him about.

---

Readers will remark that it is poetic in sentiment and manner and also that the language is peculiar, more so than is usual with the writing of Mrs. C. But there is nothing recognizably characteristic of Mr. Browning to me.

270. The note at the end shows the probabilities of the allusions here.

(Yes.)

W. J. is here and feels if h... ['feels' not read.] feels as if he ought to try a little writing for practice because he wants to lose nothing. We are all gaining fast in the power of expressing. What did you think of that attempt at shorthand.

(Very good. Who was it?)

R. H. He once tried to learn about some sort of thing like that thinking it would help him and he had a helper here today but some day we are going to surprise you with some real stuff.

(Good.) [Note 271.]

We have to practice and see what can be done and so you will understand when you see a Greek letter or two or anything else strange.

(All right.)

Goodbye Hyslop. This is fun [read 'finè'] for me ... fun ... and I am happier than I have been for a long time.

Kate field says she thanks you for giving her message to Lillian.

(I am always willing to do that sort of thing.)

She appreciates your courtesy and says she will find a way to influence some resources toward [delay in reading.] toward your fund. G. P.

(Good.) [Pencil fell.] [Note 272.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian and groans.] W. J.

(Good morning.)

Good morning. I am not willing to have you go away without some effort to make myself [pause.] known.

(Thank you.)

You are willing and glad to wait if necessary.

(Certainly.)

I know and yet I cannot feel the time go without regret. a

---

271. Dr. Hodgson did practise an original shorthand. Mrs. C. knew nothing of this, unless some allusion to his "cipher" in published material might have suggested it. I think the cipher was mentioned, but not explained in the James Report.

272. I had taken a message from Miss Field to Miss Whiting a short time before. Cf. p. 289.

thousand thoughts come with the opportunity and which to select is the only question. I have a large key [read 'kery' without excuse therefor.] [pause.] key and wished to speak of it.

(Good, I shall be glad to know all about it.)

It was one I seldom used. It was always in my desk and had been there for years. It was connected with the college and gave me entrance to class room but as that was always opened I did not use it.

(Good.)

After the new buildings were added there were changes in the old one and new keys were [groans.] provided but the old brass key was retained and is still among my possessions [possessions]

(Good.)

There is no sentiment about it.

(I understand.)' [Note 273.]

just an incident. Another thing I desired to write of was a cablegram received by my family after I was gone. I do not recall that as readily now as I expected and desired to but the reference [groan] is worthy. [groans and pause.] I am all courage and patience [groan and pause.] I am just as busy [moving body as if in distress.] as before I left [face twisted as if in pain.] the scene of my life work.

(Good, we shall all be.) [Note 274.]

Hyslop do you know I think I should have lived ten years longer. [Indian.] I had enough work planned to last about that time.

(I believe it.)

How the press praises the dead heroes and by its battle and

---

273. The key incident has not been verified. No such key has yet been found among his affairs. The language about the buildings also seems not to be accurate. Mr. Henry James, Jr., writes me:—

"Seaver Hall, containing nothing but lecture rooms, was built twenty or more years ago, and thereafter my father's courses were sometimes given there. But there was no room which would have been regarded as his room. On the other hand, the Laboratory was moved from the Lawrence Scientific School to Dane Hall; but Dane Hall was an old building." Cf. 454.

A key and a box were associated with Professor James in the Burton sittings. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 618.

274. Several cablegrams of condolence were received, but no special evidential significance can be assigned this incident.

strategy toward progress keeps the hero growing among the living. I was so often misquoted and made ridiculous by the same press which now does honor to me that it is a source of lost use.

(I understand. It always abuses all of us in the same way and we can take it out in advertisement.)

Yes but advertisement is of so little use unless one has shoe-lacings to sell. [The reaction here was quite different from what I expected.]

(Yes, I spoke from the point of view of the subject and the Society.)

I understood but wish... [pencil ran off page.] wished you to know that I was alive.

(Good, I understand the point.)

I am to do more work later so go now. Your[s] W. J. O.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian sounds. Face showed distress and hand placed on neck as if in pain. Pause.]

R. H. Just a word to give you my assurance of helpful interest. I feel that the work ought to warrant [not read.] warrant more help but time alone will prove how good the world will be to you.

I have a strange taste of French fried potatoes [last two words not read at first.] fried p... in my mouth. You may not recall but it was a favorite dish [read 'diet '.] dish of mine and strangely enough I thought of them and there instantly was the taste in my mouth.

(Good.)

I mention everything as it comes as it may be of value.

(Yes.) [Note 275.]

---

275. No one is able to verify this incident of the "French fried potatoes". At the Tavern Club the waiter that knew the habits of the men there rather distinctly remembers that he did not and says that he recalls but one man who had the habit of ordering them. As the note at the end indicates Mrs. C. does not care for them and has not had any for two years.

If I could assume that a certain person I know was present here and that the allusion to "French fried potatoes" was such an interfusion of another personality with Dr. Hodgson's, as he earlier indicated was some-

Is it late.

(The time is just about up.)

We always seem to know by the amount of energy. Good is it not.

(Yes.)

Next week you return.

(Yes, on the regular date, Thursday and the following week I expect to have a friend for five sittings from Monday till Friday.)

We will be on hand and do all we can.

(Good.)

You have so many who ought to come and who will later, Goodbye. R. H.

(Thanks) [Pencil fell and Indian sounds began.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello.

(Hello.)

Are you happy?

(Yes.)

Is this going to keep up forever?

(I don't know. I leave that to the gods.)

Who are the gods? Money?

(No.)

Opinion?

(No.)

I know what you mean. But they are false gods. One is money, one opinion, one ease, one folly. They serve pleasure. (Yes.) Yours is the truth and its advocates and its leaders. [Pause.] Well, I don't know. I'll find a few gods. Goodbye. Put me back. [Put head on cushion.] I am cold as ice. [Her hand was quite cold.]

Do you know Cook? [evidently suggested by feeling cold.]

(No.)

You know about him?

(Yes.)

I always knew he never did that. I disagreed with Miss  
times the case, I could give a very significant meaning to the allusion. But there is no context to confirm the hypothesis.

Whiting. She thought him a gentleman and that Peary was not. I had one friend, Mrs. Bingham. There never was such a colossal fake. I laughed every time I saw roses around his neck. People go mad over a hero. Goodbye. [Pause.]

Who is this Sidis? [pronounced 'Siddis']

(Who?)

Siddie or Sidis. [Still pronounced 'Siddis']

(I know.)

What has he got to do about this? Anything?

(No.)

He thinks it is foolish.

(Yes.)

I thought so. Did he ever talk with Dr. James about these things? Did he have confidence in him?

(Yes.)

Some wise men are awfully foolish. They don't know where their power comes from.

(Yes.)

If any fool knows how to put the power on he can make a trolley run. He don't know where it comes from. That is Sidis. It is funny. James had good arguments. James says he would like to talk with him now. Goodbye. I am bothering you talking too much. [Note 276.]

---

276. This is a reference to Dr. Sidis whose name had figured in public print on account of some remarkable things connected with his son. Professor James knew him well. Sidis was in fact a student of his. Dr. Sidis used hypnosis in much of his treatment and has effected many interesting cures by it. He has no interest in psychic research and tho he recognizes that it is legitimate may be said to think it useless. All that is said about him here is perfectly pertinent, but it is possible that Mrs. C. knows enough about him to vitiate much that is said, perhaps all but the reference to his attitude of mind about this subject, which has not been a matter of public expression. He may be said to be sympathetic and tolerant of it, but yet without interest in it and certainly would not spend his own time on it. The pertinence of what Professor James says about wishing to talk with him now may be seen in this incident. After the publication of my article in the *Journal* (Am. S. P. R., Vol. IV, pp. 1-29) on "Suggestion and Mental Healing" Professor James wrote me that he entirely agreed with me in the views there expressed. I had indicated that we did not yet understand the powers used in hypnotism and showed by its constant relation to the supernormal that we might find a solution of its problems in the admission of something analogous to the fluidic

After sitting I asked Mrs. C. if she liked French fried potatoes and she said she did not and that she had not had any for two years. I did not tell her explicitly why I asked the question. After her reply I simply explained that something was said that made it necessary to ask the question. I had suspected that she had been eating them and that this was the cause of the reference to them and their taste. It seems that my supposition had no foundation.

I also asked her what she knew about "Sludge the Medium" and she said she knew absolutely nothing about it and did not seem to know who had written it. This would seem to make G. P.'s allusions evidential.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 8th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] Oh I see a woman coming. Hello, Dr. Hyslop.

(Hello.) [Recognized Starlight.]

I just came to see you. I did not want you to think I had forgotten you. [Pause.]

Who opened the door?

---

theory but without calling it by that name. It was clear to Professor James what that meant and it was quite an astonishment for me to find his expressed agreement with the position. It is apparent that this is hinted at here. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know the facts which make this allusion through her so pertinent. If I had talked to her about Professor James at any time it might be questioned, but I had refused to say a word about him under any circumstances.

[Mrs. C. writes me that she knows nothing about Dr. Sidis. I had supposed that she had known the public interest in his work with his remarkable son, tho that gave no hint whatever of his interest in hypnotic agencies. I think it probable that she has heard of the boy, but she evidently knows so little about him that the name has suggested nothing to her here. Apparently my statements about her probable knowledge in my original note are not correct.]

[I asked Mrs. Chenoweth "what she knew of Dr. Sidis and his work and whether she knew what he employed as a medical agent" and her reply was: "Nothing." This makes her ignorance of him far more than I had supposed, tho it is true that the newspaper accounts of him and his remarkable son conveyed no information on the points involved in this message.]

(Just now?)

Yes.

(No one.)

[Pause.] I saw it open. [Pause.] and the people coming.  
[Pause.]

Oh such a beautiful influence. [Cough as if strangling.] Oh! Oh I hear a voice singing. Oh rare sweet day. Day of all days the best and all earth's troubles fade away and the spirit seeks its rest. Oh there is so much more to it. I can't seem to catch it all. It is sweet singing. Put my head in. [Put in rest.] [Pause.] That is better. [Pause.]

Some people would call what I see the angel life but I know they are spirits who have lived and died. [Pause.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

[The hand had reached for a pencil and I inserted one. In a moment the hand tried to write with the top of the pencil by turning the hand over backward and to encourage this I inverted the pencil and then the hand tried to write with the top again at the other end and I had to change it again. It was held in an abnormal manner.]

William McKinley [last part not read till next control told who it was.] [Note 277.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning. I am G. P.—

(Good morning.)

ready for work and have a word to say about these people who try to write a name or message at the beginning of the seance.

(All right.)

Sometimes we invite a man or woman who is interested from our side in these matters to come and see the beginning of the work and sometimes consciously sometimes unconsciously the influence is projected and is shown either in intelligent or an unintelligible [written 'unintelligible'] attempt or by a vision given to the light.

---

277. There is no recognizable reason for the appearance of Mr. McKinley in this record. There is, of course, nothing evidential associated with his name and the allusion may be interpreted as we please.

(Yes, do you know the name of the person who just tried?)

Certainly, do you think I am kept in ignorance of the real identity. It was he whom some of the band have a special adoration for. I myself have not shared that because he did not come to his great estate until after I had left the world.

(I did not get the second part of it.)

McKinley. Surely I thought you knew.

(I could not read all of it.) [Note 278.]

He was weak in psychic power probably. It makes the greatest difference who the communicator is. sometimes one will be so strong and psychic that the work is easy as can be and again the power will be lacking and we all have to supply from our own and then you sometimes get a fusion of ideas. You know what I mean by that.

(Yes I do.)

It is something in the manner of taking hands at ... hands [read 'points' the first time.] at a circle. Each one contributes but does so unconsciously, but we know when and what we give.

(Good, I have another matter to speak of. The lady by the name of Ruth for whom you worked before was not identified by the person to whom I thought she was related. Hence I was wrong. You will have to give her name in full and the person of whom I may inquire.)

Thank you. We will let it rest a little until I can get her in communicating condition again.

(All right.)

Sometimes the person is right here and ready and sometimes when the mistake has been made in identity it has to wait until all is right again. We always feel a sense of disappointment

---

278. It is true that Mr. McKinley came to the presidency after G. P. died. Mrs. C. could have inferred this. But nothing evidential can be made of it. The interesting point is to find it stated that he is a subject of special respect by the guides of the medium and not by the control, G. P. On the theory of secondary personality this would appear to be quite anomalous. Mr. McKinley was well known in connection with tariff problems before G. P. died, so that it is possible that G. P.'s attitude of mind toward him is true, but not easily provable.

[Mrs. C. writes me that her own attitude of mind toward Mr. McKinley is one of indifference.]

when it is not right and strangely we did not feel that after the Ruth message was given.

(I do not think it was wrong, only I did not have sufficient data to be sure for whom it was meant.)

I understand and I wish you to understand me. We have no feeling except [except] [both words not read.] of... feelings except desire to enlarge our evidential possibilities.

W. J. is here and wishes to write. I do not know what his rush [read 'wish'] is... rush ... but he seems eager so I give up the pencil.

[Change of Control.]

[Indian. First pencil rejected.] I am perhaps superceding my right but I wished if possible to get some more matter through and I feel strong to day and so asked permission to come early. It is useless to spend time and energy talking of things you are well aware of so I omit the little [little] forms of greeting and question and at once try to reach the point. I am constantly surprised and amazed at the evidence of close and constant intermingling of the different states of existence and of the most loose and general way in which evidence of the fact is given and the lack of specific evidence. What often seems perfectly clear and evidential to me becomes inconsequential and weak in the record. This is perfectly true of all normal conversations. Only in class room, boks [books] and courts is conversation purely and solely a matter of intellectual effort.

(I understand.)

In daily life it is a spontaneous expression of the spirit.

(Yes and the supplementary influence of other sensations.)

and the more active and elastic the brain the more complete and well balanced the personality the more rapid the play of thought and word. This in report sounds vague and broken, formless and without structure. It is all wrong.

I have been with Harry for hours at a time since my pasing [passing] from the physical body and I was a clear and interested listener to his conversation but to repeat it I would be obliged to refer to notes which did not exist. We have about the same capacity as when in the physical world only the psychic power is intensified. Many conditions in your world intensify the special

senses such as sound or sight or smell. Sound is carried so much further in some atmospheres than other[s] that it seems as if the power of ears [not read] hearing had been increased. Do you catch the analogy.

(Yes perfectly.)

I do not wish to spend my examination hour explaining why I cannot do my problems. We all know that sort of student do we not.

(Yes.)

but sometimes a new voice on an old subject is a good thing as corroborative evidence.

(Yes, little touches of identity may slip through.)

and do. In seeking to recall some incident that may help on that line I am going to tell you a thing which may be identified. The number of letters and questions which constantly came to me up to the day of my death were always treated by me with the same respect and care as if I had been engaged by the Society to answer which I was not by the way. It seemed as if the whole community looked to me as an advisor on these matters and some times it was a tax on me and then my wife would feel that I was doing too much with my limited time and in many instances she tried to relieve me by her assertion that it was too much to be expected but I never felt [Indian.] that I could refuse to do what was asked of me. [Note 279.]

(Good, do you remember a story of a haunted house you sent to me?)

[Pause.] Yes I do. I hesitated a moment but it was only to detach one train of ideas and hitch [read 'hold' and hand paused

279. In regard to this incident of his answering letters the son writes:—"My father answered the sort of inquiry referred to with much more care than any one who knew him thought he ought to. But he did not answer everything. Mrs. James tried to relieve him as stated. The last line, however, is not at all characteristic."

From what I know of letters forwarded to me by Professor James and from the correspondence that I had to carry on in connection with help and advice, even before the new Society was organized, I would feel sure that "the whole community" did act toward Professor James as indicated. They were much more likely to approach him on the subject than myself and his correspondence showed the fact. Mrs. C. might have guessed this, but she probably did not know anything about it.

till correctly read.] another to the engine of memory. That was a case in point. I could not look it up but you might. Is that not what you referred to.

(Yes, do you remember its nature and any details?)

You are referring to the noises and what was afterwards seen by those who went to the place are you not.

(Yes, go on.)

It was a very remarkable case because so well authenticated. You will recall that I wrote you that it seemed to be proved or something to that effect. The statements were given by a number [read 'minister'] a ... number of witnesses who made effort to see and hear. am I not right.

(That must be another case which I did not receive, but do you recall anything about watermelons?)

Were there two cases.

(Only one came to me.)

That was what I thought but was there not sound and [pause.] was not the sound followed by investigation and then was there not a witness to the phenomena. You do not mean a case in Mass.

(No, not in Massachusetts.)

In N. Y.

(No.)

I knew of one in Mass. but thought at first the one you referred to was in another country or place.

(You might not even have read the case you sent to me, so do not worry about it.)

I do not like to be floored by the recollection of a haunted house. It ought to be in my line.

(Yes, if you actually read it before sending it to me, but you may not really have read it at all.)

I presume that is just the case. I may have glanced through it seen its content and passed it along to you.

(Yes likely.) [Note 280.]

---

280. Nothing evidential came of my raising the question of haunted houses. Professor James had sent me a remarkable case of it, but I never knew whether he really read it or not. I assumed that he did. I know nothing of a Massachusetts case connected with his knowledge. The same of New York.

R. H. is going to write for me a few minutes.

(Good.)

W. J. O.

(Thanks.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[First pencil rejected.] Was there anything more strange than this that I who did not write well for myself ['well' not read.] who did not write ['write' superposed on 'myself' by hand going to it.] well for myself am writing for William. Read. [Note 281.]

[I read the whole passage aloud.]

You got it all right. William shows me a ring which he slips on and off his finger and then puts away as if he wore it long ago and then it either wore [both words not read.] out or was broken ... either wore ... and put away. It is small and plain yes [answer to correct reading which was delayed.] [Note 282.]

[Pencil changed. One in use too hard. But new one broke and another had to be inserted.]

Now he refers to his father's watch, at least it seems as if it were not his own but one which was given him and used by him for some time but was his father's.

(All right.)

These things I just drop in.

(Good.) [Note 283.]

He has so many messages to send but those must be deferred

---

281. Dr. Hodgson's handwriting was the subject of much trouble and amusement to all of us, and the fact was certainly not known to Mrs. C. But this is not the first time it has been mentioned by him through Mrs. C.

282. A ring had been referred to previously and the reply to inquiry was that he never had any.

There was an important ring which Dr. Hodgson might have mentioned, but which had been alluded to years before through Mrs. C. The description of it here, however, would not fit I believe, and indeed there would be no reason to refer to a possible coincidence except for the liabilities of confusion in these phenomena producible by the proximity of other minds than the immediate communicator.

283. The incident of the watch is better. The son writes:—"My father wore his father's watch for many years"

until later but [pause.] why have you not heard completely about the things written before... written [not read the first time.]

(I do not know.)

strange is it not. I think William had [not read.] had an inkling of the state of affairs and kept still about personal things for awhile but there have been efforts to get into communication in other ways but all this will work out. You remember we told you W. J. had been to England to try and get some word through at Mrs. V.'s and she had felt him. She often gets a desire to write and is rather hindered [not read.] at ... hindered at times now but by excess of work but will soon have more liberty for the work. [Note 284.]

Do you know any one named Dodge.

(No, go on.)

I hear the name spoken by some one in connection with her. Mrs. V— I mean.

(Good.)

I see a dish of jellied [not read.] meat ... jellied meat. It is at a function of some sort and all this is put up in such fancy form like an ice or sweet confection but it is meat and I see William at that affair and afterwards talking [not read.] talking of that particular dish at home.

You will think I dwell on eatables.

(No, all right.)

It is rather strange but I was a pretty [pretty] good eater. Not so bad after all was I Hyslop after Imperator took me in hand. He saved my purse [written 'hirse' and read 'horse'.] many ... purse many a pull as well as my digestive apparatus but it was not for those things he gave me advice and put me on a new régime but for the good of the work done d... the light ['d' not read but question raised as to meaning.] with, yes you know.

(Exactly.)

He kept us all at a point where we would not forget our

---

284. The reference to Mrs. Verrall in this passage is apparently to the impression which I noted in three previous instances. Cf. pp. 105, 126, 183. In this instance it is said that "she felt him" which would fit the dream incident told in previous notes. She is a busy woman. Mrs. C. knowing nothing about her.

especial calling and it was good as a suggestion at all times. How to eat sleep exercise [not read.] exercise [not read.] exercise and breath[e] and think and all that sort of thing. It was new and good and it helped me.

(Yes I understand.) [Note 285.]

Now we seem to have a good hold once more. It is rather strange that William's cap [not read.] cap was not put in evidence but it is all right. I tell you he had one something like mine. Mine was Scotch. His was probably English. I must not stay but tomorrow tomorrow.

(Yes.) [Note 286.]

R. H.

(Thanks.) [Pause and pencil fell.]

{*Subliminal.*}

[Indian.] Put me back. [Head put on cushion.] Take hold of that hand down there. [I took hand in her lap, the left.] My finger is frozen. [I felt it and found it very much lowered in temperature.] [Pause.]

Oh say, have you seen a new medium?

---

285. The name Dodge is pertinent in connection with Dr. Hodgson. Persons of that name were in some way connected with the Piper experiments, either as sitters or communicators. The name is represented as a communicator in connection with a message to Dr. Savage and the lady was some relative of his. This was in my last Report, but was not seen by Mrs. C.

There is no verification of the incident of jellied meats and the presence of Professor James at a social function where they were.

Dr. Hodgson I understand was a good eater until Imperator put him on a diet. Casual information may have come to Mrs. C. about his diet, but certainly not about his having been a good eater: for he was not this in any sense that would give rise to comment. He simply enjoyed good food and plenty of it until his diet was regulated by Imperator.

Dr. Hodgson was the subject of advice on his exercise and general habits of life. This detail was probably not known by Mrs. C., as it was known to very few.

[Mrs. C. writes me that she knew nothing about the regulation of Dr. Hodgson's diet by Imperator. Apart from gossip she would not learn the fact except from his Report which she has not read.]

286. Dr. Hodgson did have a Scotch cap. Whether Professor James had any or not I do not know.

Mr. Henry James, Jr., informs me that his father got "a number of his hats and caps in England." But he "remembers no particular English cap."

(Where?)

I see some one just like a woman. You know, she looks just like you were talking to her. It is not like this. I don't see writing. . . It is some one more in a normal state. Do you know?

(Yes.)

I see half closed eyes and a tense look, as if she were seeing things. She has a peculiar mediumship. Some good things come. I don't mean she is bad when I say she is peculiar. She is only unusual.

(Who is the control?)

I don't see. All around her are men. I don't see anything save spirits. I thought your friends would be there but some are not. I see a big strong man who has nothing to do with you. He drops something before her eyes. Do you know what it looks like?

(No.)

It looks like glass, soft and unrolled. When he throws it down she sees spirits. Instead of putting an opera glass to her eyes he drops this down. It is a way to make her see. Is that the way clairvoyance comes?

(I don't know.)

That is the way it comes to her. She sees things in that way. She could not see it if spirits did not do that. Do you know a woman around with her alone?

(No.)

I mean some one that has an influence on her life. [Pause.] You know I see a letter L connected with her. Do you know?

(No.)

Goodbye. You want me to go.

(Yes.) [Pause.]

[Opened her eyes a moment and closed them again.] Oh! [Again opened and closed her eyes a moment.] Carrie. [Pause and awakened with no memory of events.] [Note 287.]

[I have not yet heard from Mr. Henry James, Jr., about the

---

287. This new medium referred to has not been clearly identified by me. Some things said suggest one that I have experimented with and have not in any way mentioned publicly. I do not know whether the letter L represents any one connected with her, but if the name Carrie be a mistake for the name Carr I could identify her,

last several sittings. I had not hinted of this to Mrs. C. since the last series.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 9th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough and head fell back on cushion.] [Pause.] You know how lightning looks with little straight breaks and then at the end makes a quirl and then the dark sky. I see something like that followed by inky blackness in the same form as the lightning. It is like a black hole in the sky. All around the room I see that light as if it made holes almost of liquid blackness in the sky. Before me is a hand coming down in front of my face. The hand with the forefinger is on my forehead. Oh take it off! Ugh! [Signs of distress in the face. Pause.]

Do you know what Mr. Moses is like?

(A little.)

I see this man who moves toward me. He puts up his four fingers. They look like that. [Turns thumb in and holds up her hand in the air.] He says four of us who used to sit together at Oxford. Do you know about that?

(Not much.)

\*At Oxford. The Doctor and his wife, a friend and I. Two are gone. Two are left. [Hand fell.] [Indian. Sounded like 'Cemagoo'.] Please put me in. [I placed head in rest.] [Indian.] Oh dear! [Pause.] [Note 288.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Magnis [as later writing shows, intended for 'Magnus'.]

('M-o-g-n-i-s'?)

Magnus Magni [pause.] \* \* R. \* \* \* \* \* es. \* \* [Pencil fell.]

[The writing was slow and labored with a pause after each word and sometimes between letters.]

---

288. Two important friends of Mr. Moses were Dr. Speer and his wife. Mrs. C. may have known this, but probably not of their death. Whether they are meant cannot be determined: neither can we determine who are meant by the two said to be living.

[Change of Control.]

[Indian.] Imperator and Rector were trying to write some of the things attempted in the past at another place and with them was S. M.

(Good, thank you.)

as you will see if you try to decipher the writing [not read.] at... writing at the top of the first page.

(Good.) [Note 289.]

You need no explanation from me as to my identity. Whenever there is stage fright or any hindrance anywhere George has to do it and I am he.

(Good.)

It is so easy for me to refer. refer to the particular muscular [not read.] muscular control. I have no way of explaining why but I know that I write almost as easily as if I had my own hand and it make[s] me laugh to see the effort some of the friends make. One would think they were about to fire off a cannon and they are about as clumsy as a bird with a serpent. I like to write for others. It is no hardship but a pleasure and often when I hear the argument that we are kept from finer pleasures by the effort to express in this fashion, I wonder what finer pleasure there is than [read 'that'] to be ... than ... able to connect the two states of consciousness. If some one might be able to connect the sleeping and waking consciousness it would seem a wonderful and beautiful revelation, but this is even better. To one who was interested in psychological problems the intensity [read 'necessity'] intensity of interest in these experiments is readily understood aside from any value to the world, it is a puzzle that calls out all the energy one possesses to work it out [read 'but'] out.

Do you know a man by the name of Burkitt.

(Good, thank you.)

I have a commission to send the name of Joseph Burkitt through. There is no message to go with it but just the name. You see we are recognized as having offices in every city [not

---

289. There was no determinable meaning to this effort at the time and none now, except that R. is probably for Rector.

read.] in the ... city ... in [the] world and so we have many demands and requests for an opportunity to send messages.

Stead is not the only one who has celestial intercourse. [not read.] intercourse [not read tho clear. I was evidently confused by previous failure and apperception mass created by it.] intercourse. We do not intend to have any one get ahead of us.

(All right.)

We may not make as much stir but we are recognized over here and time will prove our worthiness. That is all true even if put in that jocose way. The J. B— is quite sure of recognition.

(By whom?)

by some one near who will soon see the name. I have done the errand, let it go. [Note 290.]

About the Ruth, we will take it up later.

(All right.)

Hodgson is as busy as when he had the full charge of work and if you could believe me he has still hopes of producing something through the Piper light that will be worth while. It is a question in my mind. You know power unless used grows useless.

(Yes.)

That is what I fear. Some new strong influences may be better than an old discarded power. I do not say that with any personal feeling. It is not a personal affair and never can or should be but is just a question of what is expedient in regard to experiment.

Now for a little work. Still the silence about the messages to the James family hangs over you does it.

(Yes.)

You are not troubled are you only a little puzzled.

(That's right.)

It is rather strange but I think nothing to be thought of seriously. In the first place the family followed him. He led. You will consider this personal of course.

---

290. The name Joseph Burkitt has no meaning to me and nothing has come to my knowledge since the sitting to make the name intelligible.

Mrs. C. writes me that the name Burkitt has no meaning to her. I had supposed it possible that she might have normally known such a person.

(Yes, certainly.)

and now that he is away the old captaincy is lost and many matters are sliding into pigeon holes that should have the active life of a living [read 'loving' and hand pointed till read correctly.] leader. There was a certain tendency to disbelieve or a sort of lack of trust which was evident the last year of the life together [read 'wife by either' doubtfully] life together... that is the last year W. J.— lived.

(I see.)

All this has its bearing on your case. It is almost psychological but there is no desire to be rude or uninterested only a fierce [fierce] persistent and earnest wish to be sure.

(I understand.)

You can understand that and many of the things which are laughable and ludicrous to W. J. and the rest of us are in a manner a kind of persecution to the family and the closed [read 'closet' and hand pointed till read correctly.] door is the result. W. J. is going on just the same.

(Good.) [Note 291.]

He was not born yesterday and he did not put in twenty [not read] five years ... twenty ... 20 or 25 years to this study to give it up as soon as he gets where he can see light through the keyhole.

(Good.)

His spirit is alive with interest and devotion and he wanted me to tell you so. It is not always best for him to come. Sometimes a reason which we cannot explain prevents his attempt to write but he is always present and takes a hand when he can and when he feels it is just right he does the work. He is the same cautious and judicious friend as ever.

By the way, what a combination [not read.] combination of boy and wonderfully mature mind W. J. is.

(Exactly.)

The spirit of boyish hope and youthful [read 'truthful'] energy ... youth ... [suddenly read.] persisted through the

---

291. Some personal and private matter is omitted here and the rest will have to be judged on its own merits. It is not evidential.

The facts mentioned in the omitted passage are apt enough but may be attributable to the subliminal action of Mrs. C.

years and imbued all his work with candid fervor and splendid joy and purpose.

In the very [read 'wry'] very midst of a most deeply involved lecture he might say a thing that would bring a smile to the face of the dullest mind present.

(Yes.)

It was so in conversation also and the roughish [so read.] roughish [roguish and so read.] twinkle of his eyes told the coming of a story or a joke to illustrate his point. You know all that. The world admires the great thinker and scholar but his human heart was a fountain of blessed expression.

(Yes, correct.) [Note 292.]

Perhaps he had better write a little but tell me who do you know over here named Nellie.

(Nellie?)

Yes. Have you a friend by that name.

(I once knew a Nellie. If I could get the last name I could be sure.)

Just a little until I tell you about her. She is not an old person but is very independent and strong in individuality. She is rather tall not very large and has a thin and oval face with darkish eyes and is always talk talk talking, a great talker but a good one. She is not familiar with the section of the world where we are today and all things have changed about you since she was in your acquaintance. Do you know a Kellogg in connection with her.

(No, I do not.)

What about the rest of the story. Do you know it.

(No, I do not.)

She is with your wife and so I concluded that she knew her and that you might.

(My wife may have known her and I not.)

Yes that is true but this is a woman who was musical and studious as well. What more can I say about her.

---

292. All this is perfectly characteristic of Professor James as told by G. P. Mrs. C. with her little knowledge of the man, would not know the facts. All who knew the man personally would recognize it as very accurate and pertinent. What is said about a lecture is especially true and so the allusion to what might come out in surprise in a conversation.

(I can't stay as I shall have hard work tracing her at all.)

Wait a minute.

(Yes.)

Did your wife ever go to a seminary or boarding school.

(Yes in a sense.) [Thinking of her teaching in a college.]

It seems as if this woman was there. There is a relationship which makes the affair more important. They met early at this sort of a school which was not exactly a public school but a sort of fitting school for something beyond [not read.] beyond. Then later they met again. What do you know of Cleveland.

(Very little.)

This lady says Cleveland, Ohio. That is about all I get from her but a smile and happy look from both the ladies make me sure of the [pause.] right use of the words.

(Yes, that is a clue which I can use.) [Note 293.]

All right. I will give my place to W. J.—We do not want him to get out of practice. G. P.

(Thanks.)

What did I say about my name. Came out all right.

(Yes, you said you had better give it as heaven knew when she might hear it and it happened accidentally that she heard it soon afterward.)

Is that a clear case of prophecy or just a case of coincidence co... [not read at first.]

(You will have to settle that.)

Trust me. I call it a foreknowledge of events,

(Good.)

a pure prophecy would likely have told the when and where.

(Yes.)

G. P. [Pencil fell.]

[After Mrs. C. learned the name of G. P. she told me the

---

293. I have not been able to get the slightest clue to the identity of this Nellie. On inquiry at the college where my wife taught music in 1889 and 1890 I inquired for the Nelligs in that department. Three were found for those years, but none of them was named Kellogg or anything like it and none of them lived in Cleveland. If Cleveland be a mistake for Carlton, the name of the college, and Kellogg for the word college, that difficulty would be removed. But the mention of Ohio would not consist with that interpretation of the name Cleveland.

fact and I then told her what I had gotten from him and said I did not care. She was rather sorry she had learned the name, but she remarked that his remark might have involved his knowledge of what was going to occur.] [Note 294.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning and good greetings.

(The same to you.)

I fully understand your difficulties and appreciate your effort and courage. It takes little courage [pause and struggle to retain control.] for me and it is a relief which work brings after suspended energy. I always felt a peculiar interest in the action of returning energies to duties and work after sickness or vacation periods

[After the word 'interest' the pencil was grasped as if in a clenched fist and the writing proceeded in that abnormal condition.]

(Good, I understand.)

Just in that relation is the surviving [so read.] surviving spirit of one personality to the body of the light. All that was my ego remains by right of birth to me but I lost the power to co-ordinate with the physical world in my own person. [Indian.] Now I regain that correlation and must by practice [Indian.] grow into habit of the use of another physical body.

(Yes, a baby over again.) [Reader will see this remark had no effect.]

all our acts our management of our hands and feet and so on become habit and so organic and mechanical and leave the spirit free for its pursuits. You know well what I mean.

(Yes, I do perfectly.)

We have had that much of a foundation for our work. The law of the physical world is our law of active work [Groaning till the end.] but the wonderful power of ethical principles and love and loveliness is yet an untold story an unsung song. It will have its influence and be understood by and by. [difficulty in writing and weakened control manifest.]

The psychological power of faith is not a new theme to me.

---

294. I made this note because it suggests so clearly the possible influence of the subconscious on messages.

I am now in better control but perhaps I have overstayed. [Note 295.]

(Who ....?)

Have I.

(No, who was helping you?) [The content seemed to indicate that Madam was assisting and I wanted to see if this personality would be named.]

Imperator and the Group.

(All right.)

I am sure to do better later. What about the stone steps at my home. Something done.

(I shall inquire.) [Note 296.]

\* \* W. J. O.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell.]

[The groaning continued with every word from the point marked by the note till the end of the writing, and it was evident without intimation by the communicator when he was losing and when gaining better control.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian.] [Four pencils rejected.] When did he lose his strength I wonder. He was getting [getting] along well here where he was be... before. but he ... he seems [pencil changed.] to be weak this morning [last two words not read.] this morning. He must have been trying to work somewhere else for he lost his assurance and power. You may find out about [not read.] it ... about ... later. He has about [two words not read.] has about as many demands [not read.] demands on him as Hodgson used to have.

(I believe it.)

---

295. Faith cure was a familiar theme to Professor James, as perhaps all the world knows. Mrs. C. could hardly be exempt from this knowledge, even if she had forgotten it.

[Mrs. C. writes that she did not know anything of Professor James' relation to the "faith cure" movement. This is all the more surprising from the general public knowledge of it, tho possibly this "general knowledge" was limited to those more especially interested in Professor James.]

296. No relevance seems to attach to the allusion to stone steps at his home. His Cambridge home had wooden steps. He had a stone fence about his Chocorua home.

They began to grow but he only responds once [not read.] in a . . . once in a while, but he will be better tomorrow. You are going to have some extra [not read.] have extra work and I will try and be on deck. A Whirlwind on a deck is a questionable passenger.

(Yes, might wreck things.)

Yes and might drive the ship off the rocks and reefs to deep seas where it belongs.

Stop talking psychology and talk spirits brother James that is what I tell him. He had enough of psychology when [not read.] he wore [not read.] when he wore the earthly garments [not read.] garments. Now that he has his spirit robe he ought to play the . . . ought [not read first time.] . . . the spirit part a little better and not dwell on the old theme. You are to blame for that Hurricane.

(Yes, psychology is identity.)

So I hear but why not let the spirit identity say something of his identical life in spirit. It would seem too mythological I presume to a dense earthly man. Never mind. It will all [not read.] all work out. I know him right well and want to help him but I don't care much about hunting up his lost collar buttons or knowing what he liked [not read.] to . . . liked to eat, cheese or carrots. It's all the same to me. I want him to show his friends his love and tenderness [read 'tendencies'] tenderness [not read.] tenderness. Yes you must think I am on your trail with *tendencies* [underscored.] It is tenderness I spoke of for he had it large and abundant. He lives [read 'loves'] so . . . lives . . . happy with his father and mother and those he loved. This is his school work for the world. [Note 297.]

I am only \* \* [helping?] to . . . helping to keep the condition which he left in an insulated state until the light can get

---

297. What Whirlwind says of Professor James' character and tenderness is true, but not beyond the possible knowledge of Mrs. C. It is interesting, however, to see how the evidence of identity is minimized when it is the strong characteristic of G. P. and Dr. Hodgson whenever they work to get messages through. Besides Mrs. C. knows full well and she herself appreciates to the utmost extent the importance of just such little incidents as Whirlwind ridicules in her personal tastes. Mrs. C., however, is also interested deeply in the tender and consolatory side of the work.

far away and not disturb or be disturbed by contact. We must leave it all placid and clear for his use tomorrow. Goodby. Whirlwind. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh say, what about that owl that used to hoot up there in the country?

(What owl?)

At night a night owl used to hoot up there where he was.

(Who was that?)

Who do you suppose? Who was writing?

(Well, say it.)

Dr. James.

(Good.)

You want it for evidence?

(Yes.)

It was like a friend. [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Note 298.]

[Pause.] He was pretty much here himself today, wasn't he.

(Yes.) He has got out of my reach I guess. [Pause and then hand reached for mine. I took it.]

Why do you know I see a leather Morris chair, dark oak finish. I see Dr. James sitting beside the table talking to a man in front and opposite to him. The man is short and stout, a full gray beard \* \* [sigh.] [Note 299.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 10th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

[Cough.] Do you know of any other Jennie besides Jennie P?

I am conscious but I hear Jennie, Jennie.

(Well, where does it come from?)

Do you mean whether from the living or the spirit?

---

298. No one recalls any hooting owl at his country house either as a subject of annoyance or of pleasure.

299. The son writes me with reference to the Morris chair:—"Such a chair stood in the library for a while some years ago."

(I mean from herself or some one else.)

Well it is a woman's voice. I feel she is a vivacious bright person and shows a happy influence. [Pause.] Oh I'm going. [Cough and pause.] [Note 300.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear! Please put me in. [Head placed in rest. Pause and Indian.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[The writing began in a handwriting different from any that I have observed and at first was quite deliberate and slow.]

W. will write a while after I am done with the hand. It is no stranger who seeks you now but a friend of the work who has watched from each sphere of existence and in each case when your work was involved and in many lands has sought the secret knowledge of the universe which is only revealed after struggle and effort. The history of the effort to solve the riddle of the universe is one and the same among all peoples and in all lands but the concentrated effort of trained minds brings to light scintillating truths and to the world is given the blessing of revelation. I am astounded at the little interest taken in the science of the question and the interest shown in the least sign of interesting or unusual phenomena.

(People prefer hogs' wash.)

Too true and too ludicrous but when will colleges and instructors insist on the fundamental [fundamental] truths of life itself being acknowledged and made the foundation for all subsequent effort. The faithful few always bear the burdens of the many. Take [so read.] a ... Talk of vicarious atonement. The price of liberty is the blood of the martyrs.

(Yes.)

Now I realize too well the need of the exact evidence to spend even [not read.] a brief time ... even ... in conversation as helpful as this might be under ordinary circumstances and I

---

300. There was a Jennie mentioned in my first Report related to the Lucy McClellan there referred to and was the sister of this Lucy. I know another Jennie that my wife would mention and who is dead. I have no evidence here that either of them is intended.

am ready to do or not to do as the case demands. I am not one of those who was willing to let the case rest on the work of one medium. I have long felt that the work of the British Society was too circumscribed and narrow. One man cannot [not read, as written in one word and I hesitated tho it is clear.] could not and would not be allowed to have autocratic influence over a set of phenomenal experiences. The personel [read 'personal' and hand added 'le' making it 'personelle' and still I did not catch the meaning.] personelle has so much bearing on these experiments that different types must be sought and then the estimates made from aggregate experiences. You agree with me on this.

(Yes, quite fully.)

I know R. H. had a feeling of security when he was assured of the honesty and psychic capacity of a light and he thought all things could come through one pipe. As well try to play a symphony on one instrument. Life is a concerted number not a solo. Do you follow me.

(Yes quite fully.)

It is so good to have a flexible mind, a mind that is plastic and will receive suggestion. I have no quarrel with R. H. We are friends but he sees now as never before the power of variety.

(Yes, I have been thinking much on this of late and feel that my only difficulty is to get others to be patient with this complex problem which you described so fully.)

It is the problem. The variety is the key, not one phase. The psychic power is not confined to time or place or person or chance or phase, but plays in and around and through all the experiences of human instinct as omnipresent as God.

(I understand.)

I have alway[s] been interested in the work in England particularly the London B... Society and you know that has been plainly bigoted enough but it was not a one man power nor yet one psychic power. You again understand me.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Without the aid of William James as a noted [not read.] psychologist ... noted ['t' crossed.] ... Monit [Minot] Savage as a voice of thunder in the pulpit R. H. would not have been a strong force in New England and his power in New England has

had but faint echo in the West and outside the personal influence of the few men who held up his hands. You have had to combat the personal element at every point and the personal characteristics of you and him and have been pitted against each other in a war [not read.] for precedence ... wa ... ['war' read.] All unconsciously you two have been set upon each other. But now the work the work itself is calling to the people. Yours is so much more complex and extensive that [read 'than'] that soon the importance of its far [read 'for'] reaching ... far ... influence will be its factor in winning [read 'bringing']. help ... winning ... So much for all this.\*

The men at work in London are as much helped by new views as you could wish and I look for a fusion of ideas on these matters which will bring separation only as it is feasible for better work. Again I am understood.

(Yes, perfectly.)

When Stainton Moses first came to the understanding of this expression he rallied [read 'called' then 'talked' doubtfully.] around ... rallied... his banner people for more perfect and complete investigation and his spirit was a leading power in all the English work, but today today [hesitation in reading the first time.] his spirit knows no call except to Truth wherever it may lead him. I mean g[e]ographically lead him. You understand that of course.

(Yes.)

and with that devotional element in him he is found in many places. Imperator is recognized as an integral part of S. M.'s work and where you get a word from Imperator or the Group you may rest assured that S. M.— is interested. Imperator is the most striking and dramatic personality in the group and is most easily perceived by the psychics in any state of receptivity and so he is oftenest the one to communicate but he he [reason for repeating 'he' not evident.] is only one of the group who attends [read 'at times' then questioningly 'attempts'.] tends ... where you seek.

I have seen the members of the society on both sides of the water come over here and have seen them drop into the place best adapted for study and then in common meeting place make plan for executive work. Myers has often in his simple and definite

comprehensive way mapped out plans that have been most useful and some of the French investigators have made large and able contributions to our work here. a group of the French investigators and scientists have been working at this center and with this psychic just as the English men worked definitely with the Piper light and this is the first time the word has been given to any one. The Father John that is spoken of is no more or less than one of the French workers whose name will be given you by and by.

(Thank you.)

The light had some normal and natural tendencies which made the French work possible where it was quite impossible with the Piper light but there has been perfect understanding and friendship on our side between the two bands of spirits and an interchange where it was advisable.

[Change of pencil.] This is all new mater [matter]. I am going [so read.] now giving you but it was decided that it was time you had it. It may explain some of the sittings in a measure.

(Yes, it throws much light on questions I have been considering and I am glad I had come to the same conclusion before this was said.)

You mean you had thought or caught the thought of the French effort.

(No, only the general variety of psychics and the subconscious influence in the result. All else is perfectly new.)

It is time you had it for your own help. We are not negligent or forgetful of the need of definite word [pause.] and test [pause.] concerning individuality. That must come but there are times when test of identity comes much more readily than other times and this was a day when this kind [read 'band'] of work ... kind ... would be done when some days it would be impossible to express so freely and so I have been allowed to go on and on but I hope to no deterring [both words not read.] infl... [erased.] no deterring effect on the general work.

I am not of the French band but the English. I was in the Emperor Group Rector. You will recall me.

(Yes I do. Thank you.)

and I am here because of [not read.] the ... of the important

situation of the case. I was with you all last evening and the play of influences on all present was most remarkable. The company was one of the most strangely individualized I have ever seen drawn together for a psychic hour and the whole work was extremely curious and interesting. We watched [read 'stretched'] it ... watched it with varying degrees of amusement and study. We were all there and some experiments were tried until we were afraid of the effect [effect] on the work today and the familiar was told to come in and she immediately produced harmony. A common interest always produces harmony. The more community interests one m... arouse ... may or can ... in a[n] assembly [assembly] large or small the greater degree of harmony and harmony and rhythm [read 'h-y-m-'] rhythm [read 'rhythm'] rhythm. I cannot spell it I think but harmony and r—— make for strength. (I understand.) It is the old story of breaking march [read questioningly 'breasing much'] breaking march to save the bridge. The perfect harmony will break the greatest strength. See the analogy.

(Yes perfectly.)

What cannot be done when inharmony reigns can easily [easily] be accomplished in perfect accord. So when the harmony was established last night it was agreed that I should come today for this [so read.] this explanatory hour which is due you and your future work. You [read 'I am'.] are gaining ... you gained. The very sensible and sane manner of communication helps to make the appeal for interest and funds more vivid and acceptable. [Indian.] [pause.]

I am overstaying now and must go but I think I have used about all the time, but you will not be sorry for that I know.

(No I shall not. I am glad of it.)

Remember my friend that there is no diversion [read 'reversion'] of ... division ... interests or resources over here but a decided and definite impulse to move the whole world Godward. The company last night while small may prove a nucleus for some larger work in this city. That we hope for. Great oaks from little acorns grow is a quotation [not read.] quotation we all have learned the value of.

(Yes.)

My abiding and unfading devotion to you. Rector.

(Thank you.) [pause.] [Note 301.]

[Change of Control.]

William J.— I am here.

(Greetings this morning.)

and I heartily concur in the larger and fuller effort. I was with you last night but kept dark. I wanted to speak of Christian Science as it is perfectly plain to me. If you would agree to teach people how to turn time into money in a perfectly easy and respectable way and take a percentage of the profits you could charge any sum for tuition and get it. The world loves money and loves to take chances. [At this point I heard raps behind me. There was a pause in the writing.] Gambles in other words. Goodbye. W. J. O. [Pencil fell.]

[As the initials were being written I heard raps again behind me and turned to locate them. As nearly as I could determine they were on a chair about eight feet distant. I had also turned

---

301. In this long passage purporting to come from Rector, the chief direct control in the case of Mrs. Piper, there is nothing that we can prove to be evidential. For the lack of absolute knowledge of Mrs. C.'s subliminal capacities we have to assume it all subconscious. But those who know her intimately and who know the Piper phenomena and the present Piper situation would recognize a doubt about the adequacy of this explanation of its source, tho they had conceded it possible.

The allusion to what had occurred the night before is explained in the note at the end of the sitting made contemporaneously.

In spite of my remarks, however, it may be well to note features in the passage that reflects truths about Dr. Hodgson and the Piper work so that it is hard to believe they merely coincide with the natural inferences of Mrs. C. It was the insistent policy of the Emperor group, of whom Rector here was one, that the proof of survival must not depend on the work of a single psychic. This incident of their position could not be known by Mrs. C. without intimate knowledge of the records which she has not seen. It only happens that she knows this principle to be a true one, not that it was the policy of the Emperor group. It was also true that Dr. Hodgson did feel a great security in the honesty of Mrs. Piper, not that his facts depended on that, but that the public did, and it may have been inferrible by any one that he did, but it would not readily occur to Mrs. C. to put this in the mouth of Rector. At the same time we have to allow for subliminal coloring whose presence and limits we cannot definitely determine and it is only the remarkable pertinence of the thought and persons mentioned that would suggest a doubt about assigning the cause to that subconscious power alone.

the first time to locate them but was uncertain tho with preferences for the chair.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello.

(Hello.)

Did you hear anything?

(Yes.)

Did you hear some raps?

(Yes.)

They were rapping.

(Yes.)

I guess they scared the communicator away, don't you?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Is it time to go?

(Yes.)

[Pause and then a sigh, and another pause when she put her hand to her neck and showed signs of distress.] Oh dear! [Then reached for my hand and I took hers. In a few moments she awakened with no memory of the raps.]

The evening before a little group gathered together in the room of Miss Whiting and Mrs. C. was one of them. During it she seemed to get some incidents, in her normal state, referring to Harriet Hosmer. Among them was one purporting to come from my father regarding a pair of slippers which he was said to have worn much and they were described as a pair of "carpet slippers", which they were, if I understand the term rightly.

The incidents regarding Harriet Hosmer were not perfectly clear and at first were not suspected by Miss Whiting. Later their significance was discovered and recognized. What Mrs. C. saw was a white casket coming down from the ceiling with ribbons to it and resting near a piano by which stood a man described with a beard and hair thin on top. They appeared to be related to me from their position, but I recognized no meaning whatever to the incidents and for a time Mrs. C. did not think they related to Miss Whiting. Finally Miss Whiting surmised who it was and encouraged

Mrs. C. to go on and finally Miss Whiting recognized openly who it was and explained that she had during the past two or three days been in communication with intimate friends of Harriet Hosmer. While we were talking about this Mrs. C. was suddenly under control by Starlight and there was an hour's trance talk by Starlight with some further hints of the identity of Harriet Hosmer, and some talk purporting to come from Kate Field regarding Miss Whiting, but not evidential.

These incidents will explain the references of Rector. This is the first sustained appearance of Rector in this case and the facility of his writing hardly consists with the apparent difficulties of earlier apparent attempts to communicate.

We talked some time about Christian Science during the evening and Prof. James' well known interest in it at one time was within the knowledge of Mrs. C.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 12th, 1910. 10 A. M.

I had arranged for a friend to take five sittings this week, beginning with that of the present date. I learned last week that he could not be present, but said nothing of the fact to Mrs. C. I had arrangements with her to admit him to the house myself so that he would not be seen by any one and tho I knew he was not to be present I said nothing about the change in the situation and carried out the affair as if he were to be present.

It was apparent that Mrs. C. was somewhat worried and anxious and she confessed as much before the sitting. When the bell rang I went to the door as if my friend were coming. The first ring was not the front door and the second I did not hear, but Mrs. C. heard it in the incipient trance and called my attention to it. I went to the door and returned as if my friend had come. The incidents will then explain themselves.

It will be important, in the understanding of the present record in connection with Mr. Gregg, to know its relation to previous sittings by him and by Mrs. Gregg. Mrs. Gregg had them first and came on from the far west for the sittings

and without betraying her identity in any way to Mrs. Chenoweth. After they were over she revealed her name without giving any further information, but after her return home wrote to Mrs. Chenoweth signing her name and giving her address. Later Mr. Gregg came on and took some sittings without revealing his identity or the place from which he came. He had some distrust of the results with his wife, fearing that some slip might have occurred. But he was satisfied that there was none and his care in concealing his identity was such that Mrs. Chenoweth could not have had the slightest suspicion as to who it was. The proper connections were made in the communications and new facts given which convinced him that there was supernormal information conveyed. Later his own name and identity were purposely revealed to Mrs. Chenoweth by himself, so that by the time I had my sittings she knew who they were and indeed had been holding sittings for messages from little John, weekly. The day that I began my sittings for the other party, Mr. Junot, was the day on which a sitting was to be held for Mr. Gregg, so that the mind of Mrs. Chenoweth was prepared to make the connections actually made. With this information the reader may judge of the results as detailed in the notes, many of the facts being new and not possibly ascertainable by her in any normal way, as some were not known to Mr. Gregg himself.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

December 12th, 1910. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I feel the presence of a woman and have felt it ever since you came in. Usually it is men. I mean it is an unfamiliar presence. [Head fell back.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough, pause, sigh and pause again.] Hello! (Hello.)  
 [Pause.] I see Dr. Hodgson. [Pause.] He is going to help.  
 [Bell rang.] That was not the front door bell.  
 (I know.) How did you know? (I have heard both.)

[Groans.] You did not hear that.

[I went to the front door and returned.] Did you get there first?

(No.) Spoiled it didn't you? (No.)

This thing, [pointing to the head rest.] goes, wiggles. [I fastened it, the screw having loosened.] Put me in. [Head put in rest.]

Drifting, [pause.] drifting, [pause.] into the great unknown. [pause.] into the labyrinthian ways. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[First pencil rejected.] Why must the spark divine be strick [struck] on the barren and desert wind when all the open streets [?] of consciousness waits for the living and full expression.

[Change of script, style and apparent control.]

I am here and would [read 'waited' and 'wanted' and hand paused till correctly read.] give my word of interest and attention to you at this time but I am not able to do all I wish.

(I understand.)

and so I leave G. P. to work for a while. I will return later.

(Good.)

R. H. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning, George.)

so I am the scape goat as usual but never mind. I will have all these things to my credit when the crowns are given out.

(Yes.)

at least [read 'last' and hand pointed till correctly read.] I am no shrirk [shirk] and no coward and no bully [not read] bully. I do not say \* \* [not read and not legible.] you take the pencil for I am not strong. I take it and move forward.

W. J.— is here and so interested to write and he will have his turn in a few moments.

Saturday when the raps began we were all so amazed that we forgot everything and turned [read 'timed'] our ... turned ... our attention to the source of sound. It was all right and I for one am glad that they came.

(Who made them?)

One of the friends in the immediate band of the light. you remember do you when we were working in N. Y., S. M. spoke of physical manifestations and he has always held to that idea that the power for them was resident in this light and with that in view the experiment was tried and succeeded. It is needless to say that the experiment has been tried often before but without success. S. M. was here Saturday as [not read.] you ... as ... know.

(Yes.)

and so the effort was made again and with good result. We are all interested in every type of manifestation which will prove [read 'grow'] to y ... prove ... to you that we have grown away from prejudices.

(Good.) [Note 302.]

Who is Dodge.

(I do not know except that the name is related to either of two groups.)

I saw a man st... [end of line.] standing here and heard the name Dodge and he is agreeable and interested in the work. Desires to make himself known.

(I hope he will.)

The given name is William. That may help some and he wishes to say a few words about his relation to the work which so far is slight. There is a lady connected with Dodge and slightly active in this work. You may not know and you may. I cannot tel [tell]. (I shall look it up.) Mary is her name. (Good.) Now you are wondering if I can write more about her but not this time. [Note 303.]

---

302. In the sittings in New York a few years ago, with Mrs. C., Stainton Moses was referred to as working to produce some physical phenomena. The raps that occurred the day before in the subliminal at the end of the sitting, which I heard distinctly, were said here to be in fulfillment of that promise.

303. I have already commented on the name Dodge and its relation to Dr. Minot Savage. Cf. p. 379. I know nothing about the relevance of William and Mary in that connection. Cf. *Proceedings* Vol. IV, p. 585.

Inquiry of Dr. Savage results in the information that the names William and Mary are not recognizable in the Dodge family.

I see W. J.— here with a gentleman who has a [pause.] I hesitate because it first looked like a pencil and then like a long round stick [not read.] stick as if for some measuring purpose. It is about a foot long and has various marks on it as a measuring stick would have. The man is short rather stout, full beard and very pleasant smile and manner. It is an old friend who was interested in some psychological experiments and the stick is evidently used in a liquid yes [to correct reading.] like water or alcohol or something of that sort.

(Good. Any time you can give the name it will be most excellent.)

Yes it will probably come when we do not expect it but we will try and connect it so that you will have no trouble in the placing of it.

(Good.) [Note 304.]

I must give my hand [not read.] to another ... hand ... not my own but the one I am using.

(I understand.)

I will return later. G. P.

[Change of Control.]

[Pause.] [Pencil clinched in closed fist.] My friend good morning.

(Greetings to you.)

I am [pencil changed in position and hand in more natural position.] writing am I not.

(Yes but with difficulty.)

No not with difficulty [difficulty] but with care. I am concerned and anxious to overcome limitations. You [writing now becomes labored and difficult and merges into a change of con-

---

304. This allusion to an old friend interested in psychological experiments recalls a student of Professor James, who became interested in psychic research before his own death and purported afterward to communicate through a case that I know personally. No public mention of it has ever been made. But the passage here is not clear enough to identify him and it may have no relevance to him at all. I mention only what it suggests to me.

The attempt at direct communication almost immediately confirms the conjecture I made, but the note at the end of it in the record shows why I cannot urge its correctness.

trol.] have come to see me but \* \* \* \* [writing becomes wholly illegible for more than a page.] \* \* is the matter.

[As I had conjectured who the person was that was interested in psychological experiments, I could conjecture what was meant by this illegible writing, as letters and even almost the entire name can be read into the signs. But no one not expecting it would interpret them in this way. So I treat the writing as scrawls. The last words are clearly "is the matter" implying that the previous scrawl is for "what".]

[Resumption of James control.]

What happened. did I lose the connection.

(Yes, some one seems to have gotten temporary control.)

No it seemed just as it looks when a car is released from the trolley and the conductor tries to . . .

[I began sharpening some broken pencils and the hand paused a moment and then wrote.]

what is that noise.

(I was sharpening pencils.)

tries to make connection again. I am feeling clear and calm. I am looking at manuscript which has been prepared for press but not yet printed. It is so long ago seemingly since I did this and yet it is all unprinted. Do you not know me or am I to tell you that I am W. J.

(I knew it was W. J.)

Who is A. that has been trying or at least making inquiry about the work. Do you know to whom I refer.

(No I do not recall just now.) [Note 305.]

What is here of mine.

[Necktie of W. J. put in lap.]

O thank you. that may help me to learn expression [expression] Yes [to correct reading.] I hear [read 'leave'] you... heard [read 'heard' and hand paused till read 'hear'] yes [to correct reading.]

I feel a new presence. Has not some one this moment come in.

(It is not noticeable in the writing.)

---

305. No one recognizes any relevance to the A. as an initial of a person, in connection with the James family.

I mean a physical presence.

(No, the friend I expected did not come, but sent some articles for me to hunt up friends to communicate.)

[There was no reason for this remark of the control unless it was an inference from some movement of mine which I did not note as important, or a memory of expectation on the part of Mrs. C., or a confused reference to the intrusion that had just taken place.]

It was as if some one came in physically at the moment I wrote.

(I understand.)

but I heard no noise and yet thought it must be a body. [Indian.] I have a notion you would like me to retire and let some other come and write

(It is just as they decide best on your side.)

I will come again. Good morning. W. J. O.

(Thank you.) [Pencil dropped.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hurricane.

(Good morning.)

Take away the articles that belong to the friend [not read.] and p. . . friend W. J. . . . and put the other in the hand and I will try my power.

[Articles of friend put in left hand.]

It is often just as good to have an article as a person. The person brings ideas: the article suggestions. You see what I mean.

(Yes.)

I find first with this article an influence of a man, a man spirit I mean and the same . . . [articles fell on floor I picked them up and replaced them.] I dropped it I am afraid. Did I hurt anything

(No.)

I beg your pardon but I lost the power in that hand. Let me suggest something. have a small stand [not read.] stand at the left of the light and on that place the article and let the left hand rest on it. Not today but after. You see how it would improve the possibility.

This man is a good warm hearted person. I am telling you only what I get from the articles and not trying to place or know the person. I am only [not read] moving the ... only moving the hands to get a better hold.

[Had pulled the articles further up in the lap to prevent falling again and to get a firmer hold of them.]

The desire left on the articles is one of truth supreme [not read.] above all else is ... supreme ... is his desire to be exact and clear and alway [s] on the right. I mean truly right.

There is an unfinished work to[o] in connection with the article which leaves its impress because there was a strong desire to finish it. The desire was there at the time of death and the death was a cause of great sorrow because of the lost opportunity to continue the work which no other would do as well. There is a slight cough. It is little more than a hacking sound as if clearing [read 'cleaning' and hand pointed till read correctly.] the throat now and again, but it is a definite sound. The hair is thin on the top of the head, a little bald. I know this from the manner of using the hands up over the head a movement of smoothing the hair down as one does when it is rather thin. [Note 306.]

---

306. The note at the beginning of the sitting explains the nature of this experiment and the reader must keep in mind that I have never seen or known any of the parties concerned, except the mother of the boy who purports to communicate, and I saw her but an hour or so in my home in New York. The experiments were intended for Mr. Junot, but he could not be present, so the articles belonged to his son, not to Mr. Gregg (pseudonym), father of the boy that tried to communicate and friend of the man who communicates immediately after Professor James. I asked Mr. Gregg if he could identify the man throughout the record and the following is his reply.

"I think I recognize the man described. I believe him to be Edward Wheeler (pseudonym), formerly the judge of the Federal Court for this district, who died in October [1910]. My reasons for identifying him are these:—

1. He was an excellent man, very warm hearted.
2. He was so thoroughly conscientious that his scrupulousness to be right in the decision of every question of fact or law presented to him made his labors exceedingly burdensome.
3. He was in the midst of a jury term of court at the time of his death, and knowing his conscientiousness, I feel sure that it grieved him greatly to have his work left unfinished.

Do you know anything about an office in connection with this person.

(No, I do not. It may be true.)

I see an office and a man sitting in it and before him are [read 'an'] are some papers and many things of importance which have to be looked after but the office is the office of a man

---

4. While he had no cough, he had a fashion of clearing his throat, not markedly, but somewhat of an affectation, perhaps.

5. His hair was slightly thin, not bald at all, but somewhat thinned about the temples and on top.

6. The description of the library, papers, etc., would apply very well to his chambers, where he had quite an extensive law library. His desk would be piled high with papers, as into his room were brought all the papers in connection with the cases pending before him. The black bag, I know nothing of, but it may have been used in connection with these papers.

7. I do not know of any connection of the letter "J" with him, nor do I know about the letters.

8. He wore a full beard.

9. The letter "E", of course, is pertinent, his christened name being Edward. Cf. Note 308.

10. I know of no trouble with the foot, tho it may very well be that he at some time had an accident of the sort described. It left no permanent effects.

11. His death was very sudden. He was stricken with apoplexy in the night and died in three or four days thereafter, after every effort had been made to save his life.

I may say that if there had been any thought that the communication could reach me, I would quite expect Judge Wheeler to make himself known. I had known him for a long while, and we were on very friendly terms. He was a firm believer in spiritism, and was convinced that he had received many communications from his father and mother through a medium whom he often visited. He and I have often discussed the subject and all the phenomena incident or akin to spiritism, and our relations were the closer because of our common belief, and the fact that neither of us felt that in our position it was wise to discuss our belief with the incredulous, who made up our mutual friends in so large a degree. I have had unmistakable references to him in sittings with Mrs. C. through Starlight."

The reader will notice at the outset that Whirlwind purports to get the information from the articles, but soon glides into communication with a spirit ostensibly. Besides the articles had never belonged to him and were not in any way related to the Gregg family. Mrs. C. has had some belief in psychometry, tho thinking that spirits are the agents in it. But I think this is rather a crucial experiment against any such possibility as is usually claimed for that phenomenon, as far as any single experiment can be crucial.

of letters. There are books and book on many subjects. There is a special library or rather a department where a specialization of one subject is treated [not read.] treated like law or something of that sort but on other sh ... shelves there are many books of varied character.

There is a strange little thing shown me. [It] is a small black bag [read 'bay'] bag with papers in it. I see this man with the bag in a chair and he is standing over it [not read.] it picking out papers and sorting them as if they had been brought [superposed.] to the office in the bag.

Do you know any one by the name of J.—

(Yes.) [Note 307.]

in connection with it. I saw the letter and now I see a bunch of letters as if written some short time ago to this man. The writing is very heavy and broad strokes, a bold unusual hand and seems to have been a valued correspondent of the person. \* \* ... man ... It looks as if those letters came regularly [read 'requesting'] regularly and were looked [read 'booked'.] were looked for and valued. They were not long nor were they business letters. There is a great desire on the part of the communicator to get [get] clear word.

Do you know anything about a beard on the man who is in spirit.

(No I do not. I can find out.)

I can see a small comb used often as if on a beard or mustache. It is on the face somewhere I am sure.

Now do you know who E.— is in connection with it.

(No, but I can find out.)

I suppose you desire me to go on (Yes.) as if the questions were all answered.

(Exactly.)

This is rather new for us but we are glad to try the test. I see Mother and then [not read.] E.— then E.— It is in the

---

307. The reference to an office except in details would fit the father of the one I sought and it would also fit the young boy, the communicator that finally succeeded in establishing his identity. It happens that both fathers were lawyers. The letter J. also fitted two. It is the initial of the surname of the one I was seeking and the initial of the Christian name of the other communicator that came.

spirit and around this man is a group. Those who went [read 'bent'] before him ... went ... and those hearts beat in harmony with his. There is poetry for you. Yes is that not poetical.

(Yes.) [Note 308.]

Strange I see a trouble [not read] w...trouble...with the boot as if something had at one time dropped on it or there had been a hit against something; for I see the foot lifted as if it still has the shoe on it, an ordinary lace shoe, if that is what you call a man's low foot gear. I do not mean low cut shoes or slippers.

(I understand.)

This foot seems to be lame or sore for a while after this slight accident. [Note 309.]

---

308. The significance of the letter E is explained in the 9th item of Mr. C.'s note, as pointing to the name Edward.

Since writing me regarding Judge Wheeler Mr. Gregg accidentally discovered information with reference to the "bunch of letters" mentioned and I append Mr. Gregg's letter explaining the facts. His notes were dated July 26th: the present letter with the additional information is dated Aug. 2d.

"In writing you under date of 26th ult. and enclosing answers relative to the records you had hitherto sent me, I answered one of your questions, with relation to the letters that were referred to in connection with the man whom I identified as the late Judge Wheeler, that I knew nothing about them. I might have said also that I very much doubted whether there were any such letters in any way connected with him, since I assumed that so busy a man as he would hardly have a more friendly correspondent with whom he would correspond to any great extent and in his own handwriting, but rather that whatever correspondence he had would be of a business character and type-written. Since writing you, however, the meeting of the State Bar Association has been held here, and a gentleman from another part of the state, who was an intimate friend of Judge Wheeler and related to him by marriage, read a paper on his life and character, and in the course of it referred to correspondence that he had had with Judge Wheeler. This seemed to offer a clue, and I asked him, when I found opportunity, concerning the details of this correspondence. I found: (a) That it had extended over a long period; (b) that it was exclusively of a friendly nature; (c) that the letters written to Judge Wheeler were in his correspondent's own handwriting, being written by him usually at his home in the evening; (d) that he wrote a very heavy hand; (e) that Judge Wheeler had preserved his letters and they were found in his desk after his death.

Knowing the relations of the two men as I do, I know that Judge Wheeler would have valued these letters very highly."

309. The incident of the hurt foot is explained in the 10th item of the general notes.

There is rather quick going to the spirit but a brave fight for life, short but Yes [to correct reading of 'short'] in effective. Yes [to reading of 'ineffective'] It was all over before any one knew much about it.

There is a name which sounds [read 'sends' and 'seems'] sounds [not read.] sounds like Grace. It is short and begins with G.— and belongs to a lady. [Note 310.]

I seem to come into the atmosphere of the man now. Do you remember if this man lived [not read.] away ... lived away from this particular section of the country.

(I do not know at all.)

It seems to me that he is in a new section here. It is not especially unfamiliar but it is not home home [delay in reading the first time.] I do not know as this is to be a most wonderful and successful test but there is only about so much one can do under these conditions.

(I understand and hope it will lead to more during the week.)

I think so. I see a lady with dark eyes and hair, a sweet [read 'small'] faced ... sweet ... lady about thirty or so. by that I mean not young or old, rather slender but looking well and happy who stands here and is very anxious to communicate. She gives no name as yet but on her finger [not read.] ... hands ... are several rig [erased.] rings which she takes off and lays on the table. one is a wedding ring, another is a ring with stones around it four or five in a direct all around setting. do you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

With her I hear Addie. Yes [to correct reading of name.] I am not staying too long am I.

(The time is up but you decide.)

I will only stay a moment longer but hope we may go on just in this way but stngr [stronger] tomorrow. Charles is a name I hear just now. Goodbye Jennie P—— [Note 311.]

---

310. Mr. Gregg replies that he does not recognize the name Grace.

The name "Grace", however, might very naturally be a mistake for the real name which we have had to omit here. This would be quickly recognized by any one if we gave it.

311. Of this group of incidents he writes:—

"I am not certain as to the description of the lady. From the reference

(All right. Some day I wish to ask you some questions, during the week.)

Yes Yes. You may. What about the experiments last night. (Which one?)

Both. I tried to come.

(I thought I would wait and see what would be said from your side about the first one. The second was very good.)

I tried to come at the first. You did not know it but I was in here.

(Good.)

More about it later.

(Good.) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Did anything come? I guess you don't want to tell. [I had paused only to write the sentence before answering.] Did your friend go out?

(No, he did not come at all.)

You knew he wasn't coming.

(Yes.)

Kept still about it. It was just as well. No wonder you didn't hurry to go to the door. Smart. [Pause.] [Note 312.]

[Reached her hand for mine and I took the left in my left. In a moment she raised her head and exclaimed "oh goodness!" and in a moment awakened.]

---

that is made later in the record, I think I know who is intended. Reading the two together, I have little doubt that the reference is to a lady close to our family through marriage and long acquaintance, who died a short time before our little boy, leaving a husband and two little children. Those nearest to her, and whom she would desire to reach, are possessed of the spirit of 'resolute incredulity'. She participated to a considerable extent in the sittings that Mrs. Gregg had with Mrs. Chenoweth in the fall of 1909, and her desire to speak of her children and to impress the consciousness that she is still living upon those nearest to her is intensely marked in those sittings. What appears in these records is thoroughly consistent with all that appears there. The name 'Addie' has no particular significance, tho this lady had a niece whose name is Adeline. The name Charles is not recognizable. I would refer it to Carl mentioned later."

312. I had not told Mrs. C. that the sitter was not able to come and went on with the impression that he would come. The incident here shows what the subconscious may do. Cf. note at the beginning of the sitting.

I received three articles from the party whom I wished to be present. Two of them I placed in the lap of Mrs. C. where her left hand could touch or hold them. The smaller article I did not know myself as it was first wrapped in paper and then oiled silk, according to my request. I did not examine it when I opened it. But I thought it a small comb holder. When I placed it in Mrs. C.'s lap I had removed the oiled silk but left it wrapped in the paper. At no time did Mrs. C. either see or touch the article. Her face and eyes were buried in a cushion or pillow fastened to the head-rest.

The second package consisted of two copy books which the friend's son had used at school when living. I noticed on one of them near the top on the outside that his initials were there and on the other his name. But I turned these face to face and saw that there was nothing visible on the two outsides. I then left them wrapped in the oiled silk when I put the package in Mrs. C.'s lap. Once it fell on the floor and I had to replace it. At no time did Mrs. C. either open it or touch the insides. The package was in my sight during the whole time, and both were held firmly in her hand. Her face was buried in the pillow of the head-rest and eyes presumably closed as usual. At no time did she try to move her head from the rest, and she could not have seen anything if she had.

It had been my intention to paste something over the initials and name but I received the articles too late to do this for the present sitting.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 13th, 1910. 10 A. M.

Before going to the sitting this morning I pasted slips of paper over the initials on one and the name on the other copybook, so that they were invisible. The result of the sitting proves beyond a doubt that Mrs. C. did not see anything yesterday, since the communicators were not in any way connected with the articles. They relate to parties that have had sittings before and who were brought into contact with Mrs. C. through myself. As Mrs. C. began to go into the trance it was apparent to me from an allusion to the name

John Gregg that she was on the wrong track, and I rather expected to see what came. But I resolved to let things take their natural course and to play my part as dexterously as I could.

Also before the trance began to come on, both of us thought we heard raps, two or three single raps. I remarked that I thought it was the chair on which Mrs. C. was sitting and that it was caused by her motion. She remarked that she had not moved the slightest except her hand. We waited a few moments and thought we heard another rap, but were not certain. Mrs. C. is quite sceptical about them and laughs about them as any one would, but knows they come with her husband. She cannot get them herself and remarked that I was the medium. We laughed it off. Presently her head fell back on the cushion and I heard raps again, single raps separated by a number of seconds, perhaps ten, but did not mention it. I simply tried to locate them and as nearly as I could do this they were on a chair six feet from both of us. They continued at intervals after the subliminal stage had been reached and while she was speaking. They are marked in the record. No such noises have been noticed in the room at any other times that might be traceable to cracking wood or furniture. Indeed not the slightest trace of this has been observed by me save when the noises have all the qualities of real raps.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groans.] I feel as if there were fingers all over my face. They make me so nervous. [Pause.] [Raps on chair 6 feet off, single and separated some seconds.]

Do you know anything about a boy?

(Yes.) [I had the boy in mind whom I desired to reach.]

I mean the little boy that came here.

(When?)

Now.

(I think so.) [Raps again. Pause, and then raps.]

Is that a rap?

(Yes.)

They really are beginning to magnetize the room to do things. Do you know little John?

(John who?)

John Gregg. I think his father must be thinking of us because every little while I think of him. Isn't that funny. Don't you think that funny?

(Yes.) [Note 313.]

[Raps again which continued for a number of moments at intervals during this talking and a pause.]

I see. [Pause.] Please put me in. [Head placed in rest.] I got to move. [Shifted position in chair.] I guess that's all right. [raps.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I [rap.] [pause.] want to come if I can [not read.] can. [rap.] You will help us.

(Yes, I certainly shall do all I can to help.)

The condition [read 'constitution' tho all the letters for this were not present.] condition is so different but we know we know. J. [pencil fell.]

[Writing had been slow with pauses between the words and almost between the letters.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop. We [read 'the', hand paused and then read 'he' and hand paused till read correctly.] are all much interested in this case and want the work to be done by the right one as much as possible. Still we can help [help] by working ourselves now and again and resting. [last two words not read.] and thus rest the communicator.

(I understand.)

Jennie P.— did well yesterday (Yes.) but Starlight seems to think she ought to have something to do. You will understand why perhaps.

(Yes, perfectly.) [Starlight had been the control in the sit-

---

313. John Gregg had communicated through Mrs. C. long before and I ascertained afterwards that Mrs. C. had expected this same week on Wednesday to have a sitting for his return, but it was postponed. He was not the person I was seeking and so his was not the name that might have been gotten and was not gotten from the article.

tings of Mr. and Mrs. Gregg. But I wanted to see how things developed.]

but we will let that go as a part of the record for it is a good point. You see we are not as dead as we might be. You will know the old gentleman who comes with these articles [not read.] articles I think. He is helping to arrange and communicate [not read.] communicate as he can. If you [not read and hand pointed till read correctly.] do not know never mind but I believe it is the father of the one who should have been here and would have but for other reasons which I cannot speak of. Do you understand.

(Yes, but I am not sure who is trying to communicate, whether any relative of my friend or not.) [Intended to stimulate more definite efforts.]

Yes but you do not mean you do not know who I am.

(I know you are G. P.)

Yes but the first [not read.] the first writing was an effort on the part of a friend of your friend. I mean of the one who is to have the records. Now do you understand.

(No, it is not clear yet.)

What can I say to make it clearer. The first writing this morning was an attempt on the part of a spirit to prove connection and relation with the article on the little table.

(But the letter J. that I got is equivocal.)

Oh yes that may be but the attempt was being made just as [pause.] definitely as if the message had been complete and clear. It was no effort of W. J.— if [read 'of' without excuse but need of turning the sheet and hand pointed till correctly read.] that is what concerned you.

(No, it was not that.)

It is none of his effort. Now do you know.

(No I do not.)

Wait a minute. I was going to ask you if you know anything about a long grey garment like a coat or cloak. I see it thrown over the table as if to conceal or protect something. It is a man who has taken off his coat or ulster. it looks more like that than an ordinary overcoat and he throws it over the table. There is an air of authority and assuredness that accompanies his movement as if he felt he ought to have recognition. I do not know

him but feel that he is close[ly] connected with the sitter. When I say sitter I mean the articles from the sitter.

(I understand, but it is not any clearer who is meant. I know little or nothing personally about either party: only I have been in communication with them, and otherwise know them only by their interest in the work.)

You do not know whether the father is in our world do you.

(No, I do not.)

Leave it that way. It is a father's influence and desire which I feel most keenly [Indian and pause.] You will understand that I am practically a go between.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 314.]

and it may seem slow and stupid work but I will do my best. Some way W. J.— has an interest in this work. I wonder by his ['by' read 'try'] by his attention if he ever knew the people or was interested in the case before he went away.

(I suspect he was, but I do not know.) [Probably heard Dr. Hodgson tell incidents in the case I had in mind, but certainly not in this one.]

He says not a word but sits looking with that intent and thoughtful manner with his finger to ['finger' read cautiously and with delay.] to his lip as he sometimes did when listening and he is eager [eager] to see how this will be accomplished.

In the room with us is a man a woman and a boy, all connected with this special sitting.

(Good.)

The man places his hand [not read tho clear enough.] on the ... hand on the table and tries to make connection that way. He has communicated before. this is not new but this method is new and he makes much of his firmness and steadiness of purpose believing it will help him.

(Has he communicated through this light before?)

He nods assent and seems to have no question but I do not know about it. That would be quite possible. You know Hyslop because I do not know all that goes on here.

(Does Starlight know?)

He says Starlight knows him and has talked for him but I

---

314. Mr. Gregg replies to inquiries that "both the father and mother" of Mrs. Gregg are dead, but the reference to the overcoat conveys nothing.

think we had better try as if she had never done anything because it might bring a mixed and uncertain condition here but it is almost impossible to subdue Starlight when she is joyous and happy over an event. I do not mean that she is willful but her joy colors all the atmosphere. You know what I mean of course.

(Yes.) [Note 315.]

Now I must let the hand go for another trial for the earnest wish is to have direct and individual messages. You know that.

(Yes.)

I am around [not read because superposed.] all right... around. You cannot lose me.

(All right.) [Pencil dropped.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian and a pause.] I will go and get my hat and walk part of the way with you Dad. [pencil fell and I reinserted it.] may I.

---

315. This was the first experiment that had been tried with articles present instead of a person and it is more pertinent than the record would indicate superficially to have a reference to the interest of Professor James indicated in such an experiment. He, like the rest of us, when he was living, had a natural scientific interest to know how experiments of this kind could be successfully performed, as they were in the Piper case. Mrs. C. had no personal knowledge of this state of mind on his part, however much we may suppose she might guess it.

Mr. Gregg remarks an interesting fact in connection with this message. I had supposed that the apparent presence of Professor James was only a part of the subliminal intrusion, as I had no reason to suppose that he had ever heard of these people. But Mr. Gregg writes:—

"I notice a reference to 'W. J.' meaning, I presume, Professor James, and the control queries if he ever knew the people or was interested in the case before he went away. Your note is that he certainly knew nothing of this one. Mrs. Gregg did call upon Professor James, when in Boston having sittings in the fall of 1909, and talked with him for a short time upon the subject. No doubt, it passed out of his mind, as she was a stranger, and he probably had many calls from sorrowing parents."

In his previous note Mr. Gregg also remarks that he unmistakably found traces of Judge Wheeler in his Starlight sittings at an earlier date. This confirms the statements of the record, and it is exceedingly interesting to observe both the admission that he did communicate and ignorance of it, if we have to assume that G. P. is only a secondary personality of Mrs. C. It is natural on the spiritistic theory to have knowledge displayed by the Judge and ignorance by G. P.

(Yes, certainly. I think that would be welcome I am sure.)

I do not know what to say first.

(Tell something that your father will recognize.) [The message indicated to me that it was the boy John that was trying to write.]

I have told him so much now that I do not know which is best to talk to him or Mama. She is nearer. [Pause.] [Pencil fell.]

['She' first read 'the' and hand resented my trying to move it to the other side of the page, and I read it 'he' and the same resistance occurred till I read it 'she'.]

[Change of Control.]

Let him rest a minute. he is all right and knows [not read.] a lot ... knows ... he can say \* \* [Often?] a \* \* [possibly 'little'.] This is a good experiment and [pencil changed.] must not be spoiled by haste. I know what I am about. J. P.—

(I understand.)

A minute or two between times will help him. He is a fearless [not read.] fearless and persistent little fellow and will win out. You do not need to tell me. You understand for I catch it from you.

(All right.)

Who is this dear old lady. do you know any old lady who would come with these articles.

(No I do not, but the proper parties will know.)

a very precise and particular old lady comes here now with an air of acquaintanceship and puts her hands together as if praying and by that shows me that she was a religious person who believed in prayer or who has the prayers of her heart answered in the knowledge that life is persistent and overcomes [read 'far...?'] death. ... overcomes. that is if there is any death. I myself have never seen anything that corresponds with the old idea of death. change in form or many of the conditions does not impair personality. a man may grow very fat or lean or strong or weak and yet his personality does not die and no more does it die over here.

Do you know any one connected with this sitter whose name is [quite a pause.] G.— It seems as if the old lady had an ini-

tial G.— on her head. I do not mean literally but G.— is the letter I see in connection with her.

(I understand and do not know anything about her, but think her friend will recognize who it is.)

all right. we will go on. She says that no care of hers will be missing, that is not just the way she expresses it for she is some surprised at the turn [read first 'term' and hand pointed and then 'town'.] turn things have taken and so is a little perplexed and not quite clear in her expression. She was asked to come here, that is she was expected and mentally asked, and now she is here and something is missing but, I go on. She is guarding a treasured child and desires to express concerning that guardianship and to assure that she will always and forever use the same prayerful care and control that characterized her care of her own boys. That is about what I gather from her. [Note 316.]

Perhaps you do not know anything about it but I leave it for the future to [Indian] find out about. [Indian continues with groans.]

new strength being given but don't they make a fuss about it. (I understand.)

---

316. G. is the initial of the family name, as readers will know by this time. Whether this is for the surname or Christian name is not indicated by the text.

Regarding the lady mentioned and described Mr. Gregg writes:—

"While the description is not in all respects correct, from the context I am quite sure that the 'dear old lady' referred to is my mother. She was not especially devout, as that term is understood generally. Indeed, while she was brought up as a member of the church, and to the last preserved her church membership, she was essentially not an orthodox church woman. At the same time she was a religious woman in the broadest sense of the word, possessing no doubt of an all wise Providence, which directs all things for its own ends. She did, I think, believe in the efficacy of prayer, but that belief was unobtrusive, and there was nothing in her life or manner to suggest that somewhat obtrusive religiousness which appears to me suggested by the reference to her. The letter 'G' would, of course, apply to her. The reference 'treasured child' is clear if, indeed, we carry to the other side the thoughts and emotions treasured here, for our little boy, John, would have been to her the dearest thing in the world. The reference to 'her own boys' is very suggestive, and for whom she thought and strove all her life.

worse than starting an engine. It is all in the interest of science, So I cannot complain. [Note 317.]

You said I did good work yesterday did you.

(Yes.)

I was not one bit sure ... bit ... [read 'but' first time.] that I had done much ... one ... [clearing confusion of first reading.] but I am glad if I got anything. It was a wonder with the conditions so troubled.

[Apparent reference to Mrs. C.'s anxious state of mind.]

Now again I hear this old lady say Frank. It is a familiar name to her. I think. Do you know.

(No.) [Note 318.]

Never mind. it is all right I guess. The boy that is with her is most affectionate and kind. He is unusually bright and clear headed and never lets anything go without a question of its use or purpose. It made little difference whether it was a top that could not spin or a wheel that would not go. he found out why. He was the sort of a boy who went into everything with his whole soul and consequently he knew more at six than some at sixteen [sixteen]. He was a little open hearted soldier of perfect sincerity and truth. Yes [to correct reading of 'sincerity' which was not clear.]

he often asks the old lady what she prays for and why. By that you will know that prayer is not confined to the underworld. I understand that even the spirits in purgatory pray.

(I understand.) [Note 319.]

You take that last remark too seriously. I cannot stay too long at the serious side of the work. It is too wearing. Yes. [to correct reading.] I will let the boy try again. J. P.—

(Good.) [Pencil fell.]

---

317. If Jennie P. or Whirlwind is the person conjectured she would know nothing about engines. Mrs. C. knows all about them and I am not sure but the humor is all her own.

318. Continuing in reference to his mother, Mr. Gregg says:—

"Frank is the name of her eldest son, of whom she was, I believe, especially fond.

319. From the account of the father the boy did go into everything with his whole soul. But as he communicated before this account of him will not be especially evidential.

[Change of Control.]

Mine on the table.

(That depends on who you are.) [Said to help draw him out.]

Mine mine and my [pause.] I want to make pictures. [Pause.] Carl [read 'Earl'] Carl \* \* will not tell Paul [read 'Past'] Paul. W I l l. [Indian.] G. [pencil then apparently tried to write but did not mark marks.] [Pause.] G \* \* [scrawls.] \* \* \* \* [scrawls and lost control.] [Note 320.]

[Change of Control.]

He lost control but let it go today. (All right.) I think it is all right and a little later both he and I may come in better condition. Sister. [so read] No. S. M. [Pencil fell.] [Note 321.]

[Oral.]

[Indian.] Put her back. [I put her head on cushion.] [Indian and pause, then a sigh.] Oh dear! [Pause and groan.]

What is the matter with my heart?

(I don't know.)

Did I die with heart trouble?

(I don't know.) [Pause.] [Note 322.]

[Subliminal.]

Am I to come back?

---

320. Mr. Gregg writes with his mother still in mind:—

"The name Carl may mean another son, whose name is Carroll. In other sittings that I have had, in referring to this son there has been the same difficulty in getting the name clearly, the effort usually starting with Charles, and after various efforts finally settling upon the name Carl. Will is, of course, my own name. Paul is the name of my other son." G. is the initial of Gregg.

321. The "S. M." is probably for Stainton Moses, as these are his initials. He may have been an intermediary for the boy.

322. Mr. Gregg says: "The reference to the heart trouble is also very suggestive, for during the last eight or ten years of her life, my mother was afflicted with a disease of the heart which finally caused her death, and she often suffered quite intensely from it."

I cannot quit this subject without saying that the description of my little boy, John, is true in every particular."

(Yes.)

Why are they rushing them out so quickly. Don't they want me to see?

(I don't know.)

You are telling me stories.

(No.)

Aren't you really?

(No.)

[Pause.] Say ... [Indian.] Dr. Hyslop, do you know that [indicating the article by left hand.]

(Yes.)

Do you know what I think about it?

(What?)

There is something written in it by the spirit, something by a spirit that came a long distance. I don't feel it is right here. It is farther than New York. Do you know if it did?

(Yes.)

Did anything come that was any good?

(I can't tell yet.)

It is awful to be uncertain about things.

(Yes.)

Goodbye. I can't help it if it doesn't come, can I?

(No.)

[Pause.] What has Washington to do with it?

(I don't know.) [I did not think at the time that the father lives in the State of Washington. Mrs. C. knows the fact.]

Just now I saw something like a big man not so big as Taft, then right off... Just from the President is it not?

(No.)

Perhaps that is all wrong, see?

(Yes.) [Note 323.]

---

323. This reference to Washington has another possibility than the message suggested at the time. I assumed that Washington had reference to the home of the family, meaning the state in which they live, and that the allusion to President Taft was a subliminal association aroused by it. But a letter from the father shows that there is a coincidence of much larger importance. His name was under consideration for an important position by President Taft. Of this neither I nor Mrs. C. knew anything. It was not

Goodbye. [Pause.] Oh dear! I can't see. [Pause.] I can't see. [Then reached for my hand and I took hers. In a moment she awakened with difficulty in seeing.]

Each time the boy tried to write the writing was very slow, slower than that of Prof. James, and resembled it somewhat at times. The boy's script was not the same with each attempt.

The chief interest in the automatic writing is the fact that the subliminal knew well enough who it was that was trying and the normal consciousness knows the persons to whom reference is made. There has been some correspondence between Mrs. C. and the father and mother of the boy. On the theory that the subconscious can write what it knows we should have had no difficulty on the part of the boy to write his name or that of his father. His own came only in the subliminal before the writing and his father's could not be completed, tho it came in full at a former sitting of the mother.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 14th, 1910. 10.15 A. M.

Almost as soon as I entered the séance room Mrs. C. remarked that she seemed to be haunted by John Gregg for this week. She then went on to explain that she was to have had sittings for the Greggs while they were to be absent. The sittings were to be conducted by the stenographer, one

---

a matter of any public knowledge whatever and arose long after Mrs. G.'s sittings with Mrs. C.

Mr. Gregg writes in detail of the incident: "About the time of these sittings, or a little before, representatives of some of the commercial bodies here had taken up with me the question of my attempting to secure an appointment on the Interstate Commerce Commission to fill one of the several vacancies then existing, believing that the Northwest was entitled to representation on that body. I refused to consider the suggestion or to permit my name to be used, but I mentioned to Mrs. Gregg what had been suggested to me, and she was much more taken with the idea, and endeavored to get me to reconsider my refusal. The consequence was that the subject was much talked over, and the matter of a residence in Washington much spoken of."

of them having been given with Starlight as control. Mrs. C. was worrying to feel that the sittings had not been held and thought the Greggs must be expecting them. I did not explain to her what had been going on but said I would explain to the Greggs what had taken place, so that she, Mrs. C., need not communicate with them for the purpose. But I was careful not to intimate that anything had been coming to indicate the presence of John Gregg in the sittings and so to relieve Mrs. C. of concern. Her anxiety was that of a person who had not done her duty by the Greggs.

We also had some conversation about the different characteristics of different mediums, Mrs. C. having brought it up by remarking that she thought the spirits had to use her phraseology and ideas for their own expression and that she herself was at fault for not getting the messages pure. She went on spontaneously to remark that this fault was not one that she could remedy or alter by her will. At that point I agreed and said that I thought her correct and that I understood exactly what the difficulty was; that time could overcome it and explained how long I had worked on one psychic to develop her and how long the Emperor group had to work with Mrs. Piper, even after Phinuit had worked with it and after she was apparently developed. This was new to Mrs. C. and she was surprised by it and remarked that she had thought Mrs. Piper had always been what she was. This led to the different characteristics of mediums and the different powers accompanying them. But I specified no details, and I record so much for future possibilities.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough and head fell back. Pause.]

Hello!

(Hello!)

It is strange I don't see so many of your friends as usual. I think they are keeping away, however, for other communicators.

(Yes.)

I mean that I don't see Dr. James and that little group. I thought the sittings were for him. Wasn't that funny. [Pause.]

Put me in that thing. [Head placed in rest.] If I could move. I suppose I could. [Shifted body into more comfortable position.]

(Yes.) [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I desire to help you if I am [pencil ran off pad.] able.

(You are welcome.) [I did not recognize the personality, tho I suspected Prof. James at first writing. But as it proceeded I gave this up.]

This is a most interesting case and the development of it is a matter of value to you and to the world.

(I understand.)

You may think I came because my name was used by the [pause.] subconscious self but that is not so. reverse the order and you will have the explanation.

(I understand.)

I being here was a part of the thought or spirit knowledge. It is most fascinating to watch the processes of evolving expressions. I send my kindest and most cordial greetings to the [groan.] friends who wait the outcome of these sittings. I am W. J.

(Good.)

and know full well that I was not especially expected but the subject and experiment called me. I tried to come Sunday evening and I have since then heard you talking and using my name. Do you recall using it. (Yes.) Sunday evening after leaving here.

(I am not sure at this moment, but it is very probable.)

Yes it is for I kept that day in my mind as the one to which I could refer and of course I know of the two later occasions. [Note 324.]

---

324. I did not recall at the time the use of Prof. James' name after leaving the house of the Chenoweths where I had tried a mediumistic and a telepathic experiment, at the former of which apparently Prof. James did try to communicate, if the reference to a man with a robe on and a nervous manner be the correct interpretation of the person meant. But I did not, so far as I can remember, utter the name of Prof. James after leaving the house. Another man, however, did, and it is apparently significant to refer to "the two other occasions"; for I had hurried away from the two experi-

I am still puzzled about some things. You will recall how I used to think and say that the complications would not simplify by ordinary rules [read 'sides'] rules or methods, and it was then I lost my confidence that we were near the con . . .

[Seeing that the writing was growing dimmer and suspecting that the pencil was too hard I changed it for a softer one. Immediately it affected the control or writing which was labored for several words.]

clusion of the problem.

(I understand.) [Note 325.]

[Indian.] Remember Hyslop this is a new statement I make now. I never doubted the continuance of life and expression. It was the possibility of proving the identity and measuring the influence which spirits have on the world of sense. I knew I must go on [Indian.] but how clear I would be was the question.

(I understand.)

I have been quoted as losing my faith at last but that is not

ments Sunday evening at the home of the Chenoweths to meet a gentleman who expected to bring me a hypnotic subject. He brought two and we tried spiritistic communications with both of them. The gentleman several times mentioned the name of Prof. James, as a desired communicator, but immediately corrected it to Hodgson, and I tried in both cases to get into communication with Hodgson, but failed. One of the cases showed no tendency to the supernormal. The other, if the operator's word is acceptable, did some remarkable travelling clairvoyance under hypnosis. For he was sent to a place in New Hampshire and mentioned a number of things which, according to the operator, were wholly unknown to him. If the man was never there and the operator's word is trustworthy as to this fact and what was said in the hypnotic trance, some good evidence of clairvoyance and apparent spirit communication was evident. But it all depends on the operator's word. I know him personally and there is no reason to distrust him.

Mrs. Chenoweth knew absolutely nothing about this experiment. She was not informed either that I expected to perform it or had done so. Whether the allusion in this present record refers to these two experiments and the mention of Prof. James' name is evidence cannot be positively decided without additional incidents, but an apparent coincidence is there at least.

325. This is a very characteristic remark about the complications. It is especially consonant with the mind of Professor James on all subjects. He had a detestation for details and views which had to rest on unravelling great complications and wanted a truth to be clear and simple. Mrs. C. had no knowledge of this trait.

quite true. I will go and let the right communicator come. W. J. O. [Pencil fell.] [Note 326.]

[Change of Control.]

[A lot of Indian gibberish.]

Where is the article put. [I seized the copybooks on the chair at my right and placed them on the table at left of Mrs. C. and put her left hand on them.]

Move the table a bit nearer the hand. [I started to move the writing table.] No the little one. [I did so.] Better. thank you.

Now I will see what I can do. Have you any other article than this book.

(Yes.) [I placed the comb under the left hand also.]

It belongs to some one else. What about the haunting [read 'hunting'] of the light... haunting of the light. Was that not funny. do not talk much. I only wanted to say that but I do not want to spoil the report by too much conversation by you.

(Good.)

It is very strange but I feel a third party here. Have we articles ... we [not read first time.] belonging to three people.

(Yes.) [Mrs. C. had seen the three packages wrapped up.]

I do not mean J. W. J., 3 that come in one group (Yes.) brought by you for some one else. (Yes.) who waits to see what you will get.

[I thought in this that the mistake had been discovered, but the sequel shows it had not been.]

It is all very plain and simple until we try to get the particular and definite dates and incidents, then [not read.] the... then the matter melts away as snow under intense heat. It is practically the same law. The intensity is or acts as a disintegrating [not read.] disintegrating influence. You understand.

(Perfectly.)

---

326. I have not been able to verify this statement about the belief of Professor James. It is contrary to what I had supposed of him. Many persons have their "over-beliefs" which they recognize are not scientifically supported and this statement would imply the fact of Professor James. The answers to my inquiries, however, have not affirmed or denied it.

why I put these things in once in a while.

(Yes.)

It helps to educate the eager. [Pause, as I had not read the writing, owing to taking notes.] Yes [to correct reading.]

I might have said something less complimentary when I remember the idiots you sometimes have to deal with. But these people are heart anxious and do not not [repeated apparently because my reading was not understood.] come to be fooled by their own desires. It is a laudable purpose I suppose.

I wonder if I had a husband of my own if I would be w. . . . [‘would’ read ‘could’ and hand started to rewrite when I read it.] constantly wei . . . [?] [pause while I deciphered ‘constantly’] weighing [not read.] and measuring . . . weighing . . . his capacity to express for fear I might be fooled and he might . . . [I pulled on hand to prevent superposing.] might not be there at all but be only a phantasm of my brain. [Mrs. C. has husband living.]

Oh well it all makes business for some one. Now what would you do without this occupation.

(Vegetate I suppose.)

or hibernate (Yes.) or emigrate, more likely to the higher spheres where you belong.

The three people who are here are namely a boy a man and a lady. Do you know that.

(Yes.) [Coincided with my knowledge of the articles.]

They are all connected in a family relationship and each is expected not because they have never given a message but because they have done so and are expected to do more.

There is a peculiar interest and sentiment attaching to the relation between the lady and the boy. She is so glad to have him with her because he fills a [read ‘feels’ and hand pointed, then ‘put’ and hand still pointed] fills a place in her life which would otherwise be sad and lonely and incomplete. She does not even play at being his mother but tells [read ‘talks’] him of his . . . tells . . . mother and is a sort of guardian and caretaker. He is so . . . [I had to pull hand down to prevent superposing.]

He is so competent and bouyant [buoyant] and full of life that he seems amply able to do for himself, only that his years would

seem too few for that sort of expression. all he needs is a guardian and guiding hand and in this lady he has it. [Note 327.]

The man is a good and strong and able man who cares for both the lady and the boy. Just why these three should have been especially selected I can not tell for there are many others in the immediate group who could and would come. This is only my wonder [read 'reminder' tho the letters seemed to be 'remnder'] wonder. They seem to understand.

The boy looks at you and with a bright smile says I thank you for all the plain talk you have made to my Mamma. It will help her. Do you know what he means by that. (Yes.) [Note 328.]

All right. that is one on me. I do not so he is getting along all right. Do you know anything about a train [read 'bran'] a railroad... a train... a journey. The lady and the boy each speak of a trip on which they have been with the one the boy loves so much. It is very recent and is a rather sudden under-

---

327. It was an interesting remark on the part of Whirlwind or Jennie P. to refer to the "haunting of the light", as it is a recognition of the fact that Mrs. C. was wrong as to the person I had expected and was still giving evidential matter, the interest lying in the circumstance that she had normally expected to have a sitting for that party this week. But Whirlwind will not correct the medium and lets her subliminal go on giving facts that are wrong for the party I desired but correct for the party actually present. I can imagine Dr. Hodgson laughing in his sleeve at this order of events.

The incidents connected with the lady and the boy are not covered by what Mr. Gregg says in Note 316. The lady was not his mother.

328. After her first sittings two or three years ago Mrs. Gregg called on me in New York and told me her experiences and that she had tried to resist the tendencies to mediumship. I advised her not to do this too strongly and to let it take a natural course. I have never mentioned this to any one whatever and the value of the incident depends wholly on whether Mrs. Gregg wrote the facts to Mrs. C. Mr. Gregg writes me later that Mrs. Gregg said nothing to Mrs. C. of her visit to me.

In response to inquiry Mr. Gregg writes to me as follows, establishing the importance of the statement in the record.

"Mrs. Gregg has never had any communication with Mrs. C., orally or in writing, since her visit to Boston and Mrs. C. would by no possibility know anything of Mrs. Gregg's talk with you, as I did not refer to Mrs. Gregg's visit to New York when I was in Boston. Mrs. Gregg is reasonably certain that she did not tell Mrs. C. she intended going to New York, tho if she remembers correctly Mrs. C., while in trance, made some unmistakable reference to her projected trip there."

taking. I do not speak of it as an especial [not read.] especial undertaking, only as the boy speaks of it, he says a long way off, a long way off.

(Yes.)

There is a very [read 'way'] de.... very ... definite interest in another city. Papa thought it best to come, that is what the boy says and I am glad glad glad.

(Good.) [Note 329.]

That is the expression of the boy. The lady says that many things have happened to make her happy. That is happy in her spirit life and although there is a definite shutting of the door in her face by some of those who loved [not read.] loved her when she lived she still has joy in going to the home and to her babies. It is good for her. I mean the power to see and know. [Mrs. C. exclaims 'Oh dear'.]

The boy says the books are his books that had school work. Do you know about that.

(Yes.)

Is it right.

(Yes.) [I equivocated here purposely to avoid confusion.]

[This was correct for the real person whose books they were. Mrs. C. had not opened them and had not seen the inside, but touch might have revealed the general nature of the books.]

Good I am glad. He opened them and looked in and saw his own familiar writing and laughed.. [It is of course not his writing.]

---

329. The allusion here to a journey and an interest in another city could not be known by Mrs. C., as it was also not known by me. The statement of the father will make this coincidence clear.

"A day or two before your sittings I returned from a trip to Olympia, the state capital. That, however, is not a long trip, only about 400 miles, and is one I often take, so think nothing of it. It might, of course, make a different impression on John. He has been there with me a number of times and on two occasions, when I was a member of the state senate he spent quite a long time there with me. He was consequently well acquainted in Olympia and with the active interest he took in everything, he always liked to go there. Apart from my trip to Kentucky and Boston last spring, and Paul's (John's elder brother) return from California in the early summer no member of the family has travelled to any extent, unless my rather frequent trips to Olympia, Seattle and Tacoma may be so accounted."

They have not been opened in this room have they.

(No they have not.)

Good that is all right. He says there [read 'them'.] there were several things thought of to bring but these were finally decided as easy and good not easily recognized to the touch. All that has a bearing. It is for that [written 'the' and 'at' added.] scientific brain of the father that all this business is done and Frank, don't forget Frank, that is what [read 'who' and hand pointed till correctly read.] the lady says and the old gentleman laughs as if it were a good point. Do you know anything about that.

(No I do not.)

All right, we have to let it pass. The boy would like to write for himself. He tried yesterday but he can try again tomorrow. Are we getting along all right.

(Yes.)

Where [read 'when' and hand pointed till read correctly.] is the little glove, that is what the boy says and then he laughs and says Oh dear how much I want to hug Mamma and how much to talk with Papa and all the rest. He was such a brave little fellow when he was taken ill, he made no complaint and was as patient as could be and then all the plans for his recovery were made when suddenly the shadow of death fell upon the home and he was [pause.] still and white and cold and irresponsible.

I must not dwell on the sentimental side. It spoils my energy. [not read.] energy. You understand don't you.

(Perfectly.)

I could cry and sob with the sorrow I feel and know which ... know [read questioningly 'tomorrow' the first time.] but it is a thing of the past and the white [read 'while'] white [read 'white' then 'while' and the hand crossed the 't', when I read it correctly.] light of truth gives a golden gleam to death and makes the glory of separation wonderfully real.

[Indian.] Father father is the old gentleman's relationship and all the new and strange life new and strange because of its knowledge which came to him after he left the body. I mean the knowledge as the spirit.

(Yes.)

he is so free from the prejudices of his past. The opinions which made him strong [not read.] strong are now no more and he works t[o] keep the boys in touch with the life he now knows. He comes to you and says they are good boys good boys.

The name of John is here and I cannot tell whether it belongs to the old gentleman or the boy or both. But I leave it as a name so uncommon—that is a joke of course—but I am obliged to give it because I hear it.

(I understand.) [Note 330.]

---

330. In regard to the glove incident Mr. Gregg writes:

"The reference to gloves is not particularly pertinent, save that among other articles of John's I had with me at my sittings in the spring of 1910, was one of his gloves. It occupied no particular part in the sittings, and did not, indeed, evoke any special memories.

"John died of scarlet fever. He was ill but four days. While it was recognized by the attending physicians that he had a severe attack, they at no time spoke of him as being in danger. Four or five hours before his death, they said that he was getting along very well, that everything was going as it should, and there was not the slightest cause for apprehension. He passed out with practically no warning whatever.

"The description of his bravery is most excellent. He had a very sore throat, and the treatments given him hurt him cruelly, but he strove to conceal his pain from his mother, and his only thought through his brief illness was of the trouble he was causing. He was all through it, as through his life, thinking only of others.

"I have already explained the pertinency of the name Frank in the connection in which it appears previously (Note 318). It is also pertinent in the relation to the individuals referred to here. The lady there referred to, is the one of whom I have spoken in Note 316, and who was his mother. The present lady is sister-in-law of 'Frank', and the man referred to is unquestionably her father, and the father-in-law of 'Frank'. Owing to many circumstances unnecessary to go into, they both have a great interest in him. I can well fancy that the lady would likewise have a great interest in John, and that he would fill a place in her life 'which would otherwise be sad and lonely and incomplete', and she left two children, one a daughter about two years older than John, and another, a son, about two years younger than he.

"The reference to the father who is free from the prejudices of the past might apply either to the father of the lady above referred to, or to my own, tho for very different reasons. Her father was a man of very strong convictions, I believe an agnostic, and certainly one who would, if he did not consider communications from the departed absurd, at least consider it unwise to intrude such problems upon the serious business of life. My father, on

What about the time am I staying too long.

(Not yet: plenty of time.)

You have answered, so I go on [I was busy taking notes.]

(Right.)

That noise is the table is it not. [Noise caused on chair like raps and due to my slight movements.]

(Yes.)

Yes I hear it. I can hear the noises in the room when I am controlling but not always see the people. I catch a fleeting picture of them as they are photographed on the [pause.] surrounding film but it is not always absolutely correct. They may be out of humor or in some strained attitude of mind and then the picture is distorted. It is like being badly focussed for a photograph. The hands may look immense or the head like a giant's [read 'quilt's' knowing it was not this.] giant's. You understand what I mean.

(Perfectly.)

I would often write more fully and explanatory but I do not care to use the power that way. W. J. can do all that. He is the reasoner of the group and he can take his time no matter what it costs you. I must rush [read 'risk'] rush for time is money. Yes you see that point all right.

[I had to change the pencil as the old one was worn out. In the act the hand showed excitement and hurry, feeling over the page, which was a new one, and rubbing it. My pencil was seized with my hand and I had to take it back and get another.]

Sorry to trouble you but no use to make fool attempts. It is all magnetism and when you learn that ... when [not read the first time.] when you learn that you will have the secret of the work, magnetic attraction.

---

the other hand, was an orthodox churchman, of the old school, and tho I never heard him speak upon the subject, I have no doubt would consider communications with the other world un-Christian. I am the more inclined to think that it is he from the reference to 'the boys' and his saying that they were 'good boys'. It may be said, also, that his name is John, my little boy having been named after him."

I may add that a few pages later (p. 436) the reference to the old gentleman's "ideas of his own about being saved" confirms this conjecture by Mr. Gregg.

(What kind of magnetism do you work with?)

Not really like a needle [read 'muddle' questioningly.] to the magnet but a a ... needle ... exactly but like a law of spiritual attraction. It is easily detected because the spiritual status of a person [not read] is ... person is usually hidden under the rubbish of physical life and intellectual command [read hesitatingly 'command'.] dominancy. See what I mean.

(Yes somewhat.)

The best work will always be done when the seeker is in spiritual rapport with the light. (Yes.) It is not education or condition socially [hesitation in reading.] socially or even morally for you[r] moral ideas are so dependent on your training and education but it is a spirit likeness, spirit likeness may be high or low but the key must be the same in receiver and sender.

(What makes that likeness?)

The amount of spiritual perception.

(What do you mean by spiritual?)

away from material or physical ... material [not read first time.] Yes [to correct reading.] do you understand.

(I think I do.)

Let me say [a] word more. Babies [read 'Bobries' which the letters are.] understand babies. ... Babies... Cats [not read.] understand ... Cats ... cats.. Men understand men only as they live in like atmospheres.

(I understand.)

It is plain to you now.

(Yes, I asked because there has always been an ambiguity in the use of the term spiritual without detailed explanation and you have thrown light upon it.)

Everybody has a spiritual life. the convict in his cell, the nun in ... nun [read 'man' first time.] in the convent. The king in his castle and the newsboy in the elephant in the square of Paris.

[I read this in a puzzled state of mind, expecting it would be cleared up in some way.]

Do you know the elephant where the newsboys slept in Paris.

(No I never heard of it.)

All right. read I forget who now but a French author. name one.

(I know very few French authors, but can you ...) [I intended to ask the communicator in some way to name a contemporary, as I wished to test her identity, but did not get it out before she began writing.]

Not Balzac. [pause.] La V [probably intended for 'M'.] Le Misr.... Hugo. Hugo. Hugo. Hugo. That is it. [Written excitedly.]

(Good.) [Note 331.]

But to ... [superposing and I had to remonstrate.] But to return. the spiritual life is determined by the associations often but even amid [both words not read.] even [not read.] even amid [not read tho clear.]... but even among the different kinds of people there will be different lives. all men have not the same amount or kind of spiritual life. But a nun and a newsboy may meet on common level and understand and be attracted to each other if all the law of the physical and intellectual word [so read.] world is laid aside.

(I understand.)

Law is so different in different spheres. I am not helping you much am I.

(Yes you are.)

All right then. I had a notion I was clumsily [not read.] expressing... clumsily ... myself. The law of attraction is not the law of your world. witness [read 'fitness'.] the associations ... Witness ... of peoples in all spheres of expression in your world. Largely [not read tho clear.] chance... Largely chance.

(I understand.)

If all law of association were cut and loosed how many people would stay where they are by the simple law of spiritual attraction. That is the law of the sphere in which I live and when a man is a thief he is attracted [first syllable not read and second read 'rated'.] attracted to thieves whether he evr [ever] ever stole a penny or not. Some men have temptations without opportunity, some have opportunity without temptations and

---

331. As soon as I saw the allusion to Victor Hugo and *Les Misérables* I saw that Jennie P. would not refer to it from personal memory, if I am right in the suspicion as to who she is, and so inquiry resulted in the information that Mrs. C. has read Victor Hugo, and she recalled the "hollow statue" there as the thing meant by the elephant where the newsboys slept.

some have temptations and opportunity. (I understand.) That is the test of the soul. Life is one great testing room for souls but no one seems to look at it that way.

(I understand.)

What a sermon that is my friend.

(I understand.)

Now I must say something else or go, for I cannot preach all the time. You [not read.] pulled that ... You ... that sermon right down on your own head. Let us see how soon you dare give it to some bank [not read.] president ... bank ... Yes he may need it more than some unfortunate girl who has sunk her honor in the cup of shame.

(I understand.)

Now all this time the lady ... time [not read first time.] has been watching what has been written and she says that the boy has understood in a measure the drift of the communication but the old gentleman has ideas of his own about being saved. That is all right but these ideas flee away over in the new and broad [not read.] and broad life.

No my name is not Emperor.

(I understand.)

That is a joke also. [Indian.]

I wonder if you know anything about a little garden that this little fellow had. I see a few things growing like small fruit or vegetable. it is not a flower garden but it [is] a part of a field or plot of ground where things are growing and I see him stooping and picking something and eating it... eating it and then there is such a smile as if it is something he liked much.

(What is it?)

It looks like a small berry, more like a strawberry. It is low on the ground. I think the child lived ['lived' and not read.] in ... lived in the city and this is a sort of treat for him to be out in the country. [Note 332.]

---

332. In regard to the allusion to the garden and the strawberries Mr. Gregg writes:—

"In the rear portion of our grounds, we had a small tract fenced off and a vegetable and flower garden, with fruit trees planted in it. John was very fond of this little tract, and just before his death had been working there quite a good deal. There were no berries in it, but we always had

I cannot get [get] more now. I am losing energy and must go. Hurricane. Give his love to his mother and why does she not come. Will she come next week. I hope so. [Medium knows normally she will not.]

That is all. Goodbye. Whirlwind. J. P.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Indian.] Sarcou she. Will you please put me back. [I placed head on cushion.] What has happened?

(Nothing.)

Sure?

(Except a long sitting.)

Am I dead?

(I guess so.)

Hear any raps?

(I thought so, but am not certain.)

Do you hear them? Was that raps? It was the table.

(Yes.) [Noises like raps on chair and table due to moving.]

Would John Gregg come here, Dr. Hyslop, do you suppose?

(Yes.)

He might come without his papa. Well I see him. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Are you happy?

(Yes.)

Sitting any good? (Yes.) Really? (Yes.) [Pause.]

[Sigh and groans.] Oh Oh Mamma Mamma Mamma [last whispered.] yes, yes. [whispered.] Sarcou. [Stretched the body and head as if tired.] God take me. [Pause, and then raised head.] Oh dear! I wonder what has happened. Dr. Hyslop, do you know what I see?

(What?)

I see a lady interested in the sittings. I see a few flowers

---

radishes and such vegetables, and as fast as these attained any stage of development whatever, John would be continually pulling and eating them. He and his boy associates, of course, raided the fruit trees as soon as the fruit began to ripen, and before other people would consider the fruit edible. So fond was he of this little tract, that I am sure it would be one of the most persistent of his memories.

in her room. She is thinking about these sittings as if anxious about them. [pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Opened her eyes and seemed awake.] What did you say? Take the veil off, will you please. [Awakened without memory of anything.]

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Dec. 15th, 1910. 10 A. M.

As soon as I came in Mrs. C. complained of feeling sick without being really sick. She expressed the opinion that it was due to a spirit influence. She did not sleep well and felt impressed to get up and put on her negligee gown and come down, which she had not done for years. She heard a voice say: "You are a very sick woman", and this seemed to be said by some one in authority. Her opinion was that it was some one trying to keep a lady away from her. She could eat no breakfast and felt chilly. She had felt much the same way after the sitting yesterday. She was very confident that she was not herself sick.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell back on cushion.] [Pause.] Do you know a Lizzie?

(Yes.)

That's the name I hear. [Pause, and slight groan.] I am almost in the spirit anyway. Put my head in. [I did so.] [Pause.] What's the matter?

(I don't know. Can you tell?)

No, I can't see. [Pause.] I feel as tho I would burst open. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

No energy. Depletion of force. Stop and try tomorrow.

(All right.)

I am G. P. and you.... [pencil fell.] [Pause and groans.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh dear! Oh dear! Oh dear! Oh please let me out of here. [Then arose tho not out of the trance. I helped her to a couch

and she lay down. In a few moments Sunbeam came in with her laugh.]

I guess I had better come and put more in. Madam sent me. They are awful fine forces. When strained too much they are like getting out of tune. All right. She will be all right. George could not hold on any more. I know a secret.

(What?)

I am not going to tell.

(Tell me what you can.)

It is something in the air. Do you know what it is?

(No, do you?)

Yes, do you think I am so stupid as not to know what is going on? The aunt is so sick. Do you know his aunt? Good-bye. [In a few moments came out with a headache.]

---

### SITTING WITH MRS. CHENOWETH.

[The breakdown at the previous sitting made it a matter of interest to see what the controls would say about it, and so I arranged for a personal sitting by Mrs. Chenoweth herself with a stenographer present to take down what was said. The note explains the result.]

Taken by stenographer.

January 16, 1911.

White Cloud controlling.

How do do!

(How do you do!) [Note 333.]

---

333. I had arranged this sitting for the distinct purpose of seeing what would be said of the trance personality in explanation of the breakdown on Dec. 15th. I had conjectured that it was due to anxiety and fretting about the new type of experiment and the desire to be successful in it. It was evident to me throughout that Mrs. C. was in quite an intense state of anxiety about it, more than she would admit. She thought this the explanation herself in her normal state and said so, without my admission to her that I thought this the fact.

But readers of the record will find a totally different explanation of the phenomena. It is quite rational, but cannot be verified, and it is noticeable that it is made by a personality that has not manifested in any of the

I am glad to come and help if I may. I presume there is only one thing that I am to talk about, and that is the result of the sittings with the Professor, and that is such a simple statement that I have to make that it seems almost unnecessary to take all this trouble, and yet I felt that perhaps if I made it, it might come a little more definitely, and with the assurance of the madam and the older guides, without blaming any one or having a single thought of reproach for any of the work that has been done, we find that the long continued strain of spirits seeking to use the organism and prove their identity at the same time, is more wearing than any other form of spirit control. The effort to recall past instances and facts, and at the same time to hold on a finely attuned instrument, sometimes, to use a mechanical expression, clutching at the engine in a nervous or excited manner, sometimes releasing the hold and almost losing control, brings friction and wear that no other form of control does bring, and in that worn and strained condition any new influence will bring an added strain. The work with the Professor might have gone on a little longer with the particular people in his group expressing themselves as best they could without any breakdown to the medium. But the strain and loss of energy would have been much greater than with the usual control or usual influences who are accustomed to the use of her body and who use it with very little strain or wear or unnecessary loss of energy for her. But the moment that the new group of influences were brought into that relation and there was no one there to relieve the tension, no familiar guide,—by that I mean no guide who slipped in easily and kept the organism free from the strain, then the disaster came, and it was nothing more or less than a complete nervous breakdown for the moment, and in that extreme, nervous state the aunt of the little boy John practically assumed control, unconsciously, unintentionally, but controlling just the same, and it was a long time before her influence could be gotten away and the body brought back to

---

sittings and, in fact rarely manifests her presence. I had expected Starlight to explain the phenomena.

It is of special interest to remark that I am called "Professor" a title which Mrs. C. never gives me in her normal state, and none of the other trance personalities use the term. Mrs. C. always calls me Doctor.

its normal and right condition, and then when that was done the nervous energy had to be supplied by rest.

I think that is very simple and plain.

There is one other thing while I am here I would like to speak of, and that is the position that is assumed when the work is being done. It seems to the Professor that the normal attitude of writing is the proper one to assume for that work; but there is no normal attitude of the body except that. There is no—no normal condition or power to sustain the body to sit erect, as there would be in writing a letter or a paper of any sort, and all the weight is thrown on the head rest, and great strain is brought on the back. A better position would be to have the body at rest, not as if for active work, but perfectly at rest, with the head back against a chair or a pillow, and the table at the side, where the arm might move freely without any effort, and all the rest of the body be in an attitude of repose, as if sleeping, as it really is when under this influence or under this control.

If the work is resumed we would be pleased to have that method tried. I think it would bring very much less strain on the sensitive part of the body, and I think the work consequently would be improved more rapidly.

With all appreciation and respect for the guides and the band and the group of spirits who have coöperated with us, or rather who have through our permission used the body, we feel that something must be done for the protection of our medium whom we have unfolded for a special trance work. And right here I would like to say that the trance with Starlight is no less a trance and no less deep a trance than the one induced by the group coming with him. But her personality is more marked, uses the body with definiteness and precision, and she seemingly is alive, which she is, but the medium herself is as fully unconscious and away from the scene of action as in this other condition which they presume to think is a deeper and heavier trance. If these guides and workers in the Professor's group could speak as definitely, control as perfectly, as Starlight, their identity would be revealed as perfectly and definitely as hers is. Hers has come through unconscious, constant work and effort and schooling in that particular line. They come

only occasionally and can only imperfectly express themselves. With the same time and every effort and opportunity given to any one of them, they could as perfectly assume control and be as apparently at home as she is in the body of the medium.

I hope I have made it all plain. If there is anything that the Professor desires to ask, it is my pleasure to answer his questions, but I think there is nothing more that I have to say except that the most cordial relations exist between both groups of spirits,—the madam and all those with whom I am associated, and Dr. Hodgson and Imperator and the group around the Professor, and they desire to continue the work under the most auspicious conditions, because the future results are the only things that make for the expression and the betterment of the whole effort.

Good bye!  
(Good bye!)

Mrs. C. Present J. H. Hyslop. Jan. 23rd, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Thursday night in the circle I felt some of your group and more definitely on Friday. I thought you were dead. I was looking out for your "spook".

(Well, dead or alive I turned up.)

[We had some months earlier joked somewhat about my coming back.]

I see a spirit that I never saw before, with gray curly hair. It is a man. He is tall and slender. Do you know Frank Sanborn? (Yes.) Only the hair is more definitely curled than his. But it is something of his type, a kind of Yankee angularity about him. He is awfully good natured looking. [Pause.] I have grown more clairaudient since that little [breakdown]. [Eyes closed.] Hm. [breathing heavily and sighing.] [Note 334.]

---

334. Nothing evidential is apparent in this allusion to Frank Sanborn. He was tall and slender. He had recently died and was too well known to make any point of his mention here.

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh I didn't mean anything. [Hand on her back and some distress.] Tell Bert I tried to get to him yesterday. [Head put in rest.] I feel better. [ceased squirming.] [Note 335.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[At first the hand held the pencil awkwardly, not between the thumb and fingers, but in an unnatural manner with the third finger resting against it and the pencil slanted toward me, and started to write. I fixed it correctly between thumb and finger.]

\* \* [scrawl like letter S.] R... R... B [read 'R' at the time with the knowledge that it was actually B, but desired to see if it would be corrected which was done later.] [Pencil fell and new one inserted.]

[*Change of Control.*]

[Hand fumbled the pencil, as if it were not a desirable one and I rubbed it in my hands to "demagnetize" it, so to speak, as there is always a tendency to reject pencils used by other communicators.]

We are here and more eager to talk to you than we have been for some time.

(Good, all you can say will be welcome.)

The whole thought of this subject is crystalizing into [read 'with'] effort ... into ... in your world and the ideas which are produced by the influences from here are good, sound, and stable ones. We have good organized companies [read 'compasses' and hand pointed till correctly read.] who are seeking to assist you in the American work. We do not intend to have America lose its prestige and you are the one to whom we look for the ultimate [read 'utterance' questioningly.] ultimate success, you did not read the first [last three words superposed and 'first' read 'fail'.] read [not read] read the first initials right. R. B. You know of course that I am R. H.

(I guessed it.)

and while there are many things to be said about the break

---

335. I could give a coincidental meaning to this reference to Bert, but it lacks evidence and will have to be treated as a wandering automatism.

in the work I will [not read] will leave that to be discussed when we have more time.

(That's right. I want other things to-day.)

Yes I know it and if we can get the message through it will be our decided [read 'dearest'] decided success. (Yes.) for we planned to do it and all the effort to make definite and plain connections between the two centers has been made. You will understand my meaning.

(Yes.)

and reference to the other work. It was hard at first, but since thn... things were clear [not read] and ... clear ... succinct and we feel [so read] felt there was improvement in expression. W. J. was most anxious and active and is as eager as a schoolboy to try his experiments. He did not lose enthusiasm for the truth in the last years of his life whatever may be said or felt by some of those who were near him. He was disappointed and lost some opportunities by the decisions of the light but his mind was open to receive and eagerness was there to receive. One of the [pause.] influences for deterring activity was the many new developments in normal psychology. Do you know what I mean.

(In general, but not in detail.) [Note 336.]

Some specific instances of psychologic influence involved and yet simple made some of our work seem less important as spiritistic impression than before and yet he but waited for the one clue to make complete the chain of evidence for the spirit hypothesis, and he did not live [read 'have'] long ... live [not read] life ... enough to get that but his interest is just as keen now and he desires to prove for himself the evidence and so will strive to give it. all this is to explain some efforts which he has made at the other place.

(What place or center do you mean?)

---

336. The reference here to the "decisions of the light" evidently means Mrs. Piper's decision to go to England, which did prevent Professor James from having further opportunities to experiment which he might otherwise have had. The allusion is pertinent, but not evidential.

"R. B." is probably intended for the initials of Robert Browning whose name was given in connection with an apparent attempt to communicate on another occasion.

not N. Y. that is not the usual place in N. Y. There is another place to which I refer where some experiments have been tried and the effort of W. J. has been noted. Imperator also has been making new records and is as busy as if he were planning a new work.

Do you remember that I \* \* told you about the definite way in which Imperator planned the work at the Piper light, the detail, the large and comprehensive way in which he worked as by a chart and not in the intermittent style of Phinuit and the ordinary control. [Note 337.]

(Yes I understand, but I do not know what place you refer to.) [Said to bring communicator back to the subject.]

that will come in a moment.

(All right.)

I had to refer to the past experience because my mind had turned that way for a moment and I recalled the definite plans of Imperator for this work.

(Good, I understand.)

at the place where he has been directing the work on occasion. there were two direct influences in the body but those are subdued [read 'situated'] subdued by results to a degree. We have been with you to another light. You know it.

(Yes.)

not the child of whom you spoke to this light.

[I had written to Mrs. Chenoweth after the accident that I had heard through a child what the difficulty was and I had repeated this to her the day before this sitting.]

(Good.)

I want to put that bit of evidence in here for maybe you might think the subliminal drawing [read 'dreaming'] on normal knowledge. drawing... you understand.

(Perfectly.)

---

337. This description of the Phinuit work is perfectly characteristic of Dr. Hodgson and its comparison with the systematic work of Imperator is perfectly accurate and what might be expected from this communicator. I do not believe that Mrs. C. has any knowledge of the two régimes that would enable her to describe them in this way. It would require great familiarity with them to summarize the comparison of them in this way and she certainly has not that familiarity.

But this was another place and light and yet a sort of familiar one, not very but a little. You understand again.

(What kind of phenomena?) [I desired a reference to physical phenomena, especially lights.] [Note 338.]

you refer to the speaking or writing. It was the trance phenomena in most respects but there is a phase of another sort developing. It was very clear [not read] very clear and good as far as it went but strangely enough we could only get about so far, for there seems to be some action of the mind more like fear than anything else and stages of consciousness of the work and what it involves which make barriers b... b... [difficulty and delay in reading 'barriers' and hand started to write when I suddenly read it.] for us to overcome.

(Do you know what occurred in getting anything through?)

Yes we were all conscious of some of the things that were given and felt a joy in the success and when right that one will tell. It was not I that much [not read] I ... much ... know for I tried and failed on two [pause till read.] on two, no three occasions. That does not mean that I got no sign through but the signal success was by another. What long waits [not read] waits there were. Do you recall.

(Yes I do.)

It was almost uncanny [read 'unmeaning'] uncanny. [not read except first syllable 'un'] cannie. [read] Yes you Scotchman you ought to know that word.

(Yes, I have lost that feeling after so much work in this field.)

Of course but it was rather unusual, for in most cases there will be a semblance of effort and struggle [Indian or French.] and all that sort of thing, but it was dead silence and still for a time and then the work was resumed. It is a good light but

---

338. Mrs. C. did not know that I had been experimenting elsewhere and this sitting was undertaken for the express purpose of seeing whether I could get any cross references with the Burton case. I published a part of this record in connection with the Burton Case (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, pp. 632-641). I shall require to transcribe the notes there made, with such additional notes as the portions omitted in that Report may make necessary.

rather slow in all things, more phlegmatic in temperament than this you know.

(Yes.) [Note 339.]

All those things have a bearing on the work. There seemed to be no fear of you personally. Do you know anything about a ring or round drawing that was done there.

(No, I do not.)

Imperator holds in his hand a ring signet and makes a sign with it as if he had made effort to say or do something with it there.

(Yes, I hoped that something of that kind would be done and I have no doubt it was tried but without any apparent success.) [Note 340.]

[Pause.] I only wait for the next move. Your wife was present at those sittings and made an effort to send a message. She belongs to our band and is not considered in the personal

---

339. The earlier allusion to New York and the statement that it was not the usual place in New York that Professor James appeared involved an interesting distinction. Some gentlemen in Brooklyn, a part of the greater New York, had been experimenting in their own behalf and Professor James purported to communicate there, with some expressions characteristic of communications elsewhere. I made a note on this passage in the volume on the Burton Case (p. 634), and I need not repeat it here. Mrs. C. knew nothing of the facts, as they were private experiments of a very secret type. They were, of course, not what I had in mind here. But the allusion to speaking and writing was nearer the point, tho not yet accurate, as they might refer to another case. The reference, however, to the "phase of another sort developing", pointed more distinctly to the clairvoyant visions which began only after I came into contact with the case. She had a subliminal fear of going into a deeper trance which manifested itself on more than one occasion. This did operate as an obstacle or barrier to the work. But the important hit is the allusion to long waits and the "dead silence and still for a time" which were one of the characteristics of Miss Burton's work. A man required the patience of Job to sit through them. There were great struggles to get messages through, and the signal successes were not by Dr. Hodgson but by another. All this was absolutely unknown to Mrs. C.

340. Miss Burton had no personal fear of me at this time. She manifested subconscious fear only when the Imperator group tried experiments. There was no evidence that Imperator had tried to mention a circle. Apparently this is a reference to an attempt to give Professor James' sign, of which I got no trace in that series of experiments.

relationship to you in this work but of her own accord and desire investigates as a scientific person.

(Good.)

Her relationship often helps her however to get something through when the rest fail and so when her message comes it is as important as if there was no connection. You understand.

(Yes, what did she get through?)

Her name was given I believe and then was referred to some other time that I am not clear of. Do you know who it was she had with her.

(No I do not.)

There was a reference indirectly to another person with her. *We*. Yes that was the way it was expressed once. Do you remember.

(No, I did not get that, but I got a name that she would know well.)

[Pause.] I do not understand you. Was the name a spirit.

(No.)

I refer to the *we* as a spirit.

(No hint of a spirit got through that I could be certain was connected with her. If you can give that name my records will tell.)

[Pause.] I think I ought to let her do it herself.

(All right.) [Note 341.]

Did you not get a J. (Yes.) She tells me that She thought she ought not try to write but will tell me if she can. Who is the L.

(I am not sure.)

[Pause.] It sounds like Laura. (Yes.) Do you know that. (Not sure.) and W. Do you know that. Did not W come at that place.

(Yes, with another person.)

I am repeating for her and striving to forget everything and be simply a recorder of her words. Father—Yes do you know that also.

---

341. There was no trace of my wife at the last series with Miss Burton, but there was good evidence of her efforts at earlier ones. No suggestion of a recognizable person in connection with her came.

(Father who?)

Her father was with her.

(No hint of that got through.)

That was what she was trying to do one time when there was so much of a struggle. Her father was a more recent arrival than yours.

(I understand.)

He was so much interested in the boy that he desired to express about him, George I mean.

(Which George?)

Your George you know. [Pause.] Do you recall anything about a letter or Lettie. Yes [to correct reading.] I cannot make out what it is letter or Lettie.

(I recall a Lettie but not closely connected with my wife and not at all with her father.)

I am not reasoning it out at all, only giving you what I hear.

(Good.)

Did she not refer to some particular event or thing.

(No, not at all. I got only a name and that happened to be a name that the light knew was connected with me, one of the children.)

Yes I knew that. I am not doing what I wished. I find myself thinking in spite of myself. That is our problem. George P. has a word to say so I will go, but we all know that you desired to hear about that light and the work done there and we each had it on our minds to tell you something.

(All right.) [Pencil fell.] [Note 342.]

[Change of Control.]

---

342. I got a reference to "J" at the Burton sitting, but it was without association with my wife and I supposed it a reference to Professor James. It could well refer, as an initial, to a deceased friend of hers to whom I made reference above (p. 391). The Laura would be the name of my deceased sister, as also remarked above (p. 152). No trace of my wife's father appeared there. George was his name, as well as that of my son. Mrs. C. did not know his name but has referred before to the name of my son, which she did not know at the time, but now knows subliminally by hypothesis.

The name Lettie has no concomitants to make it clear. My wife knew a living friend by that name, but her father did not know the person. There is no reason for this reference to her here.

Good morning Hyslop.  
 (How are you George?)

Here we are after the battle as fresh and energetic as any old campaigners could wish to be. Such a variety of experiences we have. First [not read] we ... First 1st... we leave this light in a death like panic and we are rushed all over the earth to see what happened. We have to answer [not read.] all ...answer [delay in reading.] answer... all sorts of questions and in the meantime report wherever we can to give you a bit of information and peace and then [not read] then we are then taken to a light so different and strange in all the work and so amateurish also but we make a good fight to prove we are not dead. then we hasten to N. Y. and rush to B— and talk [not read] the ... talk the lining [not read] lining [not read] lining out of our throats and then return to the test and we are at it again. We think the earth [not read] earth is a place of rest compared to any [not read] heaven ... any ... we have ever been permitted to enter ... permitted [read 'pannelled' the first time.] to enter. It is one race from post to post to prove we are not astral shadows. [Note 343.]

(Good, can you tell me something about the things that happened where Hodgson was talked about?)

Some of them yes. It was not so bad as I made it when I said amateurish. It was that but there was a good strong and steady interest for us to work with and and we were glad to go and get even [not read] a ... even ... a little through. I was there and so was some one whom you were glad to [greet]. Jennie P— was there also.

(What did she do?) [Note 344.]

343. This account of G. P. fits well enough my movements after leaving the sittings which I previously had with Mrs. C., and which ended in the breakdown. I had seen three psychics and travelled long distances to see two of them, and rushed to Boston immediately after my return. All this Mrs. C. did not know, tho I imagine any one might guess that I was active in this way, and yet she never guessed it on other occasions where I was active but not in travelling so much.

344. There was no assured evidence of the presence of Jennie P. at this last series of experiments with Miss Burton. Several allusions were made to a whirling wheel which had previously been given in apparent representation of Whirlwind, and I had conjectured that it was for her. But I ob-

The same sort of work as here only not quite as rapid but just as sure and firm. She is quite a character for she adjusts herself to conditions [not read] conditions readily [not read] She ... readily ... She made a lot of talk about the man. Do you know about a man connected with the light who was not present at the sittings.

(No, not a word about that. I got only one word that even suggests Jennie P.)

Look, look [superposing.] Look look at what I say. She talked with us about a man who was not in the sittings with the light. Do you know if there was such a man.

(I know nothing about it.)

I here supposed the communicator was telling me what Jennie P— had tried to communicate, but apparently he was only reporting conversation on "the other side" possibly with the expectation that some of it had come through.]

all proper [not read] and candid ... proper in a way that had an influence. You do not seem to know what I mean.

(Why I understand you mean she talked on your side about a man not present at the sittings.)

Yes do you know if there was a man who knew of the sittings and was inter [' was ' not read.] was interested.

(Yes, more than one was interested.)

Yes but connected with the light and eager to have the work go on.

(Yes.)

That is the one that Jennie P— talked of and did not like and tried to say to us that the work would be better ... would be better without his influence than with it. nothing bad but unfortunate and a bit bombastic. Do you know now.

(Not exactly.)

It is some one who has his strong ideas and thinks he knows how every thing ought to go and he is not so superior [not read] ... superior... as he thinks. I am giving her ideas to you. She likes a full and free and untrammelled influence. It is not an old light but young and new and good. Not a child

---

tained no clear proof of it on this later occasion. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 527.

you know. What do you know about the house where the sittings were held. [Note 345.]

(I know nothing.) [I supposed the reference was to its history etc.]

Do you remember hearing a clock strike.

(Yes I do.)

We heard that and refer to it as there is never such a sound here.

(I understand. Did ...) [Note 346.]

Do you remember a picture that hung where your eye lighted on it. (Yes, what of that picture?) It is a picture of a person I mean, I saw it and the eyes were the sort which follow. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

Then there was a picture, a scene of some sort father [farther] away in the same room. You may not have seen that. Her own[?] That picture as it was not in your range of vision as you sat there ... sat there, but I saw it. The room was not as large or as many windows as this, but pleasant and sunny [not read] and bright... sunny [not read] sunny [not read tho clearly written] Sun... sun ... [suddenly read] yes, bright light, pleasant [not read] pleasant home like, more like a sitting room with family [not read] influence ... family ... about it you know.

(Yes.)

---

345. All this talk about the man not present at the sittings is not perfectly clear. The facts, however, point to the grandfather of Miss Burton who has very positive convictions about the phenomena, and some things have happened to influence the mind of Miss Burton, against the work with her by scientific men. None of the facts apply to Dr. Hamilton or Dr. Smyth who were present at some of the last series of sittings. The grandfather was never present at any of the sittings, but was much interested in their outcome. Since the publication of that Report Dr. Hamilton has confirmed my conjecture that the facts point to the grandfather. He has regarded the grandfather's influence as detrimental to Miss Burton and knew more about the man than I did.

346. There was a large clock in the séance room which struck the half and full hours. It was very loud and even annoyed the medium in the trance, and I wished very much that it could be removed. There is no clock in Mrs. Chlenoweth's room.

There was a sound of dishes or dining room noises once in a while. You know that also

(Yes.)

Good outlook [not read.] outlook free and airy. all these things Jennie P— and I took in to tell you.

(Good.) [Note 347.]

for we felt perhaps the things that were done and said would not be told as explicitly as we wished. You see we keep thinking all the time of various [Indian.] conditions that may arise.

(I understand.)

Who was the older person

(Do you know?)

The woman I mean. Do you remember about one.

(Older than who?)

the light. We saw her also. She was a little fear ... She was a little fearful and scared.

(What about?)

the whole thing but impressed and pleased in the end. you would not be half a psychic if you did not know that.

(Yes.)

Now I don't know how much more I can say. What is the hour

(Ten minutes till twelve.) [Note 348.]

I have a word more I want to say about a train ride. Have

---

347. As I sat on the sofa in the home of Miss Burton I faced a picture, water color, of a lady, which had an interesting history, believed by the family of Miss Burton to be a spirit painting. Out of my range of vision, when looking at this picture, and at my right some distance, was a painting of a landscape scene. This was in the sitting-room, not in the séance room. This sitting-room did look out on a pleasant view and was a bright sunny room, and also much smaller than Mrs. C.'s room. There were no dishes in this room. They were spread about the wall of the dining-room, however, where the séances were held. The sitting-room was light and airy. There was no sound of dishes during the séances in the dining-room. Possibly the reference to them was symbolical to indicate the place of the experiments. I do not recall any picture of her own there.

348. The older woman referred to is probably the foster mother who was somewhat fearful that the experiments would fail. She too is quite psychic, as I take the expression "the light" describing the older woman, to mean. But in spite of her fear about the results she was greatly pleased at the end.

you not been riding [not read] riding on a train with another man to whom you were talking on these matters.

(No not at all.)

Then it is a prophesy. Then I see you riding and talking with a man about these things and it is a rather pleasant experience. It seemed to be coming this way, and I thought it had happened. [Note 349.]

Have you heard from H. J. ['J' read 'S'.] J. yet. Harry ['H' read 'W' first time.]

(Yes.)

W. is much interested in that. Did he succeed in his efforts to recall the past.

(In some things he did: in others the incidents were not recognized. That key was not known.)

That was the old old key to a class room.

(Yes.) [Cf. p. 368.]

I am willing to bet they find it out later. willing to bet [words not read.] Do you know if any important items were recognized.

(Yes, but not those which would have been the best evidence.)

It will rest. It has had some weight any way and more will come later.

(I understand.)

He is not the least discouraged but ... Yes he tried also to come at the other place and made some headway. He was impressed himself. It was good. I fear I must go but this has not been bad.

(I understand, but can you mention who else came at the other light on this last trip.)

You mean besides W. J. R. H., Jennie P——, your wife and myself and Myers was there and of course Emperor.

(You are superposing.) [Note 350.]

Yes [to correct reading.] of course. There was another I do not recall. I think your father was there.

---

349. Miss Burton referred to a prediction of seeing me on a train in two weeks. This prophecy on the part of both of them was not fulfilled. The only interest that it can have is that both psychics made a prediction in reference to a train.

350. Professor James, Dr. Hodgson, Mr. Myers and possibly Jennie P did purport to communicate there.

(No trace of him.)

I was not sure whether he got through or not. Did you hear from any of the guides here.

(Yes, Oh, no.)

Not any word from Starlight. She was to try. The other to whom you refer is S., is it not.

(S., what does that mean?)

[Pause.] I only see S—— Is there not an S. who was there.

(I think so. I shall have to look at my records.)

It must have been Moses for some of his guides were there.

(Yes, good. Which of the guides?)

Doctor and Rector. Rector tried to do some work. [Note 351.]

By the way you have made Wright's old comrade look like thirty cents.

(What comrade?)

His helper and ... helper ... and assistant. You will recall what I mean later if not now.

(All right.)

It is a small part of a dollar, 30 cents, isn't it. But it all helps to make talk.

(I understand.)

G. P. [Pencil fell.]

(Thanks.) [Note 352.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What is that great big dome?

(I don't know.)

---

351. Starlight did not purport to communicate at the Burton case. Rector however did try and succeeded in an interesting manner. There was no trace of Doctor that was recognizable, nor of Stainton Moses.

352. This reference to Wright's "old comrade" is to President Hall. Mr. Wright had been the President of Clark College and President Hall of the University. I had recently published a review of President Hall's and Dr. Amy E. Tanner's book on the Piper case, and Mrs. C. had seen a notice of it in the *Boston Transcript*. She did not see the review until much later, and the *Transcript* notice, a very short editorial note, did not give any adequate conception whatever of the review. Mrs. C.'s limited knowledge of the two men, their work and relations is indicated in earlier notes. Cf. pp. 185-186, 240.

A great big glass dome. It looks like glass. Have you got a big picture of a dome. It is a wonderful building.

(I don't recall it.)

I see the big dome. It looks like a picture. [Pause.] What is Po... ("P O"?) P o n t e V e c . . .

(What else?) c h i o

(Who said that?)

Mr. Myers. What does he mean?

(Something on identity.)

He says something that has to do with a great big dome. Do you know anything about it?

(Yes.)

I see a big dome and hear it spoken to me. Steps, steps, steps go up and you look off. It is beautiful, beautiful. Isn't Mr. Myers a beautiful spirit.

(Yes.)

Do you know he is a friend of Browning? He is a friend. They are often together, I don't know whether he was here or not. They are there. [Pause.] [Note 353.]

I suppose you must go to get the train. (Yes.) Was the work good? (Yes.) I am not going to be sick [reference to accident.] If I can make any money, by lectures or otherwise, I can help some one else to do the work rather than go on this way. You don't want me to talk any more. Take my hand. [Took hand to help bring her out.] All send their love.

(Give my love to them.)

[Pause.] [Left hand points finger at my left holding her right.]

I see a name on the door.

---

353. The reference to Ponte Vecchio, which is what is evidently meant by the incomplete messages in connection with the name of Mr. Myers is very pertinent. It is evidently one of those Italian memories which pertain to him and it is not probable that Mrs. C. knows anything about his Italian associations. No doubt he knew Browning, but no importance attaches to the association here.

For the amount of Mrs. C.'s knowledge of Mr. Myers compare page 11. The Ponte Vecchio was a bridge in Florence and it is probable that the reference to "something with a big dome" is to the Cathedral in Florence, the Duomo, of which the psychic gets a mental picture. Mrs. C. tells me she knows nothing about Florence and when I asked her if she knew the Cathedral

(What is it?) [Note 354.]

S... [pause.]

(What is it?)

Give it to me. S... Do you know any one by the name of Carlton? It is something like that.

(Yes.) [Thinking of Charlton Speer.]

Is it a lady?

(You settle that.)

I see an S. They keep saying Carlton. I can't see.

(Whom is it connected with?)

Oh with you and the spirits. [Pause.] Ce moo. [Clinches hand.] Ce moo koo. [Clinches hand and raises head.] I guess my hair will be white if I keep on. I don't mind it, would you? [Suddenly opens eyes and awakens.] [Note 355.]

What have I been talking about?

(Do you remember?)

Blonde hair.

(White hair.)

My own? (Yes.) [Mrs. C. has been teased much about her hair getting gray.]

Feb. 27th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

Mrs. C. Present J. H. H. and Mr. Junot.

I had arranged for three sittings for Mr. Junot without revealing even so much as the sex of the friend I wanted present. He came with me to the sitting but remained in another room until the trance was effected. All that Mrs. C. saw was the shadow of some one in the other room as I entered the room for the sitting.

---

there she named St. Peter's. This reflects little knowledge of Florence. Mr. Myers was no doubt familiar with the bridge and the Cathedral, as most people are who know anything of Italy.

354. Mrs. C. has all along wished she were in a position to do her work without charging for it. This desire here slips out in the subliminal. She has a special plan to make the money to make herself independent.

355. Apparently the "Carlton S." is an attempt to get the name Charlton Speer who was a friend of Stainton Moses and acquainted with Mr. Myers. The association, therefore, is correct in this connection. It is probably his mother, deceased, that is meant in the reference to a lady.

Before any sign of the trance came Mrs. C. remarked to me that Dr. Hodgson had sent to her through Starlight the message not to worry and it would make the work easy.

[*Subliminal.*]

Do you know any one named Clarence.

(Yes.) [Thinking of my wife's half-brother.]

I heard a voice and that was the word, Clarence. Then followed Clarke, Clarke. C l a r k e. You know as a name is spoken momentarily you have a vision and see the word as if reading it.

(I have heard of that.)

Have you ever had it?

(No.)

I thought everybody had it. You see it is a mental picture and the name is as if spelled. The sound constantly produces a mental picture. It was that way with the name Clarke. No one said it, but I say it is Clarke. [Pause.]

You think you are not psychic.

(There is no evidence of it.)

The evidence of it is that you don't care for anything else in the world but psychic matters. It is what is in the soul. Do you know that?

(Yes.) [Note 356.]

Well [pause.]

Fred. Who is Fred?

(Fred who?)

I think it is Fred Myers. Did they ever call him that?

(Yes.)

It seems awfully familiar to me, but that is what I hear. Fred Myers. He looks so big and wonderful to me I would not want to speak of him that way. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Note 357.]

---

356. Mr. Junot, who was wholly unknown to Mrs. C. and not the slightest hint of whose identity had been indicated in the arrangements for the sittings, writes: "The Clarke family, near kinsmen of mine, appear often in the Junot Piper records."

357. This is an interesting manner of alluding to Mr. Myers. Dr. Hodgson used to speak of him in this manner, and it is not natural for Mrs. C. to speak of him in this way. He has been called "Fred" through more than one psychic with whom I have experimented.

[Admitted Mr. Junot to room.]

Hm! [pause.] Hm! [Sighs and slight groan.]

*(Automatic Writing.)*

U R. U R. U R here [not read assuredly but tried as "O. K" and "AKUR".] U R here. U ... Wait a little.

(Yes, take your time.)

for we are getting [getting] used to the atmosphere once more.

(I understand.) [Note 358.]

We are ready and eager as usual to do all we can but must not hasten as you [French or Indian] know. George will be here presently and will tell you what he can see. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning.

(Good morning.)

Push the pad a little toward the elbow.

[Pad pushed down toward elbow.]

Thank you. that is better. now it is good to be here again and to try our hand at the work once more. We are never [read 'near'] left [read 'life'] never left [read 'life' then 'left'] wi ... without a task for you fellows who sit in the darkness and wait for our illumination. that is a task we live for. it proves our superiority.

(Any special darkness in mind?)

What a question. no the usual state is quite dark enough. The light is just ahead always just ahead and that keeps the movement assured. It is not a case of a jockey [read 'danky'] jock... chasing a bale of hay all day and no dinner in his stomach: for we intend to feed you well and not lead you on a wild chase just to get our work done.

Now where can I begin. let me see. I find a group of friends here who are eager to write but they always give me the first chance. sweet self effacement [read 'efficient'] face-ment is it [pause.] it.

(I understand.)

---

358. The letters "U. R." do not seem to have any meaning that is discoverable in this connection, or in any other. Possibly they were an attempt to explain abbreviations mentioned later. Cf. p. 526.

Are you sure [superposing and 'sure' not read at once.] you do... are you sure you do. It was a sarcastic remark on my part. Boys you go in and try the water and if it is all right I will swim later. That is where I am. I am the boys.

(I understand. Hard swimming too.) [Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

\* \* [Scrawl.] Lizzie is here. I \* \* [Pause.] [Writing was much different from the previous and very slow.] [Note 359.]

[Change of Control.]

Back again I am better for the work just now than any one else. I think so. I will keep on for a little while. so much has been done on our side since you were here last and we have tried at many times to make the evidence stronger, but all the limitations that come seem to come at times when we try hardest and Imperator says that is the secret of the work..

a passive spirit will produce better results. It must be passive on our side as on yours. It is smooth water ['smooth' not read.] and ... smooth [not read.] smooth ...drift, no pulling at the oars will give us the result.

In the room this morning is a lady of middle stature \* \* gray eyes and thin [read 'this'] face ... thin ... and brown hair, some silver with it and a slender figure and very pleasant manner but with a difficulty with the arm, more as if disabled through a shock of some kind and she seems eager for recognition. The name is Sarah and her home was far from here and her mind was not interested in these matters. She is not alone but with a group of acquaintances and friends and is allowed to come for a purpose best known to the ones in charge of this work. Do you know her.

(I personally do not recognize her, but perhaps the friend present can recall a Sarah.)

All right. do you wish me to go on and tell you what I see and the people who are attracted here.

(Yes.)

359. Mr. Junot writes that the name Lizzie is not recognizable. As it is a separate control and not apparently connected with Mr. Junot, I could give it possible pertinence, but there is no context to prove the conjecture.

With this woman is a large man, rather large, not as tall as Hodson [Hodgson] I think but an old gentleman with strong and assertive influence who is more than an acquaintance and is much puzzled over these things. It [superposing.] It is a close relative and he is a student and thinker but not in these subjects. It is some time ago since he left the body, but his interest is unabated in the man present. In his hand he holds a book and it has loose sheets as if prepared to slip in and out at will [two words not read] at will.

I must be writing very badly.

(No, I am reading badly.)

That is a fair apology. I might have . . . . [Note 360.]

(Mr. J.: Ask what Sarah wants to say.)

Just a minute and I will ask her. She steps forward with a light in her eye and the first word which escapes her is I was so glad when it was all over and so conscious of all that was done. there were so many plans before the death which were all or nearly all changed afterward by the circumstances. There is a desire to express satisfaction that it is better but different far different than what she thought. She had no idea of the reality of the spirit life and it came as a joyous revelation to her. The pain . . . .

(Mr. J.: Can she give the other name?)

Yes later when she is a little better adjusted. Ask your friend if he knew a man named Drew.

(Mr. J.: No.) [After the sitting he recalled the possibility.]

Do you.

(No, I do not.)

The lady spoke the name as if it were one he would know in connection with her. Let it pass.

(Yes.)

It will come later in the work probably.

---

360. In regard to the description of the lady and her name Mr. Junot writes:—

"This is a good description of my wife's mother, save as to the disabled arm. She had a most *extraordinary* love of flowers. Her name was Sarah M. H. She died three years ago." The reason for mentioning her love of flowers appears later in the communications.

Of the man described he says: "A good description of my father."

(All right.) [Note 361.]

[Indian etc. and cough.]

(Mr. J.: Doesn't she need fresh air, Professor?)

[I said 'No', but suggested opening the door behind us which Mr. J. did.]

Where did you go just then.

(To open the door for fresh air.)

All right. Just tell me when you are going to make a break.

(I understand.)

Sarah still stands here and makes a move to write for herself but I think I will hold on to the pencil a little longer. Is the letter E connected with her. It looks as if it might be her second initial.

(Mr. J.: No.)

What is its connection with her.

(You will have to fix that.)

All right I will if I can. [pause.] Father. She speaks of his father as being present with her in the spirit life and shows a desire to help him express. Then there is a large O. yes it is O. and has some significance. It is not easy yet but I will keep on this line if you say so.

(Yes, go ahead.)

I find another young man in the party, one gone a long time also but still very near in thought and interest. there is an element of wonder and and yet the subject is not new to our friend. It is still a problem as to how much we can do and how far we are responsible for what is given in his mind but we hope to help him and that is our reason for being here. all [read 'are'] that ... all ... message comes from this group of friends

(I understand.) [Note 362.]

(Mr. J.: Get his name.)

Slow my friend. Don't hurry and it will all come. I under-

---

361. Of the name Drew Mr. Junot writes: "I think that Mr. and Mrs. Drew were great friends of Sarah A. P., lately deceased, and the latter was the closest friend of Sarah M. H."

362. The letters E and O are two of the letters in the name of one of the Sarahs mentioned. The boy that had gone "a long time" is probably the son who communicated through Mrs. Piper.

stand your very reasonable request and will grant it as soon as I can. that is from my thought. George you know.

(Yes, perfectly. I understand the difficulty about names.)

They come best when unexpected and unsought. The effort to concentrate on a specific answer like dates and names and plans is the hardest thing to do.

(Yes I understand.)

[Pause.] The father laughs as heartily as a boy. It is a wholesome open hearted and free expression which went with his open fearless and out spoken spirit and with all that he was gentle and tender and when he went to the other life it was as a man much beloved and much missed. He never feared criticism [French etc.] when he believed he was right and that spirit makes him strong today.

A. who is A. a man, yes a man. A [pause.] A I. It is A I. What have you there.

(We have A, then A I and 'It is A L'.)

All right. [Pause.] [Note 363.]

[Mr. J. handed me an article and I took it from the envelope and put it in Mrs. C's hand still wrapped and pinned in oiled silk.]

[Pause.] Something touched the hand and brought an electric current to it.

(Yes I put an article in the hand.)

[Pause.] I see a hand touch it and it is the hand of a man, not very large but a strong and well looking hand. I feel that the person went away from life very suddenly for all the influence is strong and [pause.] vibrant not worn or lost but there is a sense of being lost or strange and then I hear a low strong voice and the words sound like Good night. It seems all night [read 'right'.] night and darkness and then waking in the light and morning.

[Change of Control.]

---

363. The letters "A I" are very pertinent. They probably refer to the same object that was mentioned through Mrs. Piper, a statue of Abraham Lincoln, of which the boy was fond and which he denominated in that manner in the Piper sittings (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R. Vol. XXIV, p. 359*). Mrs. C. never saw the Report and it would have made no difference because of her absolute ignorance of the party present as communicator.

[Pause.] Can [not read at time] I come a moment. [delay in reading.]

(It means, wait a moment, I think.)

Can I come a moment.

(Mr. J.: Tell him he can.)

(Yes you certainly can. Glad indeed to have you.)

Will it make the way plain. I am so glad to come if my head, was only lear [intended for 'clear' but not read.] clear but I will keep at it. J

(Yes, that is right. We shall be patient.)

J [Read 'I', but I instantly saw it was J.] J. [Note 364.]

We are [pause.] so sure of ourselves before we come and so feeble [pause.] in expression [pause and French etc.] Let me [both words not read at time.] Let me work out my own plans. I like the old things best the new fangled furniture and mode may be good for some but not for me. I will stay true to the simple life of work and rest [read 'send' by Mr. J.] and ... rest ... and the plain fare [read 'face'] fare [read 'face'] fare I loved when alive to physical things. Give me ... Give ... [not read the first time.] the paper for I want to read the news of the day but I will not go out \* \* tonight. When night came I wanted to [French etc.] read and rest, but the trees and the sunshine called me out by day.

What [read 'that'] what good drinking water we had. I always looked out for it. It was so hard to get sometimes. [Pause.] Do you know the book I loved best. history history. [Pencil fell.] [Note 365.]

[Change of Control.]

Lost his hold.

(I understand.)

He will not lease [not read] cease with this but this first effort is long enough. It does not seem much [last two words not read] seem much. but it is a beginning [not read] beginning

364. "J" is the initial of the siter's surname and also of the communicator from whom he wished to hear.

365. Mr. Junot writes that the man described in effort at direct control, just after the letter J was written, is not recognizable. But he remarks that his father read history almost exclusively.

Do I make you nervous. ['nervous' not read.] Hurricane. Do I make you nervous.

(No.)

I only make you hurry.

(That's right.)

It seems as if you ought \* \* \* \* read as fast as I write, but you read \* \* and I write blind [not read] blind.

(Yes.)

Hudson [Hodgson] sends greeting to his friend and says keep up the good work. It is the potent [read so, tho evidently intended for 'patient'] and patient [not read] patient [pencil ran off paper.] patient and constant endeavor that makes the world move... world ... the ... toward the perfect fulfilment of God's law. Hodgson still [not read] still philosophizes you see. [Note 366.]

Now goodbye for the time.

(I can't read the last words.)

Now goodbye for this morning. Whirlwind, Jennie P. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal II.*]

Whose belt is that. [Possible reference to article in hand.]

(I don't know. Don't worry about that.)

Why?

(It will come out all right. Perhaps you can say.)

[Pause.] Are you trying to hurry me along?

(Am I?)

Are in an awful rush.

(Am I?)

Yes.

(No.)

You know a Henry.

(What Henry?)

I don't know. If I knew I would tell you.

Don't you know a Henry that came to you?

---

366. It was a very pertinent thing for Dr. Hodgson to send his greeting "to his friend" as the sitter was one of his most frequent Piper sitters and whose results were among the best Dr. Hodgson has obtained.

(No.)

Yes you do. Dr. Hodgson knows him.

(Does he.)

He sees him. He knows him in the spirit land. Don't you know him?

(No.) [I do not recall the Henry, neither does Mr. Junot.]

How funny. Did the man go away?

(No, he is right here.) [Reaches hand to get his. Hand given.]

Oh! What a lot of people he has got. Hasn't he.

(Mr. J.: Yes. What do they say?)

They all talk at once. They seem so eager to talk. A woman more like a mother wants to talk. Shall I tell it?

(Mr. J.: Sure.)

She is beautiful and active. I don't mean beautiful body, but beautiful in spirit. It shows out in her face. She works all the time in her life now to bring beautiful things into the earth life. You know I see a [pause.] lot of things I don't know. Shall I tell you?

(Yes, tell it.)

I see a big box like a chest quite tall and when you open the cover it is as high as your head. I see a woman who looks like you. She finds your mother opening that chest. It seems outside somewhere. It looks as if they kept grain in it in a building outside. She seemed younger when doing that a long time ago. It was such a happy time in her childhood.

What is this? [Indicating what was in the hand.]

(It is the article.)

You let it alone. It don't belong to the mother. It belongs to somebody else. It was not worn much. My! I see so many things. But I shall tell you something I see on this.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] I thought I was going to see it. It looks like R, but it is like B or R. It could be three letters and could be P, R, or B. Something goes off from it this way [making a circular line about what she seemed to see.]

[Mr. J. did not know what was in the package and we opened it after we came back to the hotel and found that it contained cuff buttons on which were carved in monogram the letters "B

'H J', the initials of his son's name, crowded together so that they are hard for any one to read.]

Do you want me to stay?

(No, you had better come out I think.)

All right. [Pause.] Who is Sally?

(Do you get any more?)

Where is the man? I think it belongs to him. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Note 367.]

[*Subliminal I.*]

Hm! [Smiles.] Hello! Heh! Oh say, Dr. Hyslop.

(Yes.)

There are more people with Dr. Hodgson, Mr. Myers and George Pelham than I have seen for a long time. I saw Dr. James too.

(Did you?)

He stepped back smiling and said he would come later, as if he knew what they were talking about.

(Yes.)

Names are floating about around this room sound strange. How did everything go?

(All right.)

Better?

(Can't tell yet.)

You can't tell about the work?

---

367. Of the incident about the chest Mr. Junot writes:—

"Sarah A. P. was a great friend of our family. She was childless. After her death her sister, Mrs. Merrill, sent to my daughter a large and very beautiful Japanese case of drawers about five feet in height. My daughter had admired it and Mrs. Merrill was distributing to Mrs. P.'s friends many of her articles as keepsakes. The chest was bought in Japan shortly before Mrs. P.'s death and so had nothing to do with the early days of any of our people."

It is evident that some of the things said about the chest are incorrect, and one might even be undecided as to the relevance of the account to the chest described by Mr. Junot, tho it is quite possible that the errors are misinterpretations on the part of the control of the pictures that come to her and hence the identification of the object may be correct.

The name Sally is evidently for Sarah, tho it is not indicated which Sarah is in mind.

(No, not yet.)

I know who is around him.

(Do you?)

Yes I know. Do you think I am a fool?

[Then followed some chaffing at me for the hurried way in which the medium's talk made me work, she saying she liked to see me hustle. I did not get every word of it. Then she said goodbye again.]

(Mr. J.: Who is among them?)

Lots of folks. When I can I will tell you everything I see.

Do you know Harriet?

(Yes, surely I do.)

In spirit land?

(Yes.)

Old lady?

(Yes, she is my mother. How did she wear her hair?)

I will tell you tomorrow. Some one has M. with your mother. I think it is Martha. It is not Mary, but something like that. I shall come to see you tomorrow. That is all right.

(Mr. J.: Sure.) [Note 368.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Junot. Feb. 28th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

Before the sitting, Mrs. C. told me that she learned last week that Mrs. Piper was in England. A sitter came and said she would have gone to Mrs. Piper but that she was in England.

[*Subliminal.*]

How wonderful! [Pause.] Beautiful. It is like passing

---

368. It is pertinent enough to have reference to Professor James in this connection. He was acquainted with the Junot facts in the Piper case.

Mr. Junot writes me that Harriet is the name of his mother, but that Martha has no meaning to him. It is the name of my mother. It came through Mrs. C. later to me in communications about her. Cf. 802. It is interesting to see the name Mary associated with it in this way, as if there had been a tendency to confusion of the two names, because this very confusion occurred through Mrs. Piper in my earlier sittings there. Cf. *Proceedings* Eng. S. P. R., Vol. XVI, pp. 432 and 481. Mrs. C. has not seen this Report.

through a rainbow, isn't it? I never saw such beautiful colors. Whose hand have I? Do you know?

(No, can you tell?)

It is such a strong white hand. Just takes my hand as if to lead me right away. I feel so strong. [Coughs.] It is a new hand. [Pause.]

[Mr. Junot brought in.]

Hm! [Sighs.] [Pause.] [Slightly heavy breathing.] Andrew, Andrew.

(Andrew who?)

[Pause.] Eh! Eh! [distress] Who are all these people, Dr. Hyslop? Such a company of them. I didn't like to go where they are. They all seem to be so curious.

(Don't be afraid.)

[Signs of distress.] They are both men and women. All so strange to me. I don't know them.

(They are friends of my friend here.)

Do you think so? They keep pushing me right on. They are not hurting me, but I don't like it. They seem kind. There is such a number of them.

[Pause.] [Change of countenance.] Now I think I would like to stay here forever. It is so beautiful: rest and peace and flowers, real flowers. They play their part in God's universe. I see three women, three lovely women. [Pause.] Do you want me to tell you just what I hear?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] After the storm and stress of life the peace and joy and love [signs of distress] make many \* \*.

Dora, Dora. Oh I'm going. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

W. J. Who is W.?

(You tell.)

Is it this man here?

(No.)

I'll tell you in a minute. W. sounds like Wilson, Wilson, yes.

(Are you sure?)

Sounds like that. Will something. It is all to him. I want it to go to him. It seems I ought to turn around and speak to

him. [Pause.] [Finger moved as if writing a letter.] [Note 369.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

William. [Read 'welcome'.] no not welcome unless you said welcome to me. welcome to me.

(Yes, all right. Welcome to you.)

I am not quite confident of myself.

(Yes, I understand perfectly.)

but will son [soon] be, but rest assured of my utmost effort to communicate. I will try and make more definite and plan [plain] my identity.

(Good, we shall help.)

It is not hard to recall or to come but to control the action of another mind and body means [?] the complexity [read 'completely'] co ... [suddenly read correctly.] of other spirits whose [read 'which' and 'where'] whose thought may color our own. We are obliged to pool issues so to speak in a common fund of power and draw as we can for our purposes. Have I ever [pencil ran off paper.] ever said this to you before.

(That depends on who it is.)

I thought you knew me. W. J.

(I was not certain. You have said things like that before, but not in the same language.)

It is a hard matter to recall the exact phraseology

(Yes, I know.)

because it is often borrowed. I am improving somewhat in acceleration of speed [read 'special'] speed but am not eager to make a record on that point alone as this is not a field of athletics [athletics] but a work of psychologic display if I know psychology at all.

(Yes, that's right.)

What troubles you I am frequently asked and my answer is not lost in a maze of generalit[i]es but is in one word the lack of completeness and compactness. you catch my meaning.

(Yes, perfectly.)

---

369. Mr. Junot recalls no one in these subliminal incidents. The names Dora, and Will or Wilson are not recognizable by him. They also have no apparent meaning to me.

we get partial statements through. . . . [pencil suddenly fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[Three or four pencils rejected.]

It was only a question of losing hold for a moment. Someone tried to help him but a [effort to erase 'but'] by . . . Some one tried to help him by turning on a little more power and it was disastrous and he lost his hold. I am R. H.

(All right.)

and glad to be here and help in any way. I am able to bring evidence to my friend who waits for the coming of the spirit message. I did not throw away those pencils. I did not throw away those pencils purposely but I could not hold them. they absorbed the power and as they were filled I had to let go and that was the reason of it.

(I understand.)

We have a good influence here and would like to get some good points through, so I may as well begin and see what I can do.

Do you know a man named Silas [pencil ran off sheet.] Silas yes [to reading of name.] beside you is a man who gives me the name and then writes in the air a letter C—. It is rather a short name but he comes from an earlier day and recalls some experiences of study. [Note 370.]

I will leave the message as it came and speak of the friends near our friend who waits [French etc.] I find two friends who earnestly seek to give him a sign. One is like a brother and one a father. But the father is so overwhelmed with the possibilities of the work that he stands in awe [not read.] awe [not read] awe, not fear, but a slight awe. This is not entirely new but at most an unused power and somewhat contrary to his former beliefs.

(Mr. J.: Your father?) (No, not mine.)

no not H's [read 'C's' because I did not see the first stroke.] H's yes [to correct reading.]

Where can I begin.

(Anywhere.)

Do you know anything about a large bandanna handkerchief

---

370. The name Silas C. recalls no one in my acquaintance.

red [read ' tied ' ] red. I see him take one and fold it up now as a reminder of some past time. It is not in use but is one which was in his possession. [Pause.]

Does Chester [read ' Chisler ' ] Chester suggest anything to him.

(No.) [Mr. J. shook head.]

[Pause for some time.] I hear it again, Chester. I may have but part of the name, but I have that much.

(All right. Go ahead.)

am I stupid this morning.

(No you evidently have some difficulty in getting either the whole name or the right name.)

I think I won't slink away, no not just yet.

(All right.)

It is good for me to have to work [not plainly written but read by me.] work out my plans once in a while.

(Yes.)

[French etc.] What is P for. Chester and then P.

(Is that from Podmore?)

[Pause.] I was not aware of it if it were but he is present in the outer circle and it may be. Podmore is just as much of a fool now as he used to be. He doesn't seem to learn by experience and he never did. He was the most persistent evil I ever grappled with and we all thought he would get his head when he got ducked but no he came [not read] came up drenched but confident. It reminds me of the old lady and the scissors. You know the story.

(Yes perfectly.)

Well that is P— It is strange that such a personality is lost to a good cause by obstinacy. You were more gentle in your work with him than I would like to be. I let him alone. you shook him but all the time you were shaking you lectured in eloquent terms of his great capacity. The devil [read as first two syllables of ' development ' ] devil has capacity but who wants him for a bed fellow. It is enough to make me leave heaven to find my work over here interfered with by Podmore.

(I understand.)

Seriously though he is an indefatigable worker. He works

early and late but he starts with wrong permises [premises]. You know what I mean.

(Yes.) [Note 371.]

I see [superposed] I see a bunch of correspondence in the hand of our friend. It is old and new but all has a bearing on these matters. I am speaking of our friend present.

(Yes I understand. Go ahead.)

This [hand pulled down.] This bunch of letters and work has some important bea... bearing [had read 'important' as 'importance'] on many of the themes that have long interested me and you and some of them are or rather sive ['serve' but not read.] serve for a ground [not read] work... ground ... for future plans and the effort that has been made to classify and record is noted and appreciated by us. you understand.

(I think I do, but am not quite sure. Be a little more specific if you can.)

In other [both words superposed.] In [other] [omitted because I read it from previous writing.] words there is a union of purpose between him and us which extends [read 'intends'] extends back into the past and forward into the future and some of these things are personally connected with William's thought and mine. Yes there has been a rattling rattling [read 'riding' and 'settling'] rattling of dry bones

(Yes.)

in his closet and among his acquaintances but the same fear-

---

371. It is not an accurate statement regarding my method of handling Mr. Podmore. Mrs. C. knew nothing about my articles regarding his work. I did express myself in my criticisms of him in language that recognized his abilities and rights as a septic, but I endeavored to make my criticisms as invulnerable as possible.

The spirit that is shown by Dr. Hodgson here is characteristic, tho it is far more extravagantly antagonistic than ever occurred in either his conversation or writing about Mr. Podmore. It was only my conversations with Dr. Hodgson that ever revealed to me his real inner opposition to the methods and views of Mr. Podmore.

There is no discoverable meaning in the name Chester in connection with Mr. Junot. I have discovered none also in connection with Mr. Podmore. But it is possible that, on any theory, the reference is the same as the incidents a little later associated with the name Manchester. Cf. p. 483.

less spirit that has possessed him in the past will stay with him to the end

(Good.) [Note 372.]

No small talk will affect his investigations. It never did it never will.

(Good.)

[French etc.] I do not mind [superposed] any ... mind any of these cries. they are only a part of the control.

(I understand.)

Does not this friend recall some printed matter sent some 10 [read 16 and hand pointed till read 10] or 12 years ago to him

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded head in response to my look.]

and then a following correspondence and then a meeting on later.

(Yes.) [Sitter nodded assent again.]

It is with pleasure that I recall all that and there [superposed] there was an earnest and heart felt interest in the effort to make the work of influence among a certain class of people. We talked of that that also. We wanted thinkers thinkers thinkers. That was a note we emphasized. Women were all right. Women [read 'whomever' first time.] and helpful, but we wanted men.

(I understand.) [Note 373.]

Now I have a picture in my mind of a walk through a busy

---

372. There was a great deal of correspondence between Mr. Junot and Dr. Hodgson about the Piper sittings for notes and comments in his Report on the case. The Junot Report had been published at this time, which Mrs. C. had not seen or heard of, and even if she had she could not have known who the gentleman was that was present. It is evident that it is the correspondence between the two men that is here in mind.

It is not known whether any of the facts were connected with the name of Professor James.

373. Mr. Junot thinks that the reference here is to the Piper records and their correspondence. Some ten or twelve years before the Piper records were sent to Mr. Junot and gave rise to much correspondence and later sittings. Mr. Junot says that he and Dr. Hodgson were always talking or writing about the work.

It was exceedingly characteristic of Dr. Hodgson to refer to "thinkers" as needed. It was the burden of frequent conversations with myself when we met and the same occurred in the conversations with Mr. Junot. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know anything about it.

street and a place where we went to sit and talk more at leisure and some introductions which followed and some rare pleasure of interchange of thought on s... on some other themes. The work he was doing the place he was living [not read.] the ... lived ... the people associated with him and all that.

(Mr. J.: Might apply to any of his friends.)

I recall it all with pleasure.

(Yes.) [Note 374.]

I wonder if he recalls being in the headquarters and standing beside the lady there and having something done up as we waited.

(He does not recall it.)

That would seem so insignificant an event.

(I understand.)

but it leads to another matter. We were going out to Harvard together.

(No, he never went with you to Harvard.)

We certainly went out of town together.

(Mr. J.: Arlington.)

and it was early in the day and we were rather in a hurry, not especially so but rather. I am sure I can recall some better things soon. One falls on such little matters in recollections. There was a luncheon [not read] luncheon I think. I am not so confident of that but it was a... confident of what it was. We ate [not read] ate but I know we went into a dining room which was quiet and unoccupied by many people and there we sat and ate and talked till train time.

(Good.) [Note 375.]

I know that you expect me to do well here and I want to keep trying.

(Yes I understand your difficulty.)

I think I am getting hold of the lines

(Yes very well.)

of the past to get to... so that I may give evidential stuff. I have more than a passing regard for this friend and still turn to him for help in the future.

---

374. Mr. Junot writes that he and Dr. Hodgson had some walks together, but he does not remember any particular place except in Boston.

375. Mr. Junot writes that Dr. Hodgson always came to lunch with him at least once each time he, Mr. Junot, was in Boston.

Do you know anything about a man not much older than he and very evidently older in appearance who has had several conferences with him about these things and always with [last three words not read.] and always with a note of discord [read 'disa cord'] discord, yes disaccord would do all right.

(Now give some idea of who that is.)

Yes a man of rather slender physique but tall and gray and quiet and scholarly but as set as the rock of Gibraltar about any psychic matters and all so sure of his own position that it is exasperating [not read at first.] exasperating and one feels like putting a window in the cranium to ... cranium [not read first time.] cra... [suddenly read.] to let in the light!

(Yes, make it clear.)

It is an associate in many ways but not of choice just chance or circumstance. It is not easy to divest some of these hide bound professor [professors] of their notions of life and death and eternity.

(I understand.) [Note 376.]

J [erased.] W. J. has some ideas about these things too but I often laugh at him and tell him he was almost as bad as the rest when his particular candle [not read] candle cased [not read] to burn... ceased ... He blames me and says if I had made good the whole world would now be psychic researchers. What a dreadful state for me. I was a researcher myself and I did not have a fair chance. I am not through yet anyway. Do you think I could give my best energy and evidence to my English competitors.

(Not much.)

My heart is with the American work and if ever a spook was badgered and bothered by the English p... that spook is ... that spook is R. H.

(I understand.)

I am asked for and talked at and for and against, but poor W. J. is having his turn now. Wait till you see some of the reports of the future.

---

376. Mr. Junot recognizes the person here described and I know the man as well as Dr. Hodgson did. The account is quite correct, but his name cannot be mentioned here. Mrs. C. knows nothing about him.

(Yes I shall be glad to see them, but I understand what the method will be.)

You think you do but you have to be in heavenly attire and receiving in time to know what it is to be interviewed for publication [not read] publication ...

(Yes.)

I intended always to have much of my work left with the new Society. This I think I have never said to you, but it was my intention, but the sudden [not read] sudden way in which I went and the entirely unforeseen event left much to be desired in my plans for the work. They were not even decent to you. decent [not read first time.] Hyslop, but it is not a matter of which I can speak often. You understand that and you also understand that I have been getting [getting] hold again. I gave [read 'give'] up ... I gave up my place to William for awhile there [read 'here' and hand paused till correctly read.] and I intend to work out a few things now if I can.

(Yes I understand. Go ahead.) [Note 377.]

Does my friend recall a way I had of making a memorandum of points which he gave me. It was not unusual only as I refer to the past I happen to recall saying a number of times I must make a note of that or that or that and it was the interest [French etc. and shook head from side to side.] I felt in his work and interest but I often waited until the end of an interview and then they were done and in a little book [read 'work' and corrected]

---

377. It is true that Dr. Hodgson intended to turn over many of his records to the new Society, when it became established. This was agreed on in my campaign for an American Society, but not made known as it was in no way certain that I would succeed. Mrs. C. could not have known the fact unless gossip brought it to her casually, which is hardly possible in this detail, as it was known only to Dr. Hodgson and myself. I had published the fact in my previous Report, but Mrs. C. had not seen that. The criticism of the English Society may be a reflection of natural American prejudice against the English. I do not know of anything to justify such harsh language.

Dr. Hodgson did have to give up his place to Professor James at one time, if we may so interpret his enforced abandonment of the work for a year. The work was left in the hands of his Secretary, while Professor James had a general supervisory function as referee in important matters. It is possible that Mrs. C. may have casually learned this.

af. . . after my death was found many of these [last words not read] found many of these notes and some of these would help exceedingly [not read] exceedingly if they could be put against some papers and other notes. [Note 378.]

It is strange but I recall a snowy [not read] time . . . snow [not read] snow time in another place with this friend. Does he recall an interview in another town when Winter was on.

(Yes.) [Note 379.]

It just came to me and that was an important time too. I fear I am losing power, but I will come again the first \* \* [thing ?] tomorrow.

(Good.)

Goodbye for now. R. H. [Pencil fell.]

(Mr. J.: Auf Wiedersehen, Hodgson.)

[Hand signified want of pencil and it was inserted.]

Guten. [Pencil fell again.]

(Good.) [Note 380.]

[Hand reached for pencil again. I inserted the same.]

that is what I said. [Pencil fell again.]

[*Subliminal II.*]

Oh! \* \*

(What?) [Pause.] (What was that?)

\* \* [Pause.] Oh! Oh! [signs of distress.] Who is that man?

(You tell.)

[Pause.] What does W i e d mean.

(That was a part of what this friend said to Hodgson before he went.)

W i e d . . . I don't know what that means.

(It doesn't make any difference.)

---

378. Mr. Junot writes me that Dr. Hodgson always made careful memoranda of points in conversation and correspondence regarding the sittings.

379. Mr. Junot recalls in connection with the reference a "snowy time" only the fact that he and Mrs. Junot "went with him to Arlington once for a sitting when there was a great snow storm."

380. "Guten" was a pertinent reply to Mr. Junot's "Auf Wiedersehen". Mrs. C. does not know German. She once told me she knew but two or three words of it, "Federmesser" being one of them.

Is that the way you tell me to mind my own affairs? I see Dr. Hodgson. Do you know S. S, I mean the man not himself.

(No.)

That is what I thought. I don't care for anything. It has used up all the energy.

(Yes.)

Is it night?

(No.)

It looks dark.

(You are coming back.)

[Pause.] Oh well, Dr. Hodgson is with me. He shows me a picture of himself in a little frame hanging up. It is not very large and is hanging up in a frame. [Pause.]

And he shows me a big letter E, a great big capital E. I can't see the rest of the writing. There is more coming. Are you coming again tomorrow?

(Yes.) [Note 381.]

Things will be better tomorrow.

(Yes.)

I see figures Roman numerals, I, II, III.

(Yes.)

I see VIII, that means 8 doesn't it.

(Yes.)

They have something to do with the man and Hodgson and he were friends for the work. They grew fond of each other, a sort of comradeship.

(Yes.)

That is true too. My how they talked. Funny. I see a place off in the country, not the city. It is off and not many people and houses. I see them as if together. I don't know whether it is a picture or is really true. It seems they go to a hill place and look off all around. I see a view like going up. I don't know that it is mountains, but paths go up and the view is lovely and beautiful. I see the two together. They recall some other scenes up here with which they are both familiar. Do you know what I mean?

---

381. Neither S nor E as initials recalls any one to Mr. Junot that would be suggestive.

(Yes.) [Note 382.]

[Article placed in hand.]

That has nothing to do with tobacco?

(Mr. J.: No, but I use lots of it.)

You smoke?

(Mr. J.: Yes.)

It is good for the nerves. Some people think it bad. I don't, if you are tired.

I am going to wait till tomorrow. First I must say how much Dr. Hodgson sends appreciation of your effort to get here.

(Mr. J.: Nice of him.)

It is nice of you he says.

You will have to hold my hand [to me. I took hand.] You are not afraid when he is here?

(Not much.)

Do you know an Alec?

(The rest of it.)

No.

(Who said that?)

You want everything. You ought to be Oliver Twist.

(May be.) [Note 383.]

[*Subliminal I.*]

Hm! [Smile.] Oh dear! [sighs.] Hm! Great old work.

(Yes.) [Suddenly awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H. and Mr. Junot. Mar. 1st, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

Before the trance Mrs. C. remarked to me that she felt more normal this morning and that on the previous mornings she could not get hold. So far as the records are concerned they bear out this feeling, tho she knew nothing of what the records were.

---

382. The Roman numerals recall nothing to Mr. Junot, and he cannot recall any place like the one described except Arlington. The two had been together there often enough. The paths may be the streets in the place and the hills about would be indicated by the expression "not mountains." The description fits Arlington exactly, tho it does not identify it.

383. Alec is the name of an intimate friend and neighbor of my father. I do not know that it is so intended and no importance can be attached to its mention here.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] Che moi cou. [Pause.] They're here. [Pause.]

[I asked for and laid the articles on the table. They were wrapped up and at no time were they opened or touched.]

[Pause.] Who are you? [Pause.] Oh! We are going so fast. [Muscles in face showed signs of distress.] Oh. Oh. [satisfaction] Wonderful. Who are all these people?

(Friends.)

So eager and yet so careful. Oh now I see them. Who is this man with dark eyes, strong face and assertive influence. Oh! Oh! He has been gone some years. [Pause.] [Distress and slight groans.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

May I come.

(Yes certainly.)

and give a word to my boy my boy who is so good and faithful friend of those who seek the truth as you well know. How may I best may I give my word of recognition for his effort to find me. I am not distant in thought or person, but all the many influences that crowd [?] into my life today, this hour, this moment, keep me from the most perfect expression which I strive earnestly to make. all the past is as a dream from which I can pick but bits of expression and give to you as I am able. The real life here is so bright and full of all the wide experiences of the moment that they are the things I first long to talk about. Your mother is with me, boy, and lived [?] so happy in the coming into this life of experiment. It is not all new but it is all experiment.

It is so different from what we dreamed it would be and God is just as far off and inexplicable to me today as when I tried to solve the problems of life and death in my own mind long ago. It is not a life to fear but one to wonder at and be constantly surprised and confounded. How many times I have sat with you and you read and wrote and planned and \* \* ['studies' ?] and then with tired head put it all aside and waited for the explanation some other time.

You were always a good bo . . . . You were always a good son but quite ready to think out [read 'one'] out your life for

yourself and we did not always have the same ideas, but it is just as well sometimes, although the old man can never quite see it while the young one is still young and from here I see the action of such disagreement is growth and progress.

How much I have to say to you about all the rest who are with me and the real joy it is to find the open door. This message is so heavenly a message to me. the identity I will seek to establish after I let this friend have [the] joy of communication.  
\* \* \* \* [pencil fell suddenly.] [Note 384.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pause.] R. H. is helping.

(Good, I understand.)

the friend who just wrote. He got right on to the pencil so to speak ... pencil ... [read 'pennant' and 'present' the first time.] so to speak and rode along at runaway speed. Do you know who is writing now.

(No I do not.)

Strange I thought you would know my style. W. J.

(It was not clear, as it was affected by the previous communicator.)

I knew that theory [read 'George' and hand pointed till read correctly.] We even carried that color thought from one sitting to another in the Piper records. You are aware of that.

(Yes.) [Note 385.]

I only hold the lines a moment so go now. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Ah here we are and I am glad to come. It was the father [read 'future' questioningly.] of our friend... father who made attempt to write. He did not write all that he wished and the name was not on his mind at that moment, for he intended to recall some incident before he left.

[The allusion to his name not being on his mind is evidently

---

384. There is no assurance as to the personality of the communicator here, tho the allusion to a man just before the automatic writing might justify the conjecture that it was intended for the sitter's father and a later reference definitely implied the same, but on that assumption Mr. Junot says it is not characteristic.

385. This is true of the Piper records and Professor James knew of the fact. Mrs. C. knew neither this nor that Professor James knew it.

the result of my remark to the sitter, not recorded, that I had expected the name to be written at the end of the message. I did not explain in detail as I did not wish to talk or say things that should be recorded. I simply wanted to allay any desire on the part of the sitter to ask for the name, as I knew it would not come.]

He is still here and so much interested. He was of the tenacious type. when he got hold he held fast whether to ideas or to plans and friends. He never deserted a cause or a friend and that tenacity holds good in experiments.

(I understand.)

Who is Lucy [superposed and read 'lady'.] Lucy of whom he speaks.

(Can you tell?)

No he kept the name in his mind for a moment and I got it. George says that probably I will call [not read] him to the rescue... call ... as usual.

(Yes.) [Note 386.]

but I think I will hang to the work a little while myself [Indian etc.] the father holds a paper in his hand, a newspaper and it looks as if it came from a distance and reached him some days after printing and I see the word Times on it as a part of the heading. Do you know anything about that.

(No.) [Mr. J. shook his head in response to my look.]

It has a word before it like the name of a town.

(All right. Get that word.)

say like Manchester or a name about as long as that. I cannot read it but [not read] but I see the size of the letters and the length of the word. In it is a notice of his own passing to spirit and it is sent some distance and read by members of the family a long way off, a scattered acquaintance or family and many notices sent to many people. [Pause.] I wait only to see what will come from him as he is so [pause.] eager to communicate.

(I understand. Take your time.) [Note 387.]

---

386. The name Lucy has no meaning to Mr. Junot, and I see no reason for its intrusion at this point, if intended for a cousin of my own.

387. This incident relating to Manchester and apparent reference to an obituary notice are not recognizable by Mr. Junot.

I find a small case of leather and in it some steel or silver articles. They shine and are in place as if kept there when not in use and he takes them out and looks at them as if they were a part of his life or work. Does the friend know anything about a silver spectacle case.

(No.) [Reply to my look.] [Note 388.]

Do you.

(Yes I do, of one that my father had.)

[This spectacle case was really iron, plated, and was wrapped up in a package present and tho it had never been seen by Mrs. C. it could have been seen by her often enough. I admitted the point to help things along, not because I attached any value to the reference.]

That is very strange I thought it belonged to the other father. Now one thing more. There was a peculiar little snap to that case and it made a sharp noise as it was opened and shut and beside it I see the case of little steel instruments and a roll of linen and some silver as if some physician used to dress a slight sore or wound on the leg.

(Yes.)

I think of the one who had the spectacle case. Did your father have a slight trouble with his leg.

(Yes he did.)

Well after it was dressed and attended to by the doctor he always made sure [not read] that ... sure ... it was properly done by a personal inspection. Yes did you ever see him let a thing go by that he did not personally superintend. He was pretty much the master ... mu ... ['much' not read at first.] the master of his own body and affairs as long as he could be. That is right I know.

The two fathers here are getting rather close in their effort to come. What is the letter R for. Do you know.

(Yes, if it applies to my father I know.)

Is it Robert.

(Yes.)

---

388. The incident of the leather case and silver articles recalls nothing to Mr. Junot. As the messages soon relate to my father it is probable that some confusion of personalities arises in the transition.

Let it go at that. It is where it belongs. Do you know anything about Niagara Falls.

(Yes I do. Go ahead.) [Note 389.]

all right. I will see what comes. Yes [to correct reading of 'all right' which had been superposed.] It is a past experience and one of much [not read] moment . . . much moment and something that brings the dual [read 'dread'] feeling of . . . dual [read 'dread'] dual [not read] dual feeling of sorrow and joy, joy first and then sorrow. [French etc.]

Will who is Will connected with, the friend. Do you know.

(No, none with my friend.)

I am so anxious to get something for him that everything that comes I try to give him but I will keep on. Will is alive and is actually interested in these matters but I cannot see much more. [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[New pencil inserted.] Sarah [pause and scrawls which might be an attempt to make a capital M. Soon they resembled a J.]

John yes. John hol [?] \* \* is my name. Where is my watch. Who has it and where is my Bible. I want them. G . . . get them for me. G. S. G. S. [Pause and pencil fell.] [Note 390.]

---

389. There was evidently some confusion here between my father and the father of Mr. Junot. I know of no leather case in my father's possession and no such articles as described in it. He had an injured leg, but he never had it dressed or treated by a physician or by any one else. He was master of his own affairs decidedly. His name was Robert, and one of his last visits with my stepmother was at Niagara Falls, tho this was twenty years before his death. Mrs. C. could not know the pertinence of this allusion, tho we assume that the published accounts of my first Piper sittings in newspapers may have brought his name to her casually. Cf. Note at end of the sitting.

390. Mr. Junot discovers no meaning in the letter M, the name John and the letters G and S. As the former sittings for Mr. Junot resulted in connections with John Gregg it is possible that this is an intrusion from that source.

That the reference is to the Greggs is apparent or supported by the reference to the name Will and the question who Will is. Will Gregg is the name of John Gregg's father. A little later the name John comes out. It is es-

## [Change of Control.]

I think I had better come here and say a little for myself and stop [not read] this... stop this slow music and low lights .. low ... not read the first time.] what is the use of all that just to give a man the ... man the privilege of doing poor work when he cannot write [not read.] write at all. you see these people are sometimes overwhelmed with the dignity of returning [not read] returning from heaven... returning from heaven, but they do not get anywhere. The mother of this young man, see how polite I am, calls unceasingly [?] to him \* \* \* \* to express something of his [so read] her past life to him and I must say a word for her.

Hyslop you are not to be afraid to let me \* \* [hurry] hurry, for it is the only way I can work.

the mother passed [not read] away after ... passed ... a short illness but was so weary even with. yes [to correct reading of 'weary'] with \* \* are you dead also.

(Yes about.)

I think you are. The mother speaks of the weariness of her body and the relief when she came here and she holds in her hand a small flower like a blue for-get-me-not and ...

(Mr. J.: Is that your mother?)

no, yours [pencil ran off paper.] yours. I hear another voice

pecially interesting to observe this intrusion from the fact that he appeared in an earlier effort to get Mr. Junot's relatives while Mr. Junot was absent. There was nothing in the present sittings with Mr. Junot present to suggest a connection with the Greggs. Also a year later when I had Mr. Junot present again a similar confusion occurred, some incidents coming through that belonged to the Greggs and not to Mr. Junot. Mrs. C. also was seized with the same illness that affected her at the first series at which I tried to get Mr. Junot's relatives and Mrs. C. did not know I was experimenting with the same party.

I said Mr. Junot discovered no meaning in the letter M here. He evidently had not noticed what he observed in connection with Note 360, namely, that "Sarah M. H." were the initials of his wife's name. This fact, of course, I did not know until long after the sittings. Hence it was significant to have seen an "M" in the automatic writing which was attempted once and possibly twice immediately afterward, and then J followed these, which was the initial of her married surname. But as the name John came at once the J may have been intended for that and begins the confusion with the Gregg family.

and know it is the man to whom the mother would speak. she had a loving [not read] a loving the wild flowers that grew in the country and she places this little flower here as a sybol [symbol] of her love for the simplest ones, and then all at once I see a mixture of two houses [not read] houses, one in the country and one in the city and the one in the country is large and white and has so much [read 'many'] much space and land and air, and then there is a house where there are a many ... great many others and where there is much going on and \* \* [several words not read] much going on and that is w... going [not read first time.] and that is where she passed away, yes. [to correct reading.]

Now I see a dress or a dress fabric. It is dark with a small figure [not read] in it of light ... figure ... in it and that is the last she wore. There was a greyish sort of gown ... sort ... [not read first time] gown [not read] gown which was worn about the house ... worn ... [not read first time.] house [not read] house and that was put away, but the other was a better one and was of some significance to him. [Note 391.]

Do you know any one by the name of Merrill whom she knew.

---

391. Mr. Junot writes me with reference to the allusion to flowers:—  
“The two Sarahs were in the habit of visiting at my country place in Indiana nearly every June at the same time. The abundance of flowers there was a great attraction to both, as also to my wife who was uncommonly fond of flowers.” Mrs. Junot had died since the Piper sittings, a fact which I did not know at the time of the sittings and only learned incidentally from the wording of Mr. Junot’s notes in reply to my queries. It is evident that the statement: “The mother of this young man calls unceasingly to him to express something of her past life to him” is a reference to her. Mr. Junot recognizes the allusion to “a dress dark with small figure, etc.” as a reference to his wife as it is she whom it fits. The reader will observe, however that there is confusion here in connection with the reply to the question if it was “your mother”, having the son in mind: for he is told that it is his, the sitter’s, mother.

Of the reference to the houses Mr. Junot says: “My house in the country is a large white one, tho not high. It stands upon a hill and looms up quite a good deal. My own mother was never at my home in town. She died long ago. So I had my wife’s mother in mind for this at the sitting.”

Mr. Junot has two houses, one in the city and one in the country, and it is interesting to see the allusion to the mixture of the two houses since this is what we should expect, at least occasionally, in this “mental picture” method.

(Yes.) [Mr. J. nodded assent to my look of inquiry.]  
[Note 392.]

Then there is a little child of whom she speaks. It seems as if it bore the same name as her own and there is a group of people [people] where she lived who have many of these things of hers in use [not read] and ... use ... who frequently speaks and refers of and to her.

Do you know about a piece of work which she left unfinished. It seems like a piece of bright colored ... bright [read 'light' first time.] work and was in a basket and was taken up as a pleasure and not a necessity and it was left unfinished. I hear some one say: This is just as mother left it only there is a sound like Ma. Did some one call her Ma.

(It is not recalled.)

It is a shorter sound than mother, but I may be wrong about that. Is the work recalled.

(It is not recallable.)

Can it be looked up.

(Yes I think so.)

All right. I think you will find it. I see a piece of hair. It is braided and put away and is some mixed [not read] with ... mixed with gray It is a small braid cut by a lady. [Mr. J. left the room.] [Note 393.]

Is it time for me to go.

(The friend has to leave for the train.)

Do not you.

(No.)

Is he gone.

(Yes.)

That was his mother

(I understand.)

just the same. Do you think he was troubled [not read] troubled.

(I do not know. He remains reticent, but recognizes many things when he is away.)

---

392. The significance of the name Merrill will be seen by reference to Note 362.

393. Mr. Junot's mother was always called "Ma", but nothing can be verified regarding the "bright piece of unfinished work, etc."

That is all right. It is hard to get things through this way sometimes, but if only a little comes, It is all right. Hodgson knew and longed to ... longed ... [not read first time] to speak to him today but there was such [not read] such an evident desire on the part of the family to come that he held back. G. P. knew him also and expected to get in and work, but the time slips away so fast. [Note 394.]

(May I put a few things for you to answer while there is time?)

Surely.

(Do you know the Dashwoods?)

What do you mean, the B——

(Elinor Dashwood and Marianne Dashwood?)

People in the earth.

(I wanted to see what your memory would be.)

Of experiments elsewhere.

(No.)

They are nothing to me. I am J. P.

(Jennie Potter?)

You have gotten that name at another place, for I never gave it to you here.

(That is right.)

But if you will believe me I am striving to forget rather [not read] to remember... rather. for I want [not read] to work ... want ... in an independent way and I bring all my power [read forces] power on present situations [not read] situations. George and I know each other and these people of whom you speak are friends of the past but I have no idea to make a test of my personality. I did not and do not intend that as a thrust [read 'threat'] thrust. It is only that I desire to preserve my incognito a little longer. Do you see.

(Yes.) [Note 395.]

---

394. This statement that G. P. knew the man is natural, tho he did not know him before his own death. It is simply pertinent because of his relation to the Piper case where G. P. helped so much.

395. I had always wanted to test the personal identity of Jennie P., having conjectured that she might be Jane Austen from something, on which I could not implicitly rely, in New York. I chose some names representing characters in her writings, and had heard that "Jennie Potter" was the name

I will work for you all right. Was there a J. connected with your friend who has just gone.

(Yes.)

I mean closely connected.

(Yes.)

and do you know who F. would be.

(No, he may.)

Both these letters came and also an E. yes that was more personal like someone alive and more near.

(Good.) [Note 396.]

It is time to go, but all send their affectionate regard to you and to him. Jennie P——

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is this A. Do you know?

(No.)

Do you know Arthur?

(No.) [Note 397.]

Are you in a hurry?

(No.)

This friend is.

(Yes.)

I feel it. [pause.] I'll hurry. [Pause.] He wants James too?

(No.)

You know another James that came to him.

(No.)

Then that is you. You are James too.

(Yes.)

Goodbye. It always mixes me up when there are two of the same name.

(Yes.)

Take my hand. [I took hold of her hand.]

I think I know the man who came for a sitting before.

(Tell it.)

You know who I mean.

---

of one of her own guides when living. But the result was a failure. No evidence of Jane Austen came.

396. Mr. Junet recalls no one that would be suggested by either F. or E.

397. The name Arthur recalls nothing to me.

(Yes.) [Thinking of a friend who came the previous Sunday.]

I think his name is Brown.

(No.)

Is it longer than that?

(Yes.)

Is there no Brown with it?

(Not that I know of.)

I thought it was. Where did I get that Brown?

(I don't know.)

He is awfully interested.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] He told Starlight he never wrote poetry. Did you know that?

(No.)

Whom do you think I mean? Not the Sunday man; the one with three sittings.

(Oh yes.)

See how we misunderstand. Would he be Brown, or would Brown be connected with him?

(Yes.)

I kept hearing Brown, Brown, Brown. Either himself or some one connected with him. [Note 398.]

I assumed that the allusion to Niagara Falls was a purely subliminal affair, a memory of Mrs. Chenoweth's reading. Miss Whiting who told me the fact had given Mrs. Chenoweth the January *Journal* in which I had referred to a visit by my father to Niagara. I never dreamed that the allusion could be other than a subliminal memory of the fact. After the sitting I referred to it by asking if she had read the *Journal* and she said she had not, but had looked only at the end of it. I asked her if she did not remember the incident about the railway accident and my father's visit to the falls and

---

398. Dr. Howard N. Brown had had a few sittings a short time before this experiment and I did not recognize who was meant until the time was referred to. He had not given his name at the time and inquiry after the sitting showed that Mrs. C. had not known him or his name.

she said she had not seen it, and explained that she had put off reading it.

The incident, assuming that it refers to my father at all, thus seems not to have the explanation that I assumed.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 6th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I see a man by the window in a frock coat. Do you know what I mean? It is a Prince Albert double breasted coat and buttoned in front. He looks as tho quite stout. I see the top and bottom of the picture cut off and only that little bit of the coat shows through. [Pause.]

Do you know a Doctor or surgeon? He steps over to me and takes his hand over the back of your spine and makes a movement, rather harsh, it seems, as if doing something to relieve you with his hand. It is harsh, not magnetic treatment. He looks as if stretching the spine would relieve your throat. I saw him step over and do it. [Pause.] Do you work a good deal stooping as now?

(Yes.)

That is it. It seems as if he was going to pull you there to relieve the pressure. I don't think he has gone very long. He seems to be a physician and surgeon.

(Get his name.)

It seems as if he had done many things in his own way, as if independent. When sick he diagnosed his own case and seemed unable to overcome his own difficulties. There was almost an impatience that he could not get over them.

(What was the matter with him?)

I don't know. There were all sorts of suggestions about him and experiments and that sort of thing. It was a strange sort of thing that he had to go as he did when he had done so many things for other people. You have some one in your mind.

[I nodded assent.]

[Mrs. C. mentioned a Harvard man who came from Hawaii and whom I did not know.]

It is not he. It seems a New York man, well past middle life.

He would have lived long but for this for which there was no remedy to be got. [Pause.] I think I'll go. I fear my own mind will be affected by it. If he wants to communicate I would rather not get to thinking. [Eyes then closed.] [Note 399.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Threw pillow away from head.] That is better. [Pause.]  
Hello.

(Hello.)

Do you know any one whose name begins with B?

(Yes, finish that.)

u [pause.] is that right?

(Go ahead.)

[pause.] l [pause.] l.

(Yes, go ahead.)

That's all isn't it?

(Yes.)

What did you say go ahead for? Did you want more?

(Yes.)

Is W with it?

(Yes.)

That comes before it.

(Yes.)

Like W-i-l-l-i-a-m. Looks like T, a big T. I don't know about that, but I think that is right. T, a period then B.

(That is right.)

It was sad that he had to go.

(Yes.)

You know it. He is working. He is in spirit land.

(Yes, why distinguish in that way?)

Because some one over here is connected with him in earth life. I thought you were thinking of some one alive you know. He seems so real, like a man in life. I had to tell you. He is

---

399. Before Mrs. C. had gotten more than half through the message I recognized who was meant from his having appeared in New York at more than one place. I saw evidence of his keeping a promise made there to come to me elsewhere. He was a prominent physician and surgeon. He did diagnose his own case and had not been long dead. There was no remedy for his disease.

not unhappy. He left with his work unfinished. Did you know him?

(No.)

Only about him?

(Yes.)

My he would like to speak to his friends. He was hard headed about some things. [Pause, and Indian sounds.] [Note 400.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [scrawl.] William T. Bull M. D. [written slowly.] \* \* [scrawl.]

(I am glad to greet you. Say all you desire.)

Strange and remarkable and fantastic [pause after each word and the same for some time until control was better.] it seemed at first.

(Yes, I understand, but it will be clear in time.)

[Pause.] I feel as if I were [read 'can'] were pressing [read 'passing'] pressing on some soft and plastic substance and that I must not bear down heavily or I will fall through and that makes me uneasy.

(The pencil in a hand writes on a pad as you think and I get the message in that way.)

I am not conscious of pad or pencil but seem to be enfolded [read 'unfolded'] enfolded in soft clouds of ... clouds... [not read first time.] nothingness [not read.] nothingness. there is no leverage [read 'language'] leverage and I grope in solidity [read 'solidly'] solidity. I think I move but I seem to get nowhere. I was all [read 'ill'] and hand pointed till read correctly.] right a few moments ago but this is strange and peculiar [read

---

400. William T. Bull is the physician I had in mind in the previous remarks. The reader will notice that it was spelled out in a manner that might enable the critic to call it fishing, but it must be remembered that each letter was correct at one shot and that inquiry of Mrs C. afterward revealed the fact that she had never heard of the man. He had promised through another psychic in New York to a friend of mine. I not having been present, that he would try to come to me. I never knew the man except by reputation. His work was unfinished, as he died comparatively young. He was known as "a hard headed man".

'failure'] peculiar. I hear you and know that others are in the room, but I am shut away from them in a measure.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Is this the road we have to travel to communicate.

(Yes it is.)

I have seen my living [read 'loving' and hand pointed and started to rewrite, getting only 'l' when I suddenly read it correctly.] friends ever since I died, but I never felt like this. I wanted to live so much for I needed to finish some work I had begun.

(Yes I understand.)

but now it is over. I am not troubled [read 'withheld'] troubled for it is the nature of life to seek [seek] adjustment where it survives.

(Yes, and perhaps you can finish your work on your side.)

Yes I am told so and was told of this way to come for expression.

(Good, who told you?)

A friend who had become interested in these things before she left the life of the bodily expression.

(Yes, how related to you was that person?)

My own wife and so glad was I to have her with me.

(Yes, I understand, and did she tell you before she came over?)

Yes and had some experiences but the full and complete knowledge and understanding of what it means to the one left to receive communication came after our union [not read.] union [not read.] re union here.

(Yes, who is the one left to receive it?)

She was left and now there are the children. her children do you know.

(I do not know them, but can find out.) [Note 401.]

---

401. I learned rather accidentally that Dr. Bull's wife was interested in this subject. I learned this, however, since her own death as well as his and since this sitting. She had children by her first husband, a fact which I did not know until inquiry after this sitting determined it. The allusion to not knowing what it meant to receive communications in this way until after their reunion on that side may have its meaning in the fact that I learned since her death of some remarkably good messages that Mrs. Bull obtained through

My own desire is to continue [read 'convince'] continue my work. If I can get a better hold on life through this means I want to do so. There is need. there is need. there is need. [Apparently tended to lose control, but with a short pause recovered.]

(Yes.)

Who is the [pause.] prime factor in this movement on your side. You are. You [are] the one to whom I must look for help.

(I understand.)

I know there ought to be a school for your work. One may ['one' not read.] One may exhaust his own supply of energy and funds to put forth [both words not read.] to put forth a method of helpfulness like sanitation \* \* [erased.] or [read 'for' owing to mark with it.] or protection of health and be laughed at for his foolhardiness.

(Yes, I understand.) [Note 402.]

and see the same plans used by wire pullers the next session [session: read 'season' first and then corrected as hand pointed.] yes [to correct reading.] yes life is a farce [read 'force' and hand pointed till read correctly.] in many respects and it is the part of some man to play the heroic and be lost to view in the guffaws caused by the clowns [not read.] clowns [not read.] clowns. yes [to correct reading.]

(All right.)

I am not as crabbed as I may seem to you.

(You do not seem crabbed. Once in a while the writing is not clear, that is all.)

I could write and tell you of my happiness now and it would be true in a sense, but a man even during [not read.] during his honey moon dreams of his work and future accomplishments.

---

a reliable psychic from her husband before her own death. He had referred to me in those messages.

402. This reference to a "school" for my work is more significant in his mouth than would appear on the surface, tho the word "school" is not the correct one to use. It is apparently connected with a plan which is connected with the man to whom this Dr. William T. Bull seems to act as a guide, or one of the guides. It is practically a cross reference to have the allusion made here. The whole affair is a very private one and not known beyond a circle of half a dozen people.

(Yes, I understand.)

I wish I could get to some of my old friends. That will come [read 'welcome'.] That will come in time I suppose. M. is with me.

(Who is M?)

Marie [written slowly and with difficulty.]

(Marie?)

Yes, yes. I am losing my hold.

(I understand.) [Note 403.]

Thank you.

(Thank you. I hope we shall hear from you further in the future.)

Yes, yes, yes. [writing slower as it ended.]

[Change of Control.]

[Indian.] Good morning Hyslop. I am G. P.

(Good morning.)

and am so glad to give you greetings from all the friends. We thought it was a good opportunity for our friend to write before any energy [not read.] energy was used [not read.] used and he had good courage. He did well and will come again sometime.

(Yes, I will be glad of that. I really hoped he would turn up here.)

It is all right and the friends on both sides will be pleased. We are going to do as much of that sort of work as we can: for it helps the evidential [read 'literature'] evidential side of the case and it also enlarges the circle of influence for you. We are not in the least discouraged, but on the contrary feel much hope for the future.

There is a definite and steady interest growing which is so much better than the spasmodic efforts and spurts [read 'spirits.] spurts of interest from women here and there who make a fad of occultism. It is rather d[i]sheartening to spend so many heavenly hours writing pages [pages] of w... stuff for women who only wonder and wonder and then run away to luncheon to talk it all over with some friend who wonders and wonders. What we want \* \* [scrawl] that wonder [not read.] wonder is

403. I learned from an acquaintance that Dr. Bull did call his wife Marie. Her name was Mary.

the end of that sentence. [I had read it continuously with 'what we want'.]

What we want [not read.] want and need is the power and prestige of the scientific collegiate world. You know what I refer to.

(Yes exactly.)

Once we get that influence nailed [read 'marked' questioningly, and knowing it was not correct.] nailed [not read.] nailed [not read as I was still under an illusion regarding the attempt.] fastened our work here to [too] can take all the time we need and go on smoothly [read as 'something'.] smoothly and serenely with the experiments.

(Yes.)

It is the spasmodic interest where one takes the sittings as they take a season at the opera that makes this disconnected [written apparently 'disconcerted'.]

It is almost time to stop is it.

(No, not yet.)

All right. I want to go on but I did not want to overstep. We have been working in another direction and have been watching some matters on the other side. Psychic affairs got to ebb tide [not read.] tide all over the world for a while and there seemed no interest except in the old fashioned physical phenomena and that disgusted the thinking world, but there is a steady return to the legitimate expression of spirits in and through the mental. It cannot be confounded with the abnormal psychological effects of disease when the psychic is well and normal and of average capacity. that was the strong point in the Piper case and is the telling point in the Verrall and Myers case: experiments I mean.

(Yes, I understand.)

and when there is definite distinction between normal and abnormal psychology and these experiences are classified there will be some basic principles to work upon. William J— is more interested in the classification of phenomena now than he was before he came here. It was so interwoven [not read.] interwoven, yes, [to correct reading.] the experience he had in the last sittings when he tried to communicate with Richard that he got all tangled [not read.] tangled [read 'laughed'] tan... [suddenly read.] up and his ther... theories [partly superposed.]

were all knocked sky high. I think he ought to have lived a . . . lived . . . [not read first time.] year or two longer to straighten himself[f] out. yes [to correct reading of 'straighten'.] but the withdrawing of the life principle has nothing to do with us and so he had to come. There has been so much mush written and talked about the Piper failures in England that it is hard to know just what was done and what not, and they have the same jealous care over everything [not read.] everything that has always characterized their work, but it is not for us to comment too harshly. We are going to win on our own methods and that is all we care about.

Do you know a spirit named Carrie.

(Yes.)

She is a friend of yours.

(Yes.)

She is here and rather a weak spirit but eager to say a word to me f . . . [read 'you'.] for you.

(I shall be most happy to hear from her.)

Do you know anything about her death. I see so much effort made to give her air and breath at the last moments as if there was a sense of suffocation at the last but it was soon over. Do you know.

(I do not know anything about that, but knew she had come to your side. If you can tell me where she knew me and her most intimate friends I can tell exactly who she is.) [Note 404.]

---

404. The Carrie I had in mind was an old schoolmate, but the sequel did not succeed in confirming my conjecture.

When I saw the name Carrie I recognized it less on account of any likelihood of its being pertinent than for its mere possibility. The letter D. would be the initial of this Carrie's father, Carrie having been an old schoolmate that died many years ago. Many of the facts, however, were irrelevant, and so I had to dismiss my impression as wrong. I could not ascertain any clue to her identity or to the truth of any of the facts associated with her name and following this passage. Accordingly the following year I explained to G. P., the control, that I was not able to identify this Carrie and asked him to bring her again, that I might identify her. At a later sitting he reported with her and my wife and made allusion to a glass ship that had been blown. Several years ago in connection with my father-in-law's name this glass ship was mentioned and I could not verify its significance. But the association of this Carrie with my wife led to inquiry about her of my mother-in-law and I found that she had lost a child, a half-

I find first the greastest [greatest] anxiety to communicate and a later (?) knowledge of these things but in an indifferent way if I may write it that way. The indifference was more the [not read.] was more the indifference of ignorance than of interest but she was the center of a group of loving friends who expect [not legible except as attempt to write what followed.] expect to hear from her if possible. This woman is not young nor old but middle aged. Do you know that. She is dark eyed and dark hair and thin face and not very stout [not read.] fat stout body. She is quite a reader and has books all about her and brings so many periodicals as if she were interested in them.

(Now it is not clear who it is, but the last name would settle it easily.)

[Pause.] Yes, if I can get it. I see a D. in connection with her. Do you know that.

(No.) [Since the sitting I discovered that this D. is pertinent.]

It is one of her friends and will I write . . . well I will write just the letters I see.

(Yes, good.)

S— M— and then an L— all those letters are in connection. I find her so weak and yet so eager. Do you know Fanny who would be near to her.

(Yes, I do.)

That helps a little. She has a letter in her hand as if it were written by her and returned by a friend after her death. It must have been rather a sudden death. Do you know that.

(No, I shall have to inquire, but if she can tell where we met and what we did together I shall be sure.)

[Pause.] She is trying to form the knowledge into words. You know what I mean.

(Yes, take your time.)

It may come in pictures or it may come in words. She is not unfamiliar with your attitude on these matters, for a smile comes over her face as she hears your request.

---

sister of my wife, by the name of Carrie in 1877, one year after the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia, where the family lived. The glass blowers and their artistic work was one of the most interesting exhibits at the Exposition. But I was not able to locate the glass ship.

(Good.)

I see a table and some writing utensils on it and some small papers unfoled [unfolded] but written on [Indian] and [pause.] work work work on this sort of thing. It is all around her and [pause.] I [pause.] It is not much use I think. I lose more than I get every time. she moves but [written 'bu' and not read at time.] do you know a ... but ... clergyman who was connected with her. .

(Not sure. Go ahead.)

I see this clerical looking man who is standing near her and I also see a younger girl or woman in this same place.

(Is the clergyman living or on your side?)

Spirit.

(Is he living or a spirit?)

Spirit—With her and quite amazed at the whole thing as they usually are.

(Yes.)

I want to walk out of doors and around [not read] around on grounds not streets but land like suburban place or country. Yes [to correct reading.] all her interests are away from the large cities but she knows more or less about them. Was she a teacher.

(No.)

Do you know about this.

(Yes.)

\* \* \* \* ['suburban' ?] condition. suburban. yes [to correct reading.]

(It is not clear.)

Do you know who N is. Nell or Nellie [read 'Nettie'.] Nellie.

(Not sure. I shall have to inquire.)

I feel as if this is bungling [not read.] bungling [not read.] bungling work, but I assure you it is the best.

(I understand.)

It seems to be the first effort of the kind. Who is the old lady who is left in the world. I seen an old lady quite stout with very grey hear [hair] and very lovely motherly face sitting in a chair in the home where Carrie used to be. Yes [to correct reading of 'Carrie'.] do you know her.

(If it is the Carrie I have in mind I know something of the old lady.)

It is to the old lady she would send a message if she could, for there is great love between them. still [?] the old lady is one of the kindest and yet independent strong minded [not read.] minded women you would want to know.

(Good.)

Is S— anything you know.

(It is not clear as I know S in more than one connection.)

no I mean in connection with Carrie and the elderly lady.

(I should have to inquire about that.)

All right. Now I see N... [sheet changed.] a young man or boy in the same house, a bright and happy looking person. He goes directly to the old lady as if to speak to her. He must be long there.

(Yes, who is that?) [Thinking of the person to whom D. applies.]

He too is connected with Carrie and the old lady as well, but Carrie puts her hand on his head and lets it rest there in a caressing [read 'cousin' purposely.] caressing way and smiles softly. It is a sad house sometimes without her and yet her presence is everywhere pes... [erased, and possible attempt to write 'present'.] felt. It is so large a part of the life and so many things once [not read.] done by her were once done by her are there [two words not read.] are there. She knows another language, yes [to correct reading which was delayed.] I see books of another language. I cannot seem to get what I want. Did you know anything about a piano there.

(Not sure, but probable.)

I see one and see her at it playing and singing [read 'moving'.] singing. What has I to do with her.

(I am not sure.)

Is the state or town. [not read.] town I.

(Finish that place.)

It is not possible but I saw I and then naturally thought of Iowa, but the last letters were supplied by my own guess or feeling [not read.] feeling. She had nothing to do with anything but I—

(Good.)

Do you know cousin Jennie in connection with her.

(No, but I can inquire.)

I must let her go now, but will try and get more from her tomorrow. The energy is gone.

(Yes.)

Goodbye till tomorrow.

(Yes.)

G. P. [Note 405.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause.] Oh dear! [pause.] Where are we?

(All right.)

[Pause.] What is all this wonderful stillness?

(Spring.)

Yes. [pause.] Who is that woman with that ruff around her neck?

(I don't know.)

She looks like Queen Elizabeth or some of those people. We seem to pass through all of these groups of people. [Pause.]

Yes, isn't the spirit wonderful?

(Yes.)

Coming down now. [Pause.] I see Dr. Hodgson.

(Give him my greetings.)

He hears you himself. He is so courteous and he says to tell you that Queen Elizabeth was only to let you know they are in touch with English nobility. He laughed.

(All right.)

We see them tomorrow. Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

[Indian.] Take my hand. [Took Mrs. C's hand.] It

---

405. At the later sittings the next year the name David came which was an explanation of the letter D in this long passage. David was the name of a warm friend of my father-in-law. He was also associated with him in business. He died some years before my father-in-law. The letters S. M. and L. are not at present verifiable, tho they are, I think the initials of this David's children. M. is an initial I am certain.

I have not been able to get into communication with the family and hence all other incidents have not been verified. The name Nellie is among those which I cannot verify in this connection.

seemed funny. I expected dear to be here today. Something in the air made me think of her. Do you know anything about her?

(No.)

Better so, isn't it?

(Yes.)

Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Did you find out who that Doctor was?

(Yes.)

He is going to help you.

(Yes.)

Good isn't it? Can he do any good?

(Yes.)

He must have been interested in hospitals. Funny thing! I see nurses.

(Yes.)

All around him like Catholic nurses, like Carny Hospital. They have Catholic sisters like nurses. He had a lot of them. He was interested in some hospital like a Catholic. Do you know?

(No.)

You can find out.

(Yes.)

Goodbye. [Note 406.]

'Dear' evidently refers to Miss A—— who had been stenographer at earlier sittings, and was frequently called 'dear' there.

The reference to Dr. William T. Bull involves cross reference with a friend in New York and also with another psychic there, a private case with some public work. But he has appeared mainly to my friend who is a psychic and many of the statements here are characteristic of what goes on in connection with my friend.

---

406. I have not been able to verify the incident about Catholic nurses in connection with Dr. William T. Bull. Those who might know the facts affirmative or negative will not reply to inquiry.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 7th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I see a man with his head over yours.

(What does he look like?)

Like Dr. James, bald head and a little lock of hair down on his forehead, a little fluffy, tho I should not use that term for men, but it is carelessly lying on his forehead. He is quite bald, much fairer than you, gray blue eyes and a beard. The little lock of gray hangs fluffy, no spectacles, eyes above your spectacles. He looks like a mask, and his features are a little higher than yours [meaning that he is not exactly superposed on mine] I don't think it is Dr. James, but it looks like him. Do you know whether he was quick and active?

(No.)

Another funny thing. I want to call him Willie. I would not do that, but that is what I want to do. Some one wants to call him this. I wouldn't. [Pause.] This man opens his coat and takes out a long black pocket-book with papers in it. [Pause.] The paper is nearly as large as the pad [8 x 12]. It is folded four times. [Pause.] I get such a headache. [Pause.] It is written very closely with a pen. [Pause.] I can't see the writing I think. [Pause and closing eyes.] I feel so importunate as if something was written elsewhere and I want to write it here. [Eyes opened.] I think I'll go. I'm afraid I... You don't know whether there is a Spanish medium do you?

(No.)

I hear something like Lisbon. [Pause, smile and dry cough.]

[Note 407.]

[*Starlight Control.*]

Hello.

(Hello.)

I come to speak to you. It is a long time since I came to talk to you. Some day I will come again. They did not want the medie to see that. She was just in the condition. Spirits don't always want the medie to see some things. I came in to

---

407. Neither the man nor the names Willie and Lisbon recall anything recognizable here.

clear her mind from them. They will wait till tomorrow. Isn't it funny?

(Yes.)

I think we are friends.

(Yes.)

Do others do better than I?

(I don't know.)

Is it because you get their records?

(Yes.)

There is more money coming.

(Is there?)

I see it coming. It looks as if it were for special work. Some one gives it for that. Before another year lots of things will be straightened out. You are getting over humps caused by other people. You will have to get rid of some to get right people. I saw the man that was mentioned the last time you were here. I looked at him two or three times. He is funny. Goodbye. I suppose you are glad I am going.

(I can't take all you say.)

I know it. [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groan.] So beautiful. [Not heard.]

(What is that?)

So beautiful. [Pause.] Mary is here.

(Mary who?)

Your Mary.

(All right. Give her my love.)

All that is beautiful and true and tender she expresses to you and to those she left in your keeping and she has been trying to come to you.

(Where?)

In another place. I see her standing with a group and with your father and the band about you. You know some people have doubted whether you had the old members of the Emperor group. They thought they went off with the records of the past as tho they were so much collateral passed along to the British Society. You know what I mean.

(Yes.)

Your wife laughs and says, strange that any one should think the Society should hold in bonds forever the free untrammelled spirits of great men who are servants of a great philosophy. I'm going. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Any open door through which a soul may come and go is a challenge to us and an invitation to service and it is of little consequence what is said or done, by those who stand outside our receiving line if the one to whom our message is given understands and is better [better] equipped for the battle for the truth. Put that in your heart and keep it for future reference.

I am not Emperor but I am one of his group and have long wanted to express myself as willing to cooperate with you in your overthrow of ignorance and now that day is here when I may freely say what is in my mind. I have frequently been with that friend of yours and ours J. P. H. and have tried to manifest to him. He is on the chemical line of the work and will accomplish much by and by.

(I am not sure who J. P. H. is.)

Hall.

(Oh yes.)

He is trying to lift himself into an atmosphere of clear and lucid expression on the spiritual side of life by chemical and magnetic affinization [only first part read.] zation. You perhaps know of this and will be happy to carry to him my expression of interest and desire for his success.

(Yes, I shall.)

It is more helpful than I can express to have a man lift hi... ['lift' read 'hold' and hand pointed till correctly read.] himself above contending [not read] contending conditions and multiplied emotions by the simple process of aspiration and prayer. The prayer is the sincere aspiration to know God as made manifest to men and we are conscious of that attitude in him. You are aware of what I write are you not.

(Yes.)

Sooner than you now think he will accomplish some things and be of benefit to us and we all feel indebted to him as we do

to any man who works faithfully and unceasingly in the cause of truth. [Note 408.]

I am not alone this morninging [erased.] morning but am favored with the presence of many whom you know by name and some whom you have known in more definite form. It is a goodly company gathered here and the effort you are making to complete some of the unfinished records and receive new ones is taken note of by all and is appreciated and sustained by us.

(Thank you.)

It is not a crown of laurel which you wear today nor a crown of thorns but the crown of assurance which the true disciple wears is yours. I cannot write more. My energy is gone out. I am the Doctor and as one of the trinity [not read.] trinity [not read.] trinity which you recall.

(Yes, thanks, I do well.)

408. It was the reference to "chemical line of work" as soon as the name Hall came that identified the person apparently in mind. I knew a Prescott F. Hall who had long been experimenting in an original way for some knowledge of the physical and chemical conditions affecting psychic phenomena. I noticed, however, that the initials of the name were wrong. Communication with Mr. Hall brought me the information that a distant relative of his by the name of Jonathan Prescott Hall was probably meant, and that a lady, named in the letter, had had sittings with Mrs. C. and probably the name was known to Mrs. C. Communication with the lady named resulted in the following information:

"I beg to say that I have had one sitting only with Mrs. C., last December. I have never seen or spoken with her out of the trance state. J. P. Hall was my great Uncle by marriage. He has been dead many years. Mrs. C. spoke of him first to me. I certainly did not speak of him to Mrs. C. She said 'a man' and stated also that he was a man of prominence, a lawyer had whereof to say to me and gave also a fair description of Mr. Hall saying he was near me and offered me certain advice relative to the property we have. Mr. Hall did not seem speaking for himself, rather giving advice through some one else, as I remember it. No, I have no *reason to suppose* that Mrs. C. has or had any normal knowledge of J. Prescott Hall, as he was called."

The curious feature of this allusion to him is that it should be mixed up with the communications from "Doctor" who is one of the controls in the Piper case. So far as I know there is no trace of the presence of Doctor in the phenomena of Mr. Prescott F. Hall, tho we know that the presence of people is often claimed when there is no external evidence of it, and it is not inconceivable that it should be so.

We worked long before we worked for R. H. and had a good and noble light to use and we are not weary [not read.] weary nor are we disheartened. We seek [read 'sees'.] seek the open sea and sail with fearlessness toward eternal life. Doctor.

[Change of Control.]

[Writing began very scrawly and with trembling hand and pencil. After some time it became clear. Two pencils rejected.]

Carroll D. Wright.

(Thanks.)

So may I come again with my friend who is still laughing at my former failure and you [pause and tapping of pencil, evidently, as next word shows, to have me read the previous one differently.] your triumph over my confrere. How distressing to have to take back water so soon after setting out on the voyage. I might have known that William was right but he lacked substance [not read.] substance. He acted as if his doll was stuffed with saw dust and he knew it and wanted no tell tale pinholes [three words not read.] tell tale pin... [had read 'punchholes' and then suddenly read correctly, when the hand refused to complete the word.] in it. He puts on airs with me now and says that at last he tried to know and I only shut my eyes and played ostrich. It does not seem as serious as it did. The whole effect of life loses some of its importance and looks ignoble and unworthy when one comes over here and I somehow think the process of evolution must make for a more spiritual world and people where you are. Do you know what I am saying. [Indian gibberish had occurred.]

(Yes, perfectly. That disturbance does not affect me.)

No, the whole process of physical life is toward unity and while it seems a dream for future ages to have the materialistic mind clarified and unified with spiritual life I believe it will eventual[ly] come. This theory is not entirely new to me but I did not recognize the importance of the evidence of the survival of the man and personality after death. I was too orthodox for that. It is not strange that our instructors [not read.] and professors... ins... [suddenly read.] do not take the matter seriously. They have no time no money no energy and most of the time are immersed in material and physical science which loses

sight of the spiritual. Then when we die we wish we had done more in the preparatory work. Fractions and decimals prepare the way for algebraic and higher arithmetical work. All life is sequence but we fail to begin with the essential—life itself. We busy ourselves with accessories and combinations of accessories. I am philosophizing [philosophizing] It is natural and easy to make deductions when one has the answer in his pocket. Yes [to correct reading of 'pocket'.] I have the answer. This is a wonderful living thing when you come to realize it that I am actually doing what I did not believe possible. [Note 409.]

(Do you know how your family now think about it?)

Yes in a way it is hard for them to accept what I rejected and yet the influence of my thinking now, my present absorbing in the work has an effect on their minds quite [pause.] definite and yet unperceived by them.

One needs [read 'near' and 'such'] needs the personal touch to give and receive the best that can never be borrowed or lent. (I understand.)

Some facts like figures stand strong and uncontradicted [not read] uncontradicted, but the presence which creates a spiritual atmosphere is the helpful and revivifying influence. One is the intellectual the other the spiritual evidence and the matter resolves itself into spiritual things are spiritually perceived.

(Yes, I understand.)

I have many physical interests in the world I left and know and appreciate what has been done in the furtherance of my plans for the university. A man attaches himself to a truth or an institution with like avidity, but he can have but one mistress. When truth comes as the supreme love universities must go.

---

409. I learned from members of the family that Mr. Wright was a Unitarian in his belief, and that type of mind has usually ignored this subject. I learned also from the same source that he had been much interested in this subject when he was a young man, but came to the conclusion that nothing could be accomplished in it and that it had better be let alone. The use of mathematical language and conceptions is characteristic, as he was an able statistician.

The allusion to the "triumph over his confrere" is to President Hall who was his superior officer. But the matter had been public property for two months or more and I cannot make a point of it. I can only explain its meaning to the reader.

universities. [not read assuredly first time.] You ought to see the core of that argument.

(Yes, I understand.)

We are either owned or own and in either case the result [not read.] is the same ... result ...

(Do you know who your successor is?) [Asked to turn the tendency toward evidential matter.]

Yes and I will tell you something of him later [not read.] later. He is not very broad or comprehensive but nibbles at almost every bait which is thrown making him look progressive and fearless, but his preconceptions are like barriers [not read.] barrers [barriers] You know that.

(What particular line of thought makes him so?)

Hall.

(The one I had in mind is under Hall. I know what you say about Hall is correct.)

You mean the Dr.

(What Doctor?)

are you speaking of my successor in classes.

(Yes, Oh no. President of the College, not the University.)

I... Yes yes I was on one point and you on another.

(That is right.) but we \* \* (Don't worry.)

\* \* \* \* [possibly attempt at 'what'.] do you mean. T. T. [might be a scrawl for 'S', but more like 'T'.] you... I am losing my hold. [pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

[Whirlwind comes in.] That is what happens to a man when he tries to think. Moral [read 'normal'] don't ... moral do not think but write ... think ... yes that poor spirit tried to think and dropped off the end of the pencil like a bug [read 'boy'] on a ... bug ... paling. Yes [to correct reading.] He was doing fine as long as he went on automatically. You know what I mean.

(Yes, but it was not evidence of anything.) [Note 410.]

---

410. I simply call the reader's attention to Whirlwind's remark about the consequence of "thinking" when trying to communicate. It is a definite confirmation of the position taken in my second Report about the difficulties of communicating. One of the obstacles to getting evidential messages was

The first of the writing you mean.

(All the way through.)

Fight it out with him when he is on the pencil. You said, yes, yes, I understand, as sweetly as if ... sweetly, sweet... sweetly [not read previously.] as you please.

(Yes, but that meant only that I catch the sense and wanted to encourage the communicator.)

He did not seem to need that altogether, but he is still here and smiles as if he would break his face and says give [give] me what belongs to me. I would have said the same and worse if some one had sent me ... sent ... such a message as evidence of the presence of Hodgson or any one of his ilk.

(I tried to lead him into what I wanted so that it would not be abrupt. I knew he might break down.)

O you are all right, Hurricane, and you may be able to wheedle him into a decent communication, but he was taking his first steps and I think he will do better after awhile.

Do you know a Mary connected with him

(No, but I shall inquire.)

Also make inquiries about a G— It is a letter [not read.] he makes ... letter ... for me to see. It sounds when [not read.] the word is completed ... when ... like Gertrude. Yes— [to correct reading.]

(All right.) [Note 411.]

explained to be the concentration of attention on control and at the same time making an effort to recall which tends to relax control. The point was summarized in "Associates of Constrained Attention". Here we find the communications free and easy when they are automatic, but the moment that the communicator is asked to tell something which does not come spontaneously and automatically his control relaxes and he goes to pieces. "Thinking" voluntarily breaks control and automatic communications offer no guarantee that evidence will come into the stream of consciousness.

There is nothing distinctively evidential in the messages of Mr. Wright in the passage so easily interrupted by my demands. It is all general until we come to the characterization of President Hall and there each one that knows the man must be the judge of its force. Mrs. C. knew nothing about him.

411. Mary is the name of a deceased sister of Mr. Wright. The name Gertrude, however, is not recognized by any one in the family.

Do you know anything about a bust of him which has been placed in a hall or corridor.

(No, shall find out.) [Note 412.]

Very well and then while you are about it see how much you can find out about rugs [so read, tho 'u' is often like 'i' as readers of this psychic know.] rugs and his interest in them. I see him inspecting some and talking more than ordinarily interested in them, and another thing I see is a large carton [read 'curtain'] carton carton carton [finally read 'cartoon' after reading it 'carton' and 'curtain'.] a carton yes [to correct reading.] I think that is what it is called, a large glass bottle [not read.] bottle in a wooden frame [not read at first.] fra... yes [to correct reading.] and the bottle has some kind of mineral water in it which he used to take.

(Good.) [Note 413.]

It was brought to him in the carton as [you] call it. There are a number of things I will try and [both words not read.] try and tell you before you go away.

I see a brick [read 'freak'.] brick house with vines growing all over it and I see him going in and out. It seems to be either his residence or a place where he worked. Do you know about a laboratory.

(I shall inquire.) [Note 414.]

---

412. No one knows anything about a bust of Mr. Wright anywhere.

413. Mr. Wright was not interested in rugs, according to the testimony of the family. The meaning of "carton" is not intelligible. It denotes a paste-board box, and suggests nothing pertinent to the family. But Mr. Wright kept a bottle of lithia tablets at hand for use at the table.

414. The reference to the vine-covered brick house and laboratory had no recognizable meaning to the family. But it was referred to in more detail in connection with the daughter's sittings and connected with incidents near the end of his life. At sittings the next year I asked for more information regarding it and the incidents mentioned make tolerably clear that the Hackley School was meant. That building is not wholly vine covered and is not brick, but there are many vines on it, and near it is a large building which resembles a laboratory. Mr. Wright was a member of its Board of Trustees and attended its meeting a few months prior to his death. He was very much interested in the school.

Clark College, of which Mr. Wright was President, was a brick building and had some vines on it. This, however, was so little noticed by the family at first that they did not remark it in reply to inquiries. There was a labor-

Yes. It is a sort of a one where he worked sometimes. Did he make experiments with foods and food substances.

(I do not know, but shall inquire.)

There was [superposing.] There was some sort of work like that. What does calculus mean.

(Go ahead.)

Calculus was his God all right. Do you know what it means.

(Partly possibly.)

Is it a latin term [two words not read.] latin term for something which interested him.

(It is a Latin term and also one for a form of study in English.)

It has much to do with him. I will let [not read.] let it go. The hour must be gone. Is it not late.

(Yes, the time is up.) [Note 415.]

Tomorrow then, Hurricane. Whirlwind.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] [Indian.] Oh I see a man here. He has a white vest on with black spots and pearl buttons on it. He put his hand in his pocket and he talks away as if talking to some one else. He had a habit of putting his hand in his pocket when talking like a lecture. Goodbye.

[Pause.] I think the dogs would get tired barking. [Dogs barking out of doors.]

(Not more than some people.)

Oh is that so. They seem to use so much energy. [Put out hand for me to take it. I did so.] [Pause.] Do you know any one by the name of Silas?

(Not sure.)

Put it down will you.

[The name Silas means nothing to me and inquiry of Mrs. Chenoweth afterward shows it has no meaning to her.]

---

atory near by, and Mr. Wright's office was in the brick building. It was other references and associations later that connected the vine covered building with another institution.

415. "Calculus" is probably a term to indicate the mathematical interest of Mr. Wright's mind in his statistical work.

Inquiry of Mr. Hall to ascertain whether he had recently had any sittings with Mrs. C. results in statement that he had not had any and has not been experimenting for some time. He knows no evidence either of the development indicated or of the presence of Doctor. There are certain very definite opportunities for Mrs. C. to obtain casual knowledge of what Mr. Hall has been doing in the way of experiments. No significance can be attached here to what is said in reference to him.

I inquired of Mrs. Chenoweth whether she knew a Dr. Bull and she replied in the negative. She said she knew of Ole Bull and Mrs. Ole Bull. Tho I knew who and what he was I pretended not to know and asked if he were a Doctor and Mrs. Chenoweth replied that he was not but was a musician. She said she never knew or heard of any other person by the name of Bull. It is probable, therefore, that what came yesterday has some claims to being supernormal. In so far as it can be treated as cross reference it is undoubtedly that; for this Dr. William T. Bull has constantly been connected with the work of a friend of mine and two or three others.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 8th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Do you know any one by the name of Julian?

(No, not quite that.) [Thinking of a name that came recently to a sitter in this case.]

I don't know any one by that name. I think it is a man's name, Julian. [Dry cough. Pause, and then French sounds made for a sentence or two.] [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I am going up to see the Indians. I want to see if my Indians know them. They have some real Indians coming to the Arena. They have a Comanche. I want to see what my Starlight does. You don't know what the Arena is.

(No.)

Where Teddy spoke when here. Where they have ice carnivals and things like them. It is on Huntington Avenue. You know Huntington Avenue.

(Yes.) [Note 416.]

[Pause.] It is always so peaceful when we come to the spirit.

(Yes.)

All the little things fade away and only the essential and beautiful expressions in life seem real. [Pause.] Who are all the people.

(You find out.)

There is such a lot of them. I wish they would keep back. They hurt me when they think about me so much. [Pause.] I see Mr. Myers.

(Does he remember anything he recently did?)

Do you suppose I could ask him?

(Yes.)

He is talking with some one now. I can wait a minute.

(Yes.)

I don't see who he is talking with. Just a minute. [Pause.] He walks right up to the one having charge and says: 'Did Hyslop speak'? Isn't it funny?

(Yes.)

Eh heh. Wait a minute. [Pause.] Immediately he .... Don't speak. See if I hear what he says. [Pause.] I see him ... He sent a message ... like sending it in another place. Sent ... I see a word like *come* then like *look* as tho either... I don't know as I can get the exact words. It seems to mean: 'Look out for me. I have come', or 'I am coming'. No that is not it yet. I have seen ... [Pause.] Oh was it a general message like 'everything is working all right'?

(No, it was a name.)

I don't get that. It wasn't George was it?

(No.)

Funny isn't it.

(Yes.)

---

416. Mrs. C. was expecting to go to a Wild West Show, or something of the kind. Starlight claims to be a Comanche Indian. All this is illustration and proof of subliminal influences.

Do you know a B. in connection with it?

(No.)

I can't get it Doctor.

(Let it go.)

I have to. If it don't come spontaneously I get mixed things.

(Yes.)

My thought gets working. But I know he is talking to George. Goodbye. I am going. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [Scrawl, pause and pencil suddenly thrown down.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop. We are here and are somewhat eager to have our last communicator finish furnish a little more evidence as to his identity. It was an experiment [not read.] yesterday ... an experiment ... and we were glad to have him try for there is so much which he can do if he wishes in the way of evidence and it will help to reinforce your position which you have taken among his people. Do you understand my meaning.

(Yes perfectly.)

If those people wit... [erased.] with [read 'walk'] questioningly.] their ... with with ... ideas could so mismanage [read 'rearrange' and then 'remanage'.] mis... [read.] affairs we ought to put up something in defence beside argument and don't you see if we can get some good and specific evidence it will be a bomb in the camp ... bomb [delayed reading first time and read 'bone'.]

It has all been thought out over here and we wanted to surprise you and help you at the same time and so the unexpected guest was allowed to proceed in his own way.

W. J. is much interested in the plan and it may not all come out today but from time to time the evidence will be given as is possible. This much of the situation we want to give you. want [read 'tried' first time.] that you may not feel we are playing fast and loose with your resources.

(Good. I wish he would come to the other light next week.)

We will take him there and see if some good cross references cannot be obtained. Myers is in his element. Just what he likes

to have: a good stiff debate on between two scientific people and the spirits interested and working. The two scientific people are really the two great wings in the wo... world. The materialistic and the spiritualistic. both [not read.] words ... both ... used in the large sense. You know I am sure what I mean.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 417.]

I am G. P. as you may have guessed and I am going to see what C. W. has to give today.

[I had supposed it was Hodgson from the writing at the outset, tho I observed that it was more rapid and steady than usual with him.]

He is most [read 'more'.] m ... most modest in his opinions but as firm as a rock in [sheet changed.] in convictions [not read.] convictions.

When I hurry and write the word the second time it is only to save time for time is our asset.

(Yes.)

C. W. places both hands on the table and says that he thought all the physical phenomena was easily explained by magnetic [magnetic] vibratory influence or simple fraud, but he has reversed that opinion. The subtle influence of spirit was not plain to him except [except] as a factor in life. The communication with the dead was unsatisfactory in most instances but he was not a pschoopist [psychologist] and so did not fully comprehend what was being done. [Note 418.]

(Good, was one of his colleagues a psychologist?)

Yes he says yes and tried to interest him but he always failed for time to take the matter up. Whatever else C. W. was he was not superficial as some of those around him were but he was sceptical and doubting while [?] yet eager to know if the time came when he found himself abler to do more in the investigation.

He and James. W. J. I mean.

(Yes.)

often bantered each other about the [so read.] this matter and the full seriousness of it did not come over W [erased.] C. W.

417. No evidence of Mr. Wright came at the other place the next week.

418. As a young man Mr. Wright had witnessed physical phenomena, but attached no value to them. This was not known to me or to Mrs. C.

until death took him to this world. Then he desired to make himself known and felt. [Note 419.]

Do you know a Charles who was near and closely related to him in his work.

(No, but I shall be glad to inquire.)

I see him take a small paper from his vest pocket with a powder [delay in reading.] in... yes powder in it and take it in his mouth. It was for [read 'on'] a ... for... difficulty which he had with his stomach, I believe. It seems a simple remedy which he had prepared and took at intervals for a while before his death.

(Good, I understand.)

I see also a great pile [read 'pelt'] pile of papers, some printed [not read.] printed, some compiled for printing and all in a stack on a table, a matter in which he was engaged [read 'engulphed'] engaged at the time of his last illness. It looks like referendum [referendum] yes [to correct reading.] some work which was left him to do as a sort of referee. Do you know anything about that.

(No, but explain a little more about what the referendum means.)

There are a large number of cases cited [not read] cited and instances named and figures and estimates given and it is all before him for a final summing up.

(Yes, what is the meaning of the term referendum in the case?)

It is hard for me to tell, for I am trying to translate [not read] translate his pictures as he gives them and cannot talk to him while I am writing. [Note 420.]

Do you know anything about agriculture in connection with him.

(No, but I can find out.)

---

419. As facts show Mr. Wright and Professor James were not acquainted when living. The bantering talked about must have been limited to the "other side" where it cannot be verified.

420. He was engaged on the "Century Book of Facts" and finished it a short time before his death. This was not known by either myself or Mrs. C. It was finished in January, 1909, and he died in February of the same year.

There is a new building planned and talked of before his death and the agricultural interests were connected with it. He was not especially an agriculturalist, you understand. (Yes.) but he had some large and varied interests [not read] outside ... interests outside his particular chair and this was one of them. He [read 'his'] He was as interested in the product of the soil as of the mind and in his statiutis [evidently intended for statistics and delay in reading it.] statiactics [statistics, but read as spelled.] Did I misspell it.

(Yes.) [Note 421.]

All right. I know it. static [erased.] statistics stastitics. Give it up. did you ever see such a fool. Well in his S—— there was much to do with the soil agriculture and the like, manufacture &c [not read.] ... like... [not read first time.] agriculture and the like, [comma inserted to signify that I had wrongly connected 'like' with 'manufacture'] manufacture &c [not read.] &c. [Note 422.]

I would like to give some personal detail. wait [not read] and I will. wait an... [previous words read.] Here is a lady with him, an old lady with white hair parted in the middle and a black and white dress on. She is far [read 'far' and hand pointed till read 'for'.] fair, with blue eyes and soft old skin much wrinkled [wrinkled]. He calls her Aunt A—— and seems much devoted to her. He is often with his own people and at times desires to express to those left some of the interesting things he has seen here. Did you ever meet him.

(No.) [Note 423.]

421. I ascertained from the family that he was a member of the Board of Trustees of the Agricultural College at Amherst, Mass. His interest in the soil seems to have been exaggerated here.

422. I must call the reader's attention to the language which the control uses about his being a fool. This is an exclamation much more characteristic of Mrs. C. than of the person purporting to communicate. I have known the subliminal to use similar language, and the instance again shows how the subconscious may influence messages.

423. The lady referred to here is not identifiable as described. But allowing for confusion of two persons the facts are intelligible. There was a great aunt of Mrs. Wright's of whom Mr. Wright was very fond and who answers the description, but her name did not begin with A.

He knew [read 'know'] of ... He knew of you and your work and intended to sometime know more of this.

Who or what is Adams.

(Good, go ahead.)

Do you know to what he refers.

(Yes, and I would be glad to have him tell more about Adams.)

Yes and he wants to do so. I feel as if I am not a very good amanuensis this morning, but I am trying hard. Adams is left here in the body. Do you know that.

(The Adams I thought of is on your side, but I shall inquire about the Adams he has in mind.)

That is right. Then I hear a name Mabel. It is connected with him and is alive also. [Pause.] [Note 424.]

There was a journey which he took to New York a little while before he died and he was so weary after it that it seemed hard for him to settle to work again. He did not go there often but sometimes. That is to let you know that he was not a New Yorker by habit as R. H. was. He as frequently came to B—.

(I understand.)

He had more interest in Harvard than Columbia. Does that mean anything to you.

(No, but I shall find out about it.)

Yale is different somehow. While it was near him it was foreign also. I cannot explain it.

(All right.) [Note 425.]

---

She died a very old woman in 1893. This aunt had blue eyes and white hair parted in the middle. But an aunt A. is not recognizable.

424. I ascertained by inquiry of the family that he had a friend by the name of Adams who was a Professor of Political Economy. He is still living and is not the Adams I had in mind. The answer to my inquiry "That is right" suggests that he may have known the Adams I had in mind, which is entirely possible, as he was Professor at Johns Hopkins University while Mr. Wright was in Washington. The name Mabel is not recognized by Mrs. Wright.

425. He did take a trip to New York a short time before his last illness. He met with the Hackley Trustees there at times, but was not a New Yorker by habit. He went to Boston more frequently. This was the natural result of proximity and might be inferred. But the facts were not known by me or by the psychic. He did not have much interest in Harvard and no reason exists to explain the reference to that place and Yale in this manner.

He has a pair [read 'hair' and hand pointed till correctly read.] of eye glasses, not spectacles, in his hand and apparently uses them when reading. He was too young to die [not read.] die. That is true.

(Yes.) [Note 426.]

He should have had ten or fifteen years of good labor before him but he wore himself out. The energy that he put into the university was such as a man puts [read 'has'] into ... puts ... the work his soul loves.

(I understand.)

It was his dream to make it second to none in its class. Do you know about that.

(No, but will make proper inquiries.)

If you get as truthful [read 'faithful'] truthful and clear an answer as his seekers after knowledge... seekers [not read first time.] ... of these things can give or rather have given about other things you won't know much more than you do now.

(Good. It is better that I do not know the facts.)

Indeed we all do and we are much concerned to have this done well [not read.] well... [Pause.] Just a minute. [Pause.]

In a book of clippings like a scrap book there are many references to his early work. The book seems to be in the possession of the family and to have been started by him long ago, and in it is a picture, a newspaper cut of himself as a young man. It looks so boyish and yet it is like him now. His books were not too carefully arranged but were [read 'seem'] were arranged to suit him and I see a room long and rather narrow with a large table near a window and another near the middle of the room where he worked much... worked much ['worked' read 'looked' first time.] ... It was in his home not in the buildings. You will know what I mean.

(Exactly.) [Note 427.]

The room is connected with another and in the second one I

---

426. My information is that he had no spectacles and so could not have used them. He was 68 years old when he died.

427. It is not accurate to say that he kept a scrap-book, but he did collect clippings to some extent, according to my information. There is no recollection of the picture mentioned. The account of his library is true enough but not definite enough to make excellent evidence.

see more attempt at decoration and ornament. The first was quite plain and simple and there he had things at hand. I see a glass of water there as if he frequently kept one near him as he worked.

He had a great sense of humor and when he was released [read 'reclassified' questioningly.] released from his work was like a boy out of school [delay in reading.] school and entered into the home life with the enthusiasm of youth and with the true spirit of comradeship.

He particularly liked music when it is good he says. He is growing a bit accustomed to this way of communicating.

(Yes, and I am sure it will be good.) [Note 428.]

Yes I feel he will make good headway. He had a way of walking to get rested and was naturally so active that the sedentary life was hard for him and the exercise out of doors was necessary.

There is some one by the name of S—. I do not get the rest but I should think it is Sarah who was connected with him. The home life... home [not read first time.] ... and the heart interests are not lost in the effort to make plain the evidence of identity.

(I understand.) [Note 429.]

Is it late. I seem to be losing power. [handwriting shows this.]

(No, you have done steady work and perhaps you had best not do much more. I would like before we go to say a word, but finish your message first.)

We are all interested to have and to give help to C. W. and will continue next week.

(I wish you would bring that Carrie to the other light next week if you can.)

Carrie and also C. W., yes and possibly W. T. B.

(Who is W. T. B.?)

---

428. He had two rooms for his office at the college. They are not adequately described in the text. Inquiry shows also that he kept a glass on his table frequently for taking lithia water. He did have a characteristic spirit of comradeship. He was also fond of music. None of these facts were known to either myself or Mrs. C. He had a library at home.

429. Sarah was the name of his father's second wife. She is not living.

T. B. the Dr. are you so unmindful of the care bestowed upon you by the famous surgeon.

(Oh yes. That is right.)

I laugh [read 'linger'] with my pencil ... laugh ... Good-bye for now and greetings from all.

(My greetings to all on your side.)

Thank you. G. P.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Sigh.] Do you go a long way off? Are you in a hurry.

(Not especially.)

You have to go home.

(Yes, but not just now.)

[Pause.] Who is Carrie? Somebody you are anxious about?

(Yes, find out if you can.)

[Pause.] Has she just gone over to the spirit?

(I don't know.)

You don't know?

(No.)

What do you want to hear for?

(I want to find out.)

Funny man. Do you know a curly haired dark eyed boy, wearing white stocking toboggan cap with tassel on the end.

(No I don't know him.)

I see a little boy about five years of age with dark curly hair, dark eyes, toboggan cap and pretty as a picture. He is Willie. That is his name. He is standing by you. He came with somebody. Did you see Mr. Hall?

(Yes.) [Note 430.]

I thought so. You had quite a talk with him.

(Yes.)

He is coming here. Do you know?

(No.)

You would tell me the truth if you knew. Goodbye. You

---

430. Carrie is the name of Mrs. Wright, the living wife of Mr. Carroll D. Wright. There is apparently some reference to the Carrie mentioned before and whom I did not connect with Mrs. Wright, especially that she was referred to as dead, while Mrs. Wright is living. The boy described and named is not recognized.

must have a stenographer. You are going to have some money by and by. It will rattle a few dry bones.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 13th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Do you know any one named Edith?

(Yes.)

Where do you suppose it came from?

(I know.) [It suggested a certain person and I wanted to see what would follow.]

It looked to me as if it came right out of that chair. [pointing to one in front of her and the window.]

[Pause.] Did you ask me something about Clark University the last time you were here?

(Yes.)

It is funny, but I keep getting it over and over again just now. It is repeated incessantly as if trying to remember it. [Pause.] Shall I tell you everything?

(Yes.)

I hear Rolfe. [Pause.] Going. [Note 431.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Groan.] Who isn't back.

("Back"?)

Yes [pause.] Isenberg. Oh such a muddle.

(Get it clear if you can.)

Isenbach. It is German. [Pause.] It is a spirit. [pause.] [Note 432.]

---

431. I recall a friend of my wife's by the name of Edith, but there is no context here to indicate that she is meant. The reference to Clark University made me think it possible that the name might be related to Mr. Wright or his family. But neither this name nor the name Rolfe have any meaning to the family.

432. There is no clear intimation of what the Isenbach means. The Edith mentioned above recalled an old friend of my wife by that name, but there is no evidence that she was meant. If I could be sure that it was so intended I could refer the German to my wife as probable, as she was very familiar with it. If the reference has that source I would suspect that the name is a mistake for Eisenach which she knew and which she had visited.

[*Automatic Writing.*]

R U ready [first read 'really' then corrected.] R. U. [read 'W' then 'A'.] U ready. Do U know where the writing was [French.] like that.

(Yes.) [Cf. p. 459.]

I thought so and we have been trying to do that at the other light, but not yet are we able to do all that we plan [read 'learn' questioningly.] plan. still we think the cross reference will be established with more than occasional allusions. it is only a matter of practice and continuous effort. This is a combination of influences now but it is a trial to see what a combined force will do. The writing may be smooth and easy but the evidence may suffer. We do not know but the power is great and perhaps like the momentum of an engine when once established the other may drop out [read 'once' and 'over'] out and one be left to do the work with the added celerity. [Note 433.]

It is now so hard to get started that we are weary [read 'way' and hand pointed till read 'away'] weary before we get to the evidential message. Now all the work which is being done in the world to-day is a more or less personal matter and the mighty questions which confront the thinkers are left untouched in the haste to get the personal equation.

I wish we could once get the truth of the possibility of things we know so firmly established that we might be free to express all that we need to: for the upliftment [not read.] upliftment of the human race. It is not the purpose of any group of intelligent people on this side of life to spend energy and time in recalling small matters of identity unless though [through] that methods [method] the attention of the student body [read 'only'] body of the world be drawn to the truth of God's love made manifest among men. The whole purpose of the work is to save the world from its woe by letting [letting] the light of truth shine on its face. It is so dreadful and uncertain a state in which men dwell as if they built their cottages on the slopes of Vesuvius and saw death in every cloud of smoke. We desire to have them build

---

433. This form of abbreviation is often used through Mrs. Smead and there have been a few traces of it through another case in New York with which I had been experimenting. The facts were not known by Mrs. C.

intelligently and live where no cloud of death cuts away the clear [attempt to erase several words] obscures the clear view of heaven.

It is absurd that men in the universities and pulpits [not read at once] churches do not see what the trivial twaddle as they call it is the sign of. It does not hurt or hinder us but it shows the temper of the age and so we are forced to use the selfishness of desire as a ladder to the sky. Do you understand.

(Yes I do perfectly. I am glad to have that said.)

Once in a while it is good to send a message of our own to one who will understand. It may help you sometimes when the burden is heavy to know that we are working in the same fashion and manner that you are except that we have added to our group men who ally themselves to the cause of Truth without a thought of recognition.

The materialistic temper of the word [world: so read.] and the atmosphere make demands on the best of you. Even Christ could not walk [read 'talk'] walk through Boston in January snowstorms without shoes or coat. The air of Jerusalem made some things possible and the air of spiritland relieves of responsibilities [written 'responsibilities'] which some of our earthly brothers [brothers and so read.] must bear.

We strive to be patient and wait the ... ['wait' read 'bart' questioningly] wait the day when the soul thrsts [thirsts] for knowledge as the stomach craves for food.

("Or the hart for the water brooks".) [Quoted thus to see the reaction.]

exactly. It is all the desire. Desire is the open door always. Create desires for the noble the good the true and the world is saved. That is all of our lesson now but so often we look at you working and striving to open the eyes and hearts of men and we [read 'the'] feel... we [not read.] we feel such a unity of purpose that we desired to make you acquainted with our appreciation of the situation and of you. [Pencil fell.] [Note 434.]

---

434. The sudden interruption of the writing evidently prevented the signature of the personality writing. It may have been "Madam", one of the regular controls in the case of Mrs. C., but I doubt it, as she has no difficulty in making her personality known. I want the reader to remark how the messages of Professor James, which follow, merge in quality and style

## [Change of Control.]

I have not been writing as much as I desired because I had not the opportunity but I have been present at every sitting and have been glad to see how the work is done. I have been at the other points of work. Richard and I have each added somewhat to our already well established claim to notoriety if not fame as followers of the Piper light but we have agreed that the sum total of the knowledge of our lives [read 'lines' and hand pointed till read correctly.] past and present revealed though [so read.] through the law of spiritual converse might not be sufficient to convince a man opposed by moral instinct to the light but it would probably be ample evidence for us to hang by [read 'lay by' and hand pointed till correctly read.] yes [to correct reading.] Do you not see my point.

(I think I do, tho it is not perfectly clear.)

It was intended as a bit of sarcasm. Court [not read at once.] evidence ... Court ... is not half as convincing as spirit evidence must be.

(That depends on to whom it is presented.)

Of course of course but I took up the theme my friends had presented of the incompetence of the world as judge. There are many things in my past [not read.] past which are more definitely in my consciousness than present situations. This is always true in every state of existence [read 'evidence' and hand pointed till read 'existence'.] yes [to correct reading.] One may be talking of a specific matter and have a train of thought set in motion by a tone an odor [read 'actor' questioningly.] odor a sensation of any kind and the subconscious mind carry it along with perfect precision and accuracy while the conversation is carried on. I think I make myself plain.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 435.]

I am W. J. I neglected to say so at first.

(I recognized you.)

---

into those of the personality which yielded the pencil to him. The incident, however, is explained by G. P. the next day. Cf. p. 536.

435. The last of this passage suggests the same thought as that which Dr. Hodgson and G. P. gave as an explanation of the trivialities and mistakes in communication. If this thought was in mind the communicator did not get it stated, until a little later. Cf. pp. 278, 292, 682.

It just occurred to me but I felt that you recognized me.

(Yes, the psychology brought it up. "Thingum bob again.")

Yes, yes. I was about to say that our communications are often of that dual nature and as many [read 'may' and hand pointed till correctly read.] multiplied streams of personality as you desire to name. We frequently begin to write and a tone or a word or a thought even so sensitive are we will set another consciousness at work and the communication is colored or changed or spoiled or helped as the case may be. We hold by so slender a current that we are unable to proceed as in conversation when in the body. I was impressed with that side of the problem when C. W. was communicating and at this moment a sudden [sudden] desire to say black pepper comes a propo[s] of nothing [read 'writing'] nothing whatever only that at some time I probably used an illustration with black pepper as my picture.

(Yes I can believe that very readily.)

It makes the argument of dream talk very pointed but we all talk dream talk all our lives.

(Good.) [Note 436.]

as far as nigger [read 'Myer' and hand pointed till correctly read.] talk goes that depends upon the society we are in. I am en... [line finished.] enjoying this conversation and the dissecting of my own message as much as if I were in your place and you in mine.

(You remember that nigger talk incident.)

Yes and it is clear to me what was meant in the first second and third instance. The first was before death the second after the third in discussion and now it is here again. [Note 437.]

---

436. I saw my chance to use a phrase which Professor James had used in his *Psychology* and which has amused many a student for its humor as well as its illustrative clearness. I wanted to see the reaction. It had no appreciable effect and did not recall the specific time or place in which it had been used. But the communicator continued his theme till he got its purpose expressed which was to explain the "dream talk" which communications had seemed to some of us to be, and with it came a characteristic illustration in the reference to "black pepper". Such apparently irrelevant illustrations often characterized Professor James in his lectures and writings. Mrs. C. could not have known this.

437. The reference to "three instances" in which the "nigger talk" incident occurred is not made clear or is not accurate. The first time it was

I have no desire to have just the small talk that R. H. and I had together taken up by the men we know as being the theme of conversation after death.

(I understand, but as you know I was on the game of identity.)

Sure enough and good and I have helped you for although the account of the phrase has been picked to pieces by the press nobody [not clearly written and so not read.] nobody knows that I was interviewed on that particular matter but I was. When I say nobody I mean none outside my family. I believe that my wife knew of it for I was called by telephone after you had done something with it. Do you recall using it.

(Yes. Do you know where I used it?) [Note 438.]

[I had *Proceedings* in mind at first, but now recall that I had it in the *Journal*.]

not now. I cannot at this moment think of it. I ...

(Do you remember your Report on the Hodgson Control?)

Yes that is it. I gave it to you did I not.

(Yes.)

---

mentioned was before his death in a conversation with Dr. Hodgson. The second reference to it, not by Professor James, was by Dr. Hodgson to Mr. Myers through Mrs. Piper after the death of Mr. Myers. This also was before the death of Professor James. The third time it was mentioned was by Dr. Hodgson through Mrs. Piper after his own death. It was then a subject of verification by Professor James. The fourth time it was mentioned, and spontaneously by the psychic too, was through a private case with which I was experimenting while Professor James' Report was in press and referred to him by the communicator purporting to be Dr. Hodgson, the original facts not being known to her. Cf. *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vol. III, p. 487, and Vol. IV, pp. 621-623. This was also before the death of Professor James. The fifth time it was mentioned was by myself at these sittings and here it is mentioned the sixth time. Both the last instances are after his death. He knew about the first four instances before his death, the first one, however, only in connection with Dr. Hodgson's message referring to it. If we count that as the first in his reference and ignore the one through the lady mentioned in my Reports his order and numbering is correct, otherwise it is not.

438. Inquiry brings the information from Henry James, Jr., that "Mrs. James has no recollection of my father's being telephoned to about the nigger talk incident. I have an impression of hearing him speak to some one about it at the telephone, but I don't know when or to whom and it is so vague that I don't trust it for much."

with permission to use for your or for the Journal. am I right.  
[superposing.] am I right

(Yes, *Proceedings* rather.) [My mistake; communicator was right.]

What did I say.

(You said *Journal*.)

What a foolish lapse that was. I knew of course *Proceedings*.

(Yes it will be good to see that lapse when studying the powers of the subconscious of the light.)

[Mrs. Chenoweth saw both the *Journal* and the *Proceedings*.]  
[Note 439.]

Yes sometimes when I try to solve [superposed and not read.] solve the mysteries of the mind in its relationship with other minds without any of the abnormal physical conditions attendant on the physical phenomena of communication with the dead I am amazed.

(Yes I referred to the subliminal of the light because she has the volume itself and if the subconscious has such large powers, then it ought to have had no difficulty in recalling the facts easily. You understand.)

[Said to watch the reaction.]

I do and am glad I made the lapse but between you and me it was entirely unintentional.

(Yes.)

Perhaps some good angel named George or Richard or Mary Ann [Whirlwind] gave my subliminal a twst [twist] just then to make the message impressive.

(Yes.) [Note 440.]

---

439. The incident was referred to in Professor James' Report and it was this I had in mind until I was making the record and inserted then the explanatory note in square brackets. But Professor James had seen it in the *Journal* also which was published long before the *Proceedings* that contained his discussion of it. He did permit me to use it in the *Journal*. The incident of the talk could have been known by Mrs. C. as she had seen the copies of the *Journal* containing the incident and also Professor James' Report. But the other facts associated with it she did not and could not know.

440. This remark referring to "George or Richard or Mary Ann", and the phrase "my subliminal" has a very distinct flavor of the subliminal itself catching on the advantage of the mistake and attributing it to a foreign source. It cannot come from Professor James without supposing that he

We are far [read 'for'] far from the gloom of the grave and I used to think sometimes that it was that human element in the communications which made the religious world balk at their acceptance. If the agonized cries of souls [not read.] souls in purgatory or triumphant strains of saints in Paradise had broken through the blue the church would have found its verification and been with us. But the members of the Psychical Research were neither santily [saintly] enough to get the saints to descend or devilish enough to commune with the damned and so there was nothing left but to talk with these [so read] those whom they had known, just folks, plain folks.

(Yes.)

What an error we all made that we dd [did] not use our telepathic possibilities or our subconscious or supr normal [super-normal] minds and get what the world wanted to pay for and support.

There are disadvantages in a worldly way for the lovers of Truth and he who clings to the garments of the eternal must find his place in the sheler [not read] shelter of the robe and his strength in the clinging.

I am losing and go but the work is so important my faith is perfect in its mission and completion. W. J. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[French or Indian.] Oh! Oh! [Pause and groan.] I see something. [Pause.]

(What is it?)

[Pause.] Do you want me to tell you?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] I can't quite make out what it is. I see you with pad and paper like this and writing just like this, but not here.

(Where?)

[Pause.] In another house. [Pause.] It is a funny thing I see.

(You see what?)

I see something red like a red garment or dress. I see two

---

means to admit, or otherwise to mention humorously, a subliminal on that side.

people beside you, one a woman and one a.... both women.  
[Pause.]

Oh do you know any one named Jack.

(Make it plainer.)

What do you mean by plainer, some one alive or dead?

(Yes.)

I think that must be the name, not alive, but Jack is all I hear .. Don't it mean anything to you?

(No.)

[Pause.] You have been sitting with somebody at a table smaller than this either round or oblong with corners, not square like this. Does it mean anything to you. It seems some one is trying to get something back here. It is all mixed up. I have never been so mixed up. A lot of things came that were good. Have you been anywhere where things were mixed up and you had to sort it out.

(Yes.)

It is so mixed that it is all one's life is worth to pick it out. I think there is something there, but it is like as if undeveloped. It is awfully strong in some ways, but it all strikes false keys. I don't know what it is, but it is all mixed up. They are trying to put me in to fix the line back and forth.

Did you hear something rustle, something there with silk on. If you touch it it scratches like silk. It is awfully funny. But this room is not lighted as this one is. It is not large and has a carpet on it. As you walk in the influence is beautiful. It is nothing against it to be mixed. There is no fear but I can't find any word to express what I mean, but unused, undeveloped, unclassified is not the word. I am mixed myself and can't clear the tangle. But I see a lot of your friends enter into it with the spirit of investigation and effort. I see a big letter E.

When I come out from there I go through a street with a lot of tall buildings. I better let it go. I am mixed.

(Go ahead.)

It seems that immediately you go out you go back to see a quick return of normal conditions, no strain or effort and going down the street I see a building gray and thick stone. It seems a big building.... I can't get any more now.

(All right.)

I feel so uncertain about it. Do you know anything about a yellow brick building with gray trimming like a row either a big building with windows arched or like apartments of yellow brick and gray trimming?

[Pause.] What is this mist that comes over the sea? A fog, heavy fog? [Pause and hand placed on neck groaning for a moment just before recovering normal consciousness.]

This reference to a mixed condition and place where the messages had to be sorted out refers aptly enough to a sitting which I had with a gentleman a few evenings ago in a dark room and with a round table quite small. He does not go into a trance but does his work clairvoyantly. All the rest of it is not recognizable.

[Many months after this sitting and note I went to the house where the gentleman lived whom I had in mind here and it was a yellowish brick house with gray trimmings, and arches over the windows. I had never seen the house before in daylight.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 14th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I see a woman this morning. She is very large, I think a woman five feet ten inches in height, tall, large and very stout. Queenly looking but dressed in ordinary clothes, there is no specially marked feature in her clothing, gray hair and eye glasses, very imperious but not a haughty person. She is rather a woman who had large affairs and large interests. You know I hear a name. I am not sure it has anything to do with her. But I hear Caroline [pause.] and it sounds like D, as tho *de*. There is another [pause.] I can't get it.

(Stick to it.)

It is a French name like de Busset. If I could only see it. Such a name as de Busset. [Pause.] I think she was an American woman and married to this name.

(What was her maiden name.)

[Pause.] I don't hear it. I am trying to. It is rather odd, they don't seem to be trying to give me anything. She is in conversation with other people. It is a man she is talking to, a small little bit of a man, but an animated speaker, slender, short, bald and eagerly talking with her, and from this I feel as if she has been trying to make her identity known somewhere and sometime. She has been very persistent and importunate about it, as tho he was arguing the case out with her. [Pause.] I guess I'll go. I don't seem to get anything more with it. Or would you rather I would get it.

(No, go ahead.)

One thing more I see.

(Go ahead.)

I see her open a trunk and shake out a gown. It is wonderful. She takes out several one after another. I don't know whether she is connected with the stage, but it looks like Mr. M——— [Full name given.] who stands beyond her. [Pause.] [Note 441.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Sarcou. [Pause.] Sarcou she. They have taken her away. [Pause.] Do you know her?

(No.)

Has she been bothering you?

(No.)

[Pause.] Oh it is so peaceful. [Pause.] It is like opening a little gate into a garden where sweetest flowers grow. [Pause.] Being taken by the hand and led away and away out into the still cool morning. [Pause.]

---

441. Inquiry of Mrs. M. proves that the name has no meaning in relation to Mr. M. There was a French musician by the name of de Bussy or Bussey. I know of no relevance for it here, and Mrs. C. knows none.

[March 16th, 1912. Accidental information this year came to me indicating that the name Jack, questioned in connection with Mr. M. purporting to communicate, is quite pertinent and hence it is possible that the allusion to the name Jack in the subliminal stage of the previous day near the end of the sitting has some connection with the reference to Mr. M. in the subliminal stage of this sitting, involving some confusion with an irrelevant name, de Bussey.]

[Hand reached for pencil and it was inserted. It was held in the fist after a manner which showed an unnatural position.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

George [written in scrawly manner, and as soon as I pronounced it the fist relaxed suddenly and seized the pencil naturally.]

Your thought helped me at that moment. I knew if I could write my name it would start a current [not read.] in the right ... current... direction. It is sometimes a little difficult to start but once the movement begins we are all right.

(Good.)

I have not been in evidence for a few days but I have been active just the same. When William was writing I was attending to other conditions in the room and when Dr. Wright was communicating we all were as busy as possible.

(George, who was it that came first yesterday?)

A combination of influences. do you not understand how that could be.

(No name was given and the contents made it necessary to ask the question. I should be glad to have you describe how it is possible to have the combination.)

One person held the pencil and we all sat in a circle and directed our energy toward the pencil with a desire to have a strong and beautiful communication given [read 'green' questioningly] given to you. At the last there seemed less of the group and more of the individual [not read.] individual in the contents of the message. There were several. Sidgwick has been here at all the recent sittings and some of the more conservative English friends came [read 'come' and hand pointed till correctly read.] an... and watched proceedings and we did not wish for any of the old spirit of investigation project [not read.] project [read 'project' as a verb.] noun [then correctly read.] or experimental influence from them to have weight at this time so we combined [not read.] our ... combined our power. We feel that we are doing a separate and complete work at your center and we want no help or hindrance now. There is perfect unanimity of feeling in the matter, only they have been working so long under their own ideas and notions if I may be forgiven

for caling [calling] them such that we would allow no possible chance of their ideas creeping into the sensitive atmosphere—that word sensitive should read sensitized. We prepare very [read 'being'] carefully ... very [not read.] very ... the surroundings in the room for the work and that is what I mean by sensitized atmosphere.

There is no quarrel between anyone in the work here and any worker among any other group. but [read 'real'] you ... but you know that some of the old stanch [staunch] scientific [not read.] scientific investigators pulled away from the English Society because of some of its ruts and hardened wheelmarks of the past.

(Yes, who were they that withdrew?)

Myers and Moses each had independent [not read.] independent action and so did Sidgwick and there were two others who joined their voices in the free movement and some from this side have already given up an... [erased.] any and all effort at the headquarters. You may not know how narrow and slow and conceitedly [read 'onesidedly' at the time but not corrected.] the matters have been carried on for some years.

Talk about a one man Society like yours. It is infinitely to be preferred to the ox team methods of some of their work.

(I understand.)

You see I have no national pride. One loses ev... everything in a h... race [written together and read 'brace'] race. the handicaps of tribe and nation are lost in the spirit. Is not that good.

(Yes.) [Note 442.]

---

442. Apparently my question was not answered regarding those who withdrew from the English Society. Mr. Moses did so because he thought it went too slowly. But Mr. Myers did not and Professor Sidgwick did not. If it applies to the other side of life nothing can be said one way or the other, except that their continued effort to communicate, assuming it genuine, would rather tend to contradict the statement made here.

Mrs. C. knows nothing about the policy and publications of the English Society, so that the comments here do not depend on special knowledge of the situation. However, it can all come from the general conception which the American mind has of the English people as a whole, so that ignorance of definite knowledge about the Society will not plead against its being a subliminal product.

It is one of the drawbacks to progress in your world [read 'would'] world. War cr... ['war' read 'wars'] War creating peace disturbing and all that goes with competition [competition] and comparison—. That is all about that. D...

(Well, can you tell anything of Sidgwick's recent doings?)

Yes you mean his work at another place.

(Yes.)

Oh ys [yes] he has been working in a clear and systematic way to make a new record and the effort will be of use.

(Where was that?) [I had in mind a recent sitting in New York.]

I do not mean in England or with any old light [read 'slight'] Light but in a new condition and with fresh influences. It is remarkable how a new Light will make all effort at communication seem like kindergarten work over a... ['over' read 'our' and hand pointed till correctly read.] again.

(I understand.) [Note 443.]

The communicating spirit seems to slip away from its strength and to have to begin all over again.

Right here let me say that we are more dependent on the Lights than we are supposed to be. It is their capacity and conditions which make limitations for us in most instances and it is not always the limitations of environment or education but sometimes when I cannot now explain a sort of spiritual quality which harmonizes with the quality of the communicator a blending and when that blend does not exist [read 'rest'] exist We the workers and active participators have to lend or borrow give or take as we are able to make the mixture [read 'mature' hesitatingly.] right [read 'light'] w... yes [to correct reading of 'mixture'.] It is a mixture... right [and hand pointed to previous writing which had been read 'light', and I read it correctly.] yes [to correct reading.] Have I made it plain to you.

(Yes.)

Sidgwick has been here and also Moses and sometimes when everything is right S will write for you. He began the writing

---

443. Nothing evidential came of this New York sitting, but the allusion here to kindergarten work is relevant, as this seems to be exactly what all new efforts at new places produce.

yesterday and when he wrote U [pause till I read it.] and R and that sort of thing he was referring to a past with which he was familiar.

(Yes, do you know where that method was used?)

Often at the Piper light and at some other points which I do not now recall but the Piper I remember. It was one of Emperor's group who used to do it. [Pause.] You are not sure of that.

(No, because I have not seen the records, but I know a case where that method of abbreviation was used.)

All right. you know that all sorts of devices were [not read.] used... were ... at the Piper light to save energy.

(Yes.)

That was the one cry energy energy. You must miss it for we say so little about it now but there was need of it then. It is better understood now.

(Yes I understand.) [Note 444.]

I have not been idle either. Do you know anything about Virginia [not read, but thought first syllable was 'verg'] Virginia. Yes [to correct reading.]

(Yes.) [Note 445.]

There has been an effort there since you knew about it. It is somewhat of an effort to get the right elements together for work there. You know what I mean I think.

444. The only abbreviation in the Piper case with which I am familiar was "U. D." for "understand". The "U" for "you" and "R" for "are", as well as "U. D." were used in the Smead case and similar abbreviations were spontaneously adopted in the New York case, of which Mrs. C. knew nothing and the New York case knew nothing about their use elsewhere, but the instance that I recall in New York was later than this date.

445. Virginia is the present home of the Smead case and I had never indicated the fact publicly. Indeed only my family and one or two other persons knew the fact. I had referred to the case publicly as one in a Southern state, but that is all. How far Virginia may have been guessed any one may conjecture as he pleases. Mrs. C. did not know it personally.

[Mrs. C. states that all she knew of Mrs. Smead was that she lived in a small village to which the papers were late in coming and that she does not know where this village is. This refers also to another place than the present home of the Smeads.]

(Yes, but say a little more definitely so that I shall have your evidence.) [I was not sure whether the Smead case was meant.]

Of course I am not as dead as I might seem to be and I know the definite [not read.] w... definite word is important but what do you mean. Shall I tell you of the conditions of care [not read.] care and duty and inclination [not read.] inclination natural [not read.] and... natural and personal.

(Yes.)

which combine to make it rather difficult for any of us to make an extended visit. There was at first a curiosity on the [read 'as we' and hand pointed till first word was read 'on'.] part... the... of those in the family. I mean the husband do you know and the influence waned [not read.] waned in degree in degree as yours increased and then with the loss of influence on his part and a different standard obtaining the interest was lessened.

There is much that you do not know but can imagine. If certain orthodox conceptions could have been proven by these methods you would have had easier work than you have had.

(Yes, I understand.)

There is a definite and beautiful power but it is often submerged by the dominating influence of another human will. You know that.

(Yes I do.) [Note 446.]

Then there has lately come into the circle of influence a desire for material things on the part of the light herself, a not unholy nor unwholesome desire but perfectly human and right but in the unsatisfied state it produces friction [read 'fruition'] friction. Do you know what I mean.

(I have not heard of it, but I shall endeavor to ascertain.)

How can you ask a woman if she has all the bonnets she wants. It is a personal matter and could be set aside but there

446. This account of the case is accurate enough and nothing could possibly be known to Mrs. C. regarding it. Indeed, the facts are not known to any one but myself and the Smeads and were not expressed to me. This reference to orthodoxy and what communications confirming it would have done is remarkably accurate and no one who did not know Mr. Smead personally would possibly learn the facts.

is an element of unrest I cannot well explain without exaggerating [not read.] exagger.... [suddenly read.] it apparently.

(All right.) [Note 447.]

but it all has a bearing on the desire to carry out the work. Still the generous work of the past is not forgotten by one of us. you know again what I mean. Who is the woman they call mother.

(Explain.)

There is an older woman I hear addressed as mother. Do you know anything about her

(I think I have heard of her, but do not know whether living or dead.)

alive alive I mean. There is a little girl that I see often in the the surroundings. who is she do you know.

(Living or dead?)

dead [pause.] to your world, alive to us.

(I am not sure. What relation to the light?)

It is more like a little sister and a father is there too.

(I think I understand.) [Note 448.]

There has always been a strong bond [read 'band'.] bond between all the members of that family and they often make effort to protect against us for fear we will do some harm but we only make the life more complete.

(Yes I understand.)

if they only knew it.

\* \* \* \* \*

[Some personal matter omitted.]

(I understand.) [Note 449.]

---

447. It is not possible to verify the statements made in these allusions to personal matters. Knowing the circumstances I know they are very possible and would not be known outside the family.

448. Mrs. Smead's little sister died several years ago and her mother soon after the sittings in connection with the Thompson case in New York which were held in December, 1908. Mrs. C. could not possibly know of these facts.

449. The statements made here are too personal to publish, but they are remarkably accurate and could not be known by any one who did not know Mr. Smead personally.

That is plain to you is it not.

(Yes.)

Now do you remember any one coming there with your wife at any time.

(I do not *now* recall it.)

Did Eliza [superposed.] Did Eliza go there. That is what I am told. That your wife and Eliza and your father were all there at one time.

(My wife and father have been there and if you tell the relation of the Eliza to me I shall know.)

It is aunt I believe. There is a title [read 'little' and then 'letter'.] title before the name and it sounds like Aunt—

(All right. I have an aunt, but Eliza is not exactly the name of the aunt on your side.)

Wait a minute. Is the Aunt named Elizabeth and the Eliza is an older woman. Do you know Eliza.

(Yes.)

Is she not a grandparent.

(No.)

I cannot catch the connection but I see a very old lady with wrinkled face and small of stature and little cap on her head and she is apparently a grandmother

(That is right.)

and with her starts this Eliza. She may be a cousin but I am not confident enough to name her as such but the grandmother has such a remarkable tenacity [read 'faculty'] tenacity of life and opens her eyes as wide [read 'with'] wide and bright as if but twenty years old. Her interest in everything is remarkable and she comes to day [read 'stay'.] day with a sense of the proceedings that some younger [both words not read.] some younger friends do not have.

It is a pretty family group and they have all been much interested in Mrs. C— am I right.

(Yes.) [Note 450.]

---

450. My wife has communicated through Mrs. Smead. So has my sister by the name of Eliza. I have an Aunt Eliza, mentioned in the first Piper Report and still living. I have no Aunt Elizabeth. The grandmother, here correctly described, is interestingly associated with this Eliza, as my sister helped care for her on her death-bed and was the night watch at the hour of

It is [superposed.] so easy to be wrong that I like to be assured when I am right. I do not mean this light. You mistake me.

(I understand.) [I was *not* thinking of this psychic, but simply of the meaning of the message.]

\* \* \* \* \*

[Personal matter omitted.]

(Exactly.) [Note 451.]

all this may be as [?] some use to you. Perhaps as much as a dis[s]ertation on philosophy.

(Yes more.)

What ... [superposed.] What about geese. Do you know anything about geese.

(Yes, who says that?)

It is one of your family. It is the old lady I think. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

Did she keep geese.

(Yes.)

Do you remember about them.

(I do not but some one else does.) [I should have said I remembered *about* them, but did not remember them personally.]

I... [superposing.] I see a picture of her and the geese and it is most interesting to see them flock around her and she speaks of her fine feather beds and pillows. She gave a bed to some one as a wedding present.

(Good.)

Do you know about that.

(No, but I can find out.) [Note 452.]

---

her death. This Eliza was my sister and it was in the home of her daughter Eliza that my grandmother's death occurred. We may well understand the confusion. Mrs. C. knew none of the facts. If she had she might have gotten them without confusion.

"C" is the correct initial of Mrs. Smead's real name. It was not possible to know this in any ordinary way, as I have never given a public hint of the real name.

451. Again I must omit personal matter that is remarkably accurate and not obtainable by normal means except through myself, and I have rarely even mentioned the pseudonym, not more than two or three times.

452. My grandmother kept geese and made feather beds and pillows

Do you [superposing.] know anything about a key with a string and stick of . . . or piece [not read.] of wood at [read 'it'] . . . piece . . . at the end of it. I see your father with one in his hand and it seems to be a key to an out building like a corn shed or something like that.

(All right, I shall inquire.)

It hung inside the house I think in the kitchen and was taken out when grain was needed. Now I think of it it may be in connection with the geese of the grandmother.

(All right. What further about the geese and grandfather?)

[Note 453.]

[I here thought of an important incident in my grandfather's life connected with these geese and which my father happened to tell me once before he died. The sequel shows that no approach to my thought was made.]

I will see what I can get. Do you know anything about a gun. Yes [to correct reading which had been delayed.]

(Whose gun?)

Grandfather's.

(No, go ahead.)

I see a gun, a big old fashioned musket and heavy enough [not read.] enough to weigh [not read.] a . . . weigh [read 'eight'.] weigh . . . man down but it is not used for war but for hunting or protection or that sort of thing probably crows or foxes [not read.] foxes. any way I see the man and the gun and the heavy boots and the low ceiled [read 'artist' knowing it

---

from them. No one living could verify this statement about giving a feather bed as a wedding present. The only person that might be expected to remember it is this Aunt Eliza, the only surviving member of her family, and she does not recall it, but thinks it quite probable. If it occurred it must have been about 1850 or 1851: for it must have been about that time that her raising of geese had to be abandoned. This Aunt Eliza was very young at that time. These geese were mentioned by my father through Mrs. Smead.

453. The incident of the key is not verifiable, but it is a very probable one. The whole conception is natural for the life of that time.

It was probably the old kitchen in which these things were and where the cobbler's bench was. If so it may or may not have been "low ceiled". That I do not remember. But it is more than probable as it had two stories which were not high.

was incorrect, but to show the apparent word.] ceiled room and a sort of bench or case where are small knives [not read.] knives [hesitation in reading.] cut ... [read.] and pieces of leather. It looks like a cobbler's bench where the children's shoes were mended.

(Good.)

and there are so many articles around it but it is near it that I see the gun standing in a corner.

I wish I could write all I see but I am losing my strength now. Would you like this group to return tomorrow.

(Yes, if they can, I would like it very much.) [Note 454.]

I think they can for they have the understanding and desire and will probably give good evidence which is always acceptable.

(Yes.)

This has not been bad any way.

(No, it has been good, especially when I know the facts and I doubt not I shall learn the truth of what I do not know.)

Thank you. What about Dr. Bul [Bull]. [not read.] Dr. Bull. Were you pleased. [delay in reading.] Were you pleased.

(Yes I was.)

We thought it would please you. [Pause.] G. P.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause.] Do you like soda biscuit.

(Yes.)

Did you use to have them at home?

---

454. I never saw my grandfather. He died many years before I was born, and hence I could not furnish personal confirmation of the incident about the gun. The last surviving daughter, my Aunt Eliza, states that he had no such gun. My father had a gun. It was not a musket, but a large and heavy old-fashioned rifle. It was heavy enough to "weigh a man down." It was used for both hunting and protection, but not for foxes as there were none at that time in this locality. It might have occasionally been used for crows, but I do not recall that use. The allusion to "heavy boots" might imply high topped boots. If so it is not accurate. My father wore boots, which to-day would be called "heavy". He never wore shoes till his old days. My grandfather, I learn from my aunt, did not mend his footwear. My father did much of his boot and shoe mending. The gun may have stood in the corner of the old house, but in the new one, built in 1860 or 1861, it stood in the corner of a closet which was in the corner of the room.

(Yes.)

I mean your mother.

(Yes.)

She told me to say that to you.

(That is good.)

[Pause.] I don't know what they are but she does. [Pause.] She shows me a great big flat black pan filled with them, kind of brown on top you know.

(Yes.)

They were yellow themselves and were made of homegrown wheat.

(Yes.)

They look about as dark as Graham but not quite.

(Yes.)

It is time for soda biscuit and maple syrup.

(Yes, that's good.) [Note 455.]

[Pause.] Dear me! [Reached for my hand and I took hers.] [Pause.] Dr. Hyslop who was 87 in your family?

(You tell.)

Was it father?

(No.)

It is a man and a coffin plate marked 87 years. Don't you know who it is? Goodbye. [Pause.] I see so many things. [Note 456.]

[Suddenly awakened and I remarked what she had just said the moment before she opened her eyes. She replied that she saw something as she came out. I asked what and her reply was a brick house. My father's house and the house of my grandparents were brick.]

---

455. "Soda biscuit" is a very accurate term for my mother's baking in those early times. We children were very fond of them with maple syrup and they were as often browned as they were rich yellow, and they were baked in just such a large black pan as is mentioned. It is interesting, too, to know that at that time we used home grown wheat altogether, taking it to mill and returning with the flour. Mrs C. could not possibly know of these things. Guessing is all you can say of the incidents.

456. It is not possible to determine to whom the 87 applies. Neither of the grandfathers was that age at death. My father's mother was in her 87th year when she died.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 15th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

[Cough.] I'm awake [evidently noticing that I took a note of the cough.] [Pause.] I keep hearing a funny little name like Lettie. I should think it was Letitia. [Pause.] as if it were a little family name, Lettie. [Pause.] [Groan, sigh, French and another slight groan, and reached for pencil.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

G. P. and the friends of yesterday.

(Greetings to all.)

who hope to continue a most interesting visit.

(Yes, I hope it will be as good as before.)

We have talked much since we saw you yesterday and the spontaneity of the work was one of its charms but it had long been planned and was only yesterday talked of as a possibility and when the result [read 'usual'] the result came it brought joy to your father's heart. He is as interested in this work as he ever was in politics and the interest of his native town [read 'born' and hand pointed till correctly read.] yes [to correct reading.] I do not mean native as Scotch but American home where he made his fortunes and kept his life work. He is the most active and sure of the good work you are doing.

(I believe it.) [Note 457.]

of any of your group of family friends unless it be your wife.

(I understand.)

and she is taking an interest of a different sort. She loves to get at the ethical side of the matter and finds her love and interest in the welfare of her bairnes.

(Good.)

---

457. My father was deeply interested in politics, so that this is a characteristic reference. I said enough in my first Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 494) about his interest in the gold campaign and the civil war for any one to infer his interest in politics, but Mrs. C has not seen that Report and it is not likely that this interest has been the subject of public comment or casual conversation. He was interested in all the affairs of his county and township. They would not call it "town" there, as he did not live in the town. When he put his hand to it he was a good organizer as was said just below the message on which I am commenting.

It is sweet to see her with them at times but your father is a manager [not read.] manager, an organizer. You know his capacity and it was increased [read 'interest' doubtfully.] increased since his death. That would sound strange to some of our Presbyterian brothers but we speak of death in the n... same [read 'name' doubtfully.] same way that we would speak of marriage or any other earthly institution as....

(Yes, it is a name for a fact which may be conceived as change.)

exactly that. Why do you not say superposed [I had had to pull the hand down several times, as it was superposing, and did so here, at the word 'as'.] That was Richard's word and he always had superposing on the end of his tongue. Do you know that.

(Yes I do, and I always avoid saying it too much because I have to make notes in long hand.)

Great Scott and I was giving you credit for a fine sense and thanking [read 'thinking'] you ... thanking you for being so judicious [not read.] judicious [not read as 'j' was so much like 'p'.] j. [read 'p'] J [word then read.] Hyslop you have deceived me and you had a base selfish motive at the bottom of that little gentle touch on the hand, but I forgive you and proceed.

(All right. George.) [Note 458.]

Do you [superposing.]

(Superposing.) [More careful writing after this for most of the time.]

Do you know anything about a sled yes [to correct reading which was delayed by uncertainty of word.] a sled for boys to slid[e] on.

(Yes, go on.)

I see a sled and a slight elevation and snow and crust and hear some one say Isn't it fine to slid[e] on the crust and then I see what I take to be you and your brother sling [intended for 'sliding'] sliding [read 'studying' tho knowing it wrong.] slid...

---

458. "Superposing" was a word that Dr. Hodgson always had on the end of his tongue in the Piper case and Mrs. C. knew nothing of the phenomenon or his habit, unless it was inferred from allusions to it at the sittings several years before. I know it was mentioned, but do not recall the exact language.

[word read.] yes [to correct reading.] It is a barren sort of place to look at, a real country view but I see the sled used for another purpose: for all at once I see a picture of new wood piled in a clearing and new chips and smell [read 'small' and hand pointed till correctly read.] the odor of new wood which is in the air [not read.] air. Then I see wood put on that sled and hauled by hand toward a house. There are large loads [not read.] loads [not read tho in fact clearly written.] loads to go by team [written and read hesitatingly 'tream'.] team [pause to read.] horse loads or oxen [read 'team'] oxen. I do not see which but this is a sled load for the house. Do you know about this.

(Yes I do indeed.)

It is a picture of work for boys and the fun [not read.] was in... fun ... was in the return after another load.

(I understand.)

That was long ago but it is real and a part of the life as much as the college or the life of today.

(Yes.) [Note 459.]

I see a long grey scarf or muffler affair made of yarn and wound [read 'warmed'] wound [not read tho clearly enough written.] woun... [read.] around the head and shoulders and neck sometimes. Do you know that.

(Yes I do.) [Note 460.]

Also do you know anything about an old army cloak or cape of blue.

(Whose?)

I see it in your father's hand now.

(Yes.)

---

459. Two incidents are closely associated here. We boys did occasionally haul small amounts of wood on a sled by hand, but the fun of this was soon over and appeared no more fun. But we also hauled winter wood with horses and the fun was in returning. We had all sorts of gay times at that. Neither of these facts could be known. We may suppose them to have been guessed, but one would have to know farm life well to guess a part of the incidents.

460. My father and we boys wore just such a scarf as is described. They were knit for us and were of gray yarn, with colored stripes at the ends to give them adornment. They were used when hauling wood and doing other work out of doors in the winter.

It is faded but it was worn after the war on special occasions and was for a long time up in a garet [garret] or top of the house

(Which war?)

What did you say.

(Which war?)

I do not know [words superposed.] I do not know yt [yet] but it looks like a civil war garment but it may be still [read 'the'] older... still older than that. It is blue. It has brass buttons and there is a bit of red on it I think.

(What became of those buttons?)

[Pause.] They [pause.] strange your father seems to be thinking about that.

(All right.)

When he ... [superposing.] When he answers [not read at first.] at once ... answers at once I know that he remembers but when he stops to think I know he is in doubt.

(All right some one else may know. Let it go at present.)

I think that the best way. so far it is all right.

(Yes.) [Note 461.]

I see now an old fashioned press. It looks like a cheese press. I would not know its use except [except] that I see a cheese on it. It is in a room by itself, a sort of open shed or chamber. I cannot tell which it is but I see beams and [not read.] bo... and boards and unfinished conditions and this press and the

461. I remember nothing about this coat. I merely know that father had one: for the buttons on it were used for our own coats when we were small boys. He was not in the Civil War, but an officer in the militia about 1845, and this coat was a relic of that. It was blue and had brass buttons. As said, I remember the buttons, but not the coat and I get its color from the testimony of others and what I know about the color of military clothes at that time. My aunt, the Eliza mentioned above, writes: "I remember thinking your father's military coat the handsomest object I ever saw. It was kept sacred in the big chest in which father brought his 'belongings' from Scotland. I remember I used to stealthily *steal* glances at it, handling strictly forbidden. The attraction to me was the epaulettes and gold bands, but no *red* to my recollection. I have often wondered what became of that suit and the chest but I know not."

It is quite probable that the coat had some red on it, as military clothes of that time often did have red as an official distinction. This chest was kept in a garret for a long time.

cheese, but it is light in that room and a small window looks out into a field or on trees. I can see grass and green leaves.

(What kind of trees?)

It is a small tree more like fruit. I do not know but it seems like apple.

(That's right.)

I was about to say, Did you raise apples there when you asked for the kind of trees.

(Could.....) [Note 462.]

I see a woman with a plaid skirt and a white neck scarf crossed like a handkerchief and something on her head like a cloth. She is very very dark and strong and heavy in her step and not especially old but a middle aged woman. She is working about the place. She has [not read.] has strong arms and hands but not in any degree fat, more micular [muscular, and not read.] muscular. She does not seem to be your mother but someone who came to help or was in the family as a heper [helper.] She has a big kettle before her or something from which steam [not read.] steam is coming, but the smell is of potash or soap making.

(Good.)

Your people must have had a time of soap making in the spring, I thing [erased.] think it is, for there is still a little snow on the ground and water stands about in pools [read 'pots'] pools or puddles. Do you know about that.

---

462. This is a remarkable incident about the cheese press. Father at one time made cheese but not on a large scale. This press was kept in what was afterward used as a woodshed, but was built originally for another purpose. The cheese making was abandoned about 1860. It was made and the press was in this woodshed which was a frame covered with loose weatherboarding that let the light in through crevices perhaps an inch wide. There were also loose boards lying on a small platform used for other purposes and the cheese press was at one corner of this platform. There was one small window that looked out from the rear into the apple orchard, not exactly an open field, and there was a small russet apple tree in front of that window. This tree died and disappeared as early as 1875 and perhaps earlier.

It is certain that there is not a person in the neighborhood now who would know or remember anything whatever about either the press or the tree described. The important facts are thus existent only in memories and not more than two persons living beside myself could remember them, and I doubt very much whether they would remember them.

(Yes I do.)

It was a clean [read 'dear'] sm... clean smell but oh dear [read 'clear' and hand pointed till correctly read.] the other odors at the beginning were not as good. What a lot of work the pioneers did.

(Yes.) [Note 463.]

That was really pioneer life. Did you ever see an Indian.

(Yes.)

out there I mean.

(No.)

Do you know who... [first three words superposed.] Do you know who this woman was.

(No, can you tell me?)

I don't know but she seems to be a little foreign to the rest [read 'test'] and... rest... of the family and yet familiar. I think she was a neighbor who came for help at some [not read.] time... at some ... She wears ear rings of gold, rahe[r] [rather] long but they seem a part of her.

I now [pause.] see [pause.] an old white horse as if he is driven into the yard. He is big and strong and nearer grey than white. Did you have one.

(That was probably before my time.) [Note 464.]

All right. Now do you know anything about a picture of

---

463. We did make soap in the spring back in my mother's time. This was prior to 1869 when she died, but the practice was continued after her death. We always saved the wood ashes from the cooking stove and winter fires, and in the spring made our own laundry soap. We often employed such help as is described. The woman mentioned is not recognized by any one. The soap was made in a large kettle.

464. I remember no Indians in that locality in my time, but stories existed still of their conflicts with the white inhabitants in that region. My Aunt Eliza writes: "No Indians ever lived there in father's and mother's day, but mother was good on Indian stories. I do not remember the woman with earrings, but these rings were very common in those days and *your* mother had a great many colored women help."

The same authority adds: "Mother had a speckled with black, white horse, 'old gray' and many are the times I rode behind mother on her, 'dear old gray'. I do not remember her death."

I myself never heard of this horse. It was certainly before 1850 which was four years before I was born. It was about 1850 that my grandmother left the farm.

some one named Andrew. It is a small picture but it is on the wall.

(Can . . . .)

It looks to me like the picture of a President.

(I don't know but will ask.)

What President would your people care for named Andrew unless it be Jackson. Your father had regards [not read.] regard for him. Is not that strange.

(Why?)

For me it would be, for him it might not be. Was he a democrat.

(What does he seem like?)

He seems like a man who would fight for a Democratic principle but would not follow in the wake of some of our present generation. Wait a minute before [not read.] we talk politics . . . before.

To return to the other evidential points. Do you know I see your father a lover of A. Lincoln. all right [to correct reading of name.] whatever the A. J. picture meant.

(Good.)

He thinks there never was and never will be another Abe.

(Yes.)

You know how he used [not read.] used to talk on that subject.

(Yes I do.)

He was a radical in that way. He [pause.] kept things alive on that subject whenever he could find a listener. (Yes.) you came rightly by your pertinacity. You are a chip of the old block.

(Yes I am.) [Note 465.]

---

465. I do not remember any picture of Andrew Jackson in the house and I do not recall my father's attitude of mind toward him. What my Aunt says will be as near the truth as can now be ascertained. She writes, speaking of her father, my grandfather, as follows:—

"We never had a picture of Andrew Jackson. The only reason I think father would like him was because he was the son of a Scotchman. From father's naturalization papers which I have I do not believe he voted for him. He was defeated in 1824 and elected in 1828 and 1832. Your father would be 3 years old in 1824 and 7 and 11 in 1828 and 1832. Unless he was very

and he is proud of it. Do you recall anything about the birds in your section. [Pause.]

(Go on.)

I see some birds flying about and I see your father greatly interested in them and allowing no disturbance of their nests. He had a gentle heart about such things, but these seem to be small blue birds that come in the spring. Do you know about them.

(Where did they nest?) [Thinking of the pigeons in the barn.]

In the orchard. [Pause.] Do you know them.

(I do not recall the blue birds, but it is probable.)

Then I see a barn. It is open and swallows I think they are [not read.] darting [read 'floating'] in... darting... and out. Do you know those.

(Yes.)

and now I hear them make reference to the best room and sm [erased.] some birds getting [getting] in the chimney. (Yes.) The[y] made such a hubbub. Is that the word.

(All right. I understand.)

The young ones fell down and had to be taken out.

precocious he would not understand politics, and unless in after years he knew the principles Jackson advanced. He was a 'free soiler'. His first vote, I think, was for J. C. Fremont and because he was a 'free soiler', I was too, not knowing, however, anything about the principles but having implicit faith in your father's views. I fought for him. Mother was strong, so strong that when she was asked to name your cousin Jessie, she called her Jessie after J. C. Fremont's wife."

This very well accounts for the perplexity manifested, apparently by the control or the subconscious, about democratic principles, betraying unwittingly the correct position of my father that he was Republican, and the mention of Abraham Lincoln. The latter was father's hero and the conflict with slavery began in Andrew Jackson's "free soil" principles. My father was "democratic" in principles, taking that term broadly, but had no faith in the Democratic party, owing to its devotion to slavery. He did "keep things alive" in that controversy whenever and wherever he could make himself heard or felt. All these things belong to a period long prior to 1860, except the devotion to Lincoln, and all are beyond my personal memory except his attitude and action toward Lincoln, which, however, did not impress itself on my mind until after the assassination of that President.

(Yes.) [Note 466.]

He loved that life. It was not hardship but joy. Money was not coming in bags full but health and joy and wholesome living were there. Do you know anything about family prayers. (Yes.) This is new to me but it is quite beautiful in its sincerity. I see the family bible and I hear a voice in prayer and it is that religious element which was inculcated [not read.] inculcated into the family life which makes it hard for the girls to understand [not read.] understand anything which seems to contradict the early impressions. Do you understand.

(I think so, but what girls are in mind?)

Your sister. I do not know who the s . . . refers to. Do you know Sarah.

(Yes, go on. Say more.)

Oliver Twist. you always ask for more.

(Can't help it.) [Note 467.]

466. The incident about the birds is also interesting. My father was tender hearted about birds as remarked. He would allow no disturbance of their nests. It is more than probable that there were bluebirds in the orchard in the spring. I do not recall them as specifically related to the orchard, but I know bluebirds were common at one time in that locality. He did not have any special taste for birds, or expressed none, and so no one recalls whether he liked bluebirds or not.

But I remember well the barn swallows. These were plentiful about the old barn and tho they were nuisances he would never drive them away. "Darting in and out" is an apt description of their actions. But it was not barn swallows that got into the chimney. These were chimney swallows and they infested the chimney of the parlor, "the best room" as it was often called in early times, and often the young fell down on the hearth in the room and had to be carried out. We were rarely troubled with them in the sitting room chimney, as that was in use too late in the spring for them to infest it. Their noise in the chimney was sometimes almost deafening and they were a great nuisance. It is evident that the two types of swallows are confused here, or I am mistaken in the supposition that they were different species. All this was unknown to Mrs. C. and represents events prior to 1877 when the barn was torn down.

467. The description of that life here is correct, perhaps inferrible of all farm life in comparison with our modern city life for the more successful. The allusion to family prayers is correct, and it was indicated in another connection through Mrs. Piper and published in my first Report, not seen by Mrs. C. I take it that "the girls" alluded to are my father's sisters and the reference to its being "hard for them to understand anything which

Let it come as it will. (Yes.) It is going on all right. (Yes.) I see an old rag carpet, I was going to say without knowing why I should call it that, but I do see a carpet that seems to be woven from pieces of cloth and it is apparently made by a hand loom. Do you know about this.

(Yes I do.)

It is as plain before me... plain ... [not read first time.] before me as if in this room and I see small hands working at it, a woman not very large is making that carpet which lasted for years.

(Yes.)

It was [superposing.] It was a joy when it was done.

Close the window. [We had opened the window before the sitting to let in fresh air, as the room was warm. At this juncture I had coughed a little. The writing ceased while I closed the window.]

Thank you. Your wife thought you were feeling the air too much, but that was not what made you cough I think.

(That's right.)

I return to th... [superposing.] I return to that light room where the hand made carpet is and step [read 'slip' and hand pointed till read correctly.] out into a small entry from it. Do you know.

(No, that was before my time.)

I ... [Pause.]

(I remember about the carpet. That is all.)

and the loom. (Yes.) You have seen that. (No.) It was in the old house. [Note 468.]

---

seems to contradict the early impressions" is remarkably accurate for their state of mind during the rest of their lives. It has been a frequent subject of allusion in my father's communications, some of which have been published in the first and second Reports, but not known to Mrs. C. His sisters never departed from that early teaching, and both were shocked with my work on this problem. The language would not apply to my sisters, all of whom have passed away. Sarah was the name of my twin sister and she died at a year and a half of age. The statements would not apply to her, nor to the only other sister who grew up.

468. My grandmother had a loom and made rag carpets with it. I do not remember this personally, however, but get it from my aunt who remembers the loom. She writes: "I presume mother wove carpets. She was

Do you know about some chairs that were of wood and were dark with some yellow [yellow] painted decorations on them. They had a broad piece at the top of the back and rounds that were not entirely round, but look as if they might have been done by hand. The decorations are very dull yellow and take the form of a flower [not read.] flower in the center with lines around the edges. They were very familiar to the older members of the family. [Note 469.]

Do you know anything about ... wait a minute...

(All right.)

[Pause.] Your grandfather. Did you ever see a candlestick or lamp which was passed down from his family.

(I may have done so, but I do not recall it now.)

It is something to give light and it seems a more or less elaborate arrangement of brass and was of some value and I think came across the water.

(Good.)

Have you an uncle in... uncle [not read first time.] the west.

(Not now.) [I paused to be sure.]

Or did you have.

(No.)

It is very....

(West from here?)

Yes. (Yes.) Is he still alive. (No.) There is some one

---

considered an expert in the weaving business and I loved to fill the 'quills'. She wove her wedding dress—white linen—counterpanes—I have a piece of one—all our flannel dresses, etc. The loom was kept in the smoke house, afterwards razed for the wood and smoke house of your day on the very spot, not 'in an entry'. This puts the loom in "the old house".

All this was prior to 1850 and hence before I was born. I remember only her relation to the rag carpets from our later experience in getting them woven away from home, and hers were mentioned. I do not remember any mention of her other weaving. I probably heard of it also.

469. We had some parlor chairs of dark wood. I think they were walnut. They were varnished and had yellow decorations on them, not flowers, but they gave the effect of flowers. They had a broad top, but I do not remember the rounds. My Aunt remembers these chairs and the "gold bands" on them, but not the other decorations. She also recalls chairs not here mentioned and not remembered by me. She thinks that my father inherited the dark colored chairs mentioned. I remember merely that they belonged to a very early period in my life and disappeared very early also.

connected with him still living and I see a letter L. connected with it. [Note 470.]

---

470. I remember no such lamp as is mentioned here. Neither does my aunt. But my grandfather on my mother's side had a lamp which was described in detail in the sittings several years ago by my mother and recognized by my Uncle living in the far west. None of these facts could be known by Mrs. C. When I denied that the Uncle mentioned was living I was thinking of my Aunt Eliza's husband who died before my Piper sittings and was a communicator there. I have recalled since the sitting what is apparently meant in this reference. The association with my father's affairs diverted my mind from my mother's side. There is some one still living connected with the Uncle evidently alluded to here. I have learned that this lamp was brass. The significance of the allusion will be apparent from the following facts.

In the New York sittings, on May 7th, 1908, my mother purporting to communicate spoke of the days before the new house was built and among a number of other important things mentioned that "the walls of the living room were white"; that there were inside shutters, pulled up with a string with a knob on it; that they had a brick oven, and that they had a "tall slim lamp that had a bulgy globe to it and glass pendants." Inquiry of my Aunt Eliza, the incidents being beyond my memory, resulted in the denial that any such things had existed in our old home. It occurred to me that my mother might be talking of her own old home and as her last surviving brother happened to arrive in New York about ten days after the sittings I called him up over the 'phone and learned that they had had a brick oven in the old Clarke County home. I saw him that evening and ascertained that the walls of the living room were white, which ours were not, that they had Venetian blinds in it pulled up as described and that they had a glass globed lamp with pendants on it. This Uncle lived on the Pacific Coast. As soon as I saw that he was meant in this message again I inquired about the lamp and found it was brass but he does not know whether it came across the ocean or not. This was all prior to 1850.

Hence this lamp belonged to my grandfather on my mother's side, as indicated in this sitting of April 15th, 1911, save that it does not say which grandfather. I did not suspect at the time that the "Uncle in the West" referred to my mother's brother but had in mind my father's brother-in-law, Mr. Carruthers, deceased husband of Aunt Eliza still living and who lived west of Boston. Hence I answered and asked questions accordingly, the answers from the communicator all being wrong except in answer to my query "West from here?", but correct when taking the term "West" as we usually apply it in this country. When I came to make my notes I discovered that the whole incident in its details was perfectly consistent and correct, supposing that the reference was to my mother's brother who lives in the far West and to the lamp which she had mentioned three years before.

The incident is especially interesting as showing how messages from one

I seem to be losing my hold on that particular line of [read 'as'] evidence... of evidence that... Yes [to correct reading of previous confusion.] let me say something else.

I think the other was good as far as it went. Do you know Laura. all at once I heard that name and felt a desire to talk about her. I feel a younger and more modern influence than with the others I have been talking with. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

but Laura is here in spirit (Yes.) and she recalls so many things of the past but with a younger appreciation of them. I see a school room more like a country school than a city one and I am still in country surroundings. Do you know if that has anything to do with her.

(Yes.) [Said for a person in mind, not for assurance.]

In that school I see smaller desks and large ones [read 'one'] no ones, some of each and it is not a very large room but it has so many associations connected with her that she tries [read her.] to... tries ['t' crossed but not read in spite of fairly clear writing.] tries to reecal [recall] There is a sound of grasshoppers as in the summer and a long dusty [read 'densely'] road... dusty...and then I come to a white house of wood and then to a darker one ['darker' not read.] darker one into which she goes and the house is more modern than the one I first saw and it has so many thing [not read, being quite illegible.] many things in it. It is one of those homes where there is everything in it. She is lively and happy and full of energy [not read.] energy and all sorts of plans for the future and all at once a sickness comes and she is gone with the plans all broken and the hopes blasted. Do you know this.

(Yes, she went about the same time.)

I will see if I can tell you more. Let me tell you about

---

person may be interrupted by those from others and become interfused with them, causing confusion in verification. It also shows how messages become fragmentary. The description of the lamp as brass was not given in the first allusion to it in 1908. For a similar phenomenon compare the incidents regarding the swine (pp. 109, 604-605, 680).

This Uncle's second wife is still living and her Christian name begins with L. Whether this refers to her in the record or not is not determinable with any assurance.

some flowers I see growing. for it seems to be in flower time. Do you know anything about a cluster of tall lillies that look like tiger lillies. yes [to correct reading of 'tiger'] It is something of that sort and they are near the house.

(Yes.)

I pass [read 'press'] them as I ... pass ... as I go into the house you know.

(Yes.)

and there is such a hush [not read.] hush and stillness and sadness all about. I see another lady in the spirit and it soon ... [pause.] is soon .... Wait a minute. I am mixed [not read at first.] a little ... mixed ... but I see another from another place go away about the same time. Do you know.

(I shall have to look that up.)

all [superposing.] all right. Do you know Laura's father.

(Yes.) [Thinking of my own father but remaining quiet.]

He is with her in spirit and it is a pleasure for her to have him although I feel it was nearer right for him to go than for her.

(Yes, what relation was that Laura and her father to me?)

Close. I cannot get [get] it yet, but as I see her and hear her speak of him I can s... [read 'am' and hand pointed till read 'can'] see only his feet. They are placed [read 'placid'] placed as if he sat quietly in a chair for some time before he went away more as if he were in [read 'on'] a ... in ... measure helpless. Do you know if that is true.

(That makes the Laura doubtful to me. I do not recognize either of them. But I did know a Laura.)

[Pause.] with all the things about her that I said.

(No.)

What about the lilies I see.

(I recall the lilies about my old home, but not the particular Laura.)

well was your father helpless for some time before he went away.

(Yes.)

I presume that I followed... that I followed the lily picture and saw the father and have a combination [read 'communication'] combination of your father and hers, for they are all together.

(Good.) [Note 471.] (I understand.)

I must not stay longer now, but we are all interested in these family communications and will help as we can. I mean the group.

(Yes.)

Your father thought it about time he had a word with you to let you know he had not passed to a higher sphere where talking was not allowed with the underworld. \*

(I understand.)

He sends greetings to you.

(Thank you.)

Goodbye. George. [scrawly.] G. P.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause, and then a cough, and sigh.] Tommy.

(Tommy who?)

[Pause and then stretched.] What a lot of happy faces.

[Pause.] George going back to school?

---

471. There is much confusion in connection with the incidents associated with Laura and my father. Previous notes show that Laura might be a deceased sister of mine, the full name being Anna Laura (p. 152) and the associations here with my father would suggest that view. But the mention of the school house recalled another Laura, the daughter of a neighbor, whether living or dead at this time I did not know, and I encouraged the communications on the hypothesis that she was meant to see how they would come out. I had gone to school with her in just such a schoolhouse as is described. But my sister Anna Laura had not yet started to school. She did die very suddenly, but she was only two and a half years old at the time of her death, so that what is said cannot apply to her.

My father was almost helpless for some time before his death and sat a great deal in his chair. The spontaneous admission of confusion suggests the possible cause of the affair, which is apparently a reference to some one else. The "other lady in the spirit" is not identified, and it may be a reference to my mother or some one else. But this is not clear enough to base any conjectures upon. It only shows the possible cause of the confusion.

I ascertained, however, that the Laura who was the daughter of a neighbor, had died many years ago. The first house on the way home from the school was white and then a darker one which was brick was the second. Her family did not live in this, as implied by the record, but in the third

(What do you mean?) [Recognizing reference to my son at college, but desiring that it be made clearer.]

Where is your George?

(At school.)

Has he been away from it?

(I don't know.)

Well goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Note 472.]

[Reached for my hand and I took it. In a few moments she suddenly recovered normal consciousness.]

After the incidents about Laura and her father began there was a change in the handwriting. It became more rapid and much like that of Whirlwind and I suspected her

---

house which also was white frame or wood. I know nothing about the inside of it. Nor do I know anything about the interruption of her studies. My stepmother, however, tells me that it was hard study to graduate in the High School that first broke down her health, her eyes becoming affected, so that her whole life was blasted by it.

The school she first attended was a country school, not a city one, but the High School from which she was anxious to graduate was in the city. She was as lively a girl as any and a hard student. The allusion to grasshoppers and the summer would not consist with the supposition that my own sister Anna Laura was meant, as she died in March and never went to school. Besides she was not called Laura. All the facts, whether sufficiently evidential or not, fit the Laura whom I have described.

I do not know whether the family had tiger lilies or not. It is quite possible, but as the communicator is evidently not the lady herself but my father the "mental pictures" get confused with his own home. We had tiger lilies near the house and my mother was very fond of them. I knew this Laura's father and I have learned that he is dead. I could have inferred it, but I did not know it to be a fact. I learn from my stepmother that this Laura's father was rather helpless in his latter days, but she does not know details or whether he sat much in his chair. It is probable. I knew nothing of these facts.

472. My son was at college at this time and it was my intention to have him continue. No thought of it being otherwise. But a little less than a month before he had to go to Indianapolis to look after his eyes and was there a few days. This could not be known to Mrs. C. But I cannot be assured that reference to this was meant. It may not even be a coincidence further than what my own mind makes it from the suggestion of the possible connection. I record it, however, because this sort of thing sometimes takes place where the evidence is more complete.

co-operation, but I was unable to make inquiry regarding the suspicion.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 20th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

• When I close my eyes I keep having all sorts of names going through my mind. I keep hearing Walter. [Pause.]

I intended to tell you a dream I had. Did I tell you?

(No.)

I thought I met Mark Twain. He said I want to send my love to William Dean Howells. Tell him I have seen Winifred. The name as I recall it sounds like Winifred. I am not sure. She sends her love as definitely to Mr. Howells. I don't know whether Mark Twain knows Mr. Howells or not. It was a dream that I had three or four weeks ago. [Long pause.] [Note 473.]

[No subliminal this morning.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Greetings from the friends

(My greetings to all.)

It is so good to be here without lapse of time which always brings lapse of strength and memory. We are dependent in a measure on the steady and [pause.] current work. Have I made it plain.

(Yes.)

---

473. This incident was a dream of Mrs. C. She knew about Mr. Howells and about Mark Twain, but she stated to me, when I asked her, that she did not know they were friends. Neither she nor I knew whether the name Winifred was pertinent or not, and Mr. Howells did not reply to my inquiry. But I accidentally learned from Miss Whiting who knew the facts that there was a special pertinence in the mention of the name Winifred in connection with Mr. Howells and Mark Twain. These two men were very intimate friends and both interested in this subject. Many years ago Mr. Howells lost a daughter Winifred to whom he was deeply attached and the special circumstances made it very interesting to have his friend, Mark Twain, return with a message regarding her. Mrs. C. could not possibly know the facts which make the name and incident so pertinent. They are too personal to explain here.

I am George but I am standing a little away from the boy [so read and hand paused and I read it again 'boy' to imply the need of correction.] body hoping to keep a better hold on the spirit consciousness and so give better communication for those who desire to send them today.

(George, did any one help you at the latter part of the last sitting last week?)

Yes I had the help of some of those who belong to the band of the light and in one case I mean one instance I had help from some of those who used to come at the other places.

(Yes, who was it from the band of this light?)

I had a power if I can make it plain to you how it is given but a power from the Indian spirits and then Jennie P— came and was quite quite sure she would have to assume control but she did not. I kept the pencil but we were harmonious in the work.

(Yes, George. That is what I suspected from the nature of the writing and I merely wanted to know if you would name that person.)

you see we all work together. If we can do a thing alone we do so but if a strength is needed it is forthcoming. I am glad you discovered it.

(All right.)

She is here now at this moment but I am still at the helm and will stay for a while.

(Good.) [Note 474.]

---

474. The note at the end of the previous sitting, held the week before, explains the interest in the allusion to Jennie P. I had noticed toward the middle of the sitting that the handwriting became similar to Jennie P.'s, but without taking on its exact character, gradually merging into such resemblance as it had and continuing so till the end. I wanted here to find if allusion to her would come without suggestion and the reader will remark that it did. She explained later that she and G. P. were driving tandem in the communications and this method resulted in the remarkably excellent character of the evidence.

The interesting feature for the psychologist, however, is the interfusion of both handwritings. When Jennie P. writes alone her writing is always more or less illegible, or read with difficulty. G. P. when alone usually writes quite legibly, and there is no resemblance to that of Jennie P. or Whirlwind, except such as characterizes both in their similarity to that of Mrs. C. The

The greetings I gave you were from R. H.

(Thanks.)

C. W.— W. J.— S. M.— F. M.— and a few more who are watching the work. C. W. thinks he has a part in this work now and he is as interested in it as any enthusiast you ever met.

(Glad of that.) [Note 475.]

It may not serve you as we would like to have it but it may. Even a spirit can not always forecast perfectly as you have learned before this but a cautious spirit will say when it is uncertain.

It is good to know that your people could come so well last week.

(Yes they did remarkably well.)

There was a strong sympathetic current established and that made the work easy and your wife was as pleased as if she had sent the words herself.

(Good.)

It was a pretty family party and one of the strong points was the accurate memory about things which most likely left no marked impression on the mind [pause because I did not read at once.] at ['mind' read.] the [hand pointed to signify that 'the' followed 'at'.] time. The daily life as it was lived with ordinary scenes and that sort of thing. Now if R. H.— or W. J.— or any of us could have some one who had lived with us establish a current and sympathetic line of thought we to [too, and pause because I did not read it.] too might get the same sort of communication through to them.

(I understand.)

Do you know a woman or girl who had black hair which she wore high on her head a slender form a small face with dark eyes and rather dark skin and vivacious [read 'conscious'] vivacious

---

two handwritings are quite distinct in their character in spite of this resemblance. But when they control together the crossing or mixture of both of them is perfectly apparent. I could even tell by it finally when they intended to give evidence as distinct from general talk. It continued as long as these experiments lasted, interrupted only when some one tried to communicate directly.

475. These initials stand for Carroll Wright, William James, Stinton Moses, and Frederic Myers.

m<sup>^</sup>anners. I think her name is [Pause.] Wait a minute. I lost it. I had it a moment ago. [Pause and Indian gibberish.] [Pause.] C [pause.] ora.

(Yes.)

o [or 'a'] She is eager to come here. Do you know her.

(Possibly. Go on.)

She is with your own people and has been gone some time. that is she was out of your life for some time and has been here for some time.

(Yes.) [Note 476.]

I see her walking [read 'talking' and hand pointed till read correctly.] in a swift way through a smal [small] village or little town and toward a country road and she moves toward a little burying place [coughs] and stops as if that were where her body was laid away. Do you know anything about this.

(No, I do not, but I can inquire.)

All right. she must follow her own will in this and I will record her pictures.

(Yes I understand.)

and you can do the rest. This little burying place is rather high and unprotected [not read.] unprotected by trees [not read.] trees. It is so sunny and almost bare and then I leave with her and go out of the gate and follow along a country road to a house where she used to go. It is a small old fashioned house of light color more yellow than white and she walks [written 'waks'] in as if perfectly familiar with the place and surroundings. Then [read 'this'] Then she suddenly goes to a more settled place where she lived and worked and I see many children about her. Did she teach school. [Note 477.]

---

476. I had an Aunt Cora who was out of my life for many years and died in 1904. She had black hair and was very vivacious in manners. Her eyes were dark, but her complexion was not, if I remember rightly. This was not true of other members of the family. I had not seen this Aunt for perhaps 45 years.

477. She was not buried in the cemetery mentioned. Her father and mother were buried there. She lived a long time with her sister in a small village and the cemetery was on a country road, situated on the divide between her home village and another village, and so on the summit of a gradual slope. I have passed it many a time on visits to my Uncle. The allusion to its unprotected nature and sunny condition is remarkably accurate.

(I am not sure, but vaguely think she did. Shall inquire.)

It looks like a small school and as if she were quite popular with the little people but there are boys and girls. It is a mixed population over which she rules.

(Yes, what did or how did she teach?)

[She was a deaf mute and I think she taught deaf mutes at one time. At any rate I had this in mind with my query.]

I think I do not know what you mean. You wait a moment and I will see.

(Yes, all right.)

I se [see] her playing with the children and then I see her standing before them and she is singing and they are singing also and she moves her arms [not read.] up and ... arms ... down in the manner of calisthenics [not read.] physical culture ... callisthenics. That was a part of her work. It was only part. Then I see her going away to a larger place where she studies further for herself and she has some definite desires about her own education.

Do you know if she were ever baptized.

---

I never knew this graveyard to have a single tree in it. "Sunny and bare" is exactly true. It may be different to-day. I have not seen it for 40 years. The house she lived in was not yellow, according to the testimony of a surviving brother and a brother-in-law with whom she lived all her life. It seems from his statement that her first home where she was born was red and afterward in the village here mentioned it was white. She never taught school, as I learn from three sources. Her sister taught school and she herself spent some years in an Institutional school learning to use the deaf mute language on her fingers, having lost her hearing before she learned to talk.

This Aunt, of course, never sang as she had been mute since she was two years of age. The reference to her "moving her arms up and down in the manner of calisthenics" would describe her manner of using her hands in her speech, and she also used her face much as one might do in singing, so that, in the "mental picture" of her talking the communicator might well give the general impression of calisthenics to the control.

[I had occasion in September last to visit the locality of the cemetery above mentioned and I went to see it in order to ascertain about the incident of its bareness. I counted nearly thirty trees, nearly all of them small and young. Four or five of them, the oldest were not over sixty years old and the remainder not more than forty. Hence the cemetery was very bare in the early days of my Aunt's life which was the only time she knew anything about it. The trees now are not thick enough to nullify this description.]

(No I do not, but shall inquire. Can you tell me how she is related to me?)

I think so before long. She was taken into a church and was baptized for I see a picture of her in that way. She was very [not read.] ar... very ardent in all her life. Who is Sadie that she knew.

(I knew Sadie.) [Thinking of my cousin by that name and this aunt Cora's niece.]

and so does she (Yes.) and then a little later I see in connection with Sadie a book which looks like a small bible with a gilt cross on the outside that seems more like Episcopalian business but I do not know if that is right or not. [Pause.] I am sure you want me to go on.

(Yes.)

and help her to complete her identification for each complete identification is so much to the good.

(Yes, that is right.) [Note 478.]

Is not Sadie closely related to you.

(Yes.) [Thinking of my cousin.]  
more closely than Cora. [Pause.]

(No.)

There is a stronger feeling which I get from Sadie and I do not know how to account for it.

(Well, can you say what relation you *thought* Sadie was?)  
[Expecting the answer 'sister'.]

I feel as if Sadie were your sister. [I had a sister Sarah deceased.]

(Well I see what you mean. I was thinking of another Sadie.)

Has Cora a sister Sadie too.

(Yes.) [My Aunt Sarah.]

---

478. Inquiry shows that there was nothing about her baptism to make it notable. Said, however, in connection with the teaching it may refer to some one else. The Sadie mentioned here was the daughter of the sister who taught school, and was my cousin. She and Aunt Cora were very intimate. I have not been able to verify the statement about the Bible. The whole family were strong Presbyterians, so that the incident would not be a probable one related to the parties named.

I am getting at it then for Cora and Sadie seem like cousins or a relationship similar to that to you.

[The Cora was my aunt and she had a sister Sarah, my aunt, as remarked above, and both had a niece Sadie or Sarah, and I a sister Sarah.]

(I understand it as you put it. Keep on.) [Note 479.]

Cora now moves toward a much older woman than herself and begins to talk with her and calls her mother. It is some one here in spirit.

(Yes.)

Now I see her open a book with pictures in it and among them is one of herself and she points [not read.] and . . . points and laughs at it and a funny little face as if it were an old fashioned \* \* [thing?] which looks little like her now.

Do you know anything about an organ a small house organ which she would play.

(No I do not. I shall have to inquire.)

I see [see] her sitting at an organ and in the room is a little lamp which shows me that it was a house where lamps were used and at this house there is a sort of neighborhood payer [prayer and so read.] meeting or assembly for there are men and women there siting [sitting] in a group as if for some serous [serious] purpose. It was a long time ago but a part of her life. Then she went away. She was probably taken sick away and came home for I see her brought home sick and some care and concern and then death. Do you know a man connected with her whose name was J.

(" J ") [Simply read the letter.]

Yes. [To reading evidently not understanding that I did not intend to admit what I recognized as correct.]

(Finish that.)

John. (No.) [Pause.] The J is right but I cannot get the rest. I[t] sounds like James or Jacob or some such.

(" James " is right.) [Name of her brother, living.]

---

479. The possibilities of confusion here should be clear to the reader. A sister of this Aunt Cora was named Sarah, living at the time of these sittings and not the subject of the Bible incident. Then the Sadie, or Sarah mentioned was my cousin, and daughter of Aunt Sarah's sister. Then I had a sister Sarah. The confusion will thus be apparent.

all right. stupid that I did not get it, wasn't it.

(Yes.)

It is not you I think but another J which I mean [read 'am']  
no. [read 'mean'] yes [to correct reading.] Is that right.

(Yes.) [Note 480.]

Now do you know about a small child connected with her.

(Explain.)

Did she leave a child. (No.) Who is the boy that I see  
around after she went away.

(I do not know.)

That is strange for I see a small baby and then later see it  
as a boy. It was near in the family.

(Well, tell me more about it.)

If I can I will. She knew about the child and its coming I  
think for then [for 'there' and so read.] is a sort of intimate  
knowledge about the whole matter but I cannot get it very clearly  
yet. Just a minute. [Pause.] [Note 481.]

I see [see] a woman standing near her with a large sunbonnet  
[read 'sunburned'] sunbonnet on. It is her mother and she has  
a smile and happy look on her face as I see this bonnet on her  
head.

Who is G—— [Pause.] Do you know George a child left.

(No.)

---

480. Information from two or three sources states that she did have  
an old picture of herself, but opinions differ as to its resemblance to her  
later in life. The same information says she did not play the organ. The  
other incidents are not verifiable, except that she did not die away from  
home. J. is the initial of her surviving brother's name. The manner of  
completing this name shows guessing tendencies, as the reader may remark  
tho there is no sign of this in first getting the initial. But it is also the  
initial of the surname of her brother-in-law, still living.

The occurrence of Jacob here is interesting in that it came again when  
the name of the Uncle James' first wife was given. Cf. p. 231. There it was  
Jake or Jacob. Apparently there was a process of guessing at the full name  
after getting the J. This is apparent in the name John here, and the guessing  
may have been by the control and not by the subconscious, tho both may have  
been involved in it.

481. She was never married and hence had no children. But her brother,  
now dead, lost a small child many years ago and beyond my recollection. I  
never heard of it and apparently only her surviving brother recalls it.

all right. [Pause.] Do you know whether Ohio means anything to her.

(Yes it does.)

She wrote O— then O—— then Ohio for me to see.

(Good.)

Whether the other O O meant anything [not read.] anything beside Ohio I do not know, but can you tell me if there was another O——

(I think not, but I think it went with the Ohio.) [Said to stop further communication about it.]

very well. She is pleased enough that she got that through for it was close to her life. [Note 482.]

Now I see her studying away on a book with some foreign [delay in reading.] foreign language in it. Do you know about that.

(Make it clearer.) [Thinking of the language of deaf mutes.]

all right. you keep me to the text don't you. That is best. Well this text [read 'test'] text is more like German if I see correctly but it is a language which she studied and was proficient in I think. [Pause.] That means nothing to you.

(No.) [Note 483.]

Leave it then and let me tell you something which I am perfectly sure you will not understand. I see some [not written clearly.] some white ottom [for 'cotton' but not read.] thread ... cotton ... and a steel needle and I see her fingers moving and she is crocheting. It is some fancy [read 'funny' then 'finely'] fancy white stuff, something we men [read 'mean'] men are not supposed to understand but she keeps at work and says ask—— She means you can find out I think.

---

482. The name George recalls no one in her connection. Neither her brother nor her brother-in-law can give it any meaning, except a possible reference to my brother George who lives in Ohio, which was also the original home of this Aunt Cora. As this is a family meeting, it is possible that the allusion to him is a fragment of an attempt to name a deceased Aunt whose name is the same as that of my brother's wife. This is indicated at a later sitting. Cf. p. 684.

483. Inquiry results in the information that she never studied any foreign language. She knew nothing of German.

(Yes, whom shall I ask?) [Note 484.]

She does not indicate. Just a moment. She has some more [not read.] more to give me. [Pause.] You did not know all the ins and outs of her life did you.

(No, I did not.)

I see a sleigh and [pause.] snow and [pause.] a street in a small town. It is strange but I keep finding her in a small town. Do you know about that.

(Yes.)

In this town and while in this sleigh I come to a street and turn a corner and there with a fence around a yard I see a house into [not read.] into which she goes. Do you know M. or N. connected with her.

(Not sure. Will inquire.)

Now there is a new house and many plans [delay in reading.] plans for future and pleasure but they are broken by her death. Her death was unexpected but might not have been.

(Where did she die?)

Do you know anything about going away and being brought home.

(No, I shall have to inquire about that.)

This house where I went in the sleigh was one where I now see a coffin carried in and it seems all cold and wintry everywhere. Do you know it looks to me as if her body was taken to a place after death where the service funeral service was held. I cannot connect it with any one [else] but herself [herself].

(All right.)

It is especially sad when she passes away for she had many friends and much to live for. you know that much anyway do you not.

[Pause and I remained silent purposely, as the person in mind did not have much to live for. having been a deaf mute from childhood.]

Do you know any one by the name of Claire. Yes [to correct reading of the name which is clear.]

---

484. Information from her brother-in-law states that she did a great deal of the fancy work here described. As she could only speak by sign with the fingers, this work gave her employment.

(No.)

Clair. That [superposing and not read.] is ... That is all. I hear just Clair. [Note 485.]

(Now if you can get the last name of this Cora it will clinch matters.)

She is as eager to give it as we are to have her but I must let her do what she can do best. She ...

(Yes, I said it to let you know.)

is not through yet for although she does not work as rapidly as some she is eager and ready. [read 'really', pause, and read 'ready']

Do you know anything about beech trees.

(A little.)

Did they grow around where she lived.

(That depends.)

Depends on what, who she is or which place she refers to.

(Yes, which place.)

She understood you and says earlier earlier life.

(Yes, I think some did grow there.)

She says there were a few and there were also walnut trees and in the fall [fall] the boys and girls went [pause.] nutting. Do you know about that.

(Yes.) [Merely thought it probable as this also characterized my own boyhood.] [Note 486.]

Do you know anything about an old mill. It seems to be a grist mill or some sort of a mill for grinding, not a saw mill or wind mill.

(Tell more.)

It was on a farm or place which belonged to some man, was

---

485. The whole story about the sleigh and passing away from home is not true of her and is not verifiable. The name Claire recalls nothing to any of the surviving relatives, except that one recalls the fact that she was engaged to a young deaf mute whose name might have been this.

486. A surviving sister does not remember that there were beech trees in the region of the old home. The surviving brother, however, remembers them. I knew they were plentiful in some parts of the state, and rare in my own locality, only one being on our own farm. There were plenty of walnut trees in that locality and all agree on that. The testimony also is that they frequently went nutting then, a probable thing to any one who knows that locality, as nut trees were very plentiful.

not public property [property]. It was not very large but she knew about it. Do you not know about it.

(No, but tell all you can.)

It is and has not been used for a long time but was once used for the purpose she has described but in the nutting tramps [read 'tramp' with delay.] tramps it was sometimes passed.

(Did it belong to any one in the family?)

I think so for it is so familiar to her but it is low and has flat rocks about it and a pond that goes dry [not read.] dry sometimes. Funny old building and rather [read 'rotten'] out ... rather out of the way. Do you recall anything about a man being killed near that early home.

(I do not recall, but others will know.)

It is either an accident or a suicide but it is a tragedy for that sort of place and the body is found out of doors near a wood. I do not know whether the old mill has anything to do with the scene or not but it may as the suggestion of the mill seemed to produce this recollection.

(I understand.)

Do you know about a tree struck with lightning.

(No, but go on.)

These may not mean so much to you as to her (I understand.) but she recalls [recalls] them.

(Yes, if I can verify them they will be all the better.)

Ys [yes] [Pause.] [Note 487.]

A negro is a common sight now but was not then in that place but there was one whom everybody knew who worked in fields and about farms. Do you know him.

---

487. None of the incidents connected with the mill and including it, the suicide or accident and the tree struck by lightning, can be recalled by survivors. The unanimity of their judgments and memories on this point is decidedly against their being incidents in the life of the family about the old home or elsewhere, so far as recallable. It is possibly a set of incidents in the life of some one else not named here, but known to the Aunt Cora who seems to be the communicator. But it has not been possible to get the slightest clue to the truth of the facts. There seems to have been no mill that could be said to have been near. The surviving brother recalls a mill dam, which I also knew, some two miles or more from the home that occasionally went dry in the summer and where he fished, but there is nothing else to make the incidents as a collective whole true.

(That depends on more specific information.)

An old man who was a sort of character to the natives. He was black enough to have no doubt of his origin but was free then. Ys [yes] [pointed, as if conscious of not having written the 'yes' fully]

am I staying to [too] long.

(The time is up.) [I had to look at my watch.]

Perhaps there will be more later. I cannot tell what will come tomorrow but be sure there is interest indeed in your work and effort will be made to do what is best.

(Yes, I understand.) [Note 488.]

Goodbye. [Pencil dropped and then instantly picked up again.]

D—— what is D—— for Is that important.

(It might be if the rest of the name were given.)

Is it in connection with Cora. (Yes.) Is the next [not read.] next letter a (Yes.) v [pause and silence on my part.] and v [pause.]

(Go ahead.)

i s. It sounds like Davis or David.

(David is all right.)

alive. [Correct: her brother-in-law with whom she lived at last.] [Note 489.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause, and then coughs. Pause again and then a sigh.] I have got to come right along this time and not stop. [Pause.] Whose red barn?

---

488. The incident of the negro was not connected with this Aunt Cora, but with her sister Sarah, still living at the time of making this note. It is a good illustration again of the mistaken relation in which a true incident may be stated.

There was an old negro, black as a pot, who work for many years on the farm of this Aunt Cora's sister, the Aunt Sarah mentioned above. He was a great character in the neighborhood. This negro was free. I can barely remember him myself, but whether he got his freedom before or after the war I do not know.

489. David is the name of this Aunt Cora's brother-in-law with whom and her sister she lived all her life. He was, of course, my uncle by marriage. He is still living at the time of making this note, in the far west on the Pacific Coast.

(You find out.)

Did you have any uncle David? Did he have a red barn?

(Can't you find out?)

And do you know Ella?

(Yes, tell about her.)

Did you ever try to catch butterflies in a net.

(I don't remember.)

[Coughs.] I can't get it up. [Pause and suddenly awakes without holding my hand.] [Note 490.]

Before the sitting I purposely alluded to the last *Proceedings* published by the American Society and Mrs. Chenoweth had seen the article in the Boston *Herald* which was a reproduction of the one by the *New York Times*. The Report she has not seen, as it has not yet been delivered. I told her, however, about her own part in it in some cross references. This was done purposely to encourage her in the work and to recognize the liability of future knowledge of the facts. I mention the circumstance here solely to have the possibility of her knowledge on record from this date.

After the sitting to-day I also purposely told her that the last two sittings of last week were the best that I had ever had from her and it was encouraging to her. It was my purpose to have her normal consciousness know the fact, as her subliminal knew it from remarks made at the sitting to-day, tho not in that specific form. She showed no hint of recognizing what had been said in the trance, but was as surprised as she was gratified, indicating it in a manner that was very different from the cool and dispassionate manner of the trance, when I recognized that my family group had "done remarkably well."

---

490. Ella is the name of an Aunt, sister-in-law of this Aunt Cora and who died many years ago. She lived a long time in the same village with this Aunt Cora. She was the wife of the surviving brother of this Aunt Cora. I do not know any relevance in the allusion to catching butterflies with a net. I never did it and know this Aunt too little to speak of her.

Inquiry shows that this Uncle did not have a red barn. But as it is alluded to later in a more complex situation I shall refer the reader to that incident (p. 793).

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 21st, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Before we sat down Mrs. C. was standing in the parlor a moment and thought she heard the bell ring. She went to the window and looked out to see if some one was at the door, wondering why the maid had not responded. But she found no one at the door. She then remarked that she thought she heard the bell. I remarked that the bell did not ring, but I supposed my mental preoccupation might have prevented my hearing it, as I was busy arranging things on the table for the sitting. When I said the bell did not ring Mrs. C. remarked: "Then the bells are in my ears."

I had paid no special attention to these incidents as they preceded the trance and all effort to get phenomena, tho it happened to occur to me that the allusion was psychic when it was found that there was no reason to believe that the bell had actually rung. The importance of the incident was recalled by events at the close of the sitting, when I learned the details of Mrs. C's movements before she mentioned the apparent ringing of the bell to me. I had allowed the incidents to pass unnoticed.

After sitting down we talked a little while about chance coincidence and guessing in this work and I explained a few things. This occupied time and it was a little while before even the normal began to get apparent messages. The following came in the normal just following this conversation. The phantasms gradually developed.

[*Normal.*]

I see on the table a large envelope and a lot of papers in it. I don't think it has come. If it has come it has come today. It is thick and fat and a lot of different things in it. [Long pause.] [Note 491.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Signs of distress and pause.] Do you know any one by the name of Emma.

---

491. I did not verify the incident about the envelope, as I forgot to keep it under notice. It could have no significance if I had, as I was likely to receive such letters any time.

(Not sure. Go ahead.)

I see a very fair woman with fair hair, round face and she is rather plump and very good natured. Her name is Emma.

(Get the last name.)

Yes, sounds like Quimby or Quigley. It is an odd name. Do you know any one by the name of Quimby.

(No.)

[Pause.] I will tell you a little more about her in a minute. [Pause.] She knows some of the people in your group. She is interested in your work because she is with the Hodgson group. Emma Q are the letters she puts down and is very lovely in her manners and her . . . . [Coughing rather violently.] [pause.] I didn't lose her. [Pause.] It's Fannie she wants to go to, some one named Fannie Jackson. Do you know?

(No, do you?) [Note 492.]

I wonder if that door ought to be closed.

(All right.)

Too bad to bother you.

[Pause while I closed the door. Then a cough and a pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I [mere scrawl and conjectured.] am Jennie P. How do you do Whirlwind. [Should have said Hurricane]

(Fine.)

I was here yesterday helping G. P. and we think we make a good team only we have to drive [read 'come'] tandem . . . drive [not read.] drive tandem instead of side by side, not double harness [not read.] harness.

(I understand.)

One or the other of us has to play leader [read 'cator', tho it is perfectly clear.] leader [read 'cader', tho perfectly clear.] leader.

[I had got the impression in my head, as is often the case in this work, that the first letter was capital C, and it is hard to beat it out of my mind at the time. The word is really clear in this instance.]

---

492. The names Emma Quimby or Quigley and Fannie Jackson have no meaning to me and none to Mr. Smead whose brother was the principal communicator in this sitting.

Yes [to correct reading.] don't you know the leader on a team of tandem ponies [read 'horses' and might be mistaken for this.] ponies [clear but read 'homes' feeling it was absurd.] ponies [not read tho clear enough] p... Ponies [not read.] PONIES

(Yes the letters are often so written that they are easily mistaken and I am awfully literal.)

That's right you are, but I think we will get along all right. I know I write like the dickens but that is nothing. We have to leave our past behind us and do what we can with the material at hand.

(I understand.)

George makes [not read.] makes a better amanuensis than I and I can pump information and make signs for the witnesses.

(Good.)

and together we have a real moving picture show [read 'store'] show with written records attached. I only came to tell [read 'let' and hand pointed till read correctly.] you of my new position and now I will let George come. Goodbye. Jennie P. Whirlwind.

(Thanks.) [Pencil dropped.] [Note 493.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pencil seized between first and second fingers, not as usual between thumb and finger.]

Before G. P. comes I would like to write a word or two. You do not know me or the writing but I am a friend and wish to try the hand for a moment and see what I can do toward getting a good firm hand established. I am interested in the work and care only for the truth and is ts [its] ['is' written first and then 'ts'] free expression. When a little stream [read 'strenu'] stream is turned aside from its course it may turn a mill and feed [read 'feel' and hand pointed till correctly read.] the miller's family indirectly but when it is free to move on over hill and valley it reaches the sea at last and has done its work in a beauti-

---

493. This is Jennie P.'s or Whirlwind's explanation of the way she and G. P. are doing their work, which is henceforth frequently signed "G. P. and Co." The humor of her description of it will be fully appreciated by the reader, remembering that the "written records" are mine, and that the method of communication is by means of mental pictures.

ful and lavish manner. Thank you for the opportunity to come today. [Pencil dropped.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning, George.)

I understand that I am in harness and am to be driven before the wind.

(I understand.)

That is all right but the wind bloweth where it listeth we are told and it blows my way often these days.

(Yes.)

but if its an ill wind that blows nobody any good we will see what good can come here for a whirlwind is not an ill wind.

(I understand.)

It seemed yesterday as if there would never be an end to the incidents and that is the kind of work which tells and we all agree that for do to [superposed on 'do' to erase.] day it may be well to resume that sort of interview only we may take another person.

(Good.)

Richard and the rest [read 'best' then 'last'.] rest of our friends are as much interested in this experiment as if they were trying to communicate themselves and they are not all [?] off and at any time when they desire they can get the ear of Jennie P— for she is awake to every [not read.] every movement [read 'moment'] movement.

Do you know [pause.] a man with tall [read 'late' and hand pointed till read rightly.] spare form broad shoulders long arms dark hair with a few grey locks blue or grey eyes a short beard rather grey and a strong flavor of out of door life [life] to him who was and is an uncle of yours. I will get a name in a minute. [Pause.] The name is William. Do you know him.

(I do not yet recognize him. The last name would be necessary.)

[I thought of my sister's father-in-law whose name was William.]

I see this man with your father and a group of your father's people and among them is one named Sylvester. Do you know him.

(I know of a Sylvester and hope it is the one I have in mind. Go ahead.)

All right. We will work it out. [Pause.] Do you not approve of this plan of singling [not read.] out ... singling [not read at time.] sin... picking out one person for identification.

(Yes I do.)

This man Sylvester is a strong character but mild mannered and seems to be quite new to this whole thought. He is not especially tall but a well built and well cared for man with a smile [smile] of easy and happy grace on his face. but I return to the early day of your life for him. It [read 'he'] is... It ... a long time ago that you first knew him.

(All right. Can he say where in general at least?)

I think so. We will see what kind of a communicator he makes. I see around him many people. this is in the past, a great many men who look up to him for advice and help. He is a man who b... always has an opinion on matters that are worth while.

(Is this ....?)

That much you know.

(Is this the William?)

No sy... [superposing.] No the S—— yes [to correct reading.] Do you know anything about glasses which S wore. [Note 494.]

---

494. When the name Sylvester first came I at once recalled Mr. Smead's deceased brother who was a principal communicator and control in the Smead case for some time, but the description soon indicated that some one else was meant because this Sylvester died a young man and was not a farmer, tho bred on a farm. The William had no meaning to me as soon as the name Sylvester was mentioned. This led to inquiry of Mr. Smead. I found from him that he had an Uncle William and an Uncle Sylvester, both dead. Of course I knew nothing of these facts, and Mrs. Smead did not know whether the description of the two Uncles was correct or not. Inquiry of his father results in the statements that the description of his brother William is correct. He says:

"William was a tall young man when I saw him before he went to Minnesota. I have not seen him since. When he was a boy he had very dark hair, blue eyes and was an athletic boy."

Of the brother Sylvester and the description of him as a strong character etc. the same authority says: "I do not know. I do not think I was born at the time of brother Sylvester's death." But he added and then erased,

(I do not recognize this Sylvester at all now. It is not the one I had in mind. Go on.)

Of course I may have the S and the W mixed as I should not have taken the two at the same time but they were together in the group and the Sylvester was such an odd name I was tempted to write it. Let us go on though [read 'through' and hand pointed till correctly read.] and [read 'but'] I will see ... and...

Does what I have said describe W—

(I do not know who the W is.)

[Pause.] It is a man who seems to hold the relationship of an uncle to you. Do you know an Eliza who was connected with a W.

(I do not recall any now.)

[I was uncertain at the time and am uncertain still whether the man I had in mind had a daughter Eliza, but I know he had a daughter Lida which is probably the nickname of her real name.]

[Pause.] It is all in the same group. Is he in your family.

(Only by marriage with one... not with one but near one of the family group.)

Did he live in a country place.

(Yes.)

I see a broad open space like fam [farm] land and a tree and under [not read.] it... under it a grindstone and several things about that speak of faning [farming, but not read.] farming and grazing. Yes [to correct reading of 'grazing' which was partly superposed.] do you know about that.

(I know about the farming, not the grazing.) [I thought of cattle.]

Do you know if he kept sheep.

(No, but I can inquire if it be the William I have in mind. If it be any other William I cannot find out.)

I think it is the William you have in mind for there seems

---

perhaps because I had not asked for its relation to his son Sylvester, that the description fitted his son. Nothing more has been ascertainable regarding this brother Sylvester.

It will go without saying that nothing could be ascertained about such persons by Mrs. C., as she did not even know the real name of the Smeads, and the oldest of his relatives do not seem to know some of the facts.

to be a renewed effort on the part of your friends to have him communicate because he is a little removed. The sheep are in the picture [written 'peture'] and that is why I spoke of grazing.

What is the meaning of the poetical [read 'political' and hand pointed till correctly read.] grazing sheep if it is not a grazing business to kep [keep] them.

Do you know anything about the place where he lived.

(A little.) [My sister's father-in-law in mind.]

It is all so open and beautiful with a great distance in the picture and it seems such high land. I am higher than many places for I see farms and buildings below me in the distance. Do you know that.

(No I do not recognize that.) [Note 495.]

[Pause.] Do you think I ought to keep on with him. you see the difference is often in the spirit. some spirits are not good communicators. Is the Sylvester whom you knew a young man.

(Yes.)

I see [superposing.] him move forward as if to send a message and there is such a boyish and young vibrant air about him that he pleases and attracts me. He seems to have been taken away

---

495. Mr. Smead's father does not know whether his brother William was a farmer or not. Mr. Smead thinks he was. He lived in Canada and had little communication with his relatives. My own sister's father-in-law was named William and was a farmer, but I do not know whether he ever kept sheep. I doubt it. But I mention him and the facts here because, during the sitting in my endeavor to feel about for the identity of William, I thought of him. Nothing would fit him but the reference to farming and the grindstone which all farmers have. He did not have high land and all that is said in this connection would not apply to him. Once, through Mrs. Smead, an Uncle William was referred to as occupying high land as a farmer, so that with this cross reference and the ignorance of all parties as to his occupation we may suppose that the reference is most probably to Mr. Smead's Uncle William. This is confirmed by the immediate allusion to the young man Sylvester.

The incident given through Mrs. Smead regarding this Uncle William was that he lived on ground high enough to see the lights about the country for some distance. But the family could not verify it. The general conception of the incident as given through Mrs. Chenoweth is the same and I have made most strenuous inquiries to ascertain whether it was true or not. I have found it impossible to get into communication with any one who might know. The man died many years ago.

in the mdst [midst] of bright hopes and plans [delay reading.] and . . . plans and to have gone rather suddenly.

(Yes, how?)

Wait and I will see what he shows me. It is an accident of some kind. That is it seems so unexpected and yet he was in a place of peril. Do you know what that means.

(So far so right.) [Note 496.]

It is a brave young spirit and he had no regrets except that he had hoped to serve longer whatever that means.

(Has he ever communicated before?)

He nods acquiescence to that and says it is great joy for him to come but I think it was only a slight communication before for he has so much he wishes to say now. I want [read 'wait' and hand pointed till correctly read.] to help him for he has the making of a good witness.

(Yes, where did he communicate?)

He puts [read 'keep'] up two fingers . . . puts . . . and that is to signify that he has been heard from in two places but one was only a half message. the other was stoopr [suspected for 'stronger' but not read.] stronger and more sure. Once he was seen with the rest [not read.] rest and once he came by himself. Has he not been to us or with us in N. Y. once.

(I do not recall him there, but does he know a Cecil?)

[Pause.] Yes he does. Now wait a moment. [Pause.] [Note 497.]

Do you know anything about a group of young men with which he was connected when he went away to spirit I mean.

(I know some one who will know, so go on.)

I mean you know there was a group of young men with which he was intimately connected and that group mourned [read

---

496. This Sylvester, brother of Mr. Smead, not his Uncle by the same name, was killed by a train of cars.

497. Cecil is the name of Mr. Smead's deceased son, a frequent communicator with this Sylvester through Mrs. Smead and whose name was once given through Mrs. C. in the New York sittings. Hence I thought to help the identification and further incidents by this question. The reaction did not bring what I wanted.

' named ' ] him ... mourned... yes [to correct reading which was delayed.] [Note 498.]

[Pause.] He shows me a city place and a country place. That is I get two pictures of his living [not read.] living [not read.] life in two places and one was in a city. Do you know that.

(I am not sure but can find out.) [Note 499.]

Then I hear a great noise a great tumult and all is still and it is over [not read.] over. He must have gone very [not read.] su... very suddenly.

(Yes.) [Note 500.]

Do you know anything about white trousers. They seem to be worn as a suit [written with the 'u', as is usual, in the form of 'i', so that it appears as 'sut'] for some display like a company of boys drilling or something of that sort. Do you know anything about that.

(No, can find out.) [Note 501.]

Then I see his hand [not read.] hand reach for something in his pocket and it looks like a letter as if he had one which had just [superposing] had just been received. Was he away from home when he passed out.

(In one sense so far as I know.)

It seems as if the family home was in another place and that this sorrow was great that certain things could not be done as would have b ... been if they had been home. Do you know what that means.

(No, but let me ask a question. Does he remember anything about cars?)

[Pause.] I see him put on a wondering look as if he hardly

---

498. Sylvester was a member of a group of young men who mourned his untimely death.

499. This brother Sylvester, the communicator, was connected with both the city and the country in his home.

500. This allusion to the great noise is evidently to the train of cars that rushed down on him and caused his death.

501. Neither brother nor father remember his wearing white trousers, tho they remember his belonging to a company of boys, and it is all very probable.

knew how it all happened. Do you think that has anything to do with your question.

(Yes.) [Note 502.]

It was all so sudden that he did not realize until it was over. But one of the things I asked about being away from home was because I saw the body taken [not read.] taken to two places. There was a halting place as if it were taken and something done to it. (Good.) which was not and could not be done as if at home.

(I understand.)

and then [read 'here'] then later it was taken home and that was where the awful sorrow came. You know that. The letter was taken from his pocket after death and I see some one lift [read 'left' and hand pointed till correctly read.] his hand but it falls limp as if the arm were broken at the shoulders. I wonder if you know about this.

(No, but I can find out.) [Note 503.]

[Pause and coughing.] Who is the man in uniform. He looks like an officer but I cannot tell clearly. There was no pain he tells me although life was not quite crushed [read 'vanished' hesitatingly.] out ... crushed out at the moment but there was no sense of pain or anything of that kind only a dim rel ... [erased.] realization that something had happened.

Do you know about the woman who felt so badly about it. Was it not a mother.

(Yes.)

I se [see] a woman who was inconsolable for a time and his great grif [grief] was for her but she was not alone. There were

502. It was not a letter that was in his pocket, but a piece of paper with a poem on it, and this was the subject of communications through Mrs. Smead who knew the fact. He was away from home when he was killed and the body had to be taken some distance to reach home. Just before the accident he was seen to stop his horse and buggy, but apparently thought he had time to get across the railway, but was caught, so that we may well imagine him saying or wondering how it all happened.

503. Mr. Smead did not know the details of the funeral accurately and recourse was had to the father for them. He reports that the body had to be taken to two places before the funeral. It was first taken to the un-

others in the family but her head is bowed [read 'moved'] with g... bowed ... grief and her heart is full of pain. [Note 504.]

(Is she on your side or on ours?)

I saw her on yours. She was alive when he went away but I do not know whether she is here now or not. I will see. [Pause.] This [read 'there'] was s... some time ago I think. This ... This was some time ago I think. [repeated because I had not understood clearly.] this accident and many things have happened since then. Do you know any one called Ida.

(Yes.)

In connection with these people.

(Yes.)

That came as clear as anything I ever saw. [Note 505.]

(Was that William connected with this group?)

I think so. You see we have a complicated group this morning but we can work it out I think [think]

(Yes.)

Now to return to the boy and his mother and to some of the incidents [not read tho I thought it a confusion for 'mediums'] before ... incidents [not read and seemed the same as before.] incidents before and after the death. You know that the whole town [read 'warm' questioningly.] town knew about this accident at the time and it was a tragedy and for a long time was talked about and even now is mentioned with signs of horror. You know what I mean.

(Yes.) [Note 506.]

Now do you know anything about the house [read 'horse' and hand pointed until correctly read.] where they lived.

(No, tell if you can.)

---

undertaker, as it was so badly mutilated. This was evidently "the halting place" mentioned before reaching home. The incident of some one lifting the arm is not verifiable. If true it must have been the undertaker, as neither father nor mother did it, and the event happened twenty years ago.

504. The grief of the mother was so great that she fell across the casket in a faint, and she was long recovering from the shock of his death.

505. The mother is still living. It was long ago that the accident happened, as remarked in the previous note. Ida is the name of Mrs. Smead, through whom he has communicated.

506. The accident was the talk and horror of the small town for a long time, as perhaps would be the case in many such instances.

I go up a few steps and into a room and find [not read.] stairs at . . . find stairs [at] [I read the word from previous writing and it was not repeated.] the first few steps I have taken I see] a large room on one side and there [read 'then' and hand pointed till correctly read.] I find the body and all the flowers and arrangements are [read 'all'] are so lavish. Everybody sent expressions of grief and yet there was the boy. [Note 507.]

I see a man who is beside the mother. It is a father I think. (Yes, I understand.)

and then [read 'have'.] beyond I . . . then beyond . . . see [see] another man not very old but grown and with him a lady. They are sorrowing too and are connected in the family.. Do you know an M— in connection with them.

(If you can make the M. clearer it may tell.)

It sounds like Mari [not read.] Maria Maria or Marian. It is not Mary but has a sound like it with another syllable.

(I shall inquire. I thought the M. might refer to a man I know would be present.)

No it seems to be a lady. the man's name is familiar to him for he smiles and says he knows who you mean.

(All right.)

Well perhaps he can tell me [coughing.] [Pause.] M. [pause.] Is it Maurice.

(I don't know. All I know is the initial.) [Note 508.]

all right. He has tried hard to get through what he could remember. He was such a good boy [boy] and not careless. that is the very sentence his mother often used about him after the death.

(Does he remember the husband of Ida?)

[Pause.] Yes he says so. [He was his brother.]

507. The account of the steps and flowers is not verifiable. It is evidently confused in its details.

508. The father and mother stood as described, tho this incident has no value, but they do not recall who stood next to them. Mr. Smead thinks it was his Uncle George and his wife. This would make them connections of the family as stated.

No one recognizes any Maria or Marian and no Maurice in connection with the family. M. is the initial of Mr. Smead's middle name.

It is strange but each time he tries to think about any especial thing he seems to grow bewildered. Do you know if he knew Hodgson [superposed and not read.] R. H.

(No, not on this side.)

That is just what I am trying to get at but did he not know R. H., he as a spirit (Yes.) and R. H. as a man.

(I do not know because I have never heard whether he came at the Piper light.)

There is a connection between them or rather a knowledge by S— of R. H. while R. H. was alive. It may have been that the whole... ['that' not read.] that the who [pause and I read 'whole'.] idea of communication was talked of in his presence.

(Yes.)

[Dr. Hodgson had three sittings with this Ida, Mrs. Smead, and had a talk with her afterward about the communications, the sittings having been entire failures.]

[Violent coughing.] What is all this coughing.

(A cold.)

Nothing serious is it. (No.) all right. I won't worry then. Is it time for me to go.

(Not quite.)

I see an E— again but it seems to be in connection with S— Do you know who that can be.

(If you can give more letters I can tell.)

I wish I could but it seems to be a young person to whom he refers with an E— as the first letter of her name (Yes.) and it is a relative and some one loved. does that help you any.

(Yes.) [Note 509.]

All at once I see a watch which he must have carried. Do you know about it.

(No, but I can find out.)

---

509. This letter E. is possibly very significant. The poem found in his pocket was entitled "Evelyn" and it was suspected that it was dedicated to his lady love. Mr. and Mrs. Smead did not know who it was. Sylvester in communicating through Mrs. Smead said it was Evelyn, but got the last name as Sargent, which happened to be the name of the lady Mr. Smead was thinking of at the time, having in mind Minnie Sargent. He afterwards ascertained that the name of the lady was Evelyn Hamel. The allusion to its being "some one loved" suggests the interpretation I have given it.

It is not an expensive one but seems more like a boy's which [sheet changed.] which he had carried for some time and he was fond of it. It was always with him.

It is rather strange but I see some freckles on his face. These are not important only as they indicate a tendency to freckle in the freckle season and he laughs as I refer to it. Do you know L.

(Go ahead.) [Note 510.]

It sounds like Linnie [not read.] Limme [or 'Linnie' and not read.] L i nnie yes [to reading.] or Lizzie or some name like that.

(I shall inquire.) [Note 511.]

and [pause.] here is a dog. Do you know about his dog.

(No, go ahead.)

I se [see] a brown [pencil ran off page.] brown or rather dark colored dog with short hair and a few white markings on him. He has short leg [erased.] ears and is rather a good breed of dog and I hear Jack or Jock in connection with it. Whether it is his own or one he had at times I cannot tell. Here is another name Isabella. you know that.

(No, but I can find out.) [Note 512.]

I think I have given all I can from him now.

(Yes.)

We are going to try and make each communicator give some specific evidence if we can.

Have you heard from W. J.'s record since we saw you.

(Not recently.)

---

510. He did have an inexpensive watch. Both father and brother remember this. The father could not describe it, but the brother says it was a Seth Thomas watch bought because it was good and yet inexpensive. Inquiry shows that he did freckle.

511. The name Linnie is not quite correct. The brother Sylvester knew a Lennie Ellis and was associated with her in Lawrence, Mass. Her real name was Leland, but he always called her Lennie.

512. Sylvester's father had a little "black and tan" dog of whom Sylvester was very fond. The name was not Jack or Jock and in no way resembled these names. It is evident guessing. But brother and father recognized the dog at once from the description and regard it as an excellent piece of evidence. The dog had short hair and a few white markings on him, and short legs and ears.

Is there not something more to come.

(Yes, I have not had time to ask about the last incident. I expect to do so before I return next week.)

He does not seem troubled but he asked, Oh about Sylvester again. hear a bell [read 'Bill', hand paused and I read 'well'] bell. It was almost the last sound swch [apparently started to write 'Sylvester' and then took up 'which'] he heard.

(Yes.)

Do you know how the light heard a bell before the sitting.

(She did not mention it.)

[I was thinking of the subliminal messages and had forgotten what I have explained in the note at the beginning of this sitting.]

Did she not say she had bells in her ears.

(No, but I shall ask her when she returns.)

al [all] right. Goodbye. [Pencil fell.] [Note 513.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Who is grandma?

(Whose grandmother?)

His grandmother. She is here.

(Whose grandmother is here?)

His. He says so.

(Who says it?)

I don't know. [pause.] Do you know any one they call Ves?

(Yes.)

Well Ves says it. Now that's good isn't it?

(Yes, does he recall the husband of Ida?)

[Pause.] I don't know. [Pause.] Tisn't Will. Do you know? [Pause.]

(Well pretty close.)

Pretty close to Will. William. It isn't that is it? [Pause.]

Does that begin with S too?

(No.)

---

513. It is probable that the bell of the train was the last thing the young man heard. Compare note at beginning of the sitting, where Mrs. C. thought she heard a bell which in reality, did not ring. It is possible that it was one of those transmitted memories which was commented on previously in connection with the names of Mr. Myers and Professor James, pp. 189 and 270.

I want to say Bill. [Pause.]

(What would you say?)

It sounds like Bill or Billy. It wouldn't be William. Is it Billy.

(Yes.) [Reached for my hand and I took it.]

Do you know Billy. (Yes.) Did you ever walk with him?

(Yes.) you were out in the country in the road. (Yes.) Awfully funny. Did you ever kill a snake with him?

(I don't remember.)

It looks like that. He don't look like you. (No.) I think he is lighter than you, not big. Do you know. [Pause and a rather violent cough and recovered normal consciousness, after manifesting considerable muscular action in the hand I held.] [Note 514.]

I then asked Mrs. C. whether she remembered anything she had told me before she went in and she said she did not. I read over the few references to an envelope and she recalled these then. Further inquiry if she had heard a bell brought the story already narrated at the beginning.

I tried to be as careful as possible in connection with the effort to get the name of Mr. Smead whom I had in mind when I asked my question about the husband of Ida. How far it may be attributed to guessing must be left to the reader, but his name was not William and yet he was called Billy.

---

514. Sylvester was commonly called Vester, not Ves. His grandmother is dead. His brother's name was not given in response to request during the automatic writing. Here the attempt is to give it spontaneously. I had asked for it because it was very unusual and I knew it would make a good point. His name is Willis, and Sylvester always called him Billy when living and also through Mrs. Smead. This explains the variations and play of Mrs. C. in her efforts. "Tisn't Will" and "It wouldn't be William" are good hits, and apparently the question whether it began with "S" is pertinent as the medium possibly caught the "s" sound in connection with what seemed like "Will." But she finally got it correctly with a doubt in her own mind and I recognized it.

Of course I knew "Billy" well, and had taken a walk with him in a New Hampshire town to a mountain top. Neither one of us remembers assuredly whether we killed a snake on that trip. Mr. Smead has not even a vague memory of it. I have a haunting feeling that we did, but I am too uncertain about it to affirm it. Mr. Smead is not so large as I am.

April 21st, 1911.

In the course of some conversation Mrs. C. remarked that only recently she had desired money, as she saw such good chances to do good in a large way. I happened to reply that we could never do people any good with money or anything else unless they desired that good. Her reply was that she thought nothing could be done for any one in any field unless they desired it and that desire was the first step in all salvation. This remark suggests a subjective source for the message the previous day on that point.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 22nd, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

It is funny, but I used to see people around me. Now I hear names. I keep hearing Allie. [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

What does Selah, Selah, Selah mean? Amen?

(Something like it.) [Note 515.]

[Pause for some time and something like a slight groan.]

[Black pencil given and motion of hand led me to change it to a soft yellow pencil, suspecting that I might hear from Prof. James. Sequel shows I was wrong.]

Who has got hold of my finger?

(I don't know.)

It feels just like needles sticking into it. Do you know what I am thinking?

(No.)

I have been thinking the subconscious is the real self. By and by we shall have to judge people by the subconscious. It is a little farther back from the surface. Just as when we see a pimple we don't doctor the skin we doctor the blood. When we doctor people we talk to the subconscious not to the consciousness, to make them good. That is why hypnotism is helpful in medicine and morals. Do you know what I mean?

---

515. The name Allie has no recognizable significance. Nor can I discover any reason for the reference to the Hebrew word Selah.

(Yes.)

It gets nearer the throne of identity. Real identity has conversation with people in all spheres of life as we develop. That is enough for me to say. I keep you busy writing. [Pause and pencil thrown down. Another inserted.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Here we are again this morning ready for more experiments of the same nature as the last two if that be agreeable to you.

(Certainly.)

[Pause.] The light began [read 'begins'] began to come to the communicator yesterday just as we were obliged to cease. That is he began to feel accustomed to the method and to be easier [not read.] easier in his ways.

(Good.)

If we can get the right line [read 'time' and hand pointed till read correctly.] we can work quickly [read 'quietly' first and then 'greatly' and hand pointed but I did not read.] quickly but when we do not get it at once of course it takes time.

It makes little difference who communicates if the communication is good and clear and evidential.

(Yes I understand.)

The group used to bring people who would add to the knowledge and eclat of the work because of their reputation and fitness but many of them had not that first requisite of a disciple [disciple] of truth the power to lose self. That is the secret for in losing one finds [read 'fails'] finds. The old Bible text [read 'and'] text: If a man would find himself he must first lose himself is perfectly true in this instance. A self [erased.] self conscious spirit makes the worst communicator. But when self consciousness is lost the conversation [read 'consecration'] conversation is clear and natural and [pause.] takes the shape of evidence as all mutual [read 'natural' and hand pointed.] mutual [pause till read.] conversation must do. Have I made plain my thought.

(Yes perfectly.) [Note 516.]

---

516. The message here is another intimation of the fact that the messages, to come easily, must be the result of natural and automatic mental processes. Cf. pp. 511, 594.

Your father is here this morning and seems rather anxious to send a message so I will see what he has to say.

(Good.)

These are epoch making days for P. R. S. you know. (Yes.) and he is interested in it.

Do you know anything about an old spring a spring of water. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

I am walking away from the old house toward the woods and not far into the deep wood I see a damp [read 'clump' and hand pointed till correctly read.] place where mosses grew and I hear a little sound of running water and there I discover a little spring bubbling up with the water clear as crystal. Do you know anything about this.

(I think so. Tell more details.)

I see some yellow dirt or sand around it and sometimes the water is quite yellow. It looks more as if iron were in the water. I see a man it is your father stoop and drink from that spring. It does not seem to be used for anything especial like bottling... like [read 'use' first time.] no [answer to reading and denying that it was used for bottling.] but it is known by the family and used sometimes by the members of it.

(Yes, does he remember a man by the name of Saville?)

Yes he does, at least the look on his face is a look of recognition. I see some peculiar little formations there as if all about this spring were forms which had become a part of the spring by the running water. Were there two springs.

(Yes.)

I see another and that is different water. strange when they are not far apart but they are quite different. The last one is softer and warmer and has more grasses about it and I think is a little lower [not read.] lower. It looks that way to me. [Note 517.]

---

517. This account of the two springs is remarkable. There are certain errors in details, but the essential features are perfectly accurate. The first spring described was what we called a sulphur spring, the water being saturated with sulphide of iron. It was situated near a small stream and at a bend in it which was caused by its running up against the side of a hill, which gave the place the appearance of a formation of rocks, but it was only

I see a road not far of [off] while I am at the lower spring. Do you know about this. It is a road or a well beaten path for I see cattle [read 'callie'] cattle cows and hear a bell as if on a cow. Did you have a cow with a bell on its neck.

(I think so at one time.)

It was not for a long time because your father would not be bothered by any high jumping cow. The cow with a bell also has a pice [piece] of wood or something like that. It is a cow of nomadic habits I think, a sort of wandering jewess.

(Yes.)

Your father always had his own ideas about live stock and all the work on a farm. [Note 518.]

Do you know any one by the name of Betsy.

(Yes.)

Is she connected with the father in any way.

(Yes, tell me.)

I will if I can but I give you the name just as my superior officer J. P. [Jennie P.— Whirlwind.] gave it to me. She stands like a sentinel and picks locks and does whatever she can do by fair means or foul.

(Good.)

She seems to think that she has a special mission for you. Well to return to Betsy. It is a name which recalls earlier days

clay. The place was low damp and swampy ground. There were no unusual mosses there or any unusual amount of any moss, but the ground was as is described. The water ran over the stones into the stream. There was no sand, but the deposit made the water look yellow. A little farther up the stream and higher on the bank, not lower as stated in the message, there was another spring surrounded by grasses and of soft clear water without any iron in it. It was always a matter of surprise to my father, as well as to myself, that two springs so close to each other should have different water. The two springs were about one hundred feet apart. We used both springs, not for family purposes, but when at work in the fields. They were both at the edge of the woods and far from the house. They were the only springs on the farm and half a mile from the house. They were never used for bottling purposes.

518. There was a lane or path not far from these springs to the stream and by which the cattle went to water. We did not have bells on the cows. But father certainly did not like jumping cows and he had often to make various types of yokes, wooden and mechanical devices to prevent them from jumping over the fences into the grain fields.

to him and I see a woman with dark eyes and very energetic and quick manners and no sign of age at the time I am speaking of her but she went away that is a strange statement but she was separated at one time from your father. Do you know what is meant by that. Did they have st... [erased.] hom [home ?] together at one time and then separate ones later.

(I shall have to inquire about that as my memory is not sure.) [The fact was that I was not sure of the meaning of the statement and did not wish to create an impression one way or the other.] [Note 519.]

all right. I am in a place where they are together and I want to go up some stairs in an ell or shed. It looks like a part of a set of buildings but is near the end and there are a few stairs up to a sort of loft or room where many things are kept and there I se [see] all sorts of things in the way of dred [not read.] dried food stuff. If I am susing [evidently started to write 'saying' and simply changed to 'using' and was read 'seizing'] the right ... using ... words. It is all new to me.

(Yes, go ahead.) [Note 520.]

butt [but] I se [see] some beans spotted [read 'spitted'] or ... spotted ... what is a cranberry bean. what is ... do you know (No, go ahead.) these beans are [a] sort of cranberry color

---

519. I had two Aunts by the name of Betsy, and it took some time to clear up here which one of them was meant. Had I known the pertinence of the allusion to the separation I might have identified her at once. The one meant was Aunt Betsy Cherry, as later indicated, and there was a sort of estrangement between the families at one time due to the social ambition of my grandmother, the Cherrys having no such tastes. This I did not know and learned only from my Aunt Eliza. The allusion to their living together meant nothing to me, tho I encouraged it for what it might be worth, knowing that there was a time when it was possible. But it possibly refers to the fact that they were at one time on better terms than at another, which was true, as remarked. She certainly had blue eyes.

It may also be worth noticing a fact which I did not know until after this sitting. My stepmother tells me that this Aunt wanted to come and live with her and my father in her last days. This was long after I had left home.

520. The account of the shed and dried food stuffs would apply to many people in those early times, including my father's family, but this description does not identify any special person or place.

and white and are spread around on a board or bench. I smell [read 'smile'] smell apples dried and I see corn and what are these yellow things they look like squash.

(Go ahead.) [Note 521.]

I wonder if they are pumpkins (Go ahead.) and I see [see] some small things which I do not know the name of. They seem like black fruit [not read.] fruit black cherries [cherries] or something of that sort

(Why does he mention cherries?)

[I had thought that perhaps the word *cherries* had been suggested as a symbol for the name of the Betsy, as her name was Cherry, but the context shows I had no reason for this suspicion at the time and the sequel shows the same thing.]

[Pause.] Wait and I will see. There is some especial significance but the cherries which were his especial thought are larger and better colored than these things I see. Do you know anything which was made of cherries which he liked. [I thought of cherry pie of which he was fond, but kept silent.] Did he make any cherry drink.

(Yes.)

rum, cherry rum. I think it is. Do you know.

(Yes, I do.)

I see him as fussy as any old distiller over the cherries and he believes in it for sickness and he says with a smile, It is always handy to have in the house in case of sickness and death and weddings and in fact there is hardly any occasion that is not helped by a glass of cherry rum.

So much for you Hyslop. I did not know you were the son of a moonshiner but I think you are.

[I laughed in recognition.] [Note 522.]

521. My father was fond of beans and raised many kinds of them for food. He was especially fond of a spotted bean, red and white, which he called the "cranberry bean". He often dried apples spread about on boards in the sun, and corn in the same way. I do not remember drying any squash in this manner. But he often ripened cucumbers in this manner for their seed, and in a picture such as comes in the messages of Mrs. C. the yellow cucumbers might well be mistaken for squash.

522. The cherries referred to were wild cherries and were very dark in color, black rather than red when perfectly ripe. It is true that the black

There is a little mill or grinding machine something like a coffee mill that [not read.] had ... that ... to do with these things.

(Go ahead.)

I see some dark juices or liquid coming out of that. There is a press somewhere but it is not up with these dry things. It seems to be down stairs somewhere but that is used [read 'best' tho clear enough.] for ... used ... something else. [Note 523.]

There is another fruit which is made into drink but I don't know that. It is a berry.

(Go ahead.)

It looks small [not read correctly.] and ... small and dark. I think it is not grapes but [read 'and' and hand pointed till correctly read.] I a... am not sure. I see a field and a low wall of bushes and green and then some of these dark things are gathered and put [read 'yet' and hand pointed till read 'put'.] to use.

(Yes.) [Thinking of blackberries.]

It is new to me but it sounds like berries. Do you know about them. It is autumn not spring or summer. Do you know.

(I am not sure. Go ahead.)

What are alderberries.

(Good, I understand.)

Do you know whether he used them or not.

(Yes he did.) [Thinking of elder-berry wine.]

---

cherries which were "his especial thought" were larger than these and were black Ox Hearts, which he tried to raise, not very successfully. But he often gathered wild cherries for making what he called Cherry Bitters, not Cherry Rum, as called here. It is especially interesting to see the half apology for the use of them in this way. My father was a teetotaler in the use of raw liquors. Neither he nor any one in the community used rum of any kind for weddings or at funerals, as at Irish wakes. He was too much of a Prohibitionist to tolerate this. But he made this Cherry Bitters for sickness and especially for a tonic which he would take in the spring. In making it he was as fussy as any old distiller, but not in any unpleasant sense, only as one very particular about making the tonic.

523. The "grinding machine" referred to is evidently his hand cider press. The hopper was exactly like many a coffee grinder. It was kept down stairs and the dried fruits up stairs, in fact the latter were often dried up stairs on the roof. Evidently the effort here was to get the identity of the cider press fixed by allusion to the dried apples, the machine not being recognized by the subliminal of Mrs. C.

That is all right then. (Yes.) He was afraid that I was making the mistake of seeing blackberries (I understand.) but these were different. I know blackberries and have eaten them and would not make so much fuss over the name but the other was beyond me.

(I understand.) [Note 524.]

Your father is having the time of his life recaling [recalling] the old days. He was a mixture of a household man and mayor of the country.

(I understand.)

He knew what he knew and knew [not legible.] knew it well. (Yes.) [Note 525.]

Now who is this man named John or Joe. I can't tell which but the last name like Rideout or Ryder [first not read.] Rideout or Ryder or Ryker some name like that, a fat man with ruddy face and blue eyes who lived beyond your father's place and used [not read.] to ride ... used ... ride by in an old wagon [not read.] wagon. Do you know him.

(Not yet. Go ahead.)

a place beyond where there were several boys yes [to reading.]

(No.)

and the man who was the head of the family was a fat man. Do you know.

(I knew a fat man, but not beyond my father's place unless it be in another direction that I first thought of and the man's name was not Ryder.)

[I thought of an uncle who was husband of one of the Betsys.]

---

524. My father also made Elder-berry wine, not Alder-berry. The confusion about autumn or spring or summer was probably due to the attempt to make the matter clearer. The wine was made of the blossoms which came in the early summer. The berries which ripened in the fall had another use which is not mentioned here.

525. My father was a remarkable mixture of the domestic and public type. He would not accept important offices, but was township clerk a long time, and was as much consulted by citizens as if he were the ruler of the country around, and what he knew he knew thoroughly, whether in politics or theology.

Wh... [superposing.] What about John. Was it John.

(No.)

We are not thinking of the same one. now let me try to make this plain.

(Good.)

I see [see] a [pause and Indian or French.] long low building agais [pause.] nst [against] the sky line as I drive home from the ... what is the Pains. Did you have a place they called the Plains.

(No.)

I thought it sounded like that. It is as I drive [not read.] drive home from some place where I have been on business and as I approach home I look beyond and see the building I have told you of. It is a little higher or seems so than the home where I go in with your father. Then as I stand in front of your house I see this old wagon come out of that yard and down the road and past me and in it is this fat man which I have described.

(Yes, if I do not recall him, who will do it?)

[Pause.] Just a minute. There is another man who can remember. Have you still some relatives in the West.

(Yes.) [Note 526.]

---

526. No one is able to identify this man Ryder, not even my Aunt Eliza whose memory of neighbors and relatives goes further back than that of any other accessible person in that locality.

Nevertheless the incidents point rather distinctly to a man, that my father knew well and might remember because of his peculiar character in that neighborhood. His name was John, but the surname had no resemblance to Ryder, Ryker or Rideout, and no ordinary error in phonetics would account for the mistake. I could explain the error, however, which would not be due to a mistake of a name but of an incident which, if told, would be very strong. My stepmother recalls him and the incident. He lived "beyond my father's place". He was a fat man with ruddy face. I cannot recall his eyes. He passed out of my personal knowledge as early as 1877. He lived in a low house beyond the village which was within a mile and a half of us. This country was much like a plain. It was undulating until we reached the bluff on which this village was situated and beyond that the country was flat and even swampy, so that the description of the plains fits the place. The man used to drive past our house in an open spring wagon, and the incident which makes the remembrance of him interesting is not told. My stepmother remembers the facts more clearly than I do.

This name Ryder was given in one of my Piper sittings on Feb. 28th,

Some one there will know about this. It seemed to your father that you would know but it is all right. Now here is [a] thing I am not familiar with. It looks something like a [pause.] lantern but is not like one I have seen but I see [see] it hung out [read 'on'] out where there are cattle and it is to throw light while doing some work among them. (Yes.) It is not very large but it looks like tin (Good.) and gives about as much light as a piece of paper hung in the dark.

(I understand.)

It is a sort of lamp but there is a way to pull a string or what looks like a string and get more light. Do you have any idea what I mean.

(The string is not clear but the lamp is.)

Is it a round wick (Good.) It looks like a stng [string] [not read at once.] str... to me but J. P. [Jennie P— or Whirlwind.] said write wick.

(Yes, I was thinking of the way it was opened and did not think of the wick.)

Do you recall ever going out to the barn in the night with your father to take care of any sick creature.

(Go ahead.)

I see this light flickering on the wall if that is what you call it and I see a horned creature and I see a bottle of something put in the mouth of the creature and I see you hold the light after

---

1906, and it was so closely associated with the attempt to give the name of my cousin Robert McClellan that I took it as a mistake for him. I would not have done so but for the correction made by the communicator when he gave the names Rogers and Rogars and said it was not Ryder. Cf. *Proceedings* Am. S. P. R., Vol. IV, pp. 2, 642-643. No incidents were given in connection and nothing said that would identify the man, and its apparent mistake for my cousin led me to ignore any other possible significance, to say nothing of the situation which offered no means of suspecting any meaning. But here the same name comes with enough to suggest who is meant and my cousin and this man become separate personalities in the previous Report where I had supposed them to be the same for reasons just explained.

There is a special reason why my father should mention this "ruddy faced John", a reason of which I knew nothing until my stepmother told me the incident when I inquired whether there was any such person as described. I must not now tell the incident, as no living person knows it but herself and myself. The name here given as "Ryder", tho not his name, suggests the incident which would well prove my father's identity.

a while to see something else as if the light hung up was not in the right place and in the morning the creature is better.

(Good.)

It is a big creature and important to save it. (Yes.) That is only one [not read.] only one of a thousand things your father has in his mind to recal [recall] for you.

(I understand.) [Note 527.]

I se [see] now a most peculiar looking little animal. It looks like a rabbit but a wild one and is eating away on something in the field. It seems some growing thing. Now let me tell you or ask you. Was there ever a fire in the woods or back land or some place like that and these little creatures were driven out but they became a pest to growing things.

(I do not recall, but the fire is probable. Tell more details.)

I se [see] something that looks [like] [I accidentally read this word before it was written and so the control omitted it.] fresh corn or peas. It is something with kernels [read 'kennels'] kernels that fall out of something as the little thing sits up and eats it. It may be a squirrel.

(Good. Go ahead.)

but whatever it is it is a great pest and causes your father no end of trouble among his guv [evidently started to write 'growing', but erased it.] crops and there is something like a manufactured trap which is invented for the occasion by some of you either your father or the boys and there is great joy when the pest begins [not read.] begins to disappear. It is unusually bad one autumn when things are growing because of fires in the summer. Do you know anything about this.

---

527. We had an old fashioned tin lantern, perforated in an ornamental way and the light used was a wick candle. We did not "pull a string to get more light", but rather cut or pulled off the burnt end of the wick for the purpose. I do not recall hanging it where the cattle were. We usually kept it at the house. There were times probably when it hung in the barn where the cattle were.

I recall clearly enough going out to the barn, sometimes at night, with this lantern to look after the stock. I remember doctoring a bull with a bottle as described, except that I do not recall that it was at night or that this lantern was used on that occasion. We also doctored cattle in the daytime, so that the detail of using the lantern on this special occasion is not remembered.

(I think so, but it is vague in my memory.) [Note 528.]

all right. Do you remember a steel [read 'stick' and 'slat'] trap ... steel ... that was later introduced in place of the hand made box traps.

(Yes.)

I guess your father is on the right track. (Yes.) all right. He does as well as any living person could I think.

(Yes.)

Do you know Henry, yes. [to reading the name.]

(Henry who?)

I get no more [superposing.] I get no more only that. (All right.) I always try to give you all I can.

(I believe that, but I sometimes interrupt to see if things cannot go on a particular line.) [Note 529.]

Do you know anything about pigs. (Yes.) black pigs (Black and white.) yes but the black were so unusual I wrote of them. The white ones everybody has. (Yes.) I see a whole lot of them, the mixed [not read.] one ... mixed ones some white some black and some black and white and I see them in an open pen out of doors. It seems as if it is quite a distance from the dwelling as if a whole load of [pause.] [probably tried to say the word

---

528. We were bothered both with squirrels and muskrats on the farm in regard to growing crops. We made traps for the muskrats, but not for the squirrels. No one remembers any forest fires connected with these or with anything else. There was little trouble from forest fires in that locality in my time. The incidents are not clear here.

If father is trying to mention the "prairie dogs" which he mentioned through Mrs. Smead and whose habits and manners are properly described here, I quite understand the incident, except that I do not recognize their relation to forest fires. They might have some relation to a prairie fire within his recollections. Through Mrs. Smead he mentioned them more clearly and he knew about them on his western farm which he had in earlier days. But we did not trap them. In fact we did not live on that farm. The pest with us was rats rather than "prairie dogs" and we trapped them in both ways described, with wooden traps of our own making and steel traps when they came into use.

529. We had steel traps which were a substitute for the old wooden traps but they were used almost entirely for rats.

Henry was the name of a favorite hired hand on the place. I do not know any reason for mentioning him in connection with the traps. It is apparently an independent association.

'corn') food was carried near the enclosure and then fed as needed to these [pause.] hogs.

(Yes.)

It was quite a business in itself. (Yes.) and there was a great time when the slaughter day came. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes I do.)

It is a sight to see these hogs pled [piled] up for the market. I mean dead and dressed. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, tell how they got to market.)

Do you near ['mean' and so read] how the bodies were taken. I see them piled up and covered over and I don't know what the conveyance is, but strange do not see horses. They were not carried by oxen were they,

(Go ahead.)

I am walking along slowly by the side of the team in which they [for 'they'] are put. it is open and I can see them.

(I understand.)

Then there was a lot of something which looks like liver [not read.] liver Yes [to reading.] do you know if there was something like that left behind to be dressed and eaten by the family.

(Yes I understand.)

It is on a big board and near it is a barrel of water or liquid [not read.] liquid. I hear a splash now and then. There was a good preparation for winter about that time. (Yes.) Look at the sausage and smel [smell] it cooking with hot Johnny cake. it was fine. Early frosts in the morning and the smells I have spoken of give an appetite you would be ashamed of now. No fasting in those days. It makes me hungry to think of it. I think I must go now. I believe we have done good work have we not. [Note 530.]

---

530. This whole passage about raising hogs and butchering is a very accurate account of events in my father's life, with unimportant slips in details. I must give the facts from my side.

No special importance attaches to the fact that black pigs were a part of the incident, tho true, but they were fattened in "an open pen out of doors", perhaps also unimportant as it is the usual habit, but it is not so usual to have it at a distance from the dwellings, which it usually was with us, always so when they were fattened for the market, and in this account it

(Yes you have, and I shall ask only one question. Was that Betsy related to the reference to the cherries?)

Yes I think it was a connection in the making. Do you know if they called her aunt Betsy.

(Yes, Betsy what?)

I don't know. Her name was not C—— was it.

(That depends.)

I don't know. Do you know. I thought it was aunt Betsy's

---

is apparent to me that two different types of events are interfused. The mental pictures of them could not escape interfusion in my father's mind as the raising of our own meat and that for the market were closely connected in his life. The "food" or corn was carried near the enclosure and kept there and fed at the proper times. "It was quite a business in itself" as it was one of the important features of our farm life. We butchered both for our own meat and for the market, but again here the message easily conveys an error. We did not often butcher the whole of the raising for the market, and so did not often haul them to market as is indicated, tho we did this a few times and found it did not pay as well as the usual method of driving or hauling them alive. But we always butchered some for the sale of hams and bacon, and hence the picture of their being piled up for market might well arise from the notion of the quantity of them.

They were not hauled to market with oxen. At this point the picture begins to change and all spontaneously to the correct one. The hogs were usually driven alive to market and this is evidently the reason that the subconscious was puzzled by not seeing horses. They had to be driven slowly and a team was always with us to take in the largest ones which may have given out in walking. They were then put into it, as indicated.

At this point the scene changes to the results of butchering. My father was fond of liver wurst and so kept the livers from the butchering and made up large quantities of it for our winter meat. This enabled him to sell much of the pork that would otherwise have been used. It was packed away in stone jars, not in a barrel as indicated here. It was the hams, side meat or bacon and other portions of the swine that were packed in the barrel, or rather hogshead in brine. We also made our sausage, as indicated, but this would be a natural association to anyone. Johnny cake did not figure in the eating of the meat any more than other bread, perhaps not so much.

This part of the incident should be compared with the same one given through Mrs. Smead. Cf. p. 109. They articulate with each other completely and make, as it were, a whole story with more or less separate incidents for each part. They throw light upon the method of communicating and the difficulties of cross reference.

Cherry Wine. But it may have been Aunt Betsy Cherry. I do not mean Cherry Wine. I mean Cherry Rum. [Note 531.]

(I understand. There was an aunt Betsy Cherry and there was another Betsy. Which one did he mean?)

Aunt Betsy Cherry. We will hear from the other some later time. Do you know a young lady who was buried in her bridal gown.

(I may, but if I do not another will.)

I see one standing her[e] and so eager to send a word of love [love] to him that I just ventured to say that much. It is too late to take up the case now.

(I understand.) [Note 532.]

Goodbye for this week.

(Yes, I shall be one day later next week, as I shall serve the cause in another way.)

That is all right. We sut [suit] ourselves to your demands. We have more time than money and we must serve the cause some way so we give our time.

(I understand.)

G. P. All your friends send love to you particularly Mary.

---

531. The Aunt Betsy was correctly named here. The name was Cherry, but I almost suggested it. I did this on purpose, and the suspicion that she was the maker of the cherry wine shows that the suggestion did not directly work. But I do not attach so much importance to this as I do to the fact that I wanted the reader to see the difficulty in getting a name when the first mention of her was closely associated with the message about the "Cherry Bitters" and yet, in spite of the ease with which the common word "cherry" came through it was difficult to get it as a proper name.

532. For a long time I was unable to verify the incident about the young lady who was buried in her bridal gown. The only person who even could possibly verify it at first denied that anything had ever happened in the lives of the Aunts I here had in mind. But she incidentally mentioned the following facts. My grandmother was a Virginian and came to Ohio in the early days, perhaps prior to 1821. My Aunt Eliza remarked in her letter that my grandmother and her brothers and sisters used to tell a story of a young bride in Virginia who had been buried in her bridal gown. It is possible that I may have heard the story as a very young child in the talk of my grandmother, but I recall nothing of it. A detail of some interest is that both of these Aunt Betsys and the husband of one of them came from Virginia. The association of the incident is therefore correct.

(Give my love to all and especially to her.)  
and the group sends greetings.

[*Subliminal.*]

I see a clock [Pause.] hanging on the wall and a little shelf on it. Did you father ever have a clock?

(Yes.)

On the wall and no shelf on it?

(I don't recall.)

It looks like a little eagle on top of it. [Pause and cough.] You haven't coughed this morning. (No.) You are losing yours. [Pause.]

Oh it is awful funny. Do you know anything about a big chair that a man close to you used to sit in? It is a black chair. \* \* \* \* [spoke so rapidly that I lost a few words here.] one carpet covered, the other black, both stuffed and one like hair cloth. A man is sitting in them all the time. He is tired \* \* \* \* [Few words missed, but they indicated he was an invalid.] Was that your father?

(Yes.)

He was sick a long time before he went away. He had a little way of picking his fingers half nervously. Oh dear! It was awful sad. He looked so helpless almost.

I hear a voice say, What is *non compos mentis*?

(Who says that?)

I hear a man's voice like your father. Was he that?

(No.)

Who was?

(I don't know.) [Note 533.]

Goodbye.

---

533. We never had a clock on the wall without a shelf. Ours stood on the mantel piece. But father did have a big black chair in which he sat a great deal and also another often used. One was covered as described, but not with carpet. It was, however, covered with striped cloth that resembled carpet. The other was black and without covering. The covered one was not of hair cloth. Earlier we had a few chairs covered with hair cloth, but they were not serviceable enough to last long and disappeared very early in my life. My father was an invalid a long time and my stepmother says that he did have a nervous way of picking his fingers but it was not a

April 22nd, 1911.

After the sitting I asked Mrs. C. what she knew about pigs and she replied that she knew nothing. She said, laughingly, that she knew there were pigs and that she had seen a few in her life. She mentioned two that she saw on her uncle's place. Asked what she knew about taking them to market she replied that she knew nothing and that her uncle never sold any. She is a New Englander where pigs are not raised for the market.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 28th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[We talked some time before the sitting, Mrs. C. having indicated what she had heard about Mrs. Piper from a Miss or Mrs. Goddard. It was to the effect that she had been injured by the work of Dr. Hodgson and had to rest for two years. Mrs. C. said she had strongly denied that the work of Dr. Hodgson could injure her, as he had only three sittings a week with her, and a larger number would not hurt a medium when rightly managed. This Mrs. C. had heard only last Monday (the 24th) and she said, in response to my query whether she had ever learned anything more about Mrs. Piper, that she had not and that no one had gossiped about Mrs. Piper to her save on this occasion when she met the lady at the rooms of Miss Whiting who was an intimate friend of Mrs. C.]

[*Subliminal.*]

---

marked characteristic. He was never *non compos mentis*, however, as suggested. He never lost his intellectual vigor. My opinion is that there is some confusion here with a neighbor, confirmed by what came in a later sitting, and it may be that the reference to the clock and sitting in the chairs applied to this neighbor; for he was both an invalid and *non compos mentis*, and sat about the house almost the whole time. Whether the chairs he used are correctly described here I do not know and it is not possible now to ascertain. It is more than probable that the nervous picking of the fingers would also apply to him. My father knew this family well and all about the life and habits of the man and the man was almost as helpless as a child in his latter days. I have referred to the coincidences with my father's life to show the limitations of the incident as evidence.

I'm going. I just feel as if they were pulling me right away.  
[Pause.] [Distress in the face and then a cough, and a long pause.]

[Groans and pause.] I can't seem to get through to the [pause.] people. [Pause.]

Oh yes. Do you know any one by the name of Beebe. B-e-e-b-e?

(I think so.)

[Having in mind a man in connection with Columbia University when I was there, and also vaguely some one by that name in my boyhood, but not distinctly recalled until copying this record.]

You know there is some one else and some one in spirit land. The woman is alive and the man in spirit land. Mrs. Beebe, Beebe. Is that the way they call it?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Oh! The name sounds like Leonidas. Is there any one like that?

(I don't know.)

Do you know any one by that name?

(No, but I may find out.)

Well it is Leonidas or Lionel. It is in the Beebe group.  
[Pause.] [Reached for pencil and one given and rejected after holding a moment. A new one inserted.] [Note 534.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* \* \* \* Damn [not read at time.] it. why Damn it all.

(All right.)

[Pause.]

(Take your time.)

Whose time is [read 'those times'] is it. [Pause.] am I a fool [not read.] fool to monkey [not read.] monkey with this proposition [read 'imposition'] proposition.

(That depends on what you can accomplish.)

I don't believe a thing in the business at all and what in the

---

534. These names could obtain no verification. They are not recognizably relevant and without details would not signify much if they were relevant.

devil I am writing to you for I don't know but it seems like a good joke on you to come and tell you so.

(Go ahead.)

Who the devil are you.

(I am a man experimenting to see if there are spirits in the world after death. What do you say?)

Death what do you know about death. I am not dead. I am alive and damn it I cannot get any one to talk to me. You don't talk any better than the rest [not read.] rest of the fools. [Pause.] I wish I could break open a few heads and I would see something doing. Someone would pay attention to me I think. I am [pause.] no I won't tell you who I am. You would make a fool fuss if I did. [Pause.]

(What makes you think that?)

• Why should I think anything else.

(You have no reason, so far as I know, to think that I would make a fuss.)

[Pause.] I suppose you are one of them fine Christian missionaries but can't get me to sign any pledge. You may as well move on.

(Why do you dislike pledges?)

What's the good of em. You do not want to drink as much before you sign as you do afterwards. It's a voice calling you to the bar to see if you can stand the smell and not get drunk. Who sent me to you anyway.

(I don't know. Can't you tell?)

I aint so green as I look. I suppose a cop got me but that is all right. I aint drunk all the time. You can't book [read 'look'] me [pause. apparently for me to read the word correctly.] ... book. [Pause.] frank [pause.] B [pause.] rown. [Pause.] Harlem [not read.] [Pencil fell.] [Note 535.]

[Change of Control.]

[First pencil rejected and then before I could insert the second the hand seized mine and held it awhile.] All right Hyslop.

---

535. This episode will have to explain itself. Its character in no way represents any normal life of Mrs. C. and the person could not be identified unless through the police records of New York City, and that would be a

We are here and it was our plan to try the experiment of identity on a man we found who seemed unconscious of his own state. We will keep him in our [pause.] eye until we can find another opportunity to let him write or be helped in another way. We did not know just what he would say or do but gave him a chance to express without fear but the old fear seemed to overcome him. He was rather free with his epithets at first but the atmosphere made him conscious of himself. I believe that is the way to change conditions for all darkened souls. Let the light shine and the soul will be illuminated and begin to grow. We could trust you for that sort of an experiment when we would not be able to trust another.

(I understand. Do you know the last word he wrote after Frank Brown?)

Ha... [superposing and hand pulled down.] Harlem. Yes [to reading.] we wanted the full address but those people always fight shy of addresses.

(Yes.)

In treat [real, apparently started with letter 't' to write 'true'] life they are afraid of arrest and I presume the same spirit was in him today.

We have a good report to give you of C. W.

(Good.) [Sittings last Monday and Tuesday for him.]

That was a good experiment we tried with him and it turned out all right. You see he had the opportunity to come here and that made an opening for further work but you will readily see that we had to keep closed mouths and disfigure our countenances in order to fool the controlling [controlling] spirit when the sittings were going on or the full value would have been lost.

(Yes.) [Note 536.]

---

task too great for the value of any success with that name. It is quite possibly a true incident. Its interest lies in what G. P. says about it immediately following, and represents one of the frequent incidents in the history of this problem with which many experimenters are familiar. There is an important problem in it for the future.

536. My inquiries for the confirmation of the incidents given in proof of the identity of Carroll D. Wright had so frequently turned out negative that I resolved on another experiment which would test the issue fairly well,

J . . . W. J. says that I came near wrecking the whole business when I appeared for she knew me and spoke my name and could not connect me with the case. Do you know to what I refer.

(Not yet, as I have not seen the records.)

Let me tell you then for it will be my first play. S—— you know to whom I refer. (Yes.) saw me and said G. P. of the Piper group was here and asked C. W's daughter if she knew me but of course she did not and the stenographer had to say That is all right: I think I can understand, and so the matter dropped and I dropped out of sight pretty [pretty] quick I can tell you. I think that the first writing experiments here helped the communicator C. W.

(Yes I think so.) [Note 537.]

That is one of the things Richard likes to do. That is to bring a friend and let him interest his family or friends and then

---

even if I did not get any better evidence. I ascertained from the surviving widow that the daughter would probably be glad to help me. I ascertained from her that she would be willing to take a few sittings. Her marriage helped me to conceal her identity more effectively. When she agreed to take the sittings, I said nothing of my plans to Mrs. C., but arranged for two sittings on certain dates to be taken by a friend, not even indicating the sex. They were to be Starlight trances which I did not attend. I arranged for a stenographer without hinting as to the person or sex of the person to be present. I would be in New York, and as I had often arranged for similar sittings for persons not in any way connected with this series of automatic experiments, there was no way to suspect that the game had anything to do with one of my communicators. The plan was carried out and was very successful. The same personality came and told a number of the same incidents and a number of new ones, so that the personality of Carroll D. Wright was identified more distinctly. It was not mentioned in the record of communications that the sitter was a daughter except as implied in the reference to her mother, during the Starlight sittings, where the sitter admitted that she was the daughter of the communicator. That is indicated here and it is correct. Mrs. C. had no possible means of learning the fact.

There is, of course, no verification of the statement about concealing their identity on the occasion, but it is a characteristic conception of the problem which Dr. Hodgson and G. P. would naturally have, seeing my plans, and Mrs. C. is not familiar enough with the fine points of Dr. Hodgson's career to easily fabricate this in the present situation.

537. "S" stands for Starlight, the little control. The record shows that something of the sort did occur.

[read 'their'] have ... then have the work proceed for them. It is an old plan of Imperator's. Do you recall.

(No, because I have not had a chance to see the records, but as far as I can conjecture, that is the fact.)

I tell it to you as a bit of evidence then or cross reference as it may prove [read 'have'] prove.

(Good.)

I know that not infrequently Imperator helped a communicator to send a message which was practically a request for the presence of a friend at a future time. We try to be very explicit in our words and messages that they may have only one interpretation. There is more work to be done in the way of [French.] spirit identity made plain. We desire to have a group of facts on spirit identity stronger than any yet given the world and with that purpose in mind the present arrangement with J. P. and myself has been made and now and [not read.] again ... and ... a slight diversion may occur when some one else wishes to try an experiment of another nature like the Frank Brown one.

(I understand.)

But what you need especially is the identity process. [read 'powers']. You understand. ... process.

(Yes.) [Note 538.]

[A lot of French or Indian gibberish.] That is the advent of Jane. She always brings a host of help of that sort. You understand I know.

(I am not sure of the Jane.)

[I here suspected that Jane was for Jennie P., but had in mind the conjectured person whom I supposed her really to be.]

Jennie P—— I said Jane to be funny.

(Well I had a suspicion that it was Jennie P—— and also that the real name was Jane and wanted to be sure if I were told.)

538. All this about Dr. Hodgson's habit and the plan of Imperator is quite accurate and wholly unknown to Mrs. C. and certainly not even conjecturable from any published material that she had seen. I never knew it or supposed it from the published Reports, but had it *viva voce* from Dr. Hodgson in a private way. It is possible that the incident is not wholly proof against scepticism, but I think it most likely as good a general incident as we have in the record.

I just wrote the advent of Jane to torment her.

(All right.)

She always has some sort of teasing for me and so I returned the compliment. I sometimes forget that you are not perfectly conscious of all that we are doing and saying. The whole thing is so natural that it is hard to believe that you are outside of the gates of Paradise and only getting [getting] glimpses now and again. [Note 539.]

Jennie P.— shows a picture and I must begin. We are getting [getting] quite mechanical in or [so read.] our working and arrangements. it [superposing] it is rather funny but we enjoy it.

I see an old lady with curls at each side of her face. There are more in [so read.] on the back of her head that I can see but there is a small [read 'small'] lace ... small ... I... arrangement on the top of the head and these curls [not read.] curls at the side of the face. The eyes are soft and blue and the skin is soft and fair but rather old looking. She is very quiet and composed and I see a group of people about her connected with you.

(All right. Go ahead.)

The name sounds like [pause.] M [pause.] ora [read 'Moss'.] no Mora or Nora or something of that sort. Do you know an Aunt who looked like that and whose name begins with M or N.

(I do not recall it.)

[Pause.] Just a moment, let me see more. Was there any one connected with your wife who looked like that.

(I am not sure. Go ahead.)

I see your wife step forward as if to claim her and beside her is another younger woman whose name I do not \* \* [evidently intended for 'now' but erased.] now hear. [Note 540.]

539. I quickly caught on the possibility that the name "Jane" was a confirmation of my suspicion that Jennie P. was Jane Austen and sought to have it proved. But reservation and concealment as quickly prevented it, tho leaving the suspicion as strong as before.

Indications, however, in sittings since this record was made are against my suspicion rather decidedly.

540. I did not recognize the person probably meant here in the description, and I wrote to a cousin of my wife's to see if the statements pointed

Do you know anything about making vinegar.

(Somewhat.)

Was there a special brand of vinegar which your father made.

(Yes.) [Note 541.]

[In this answer I meant simply to encourage the communicator to go on, recognizing the fact that father made vinegar, but not any special brand that I knew about.]

Is it not strange for me to leave that dear old lady and talk about vinegar. It is like J. P. to change her course when things do not go right. She does not want to waste any moments and says the old lady can come another time.

(Yes, if it be the person that is possible I should be glad to hear from her, but I am not certain yet.)

Later, perhaps tomorrow when the influence is fresh. Now for the vinegar.

I see a row of casks in a cellar and some damp [read 'clump' questioningly.] damp earth and I catch an odor of acid stuff like vinegar and I see some taken out up a piece of board or plank though [so read and hand pointed until read 'through'.] a door low which one stoops to enter or leave by. It is not a real door but a sort of bulk head arrangement. Do you know about it.

(Go on.)

Near [superposing and read 'was'] it ... near ... as I come out is a large hogshead or barrel of dark wood open at the top and in it water. It seems to stand there all the time as if to catch rain water. Do you know about that.

(I know about the hogshead, but it was not for rain water.)

What is the drip [read 'drop'] drp [drip and so read.] I hear. Do you know.

---

to any one recognizable by her and she replied with the statement that it described accurately my wife's grandmother whom I never saw. Her name was not Mora or Nora, Margaret being the correct name. An Aunt that I knew had curls, but did not wear a cap or have the eyes here described. The grandmother did.

541. My father did make vinegar, but not any special brand of it. He did not succeed in making any money out of it. It is curious to note the consciousness of the absurdity of so abruptly changing the subject and the communicator. The explanation consists with what is said elsewhere.

(No.)

Never mind I will go on. I see these casks from below taken out on a warm spring day. It is all soft and early [read 'easty' then 'earthly'] early spring like walking [read 'waking'] walking [read 'waking' purposely because it looked more like this.] walking about the place but whatever is done with these casks I do not know. There are 3 or 4 of them as if they were taken out for a purpose special [pause.]

(Yes.) [Note 542.]

Do you know a man who was slightly lame who worked sometimes with your father.

(I think so. Go ahead.)

I see a man who limps and has to half hop about in some places when he tries to hurry but he is quick as a flash. Not a very large [read 'lazy', tho written 'laze'] man ... large ... and a man about middle age [read 'size'] age I think [French.] as he turns [not read.] about ... turns ... I see a rough out [not read.] door ... out ... face but a pleasant smile and always [always] a ready hand to do what he can. He sometimes worked around in the spring for that is the way I see him.

(Yes, what complexion had he?)

Rather dark and dark eyes. Do you know.

(Tell me all you can.)

---

542. The vinegar was kept in barrels, but not in the cellar, as I recall it. But my stepmother states that he always kept a barrel or so of it in the cellar and that there was some changing of it from the outside to the cellar. I do not recall this, but it is likely, apart from her testimony. What I recall is the effort to make the large amount of it for sale and kept in barrels in an open shed exposed to the cold of winter which spoiled the vinegar. This probably led to the later policy of keeping it in the cellar where it was warm.

A detail of interest and importance is that, whenever we took a barrel out of the cellar it was "taken out up a piece of board or plank". This had to be put on the stairway of the cellar.

The allusion to the "bulkhead arrangement" and the hoghead are interesting for their proximity to the truth while being erroneous in the form of expression in the first instance and in details in the other. The cellar door might well be compared to a "bulkhead arrangement", as it had to be made in an original way to permit admission to the cellar and the house at the same time. The hoghead of salt pork often stood next to this cellar door and contained the brine for preserving the pork. It was never used for catching rainwater.

You are thinking of a special kind of man. I mean nationality are you not.

(You say.)

He looks different than the rest of you but what it is I cannot now say. I do not know if it is Indian or black dark and foreign.

(Yes it was a negro.)

I could not tell what but I knew it was dark and different but he was the most good natured man to have about and could tell more yarns than a native Indian. He always had something dreadful, some experience of hair lifting strength [not read.] to tell ... interest [not read.] interest to tell. You know that. Your father was the kindest hearted man when work was done but when work was to be done he worked with a will after it was over he would laugh as heartily as any at the stories and experiences of this man. [Note 543.]

Do you know anything about potatoes. Did you raise them. (Yes.)

When I see these casks taken out I see [see] a heap [not read.]

543. This incident about the man that limps is a remarkable one. It refers to the Negro Tom whom I had in mind when my father mentioned the horse named Tom, published in the first Piper Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 423), but not the slightest hint of any such things was there made for any one to work upon, and Mrs. C. had not seen that Report.

This old Negro was a character in the community. He hurt his foot at one time late in his life and was lame after that. He had a rather savage looking face but was as genial and jolly an old fellow as you could meet. He was a ready and excellent hand on the farm and often employed in harvest time. He was an exceedingly good natured man and was fond of father and father fond of him and his stories which were certainly very funny ones of the man's experiences. He always thought father a kind hearted man and apparently at this juncture my father came near telling a story which he had often told himself after being told it by this negro. I shall not tell it here, but it is clearly suggested to me in connection with the phrase "when work was done" and the allusion to kind heartedness. These two ideas belonged to the story which was about the *non compos mentis* neighbor apparently referred to in the previous sitting. Father laughed much about this story and once or twice imitated the neighbor in the chief detail of the incident which the negro told.

No one, however, could possibly appreciate the conjecture which I have to make without knowing the parties and the facts, which I think it best to reserve at present.

heap of potatoes laid out with sprouts on and the boys doing something with them. Did you rub the sprouts off.

(Yes.)

It was geting [getting] them ready to plant and it was dirty work. Yes you know that.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Then I want to go up in the field. It looks as if [I] go away from the \* \* [erased.] house toward the West. Was it not.

(Yes.) I see the sun setting and I know it must be toward the west. There I see later potatoes and corn. There is corn growing in that direction for I see the stalks waving [not read.] waving in the wind.

(Yes, describe the place for the potatoes more fully.)

Let me see if I can do what you ask if I understand. I mean I walk toward this field and it is quite a large piece of ground but I am not on a perfectly level place. There is a sweep downward as if a little rolling effect and deep valley effect but the sun strikes the top of the ridge first and works down as it goes toward the west. It is not a high hill but a sort of ridge and good potato land I hear your father say. Do you know anything about a clump or grove of trees somewhere beyond the potato patch.

(Near, not beyond.) [Note 544.]

I catch a shadow of them. They are dark trees. I do not see whether evergreens [read 'we guess'] Wait a ... evergreens

---

544. The incident about the potatoes is this and the sequel helps to confirm my conjecture about the story apparently in my father's mind. We kept our potatoes in the cellar and they would sprout. In the spring they were taken out, such as were not eaten in the winter, and the sprouts rubbed off, as indicated, we boys sharing in this work, and then planted. Not always in the place here described, but there was a small plot of ground on a hillside next to this *non compos mentis* neighbor which we had never cultivated, as it was too small to bother with for wheat or corn. Finally father took it into his head to plant potatoes there. It was west of the house and at the end of a large field which had a hill in it, not high enough to manifest such phenomena as described here at sunsets, but higher than usual in that locality, and between it and the potato patch was a hollow or valley as mentioned. The corn was not the only crop raised in that field. The potatoes were confined to that small end of the field.

... Wait a minute was what I was trying to say. I see way beyond some dark green like evergreen trees.

(That's good. Who lived there?)

I ... wait. I do not yet know. Do you know spruces. Yes [to correct reading.] are there some spruce trees.

(I think so.)

I see close to the patch some fruit trees nearer the end a few not many.

(Yes.) [Note 545.]

In among the heavy trees I see a man come out who is rather stout and heavy and has on a wide [read 'vest'] straw ... wide ... hat and no vest but I see white as if he wore a [read 'were a' and hand pointed for better reading which I failed to make.] wore a white or light colored shirt. He seems to be the owner and proprietor of the place in the trees, if you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

Do you know any one whose name begins with A—— who lived and worked near there. It ... there [not read first time.] ... It sounds much like Amos.

(No, not Amos.)

Do you know the A——.

(I am not sure.) [Note 546.]

I am not sure that I have it quite right. [Pause.] See here

---

545. When the "clump of trees" was first mentioned I thought of the woods nearby and not west, but the allusion to evergreens brought me at once to the evergreens in the yard of the neighbor mentioned which was immediately west of the potato patch. The sudden interruption about these and apparent correction of the place contains an apparent effort to refer to another neighbor further west and who was an intimate friend of my father's. He too had evergreens in his yard. The allusion to spruce trees may be due to the Lombardy poplars in the mental picture; for this neighbor farther west had them at the end of his yard. I think the other evergreens were pines, and my stepmother confirms me in this.

On the farm of the nearer neighbor nearer the potato patch than the evergreens were his fruit trees.

546. The man rather stout with wide straw hat I would recognize as the *non compos mentis* neighbor, but his name did not begin with A. The name of the farther neighbor began with A., but he was not stout and did not wear such a hat. The *non compos* neighbor is described in this.

what is this horn [not read.] horn. Do they blow a horn at the first Yes [to reading.] I see a woman come out with a long horn and blow it as if to call some one home. It is at your house that I see that done. Did they have a horn.

(Not in my home, but I think they did at the home you have had in mind. If you can describe certain things about that man I can tell and you will have a good case of identity.)

I will do my best. Let me tell you first the horn is tin and brown. Yes I think it has been painted but it look [looks] old and worn as if used a long time. Could you not hear that horn at your home.

(Yes.)

That is why I thought I was there for I heard some one say There goes the horn as if familiar with the sound. [Note 547.]

I see a horse and a saddle and bridle, no carriage but house [so written and read but hand pointed till read 'horse'.] is [superposed on 'carriage'] feeding near the house as if waiting for some one to come out. I see the same man with the wide hat and white shirt come and stand on a step and look around at the horse and at someone who has come out with him. It is a large house. I feel the space and bigness [read 'figures'] bigness of the place. What is this thy [read 'they'] thing up high like a weather vane on a barn. Was there one on his barn.

(I shall have to inquire.)

I see him look up towards it as if calculating the weather by it and now [not read.] I . . . now I see two more people who sep [so written and read 'step'] out of the house, one is a very old man with white beard and hair. He is very old and somewhat feeble and a woman who is not large but plump with a clean [read 'clear'] clean wholesome looking face, all smiles and peace and smooth hair parted in the middle and combed very plainly

---

547. We had no dinner horn. This *non compos* neighbor, however, had one and I think it was the only one in the neighborhood. My stepmother confirms me in this fact. The horn was tin, as perhaps all such horns are, but I do not recall its color. It had been used a long time. Horns had been in use altogether at earlier periods there as perhaps elsewhere, but their place was almost wholly taken by bells in my time. This neighbor was an exception to this. We could always hear it from our home. The wife always blew the horn, as the husband was unfit mentally and physically to do it.

and rather quick in her movements. She seems connected with the first man I saw and the old man is connected in the family.

(I understand.) [Note 548.]

They are relatives I think of yours and there is a close friendship between the families. Did they come across lots [not read.] lots to your house.

(Not exactly.)

I see a path well worn and then I see a road [not read.] road in another directn [scrawls for 'direction']. Both ways they could come to your house.

(I understand. Go ahead.) [Note 549.]

It is like a page of the past to recall these thgs [things]. Do you know a dog they had. It is a short haired light one with a little color here and there on it. Do you know about it.

(Tell all about that dog.)

I [superposing.] I see it running about and going to either house with equal freedom and there are young people at the other house who fool and play with it. There is more freedom at that house than yours. I do not know why I feel that but I do, a happy go lucky air that is not at yours [badly written and not read.] at yours for there was always so much to do there.

548. There is no recognizable meaning in the account of the horse and saddle. The manner of referring to the house is correct enough if it means the amount of ground covered by it and its allied buildings as denoted by "the space and bigness of the place." I do not recall a weather vane on the barn, but my sister and stepmother feel confident there was one there, tho admitting with me that a neighbor's and relative's barn might be in mind. It is, however, entirely possible, as there was a little rivalry in that group of relatives regarding barn decorations. He was an old and feeble man with white hair and beard. The wife was not large but plump and with a face all smiles, quick in her movements and with smooth hair parted in the middle. It is not clear what is meant by the statement that "she seems connected with the first" but by applying it to the A. mentioned, whose evergreens were referred to, she was a sister. The man was not connected with our family or with the other families.

549. The family was not in any way related to us either by blood or marriage, and the reference to coming across lots to our house shows who is meant. We had another neighbor who was a relative of the family that I have just described. This latter family did come "across lots to our house". But not always. This was only when crops in the field did not prevent it. There was also a road which made it much further, but both ways were used as crops permitted.

Do you know anything about honey.

(Yes.)

I see bees and then honey as if there were hives and bees kept for the honey and do you know about that woman at that house how she always kept every thing in such apple pie order. It was so clean. That is the only word for it.

I see a yellow floor [read 'flower' and hand pointed till read correctly.] Yes [to correct reading.] it looks like a yellow floor and some rugs on it. It is like a kitchen floor and as I go in I catch a smell of mustard growing. It is a little garden of herbs that I pass outside where there is mustard and sage. I smell both these and there is a [pause.] little blue flower among them which I do not know. It seems to be an herb with the rest.

I fear I am staying too long, but I will take this up the first thing in the morning if you wish.

(All right.) [Note 550.]

Goodbye.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] Saw.

(Well.)

Do you know John?

(What John?)

In the spirit.

(What John?)

---

550. This family did have a short haired dog, but black and white as we remember it, not light colored. No one remembers his coming freely to our house. But we children moved back and forth with equal freedom in either home. "Happy go lucky" describes the family life, if it means less strenuous work than at our house, but otherwise would not be accurate. The family kept bees. The wife was exceedingly ambitious to have everything in "apple pie order". She cleaned and scrubbed her life out of herself. No one remembers the yellow floor. There was a little room off the kitchen which had a carpet on it, not rugs, and could have been used for a kitchen. It is probable, not remembered by anyone, that mustard and sage were plentiful in their garden, as this was true of most gardens there, the mustard for certain kinds of pickles and the sage for various uses. The blue flower is not recalled.

Many of the facts regarding both families I have had to obtain from my stepmother and sister, as I had left home so many years before that I was not absolutely sure about the facts.

Have you got an Uncle John?

(Not sure.) [I paused to think.]

Do you know anything about hornets' nests.

(Yes.)

There was one around that your people take in the house. Not outside now, inside. Do you know anything about that?

(I do not recall.) [Note 551.]

It is in another house. [Pause.] They told me to go on back and not try to talk. [Pause, and hand reached for mine which I gave.]

[Pause.] I got to tell you something else I see. I see roots of trees and they kind of make little steps of the \* \* \* \* [notes not legible.] but the dirt about them. You walk up by these roots broken away near a brook and some woods. It seems as if it were a place you knew when a child. Of course that is not very definite. [Pause.] Oh I see so much [rubbing her face and head.]

After recovering consciousness which she did suddenly after the last remark Mrs. C. remarked that she saw juniper trees. [Note 552.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 29th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[Normal.]

I hear a name like Rue, Reuben or Ruth. I don't see any person. I think it is Reuben. [Pause.] [Note 553.]

---

551. We had no Uncle John. Possibly this is a reference to the same "Uncle John" mentioned in my first Piper Report. I have recollection enough of hornets' nests, but none such as described. The psychic's recognition of confusion here may indicate that it is not relevant to me.

I made inquiries of an Aunt who has since died and she had no recollection of any incident about hornets. But I remember that my mother, sister of this Aunt, told us children in my early youth, she having died when I was 15 years of age, that some friend in her childhood got hornets in her hair which had to be combed out while they were stinging her.

552. The incidents about the "roots of trees" and juniper trees are not recognizable. I know of no juniper trees in that general locality. Possibly the incidents belong to the same group as the hornets' nest, and in that case the difference of locality might explain the failure in recognition.

553. The name Reuben or Ruth has no recognizable significance.

I have a funny little experience when I get into the trance lately and the same occurs when I go to sleep or close my eyes. I seem to look into liquid blackness, as if looking into an open cave. The blackness looks very palpable and like deep space. Then it suddenly changes and is light again. All I can say is that it is like looking into a void and is as if I started into a black abyss, tho I don't move. But I see it as tho the atmosphere was taken away and the clouds so that nothing is left. Then the clouds come back. But I never see anything beyond that black. [Pause.]

Somebody has a hand on my head, like a finger on top of my head, and I begin to see things. I am still conscious. [Pause.]

[Hand clinched slightly and a slight groan. Pause and the Indian or French gibberish and a pause again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[The automatic writing began and continued very slowly throughout the period of the first communicator and from the way that the pronoun "I" was made twice I supposed that Mr. Myers was present and controlling the writing, but the manner of making the letter "t" at the end of a word soon betrayed the presence of "The Teacher", and I remained quiet till the end when it was explained in a manner which the reader may see for himself.]

\* \* I am with you.

(Greetings this morning.)

even unto the ends of the earth. [Pause.] [Probably due to my moving the pad down to prevent superposing which began.] I am here to give you peace and the peace of the spirit passes the understanding of men. The day of materiality is doomed and will pass away and the life and light of the spirit will supercede the merely intellectual authority of the men who strive to lead the world today but the expressions and exhibitions of spiritual power will be intellectually perceived and comprehended and become the light of the world. The intellectual is but the channel which leads to the open sea of [French sounds whispered.] spiritual Truth. How then is the mind of man the servant of God and the more illumined the mind the brighter the glory which encircles the universe. So does intellect wait upon knowledge and knowl-

edge serve Truth and Truth reveal [read 'served' and hand pointed till read 'reveal'.] God. Teacher.

(Thank you. Did any one help you in the writing? I recognized you by your sign and there were indications . . . .)

Yes your other friend F. Myers. [Very slowly written.]

(Thank you. I thought so.) [Note 554.]

[Change of Control.]

[Two pencils rejected and I first rubbed the third before giving, and it was retained.]

Good morning Hyslop. I guess they thought they would not let any tramps [not read tho clear enough.] tramps [not read.] in . . . spirit tramps yes [to reading.] hoboes as you remember yesterday.

(Perfectly.)

Myers said he did not think that ought to be done even for experiment, so he brought his friend and they opened the circle in a fitting manner.

(No epithets.)

No epithets no prayers to the Unknown. It was the Unknown to that man I think but perhaps they are right. Any way what Myers says has to be done in this particular case for he has an agreement with Madam to let no harm come to the light while under our experiments. Ys [yes.] [To correct reading of 'under' which was delayed in reading.]

We all are under orders to do our missionary work in heaven so you may never be favored with a like experience, but I think you will not care. Who cares for Society any way. It is not much of an honor to be a member of Society proper is it. There is so little to take away and so much to give.

Seriously when I look on life and see its drawbacks I am

---

554. This passage again from the Teacher contains an interesting example of the interfusion of personality even in the writing. As remarked above (p. 625) Mr. Myers distinguishes his personality and presence by the manner in which he makes a capital "I". The Teacher distinguishes his by the manner of making a final "t". At the beginning the indication was for Mr. Myers but the final "t" soon told who was really present, tho I saw from the contents that it was not like Mr. Myers usually. My conjecture, the reader will see, was confirmed by the answer to my last question.

glad I did not have to stay and make my way as some have done. There are compensations even for early death. Mine was not too early nor yet too late.

Now about our specific work yesterday. How did it turn out.

(It was fine, tho I wish some facts had been clearer and fuller, but that may have been impossible.)

I believe that the first communicator jarred the conditions a little.

(Likely.)

but all that is essential to evidence too.

(Yes.)

We would like to go on in the same way if you desire. What we want and like to do is to get hold of a person and keep that person at the point until we have a good set of circumstances. Some spirits lend themselves more readily to this work than others and so when we find one who does not prove good as a communicator we drop the matter and take another.

Do you know anything about a well with a long pole [read 'pile'] pole on which is put a pail [read 'part', tho clear enough, and hand pointed till correctly read.] yes. I hear a sound like tin or something light [read 'bright'] light against stones and I look and see a well with a low wooden frame around it and there I see a long pole and a hand pulling [read 'putting' and hand pointed till read correctly.] a pail by some method of clasp and then it is lowered and up comes water which is taken into a house for use. Do you know about one.

(No, I do not unless you tell where.)

It seems to be in those conditions where we were yesterday.

(I do not recall it, but it may have been before my time.)

It is not on a chain or a crank but is a pole lowered like a dip.

(I have seen such poles and wells in my life, but do not recall any about my old home.)

Do you know any one by the name of Solomon. This seems to be connected with the well and is some time ago but your father knows it and speaks of it and the name [pause.] [Note 555.]

---

555. This incident of the "well with a long pole" was mentioned in

I want to tell you something else I see and we will see if we are on the right line again.

Do you know anything about a trip away when you and your father and another boy went when you were a young lad. It is to a small town where there are stores and business and some special activities on the day you go. It looks like town meeting day. Do you know anything about town meeting day.

(No, it must have been too early for my memory.)

Do you not know of some special day like voting day. (Yes.) When [read 'what' hastily and without excuse for it.] you . . . when . . . and your father and another boy went to a small town. It is like taking the boys along for some other purpose but it is on a special day as I wrote. Do you know about that.

(I remember a special day when we were taken. Tell all about it.)

I see people and some excitement unusual not wild but a little commotion [read 'connection' tho clear enough.] commotion [read 'commemoration' tho clear enough.] commot. . . [read.] yes [to correct reading.] it is not Sunday but I hear the church bells ring and see people glad and happy. Do you know about this.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Your father thought you would remember it because he was so happy over it himself.

(But he must tell me something more specific to make the evidence conclusive.)

Of course he intends to but this is a beginning. Just a moment till I get started. [Moment's pause.]

Were there flags flying. I see something like flags and hear a sound of joy almost as if good news had come from another [read 'mother' and these are undoubtedly the letters, but the hand pointed till read 'another'.] center. It is not a town affair but one of greater importance and I se [see] it is all bright and

---

another connection in the New York experiments a few years ago, and was not then verifiable. My Aunt who is the only living person who might be expected to verify it cannot identify the place or person, tho recalling that some one in the neighborhood had a well sweep. Whom she does not remember.

sunny and rather warm but not extremely so. There I see your father a center of a group of men and he is talking emphatically and energetically while you look on in wonder and are taking in the situation [not read.] situation. Then I walk along with the crowd to a place out of doors where there is something going on. This is a celebration of an event. Do you remember.

(Yes.)

Was there a bridge and some water in that town like a small river.

(Yes.)

I see [see] it at one end of the town but I think you go over it in a carriage for I hear the sound of hoofs and then I come to a road again and dust and less noise of hoofs. Do you know.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Then I see a strange little shop or place where is a large wheel outside. It looks like a blacksmith shop not far from that bridge but all this is before I get to the real scene of the day.

Was there a red brick building of some pretension near the center of the town. I see a red building and it looks like stores [read 'stones' and hand pointed till read correctly.] or some business buildings and I see a long very pretty street with trees and houses on each side. I see it for a long distance and a curve toward the right as I look at it coming into the town after I have passed through some of the crowd and there I stop at a house and see some one. It seems like a friend's house but there is no long stay at any house for the day is one of general activity.

(What else on that long street besides trees?)

[I had in mind another street than the communicator. See later.]

You mean besides houses also (Yes.) I suppose. I do not know as I can see what you have in mind but I will try. I see a tall [pause.] something [pause.] I don't know whether it is a pole or what but it is tall and straight. Do ...

(Yes, there was a pole.)

you know what a liberty pole is (Yes.) Was not that what it was.

(That was on the street crossing the one in my mind.)

Do you know about a watering trough which was some-

where in the center of the place. (Yes.) I see you drive up there and let [not read.] let the horse drink. [Note 556.]

I se [see] another thing. It is an open space and then a sort of hill and some monuments [not read.] monuments up there. Not very high and then I se [see] a big building like a church or public building but it is white. Do you know that.

(I don't recognize that as described, but tell more about the place of the monuments.)

Let me see. the monuments are not by the church at all but I see them and then I turn back and find my church. you know what I mean I think.

(Yes.)

Now I see some people at the place where the monuments are and they seem to be there for a special purpose but it does not seem like a funeral. It is more joyous than a funeral. It might be a dedication or something of that sort but I cannot tell precisely what it is. [Note 557.]

556. This long passage is a good account of the national celebration of the 4th of July in 1876, in which my father had an important part from his township. We stopped our harvesting to take part and we boys were taken to see it. There were important speeches made and all that I remember of the details is the place of the speaking and the name of the chief speaker from that place. The church bells were probably rung on the occasion. It was not a town but a national affair.

There was a small stream at the west end of town and across it a bridge with a road to the cemetery. Just after you crossed this bridge, at the cross-roads, there was a blacksmith shop. There were always wheels lying about such blacksmith shops.

The red brick building "of some pretension" was the Court House, made of brick, and in front of it were the stores and the long street mentioned and leading to the bridge referred to above. There were trees on its sides. It was not the flag or liberty pole that I had in mind in my question, but a railway which passed through the heart of the town on one of its principal streets. The flag pole was a tall one in front of this Court House. There was also there a watering trough.

557. The reference to "the monuments" seems to be to the cemetery in the place which is very near the town and situated on a hill. Inquiry shows that no mention is made in the town papers of any exercises in the cemetery tho they give full accounts of the other things. It is therefore practically certain that none were there. I do not know why a church is referred to in this connection, especially in speaking of it as white. While there were one or two white churches in the place it is not probable that they figured

(Was there any speaking that day?)

Yes out of doors and some in another place.

(Who spoke out of doors?)

I don't know whether your father did or not but I see him with his hat off and I see a lot of people looking up at him and listening to what he says. Did he make [not read.] an address... make.

(I do not know, but can inquire. A man whom he knew well and prominent in the town did speak.)

Yes I knew there was speaking but also see your father speaking and being listened to as if he had some word to say. It was all red white and blue day any way [not read.] any way. It was a national day as well as town day. You will know that I think.

(Yes.)

Was there anything about Lincoln in that.

(Very probably. I was too young to remember.)

Strangely enough [superposed and read 'though'] enough I see constantly a picture of Lincoln and I think the thought of him [not read.] of him was in the minds of all. You know what the name of the principle [principal] speaker was.

(Yes I do. Tell it.)

I will if I can. I thought I was going to ge [get] it at once. [pause.] [Just at this moment I could not recall it myself, tho having it previously clear in my mind. It had suddenly slipped from me, the first experience of the kind in this connection.]

---

in this occasion. But it is possible that the confusion here is due to an incident which the cemetery and the mention of the way to it would inevitably call to my father's mind. This is suggested to me by the statement that "the monuments are not by the church at all". Early in the history of the town there was a cemetery of some size in it and connected with a church. The town had grown around it. This cemetery had to be moved and an incident was connected with it of much interest to my father and his sisters. All the bodies were removed to the present cemetery, or the remains of them. I happened to have the incident told me or in my presence many years ago by my Aunt. The event had no relation to the day which my father is describing, but it might easily enough in this picture panorama have passed before his mind and have been caught by Jennie P.

The speaking was in the open air in a forest, and it was a bright clear day, probably warm, tho often after a rain in this locality, the day was not so warm as July days usually are.

Was it R. or B.

(No.)

It looks like that letter to me.

(No neither letter.) [I recalled the name in time for this answer.]

[If the letter K could be mistaken for ' R ' in G. P's or Jennie P's mind, it would have been on the right track.]

I had b... [superposing.] I had better let it wait and if he can give it we will drop it in. I see such a look of satisfaction on your father's face all that day. He just beamed when he was in such an atmosphere, for he was patriotic to the last degree.

(Yes.) [Note 558.]

Do you know Henry some one whom he knew in those days.

(Yes, tell about him.)

He speaks of him as a friend and some one who was more than ordinarily near to him. Immediately after I speak of Henry I see a very large house in the same place I think where I have been. It is a house with a door yard yes [to correct reading of the two last words.] and it [read ' a ' ] large ... it is large, the house I mean, and has trees all around it and some out buildings ... out [read ' one ' the first time.] like a barn or shed and has a look of thrift and well [read ' will ' ] to do... well [read ' will ' ] well ... conditions about the place. Was that where [letters spell ' when ' ] Henry lived.

(Make it clearer.)

all right. I go into the house and I can go two ways, a front door and a side door which was the one used most. The side door is into a smal [small] entry or hall which leads [read ' lends ' ] more \* \* [possibly for ' directly ' ] leads... into a room where everything is going on like a living room.

---

558. My father did no speaking on that occasion and I doubt if he ever spoke to any considerable assembly of men outside his church. I wanted to see if he would mention a certain man whose ability he had always to recognize but whom he always criticized for his religious unbelief. It is possible that this man's personality in connection with this occasion did not impress his memory as it did mine. It is more than probable that Lincoln would have a prominent place in the speeches of the occasion and for evidence it is not worth inquiring whether he did or not. The speaker's initials were not R. B., and who could have been meant by them here I do not know.

(What kind of trees behind the house.)

[I had in mind 'behind' the front entrance. The answer shows that the communicator had in mind 'behind' the side entrance.]

[Pause.] Dark dark trees. I se [see] quite a cluster of them but the trees in front are different more leaves and lighter green. Do you know about that.

(Go on, not clear.)

Am I making a bungling mess of it today. Do you know hemlocks and ... hemlocks [not read first time.] ... and pines and such trees back of the house.

(No, but I think there was an evergreen or two at the side in the yard, but I am not certain. Behind the house were trees of which I am certain.)

and you want those. I must pass through this bit of evergreen and come to some large leafy ones. Say Hyslop I don't know whether this is an orchard or not but I seem to be hunting under the trees for something like fruit.

(Yes, go on.)

and as I walk along I pick up something red and bite into it and it is juicy. It is not pear but seems like a firm [not read.] firm fruit more like apples but it may be peaches.

(Yes, there were both apples and peaches there.) [Note 559.]

Good. I couldn't tell which but do you know anything about a very small red fruit. It seems as if there were only one or possibly two trees of it. It looks like a red plum red on the out-

---

559. The name Henry at once suggested the man who lived on the place and worked for us. The house, so far as the description went, was correctly described. It was a very large house for a hired tenant to occupy, having been the old dwelling house on the farm which we bought. There were trees and outbuildings of several kinds about it, and the side door was the one almost wholly used by the tenant, the front door rarely, and most of the life of the family was spent in the rear room. There were a few evergreen trees in the yard, cedar I think, certainly not hemlocks, and I do not know whether there were any pines. It was a correct answer to my question to say the orchard, and also to specify peaches; for I wanted to see if peaches as well as apples would be mentioned, there being a large peach orchard there, the peaches all being red by the way, and only a few apples that were red.

side and a yellow meat. I think it is not a peach for it is too small. Do you know anything about a plum tree.

(Yes, but not at that place, tho there may have been one there and another person will know.)

I am still here and find it so I think you find it true. I find a low bush of berries at the same place. They are more like currants.

(Probably.)

and are near a wall or fence made of wood but not nailed [read 'nailed' questioningly, tho it is clearly 'nailed'] like ... nailed [read so and when hand paused read 'nailed'.] ... slats but laid up on some wall or stones for a beginning and then cross crossed and recrossed in a peculiar way. (Yes.) It is unpainted and is not for show but for protection. To keep the cattle out I think.

(Yes, can he describe some of the apples near that fence.)

Yes I see a large yellow apple. It looks like an early Summer or Fall apple. It has no lasting quality like some of the others but is fairly good to eat right there. you must know that one.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Now do you know a little rough red one. It seems unshapely but a good apple good flavor. It is rather peculiar in shape but red in color [French or Indian.] and now I come to a good apple. It is hard as a rock in Summer but it grows good later. It really looks green. I don't know whether that is is [for 'its' probably] name but it looks like a Greening.

(Yes.) [Note 560.]

---

560. There were a few old plum trees on the place, but none of us recall the red plum with yellow meat. There was such a plum on the home place. The plums on the place under review, as we remember them, were blue damson. There were plenty of currants there, but probably so on every farm. The most striking incident, however, in this account is the reference to the fence. It was not a nailed fence of slats, but made of rails "crossed" as loosely as indicated and for protection against the stock to keep them out of the orchard.

Most of the apples in the orchard were yellow, and the absence of "lasting quality" was their characteristic. They were "good to eat right there" and also to cook, but they would not keep. We often made cider of them. The little *rough* red one I do not recall, but there was a *small* red apple, the Snow apple I think, but not rough. There was a large *rough* red apple that

Do you know any apple named Duchess [pause.] de [pause.]  
(Go ahead.)

I fear I can't get it. [Pause.] Was it O——

(No.) It was not Pomar was it. Yes [to reading of 'Pomar'] (No.)

I can't get it but he makes a mighty effort. [Pause.]

(That fruit was not an apple was it?)

Is it Quince. (No.) Youve got me Hyslop. Wait and let me see. It is not peach [read 'peace'] but ... peach ... not peach but more like pear. Yes [to correct reading.] but I don't know it and he doesn't seem able to show me so that I can tell.

(Let me tell. Duchess d' Angoulême.) [Repeated.]

Pretty good. He got the first part all right did he not.

(Yes.) [Note 561.]

Do you know anything about crabs.

(Go ahead.) [Thinking of crayfish in that region.]

He speaks of a special crab apple. Do you know if he raised them.

(Yes.)

They are his delight. He is fond of them for some reason. Do you know that. This one I se [see] is a dark red and smooth as the best of fruit and excellent for some purpose in the house.

(Go ahead.) [Note 562.]

---

was a good eating apple, but farther off. Near this fence was a good apple that was very green and hard in the summer, but was a good eating apple in the winter, and resembled the Greening in color, tho larger in size, the Tolpabockan, if I spell it correctly.

561. The reference to the Duchess d' Angoulême pear is remarkably interesting. It was not connected with this tenant's place. It was on the home farm and also behind the house and garden. It stood second in the row of trees and was one of father's favorite pears, of which fruit he was very fond. The tree died and disappeared fully thirty or more years ago. There was another one, however, in the yard that lived much longer than this. It was natural to the subconscious to slip on its being an apple in connection with apples generally.

562. My father was very fond of crab apple jelly. He had a tree of crab apples which stood right next to this Duchess d' Angoulême pear in the yard. The fruit was a dark red. It was also a special kind, named the Hyslop crab apple, and it is interesting to see that this name does not come through which it would have been most natural under the circumstances for

Do you know about grafts from that tree and did he make money from his orchard.

(Somewhat.)

The grafts from his tree were taken to another place and used with success. Your fth... Your father says most grafts are successful but this is not political graft just legitimate fruit growing.

There are two kinds of crabs one yellow one red and the graft made stripes. what do you know of that. Do you know anything about it.

(No.) [Note 563.]

[Pause.] Now I feel I am losing power. Is it late.

(Yes it is.) [Looked at my watch and found it later than I supposed.]

Just a moment if I may stay. Have I not seen this Henry before.

(He has been mentioned and if you could give the first name of his daughter which I think has been mentioned before I would be sure.)

I will try and bring it tomorrow and will get more if I can. Do you know anything about a little corner [not read.] brackett [bracket] ... corner [read 'comer' tho I should have known better.] corner brackett [bracket] in his house.

(Whose house?)

Henry's. (No.) I se [see] a bracket made of plain wood and stained dark. it is in the living room and on it are spectacles and a few little things used often. Did he smoke.

(I do not remember.)

It looks like a pipe there with the spectacles. I must go but do you know L—

(Go ahead.)

---

it to have done, but it is evidently an illustration of the difficulty with proper names. Cf. Cherry, pp. 606-607.

563. My father did a great deal of grafting with fruit trees, but no one remembers grafting the Hyslop crab apple. It is quite certain that no such effects as is described would take place if he had grafted it. The allusion to political graft is evidently a subconscious diversion, or some of the control's attempt at wit.

[Pause.] L [Pause.] Lizzie I think but I am not sure. Do you know Lizzie in connection with him.

(No.)

It is Laura.

(No.)

I am too far gone. G. P. [Note 564.]

[Subliminal.]

[Pause.] Goodbye. You get anything good?

(Yes.)

[Opened her eyes and I thought her awake.]

(There we are.)

No, who said so. [Pause, and looking about.] I see nothing but chickens everywhere.

(Whose?)

Goodness knows, not mine. I don't see how they can be yours. They belong to the farm.

(Who are you?)

[Awakened as I asked this question.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

April 30th, 1911. 10. A. M.

[Normal.]

Oh I feel the spirits all about at once. [Pause.] I see a man in light suit, sort of an invisible check gray, a mixed suggestion of gray. He has a broad tie, a flying tie like those little boys wear. I don't know what men call them, but they call them for children Windsor ties. It looks like a man I have seen. Do you know what George looked like?

---

564. No one can recall this incident of the bracket and it would astonish me to know that my father would remember such an article, as he rarely ever went to the house of this tenant. Besides it is the firm belief of my stepmother and myself that this Henry did not smoke or wear spectacles. He may have chewed tobacco and my stepmother thinks he did. But there was another old negro who had also been a tenant there who did smoke and wear spectacles. No one could verify the bracket incident in connection with him.

The name Lizzie would not identify any one in connection with this Henry or the other negro. Neither would the name Laura, but the name Lucy would, as it was the name of Henry's daughter and she worked for us often.

(I don't know.)

This man is thin and tall, looks athletic but not an ounce of superfluous flesh. It seems I ought to know who he looks like. I think it is some one I know about but I cannot make out who it is.

(Beard?)

No, a mustache and square strong chin. [Pause.] Not very old, might be forty, I have no feeling of age or sickness, just . . . . I never saw spirit quite so strong. I think that every time I see one. [Pause.] I can't tell who it is. It is some one familiar to my brain through pictures. [Long pause.] [Note 565.]

[*Subliminal.*]

I wonder what city it is I see. [Pause.] Oh ce moi! [Hand reached for pencil and I inserted one.]

What did you put in my hand?

(Pencil.)

What for?

(You reached for one.)

I didn't.

(Your hand moved as it always does for the pencil.)

I didn't do it. I didn't know it. [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Now we are here. Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

I am R. H. and I did not want [not read.] to . . . have . . . go away without a word with you. It seems a long time since William and I wrote you a message.

(Yes, I thought you were dead.)

Think again. we are far from it and we have to work harder to prove it than most people do.

(I understand.)

So much is expected of us. I begged a chance fom [from] George this morning just to let you know that we are still working and interes. . . [pencil ran off page.] ested and that we do not intend to let G. P. and his col[1]aborator take all the glory.

---

565. I never knew G. P. and cannot say whether this would be a description of him or not.

(All right.)

We were all very well pleased with C. W. and his effort for several reasons. first because he is who he is and second because he came out of the place of conceit. It is good only we wished he could have gone on with more but that will come by and bye when we get our funds. You see we know the need of money and feel the lack of it for our work whenever we come into contact with material life. [pause.] so the influence of money reaches beyond the grave even if there are no pockets in a shroud.

(Yes, money is power and its good or evil depends only on the use.)

Yes, yes, but we learn all that slowly. Have you heard from the reports of C. W.

(Not yet, except the first one.)

There were some good points. His family relations were so strong and beautif... [last three words superposed and hand had to be arrested.] strong and beautiful that it helps the connections from here. Enough of that. Do you think G. P. is improving the work.

(The work of the two is the best I have ever had.)

Good, they are wearing such heavy crowns now than [so read a second time after hand pointed.] that we are hardly able to be in the same class and if you give them much more credit they will own all heaven. J. P. always felt [read 'fell'] as ... felt as if she were the strongest factor you had in N. Y. and now she makes us all stand around. She says degrees [read 'elegies' doubtfully] degrees in Harvard do not count.

(I understand.)

It is degrees in Heaven one should have. does not that sound like her.

(Yes.)

Now I will not stay because I know they have some better plans but some day I will try and see what I can show J. P. and see if she makes a good witness of me.

(Good.)

It may be that I can redeem some of my lost honors.

(Hodgson, that vase incident turned out good.)

Yes I remember and I want to give more like that. It is such

evidence as that which is purely personal and involved in difficulty that will count for us.

(Yes.)

I dislike to go for it is pleasant to be here but a good soldier [read 'sudden' doubtfully] soldier obeys his superior officer.

Just one word though about the Christian Science founder, yes [to correct reading of the last word.] I was always most interested in that movement as a psychological wonder and have been one of a party of friends who [erased] which looked into the matter a little and I wish I might tell you of the strange hallucinations of the woman when she first came here. She imagined she belonged to the Godhead. I am not joking but perfectly serious. She carried her insanity [read 'unusually' tho not good reasons for this.] insanity. it is a form of insanity [pause.] to that degree. It was strange to see her receiving the adoration. on all theories of her but [her] own she should have had no disciples [disciples] about her. They ought to have been alive but they are not all in the physical body. I may tell you more about it some day. Barnum was never in the circus business comparatively speaking. That is from a sane and intelligent standpoint.

(I understand.)

R. H. [Pencil dropped.] [Note 566.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pause.] G. P. Did R. H. think he was going to have all the time he wanted to talk about non evidential things. We are getting down to business these days and we cannot [read 'control'] stop ... cannot stop to have that business going on now. It is for evidence of identity we are working and not philosophy or lectures on psychology. see.

---

566. There are some characteristic utterances in this message from R. H. But they cannot be emphasized as evidence. Mrs. C. does not believe in Christian Science, but the manner of describing it is not characteristic of her mind, tho the coloring may be hers. She does not know enough psychology to put it in such terms and tho she probably knows the ideas here advanced about the condition after death it had a ring of something more realistic than I think she would naturally mention. But that is only opinion and cannot be used to protect the passage evidentially.

(Yes.)

Your friends of yesterday were rather pleased with what [written 'twhat' as if starting to write 'the' and then changing it.] they got through and will if you please go on unless you have some special case you wish to work on.

(No, I would be glad for them to go on as they did. But some day I wish you would bring that Carrie again, as I must find out who she is, and also that person with the Nora, but not to-day.)

Thank you. I understand and will do the best I can. Carrie you said and the one with Nora. I am writing it for J. P. to see.

(Yes.)

She watches and will pass it along and I will gather it up . . . gather [not read first time.] when I return. otherwise I might forget.

(I understand.)

It is so different when we return. We sometimes forget what we promised. [Note 567.]

Do you know anything about a large rock or boulder near the places where we were yesterday.

(I think I do.)

I see a large boulder with smooth and round outline. I do not mean exactly round but in distinction [read 'destruction' tho little excuse for this.] to . . . distinction to sharp and pointed [not read.] edges . . . pointed. It is out in an open space for I can see the sky and country around it but it is near some trees and also near a road. I come up a little incline in the road and there I see this large rock. It is a sort of a landmark [not read.] land mark. That is most of people who live there know it as a sight. Am I describing it fully enough.

(Yes, but I do not recall it as a landmark, tho it may have been.)

I mean by that that some people would talk of it as the big

---

567. This admission of a liability to forget on returning is so much in favor of a trance condition for communicating, and I have often noticed this obliviscence of what has been promised. It is suggestive and confirmatory of this to find the communicator saying that he has to have it handed on in protection of his promise. This might mean that it has to be transmitted to some one in a normal state to have it remembered.

rock and near the big rock and so on, not an especial landmark, only that you going back after years would remember that as one of the things you knew. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, and I wish he would say more about that particular farm.)

I... I am passing by that rock and I come to a house with a peculiar roof. The house is not square but seems to have an unusual roof, a sort of gable if I am using the right word but the house sits back from the road a little with an open dooryard. That is I drive in and find a large yard in front and then I drive on into the barn. I can drive right into the barn from the road without a turn. Do you know what I mean.

(Was the house on the side or top of a rise?)

Yes after I pass the rock I am higher.

(What was at the bottom of that slope?)

I did not look. I will return and see. [Pause.] I go down and find some sort of a stream. That is not what you mean is it. I cross [not read] a ... cross a little brige [bridge] not very large and I find something else there but I turn to the right for a path or narrow road and it looks like a grave. are there... are [not read first time.] .. graves down there.

(No.) [Thinking of the house of the tenant.]

What is [superposing.] What is this fence and stones enclosed in it if not a grave.

(There was no fence and enclosed stones near or about that farm.)

Perhaps I am too far back. Do you know if father [farther] back on the road there is such a place. It is not a large but a small almost like a family burying ground. Do they have such things.

(Not near there.)

You do not know then what it means.

(No.)

Let me return then and ignore your question for the present and go to the house where I was about to enter. Will that do.

(I am not at all sure of that house.)

Let us begin then with the rock. Is it not visible from the road.

(Really I don't know yet anything about that rock.)

Do you know anything about a hip roof house.

(No.) [I never heard of such an expression in my life.]

It is evident that we are not on the same road for all this I see as plainly as anything. Do you know Susan. yes [to reading.]

(No.)

This is some of [two words superposed.] This is some of your father's work and Susan lived in the hip roofed house where the big rock was on the road by her house. Let us begin again.

[I changed pencil.] [Note 568.]

Thank you I will take another route and see what I can find. [Long pause.] Did you go to your father's funeral from another place. What I mean is was not your father in another home than yours when he passed away.

(Yes.)

I get a picture of a house where you are familiar and I see you going there and I see a room with your father's body lying in it not yet in the casket but with a sheet [not read.] sheet [read 'shut'] sheet [read street] sheet or cloth thrown over it. I see [see] as if you went into the room I think to see the body and to do something else. You are not alone. There is a woman with you and there is another woman in another room outside who is older and more broken. I mean who seems [not read.] seems to feel the death more than you and the lady who go into the room. Do you know about this.

(I do not recall it as described.)

Did you go into the room before the body was ready for burial. (Yes.) Was there not something drawn over the body. (Yes.) Was there not a woman who either went into the room with you or followed you in. (No.) I see [see] one who comes to that door later and she belongs in that house and she had some reason for coming to that door. Did you have a sister or sister-in-law who lived there. [Note 569.]

(Tell more specifically about her without any question from me.)

---

568. I have never been able to verify this account of the boulder and hip-roofed house, nor the meaning of the name Susan. My Aunt recognizes nothing in the account.

569. This account of what occurred while my father's body was lying

I see her going about as if she were at home and she tells you some things about the last days or something of that sort. Sh[e] is practically the head of that house. I mean the woman head. She certainly either told you where to go or went there for she was in and out [read 'our'] in and out of that room several times.

(What relation was she to my father?)

I cannot yet tell. I will try. She was so interested and had so much to do with the plans for the service and all that went with it. She was not a large woman and was very calm and composed but very quiet and capable but felt very badly without much display of grief. She said almost nothing to you. you were very quiet but I see you looking at the father's face and thinking. of course every [read 'very'] every one has thoughts of serious import at such a time, but there is a sense of the relief that has come to him which comes over you and yet it is one of the sacred and serious moments of your life and I see your father, not on the board. I want ... board [delay in reading first time.] I want to say, but I do not know whether it is a board or not but I do not see him lying there. He is standing and looking at you and seems to know from that instant that he can get into communication with you. Is this [not read.] this all too complicated or is it coming out. but ...

(It is almost wholly non-evidential.) [Note 570.]

Well let me go out into [not read.] into the other room and who is that older lady who sat in a chair by the window and is rather more serious than the rest. Did you have an aunt there.

(Yes.)

Was she a short and plump not very stout lady.

(Yes.)

I se [see] her siting [sitting] there and looking very dis-

in the room is not quite accurate. My father died away from home in the the house of his sister. I did go into the room once, but no lady was with me. My sister went in once when a sheet was covering the body. This fact I never knew until after this sitting. My stepmother never went in to see the body until it was put into the casket, but sat on the outside as indicated. As I went into the room the undertaker and assistant drew a sheet over the body.

570. The woman described in this passage who had so much to do with the plans for the service is probably my Aunt, my father's sister Eliza.

console but she rises and speaks to a man much taller than you are [read 'one' and finger pointed till read 'are'] and the man the same one is younger than she is and is related to her in some way for she speaks to him in a sort of familiar way. Do you know who he was.

(Yes, tell all about him.)

If I can I will. He seems to have much to do about the place and is so kind and thoughtful and ever present. Wherever I go or look I see him arranging and planning and all so quietly and beautifully. Your father thinks much of him. Do you know any one whose name begins with H. yes [to correct reading.] who was there.

(No.)

It sounds like Hattie or Harriet.

(No.)

all right. ask some one. They may know for your father spoke the word. To [read 'so'] retu... To return to the people. Who was S—

(I don't know, but is that man you mention living or dead?)

Gone now but was alive then. [Note 571.]

(How did he pass out?)

Let me see if I can find out. The first thing I see is snow. Was it winter when he went away.

(Not the man I have in mind.)

[I was wrong here. It was winter when this uncle passed

---

The remarks regarding my mental state are perfectly accurate, tho not evidential. I did feel a great sense of relief coming to him, as his suffering was distressful.

571. Evidently "the older lady who sat in a chair by the window" was my stepmother, as that is exactly what she did while the body was being prepared for the funeral. The other, my Aunt, is properly described as short and plump and the man referred to is evidently my uncle whose part in the preparation and whose nature is correctly enough described. My father did think much of him. His name did not begin with H. His name was Carruthers and he died two years after my father and was one of the communicators in the first Piper Report. It was a good hit to say that he was alive then but gone since, as that was not known by Mrs. C. The name Hattie may be a mistake for Henrietta, the name of my sister who was the one that had gone into the room as above mentioned. The "S" is not recognizable.

away, and I had gotten the time of my father's death, a little more than two years before, in my mind. The communicator was right.]

Was it snow when your father went.

(No.)

What is this snow.

(I do not know, unless it refers to a brother or an uncle?)

[I had in mind the brother to whom reference was made later and an uncle who had died in March in the winter many years ago and was referred to through Mrs. Piper. I learned since this sitting from my sister that snow was on the ground at the time of this brother's death.]

I see great piles of snow and I see a death at such a time but it seems later than your father's, after him I mean.

(Yes, but I do not know of any such death later.)

[I did not recall at the time that this uncle to whom reference was made had died in the winter and the exaggerated statement "piles of snow" confused me.]

Do you know R.

(Who is R.?)

Some one here. It sounds like Robert.

Do you know Robert.

(My father's name was Robert.)

[Pause.] That is strange. I thought it was another name.

(There was another Robert if you can tell.) [Thinking of a cousin.]

a younger man.

(Yes.)

Did he have any snow about when he passed away.

(I do not know but I can find out.) [Thinking of my cousin, not my brother.]

The second Robert is more like a boy who was named for your father (Good.) and I see all this snow about. It is strange how so many mixed [not read.] mixed currents are here but I think it is a more emotional [not read.] emotional [not read, tho perfectly clear.] emotional time in the life of your father. (Good.) He is dealing with conditions which touched his heart.

(Yes, tell me all about that Robert.)

It was a sudden death I think. It seems as if it was one of those things that there was absolutely no way to ward off and yet the days of regret yes [to reading which was delayed.] almost as there was a constant wonder why it had to be. Do you know about that.

(Make it more specific.)

Yes [pause.] I see [see] so much disturbance. Everything is all at [Pause and French.] a tension and your father walks up and down as was like him when much disturbed. But he is so full of activity [read 'certainly'] in ... activity in other directions but there was nothing to be done. It was all over. Was not Robert closely connected with you as well as your father.

(Yes.) [Note 572.]

and was there not a great commotion [not read and hand tapped pencil on word.] commotion when his death took place.

(I believe so, but was not present.)

Yes I knew that and was going to tell you that next for I saw the news and the absence [not read.] absence and all. There was something peculiar about it. Whether it was accident or very sudden illness [not read.] illness I cannot yet tell. [not read.] yet tell.

(Where did he pass away?)

Do you mean was he at home or away.

(Yes, tell which.)

I think he was away for I see a waiting [superposing.] a waiting as if waiting for the body to come home. Do you know about that. (Yes.) That is the commotion as if everyone was

---

572. Most of the confusion in this communication which finally centers on my brother explains itself. It did not become clear to me which Robert was meant until the statement was made that he was named for father and and a special reason gave rise to that name which comes out later, the one sentence in the first Piper Report stated it, this not having been seen by Mrs. C. It is very accurate to refer to the emotional situation for my father. It was this brother that caused so much mental distress to my father and which I alluded to in my first Piper Report. It is impossible to tell the details, as they are, perhaps, too personal to narrate. The death of this Robert was rather sudden, but that of the cousin Robert was not so unexpected and sudden, the following a considerable illness which was itself the unexpected part of the event.

in that tense state wating [waiting] for the body but your father seems to go away either to meet it or to get it but it must have been a little distance away for there is some waiting his [probably for 'yes' to delayed reading of 'waiting'] yes waiting at home.

(I believe so but try and see. . . .) [Hand began writing.]

Was the body hunted for and some suspense [suspense] in connection with it.

(I do not know, but can find out.)

Yes your sister will know some things will she not.

(Which sister?)

[I here thought of the sister who lived in the town where he was buried and died a few years after this time. I did not know that my living half-sister was present at the funeral and so did not think of her as the person meant by the reference. From her I learned that the facts are true.]

My but you do put questions to me and you [not read.] you want me to be sure I make plain. Have you a sister in the West or away from home.

(You tell all about her if you can.) [Thinking of the deceased sister who lived west from here at the time. So also did the half-sister.]

I [superposing.] I se [see] some one who seems like a sister who knows more about this matter than you do and she will remember having been told some things if she did not know them herself.

I think then this Robert's body, I mean the young man now, (Yes.) was brought to a station. Do you know if he was away from the home town when he passed away.

(Yes he was.)

I thought so for I saw a train and station and saw a box taken from it and saw men with [not read.] with uncovered [read 'movement'] he. . . uncovered heads as the box was taken. . . box [not read first time] . . . was taken out and then I see a team of some sort. It does not look like a hearse but an open team of some sort and the box taken away. Do you know what your father says [erased.] means when he says he was not the only one taken. It seems as if there were others at the same time.

(Other what?) [Note 573.]

men or boys. Do you know whether your brother ever sat at a long table with a number of other boys.

(What do you mean?) [My brother was a waiter and I had this in mind when asking this question.]

Is not Robert your brother.

(Yes.)

Did he go to a place where there was a long table... long [not read first time.] ... spread for a number of boys or men and sit [sat] with them to eat [not read.] eat.

(I do not now what you mean unless you are more specific.) [I still had in mind his work as waiter.]

I see [see] a long table and a number of people at at [it] as if the food was prepared for all at once, not a hotel [not read.] hotel but more like a camp or it might be a school but it really looks like rough and camp life. Is that more specific.

(Yes, and I shall have to inquire about this. What kind of work did that brother Robert do?)

I don't see that yet Hyslop but I know that his work was with many people and I get a group of people and I believe it is time for him to begin to give some good communications. It is only a beginning he has made now but his young life was not crushed

---

573. The incidents of my brother's death begin to clear up more distinctly at this point. He died away from home and the body was brought home for burial. A delay and some excitement was caused, after the arrival of the body at the railway station, by the failure to get certain permits or other necessary papers for the burial. The ground was covered with snow at the time. They had to go some distance to get the papers and he had died sixty miles from home. There was considerable tension and suspense during this period of waiting. The reference to my sister as the one who would know turned out to be very pertinent as she was present at the funeral and I was not. The casket was brought on the railway in an iron box and this box was taken away in a wagon by my brother-in-law and used on the farm afterward.

I knew absolutely nothing of any of these incidents except that my brother had died far from home. I was in New York at the time and there was no reason to mention these particulars to me and I was not told them. There was no opportunity for Mrs. C. to learn any of these facts if she had had a mind to do so. Some of them were intimately known only to the persons concerned and no publicity was given any of them.

out or put out and nothing left but the memory of his strong soul but he is active and eager and willing and always has been.

(Why has he not communicated before?)

Never had just the right opportunity but these sittings [sittings] which are for that especial [not read.] especial work of identification give him a good opportunity and you will hear from [from] him when you come next time.

(Good.) [Note 574.]

He has been referred to in one or two instances but his own identity has never been clearly revealed. You know what I mean. (Yes.) but his father now thinks it time for him and he is ready himself [correctly read.] himself. It is a long long time since he went away and the garments her [pause.] he wore and the memory of him have faded together until [not read.] he ... until he seems like a dream of the past.

(Now why do you say it is a long time. There is a little confusion there which, if you clear up, will be a most important piece of evidence.)

I think I do not know what you mean.

(The Robert you are here talking about did not pass away so long ago.)

Have you two brothers over here. (Yes.) one gone a long time ago and one more recently. (Yes.) and I have the name on the wrong one. That is what you mean. [Pause.] The one gone a long time had another name. is that it.

(Give the full name at all hazards of the one who went a long time ago.)

You mean next [not read.] next time.

(Any time.)

---

574. This brother went away from home and became a waiter in the restaurants and hotels in a large city. This is apparently implied in the distinction here drawn between a hotel table and some other occasion. Before he went to this large city he managed a restaurant himself and one time prepared the supplies for a family picnic and himself superintended the waiting. Other members of the family do not remember this, but it is rather distinct in my mind for certain reasons, and it is probable that this event is in mind here, as it had a special significance in the relations which he sustained to the family and the relatives.

Yes I think I cannot do it now. Tell me Hyslop you do . . . .  
You did not have two brothers by the same name did you.

(Yes.)

No wonder I got mixed. No well regulated family ever ought to be guilty [not read] of . . . guilty of such an indiscretion but as you did not do it I will fight it out with your father and mother.

(Why did they have two with the same name?)

See here you are pumping me dry [not read.] dry. Let me rest and I will do better next time but this is not bad after all.

(No, it is good.)

It must be time to go.

(Yes it is.) [Note 575.]

Goodbye. I am doing good work, am I.

(Yes.)

G. P. and Co. [The pencil was thrown down after writing G. P. and then suddenly seized to finish the sentence.]

---

575. As soon as I saw the statement that he had been gone long and that the garments he wore had faded with the memory of him I saw at a flash that my brother Charles was meant, who died long ago and whose clothes had been mentioned through both Mrs. Piper and Mrs. C., but through Mrs. C. before the Piper message was published. My brother Robert had not been dead long and Charles had been dead 47 years. It had flashed into my mind why the two had been mentioned so closely and I determined to clear up the confusion without suggesting the cause of it. Hence I asked for the name of the brother at all hazards who had died long ago. The reply in the form of the question whether I had two brothers of the same name was correct. Charles' full name was Charles Robert, and after his death my father, wanting a son of his own name, gave the name Robert alone to the next son that was born to him. I mentioned this fact in my first Piper Report in the note: "Charles' full name was Charles Robert, and as father had no namesake, after Charles' death he called his next son simply Robert." (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 464). Mrs. C. never saw this Report and so it is not at all probable that she knew anything about the fact, but it would have been stronger if I had not written that note, as it was not especially necessary to do so at that juncture. But the issue of it rather justifies the conjecture that I made at that time regarding the possible purpose of mentioning the name. I may add also that the name and its having this double significance was indicated later through Mrs. Smead, who, whatever she might have learned about the facts in the Piper Report that was in their house, could not have known that it had been mentioned through Mrs. C. Cf. pp. 900-904.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Oh dear! I'm tired.

(Why?)

Oh I came such a long way. [Pause.] All right now.  
[Laughed.]

You don't want me to talk. I used to talk when some one was present to take it. Now I don't do it so much. I am very considerate.

(Yes.)

You don't have much on me. [Pause.] Goodbye. [Reached for my hand and I took hers.] That is not just habit. Do you think it is?

(No.)

It helps to get back quicker.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 4th, 1911. 10 A. M.

Before the sitting I made some remarks about the position of Professor James on this subject which I record here for future reference. I said that the reason that he did not speak more boldly on the subject was that he did not have the personal experiences on which to stand and that it was rare for a scientific man to speak as favorably as he did on the facts of other investigators. I explained that his own poverty of facts was largely due to his being a bad sitter, as he was so nervous about sittings that he would get up and walk the floor at times. This much knowledge of the man I imparted, not carelessly, but simply because I wanted that defence of the man understood by the psychic.

[*Normal.*]

I used to go into the trance gradually, but now I go in all at once. [Pause.]

Do you know any one by the name of Barnaby? I wonder if that is something left over in my mind?

(Never mind. I think I know what is going on.)

[I had in mind the hypothesis which I have thought of from this constant reference to proper names and hearing instead of

seeing that the effort was to develop power in Mrs. C. to get proper names better than she actually does.]

[Pause.] Do you know any one called Mame?

(Yes. See if you can tell who it is.)

It is a spirit you know I think because I hear it directly from the spirit. Some one says, 'Where is Mame'. The spirit seems some one you knew. I see slender white nimble fingers like as if they ran up and down on the paper as if playing the piano [imitating this movement with her own fingers.] She is not nervous, but they are slender. Does that have anything to do with her?

(Yes.)

Was she a piano player?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Was she German?

(No.)

I hear some little German sentence like *Ich leiben \* \** [schuct?] Is that German?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] *Ich leiben \* \** [schlucht?] that is not right. The words that follow sound like *schnucht* or *schnuckle*. That is the nearest I can get it.

(Get it if you can.)

I see a little *u* with two dots over it in the middle of the word. It follows *ich leiben* [pause.] *schnuckle*. I think it is a song \* \* \* \* What does *leiben* mean, love or life. I musn't. I get to thinking. Do you know.

(*Leiben* is not quite right, but I know what is intended.) [*Liebe* or *Lieben* is the correct word, depending on the completeness of the message.]

All right. I am glad. But I get no more. Don't you know whether it is a message or part of a song? I heard it after I saw these fingers that play. [Pause.] [Note 576.]

---

576. My wife was called "Mame" by some of her relatives. She was an excellent piano player and knew German nearly as well as English. Mrs. C. does not know it, except two or three words, "Federmesser" being one of them.

[April 12th, 1912. My daughter was playing a familiar piece this evening and I asked what it was, and she replied: "Ich Liebe Dich". On my ask-

I see one thing more. I can't see the face of the woman, but I see a slender body as tho from the waist line to the neck, a plain little waist and rather slender. There is a sudden movement as if tired and wanted exercise and was tired of one position and she stood up and moved about. [Pause.] I'm going. [Pause. Table fixed and a little French uttered.] [Note 577.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

We are here again and glad of the opportunity to go on with the experiments. We feel that we are making progress now as never before and yet the phi[ilosophical] side of [the] question is not unnoted [read 'united'.] unnoted [read 'involved'] forgotten by us. In the days when the philosophers had all the time [not read.] time and the incidents of the past were woven into the work it was good but just now we would like to go on with the process of proving identity if that is agreeable to you.

(Yes, it is.)

What about the work of last week. \*

(Excellent.)

Was it good. [Evidently my previous answer was not caught.]

(Yes, it was.)

Thank you. We are more happy than you can know for Jennie P. and I are working like martyrs to save the day from the disrepute [read 'dispute'] disrepute [into] which poor Richard plunged [not read.] us all... plunged ... when he failed to know some of his friends and call them by their first names. Perhaps he grew proud and top lofty [last two words not read.] and ... top [not read.] lofty ... top lofty and wanted more dignity in his relations with men. who knows, one never knows what rapid [not read.] paperd [not read.] rapid pomotion [read 'pomotion' purposely] may do... promotion may do.

ing whose she replied Grieg's. My wife was very fond of Grieg and especially of this song. I had wholly forgotten the name of it.)

577. Description not assuredly identified. It may be a friend she met in Germany, but the evidence is not clear.

(I understand.) [Note 578.]

His translation was so sudden it may have affected his brain. That is all a bit of fun.

(I understand.)

We will go on but let me tell you that R. H. is as much interested in this set of experiments as you are and W. J. is watching with much interest. Who do you know who made a study of bugs and insects. I se [see] a bunch of that sort of stuff brought here as if for evidence. The first ding [thing, and so read.] is a large fly like a drgon [dragon] fly. It has thin [read 'thus'] thin [read 'then', tho clear enough.] thin gauzy wings and seems to be mounted. Do you know any naturalist who would be apt to come to you. Do you know any one by the name of Ernest. [Pause.]

(Go on.)

I se [see] the name and the flys flies [spontaneously corrected.] and wonder what it means. Can you tell.

(Not yet. You must tell it.)

Yes but I do not want to take up a case that has no especial significance. If I find it of use I pursue [not read because 'p' is a clear 'h'] it ... pursue ... if not I drop it.

By the way we know the name. It was your wife. Do you know whether she knew an Ernest.

(I do not know, but I can probably find out, if he was connected with any of her work.)

All right. Now just a moment until I get the line which Whirlwind is throwing me. [Pause.] [Note 579.]

Do you know any one by the name of Howard.

---

578. This about Dr. Hodgson is true enough and it represents knowledge which Mrs. C. might have gathered from her little examination of the Report by Professor James, tho it would have taken a careful reading to do this.

579. My wife knew a young man by the name of Ernest and they were great friends. She had exercised some influence on his life. He is now a clergyman and still living. There is no reason for mentioning him here in this manner unless it be connected with the recent death of the young man's mother of which he wrote me in reply to inquiries why he might be mentioned, I thinking that he himself might have passed away.

There is no recognizable or discoverable meaning in the reference to the study of insects by any one related to my wife or any of us.

(Ernest Howard?)

No, [not read. ] a ... no another person. It sounds .... (It would have to be made plainer for me to be sure.) [Pause.] Fred [read 'first' doubtfully and hand pointed till read 'Fred'.] Howard. [Pause.]

(No.) [Thought of a cousin Howard.] [Note 580.]

Now I want to go with your people to se [see] someone who is still in the body and who lives away from here. It is a woman who is past the middle life and who is connected with you and I think is called Aunt and I think the name begins with S—— Have you an Aunt S who is alive.

(Yes.)

Does she live far away from here.

(Yes.)

All right. I guess that is the line. Connected with her in the spirit is a man who is very eager to get into communication but it is all new to him. Do you know anything about the church life of these people.

(Yes in general. Go on.)

That is all I want to know. They are rather set in their ideas of God and the universe and believe in church going and all that sort of thing and this man had an awakening from his dream when he got over here. He is not young [read 'going'] young but a tall rather slender man with quiet ways but rather firm in his opinions and the responsibility of life was rather a burden to him. I do not mean that he was over serious but he took life seriously.

(Yes.)

and he lived [read 'would'] lived [not read tho clear.] a ... lived ... conscientious and upright life and was not afraid to die [read 'do'] die but when he died it was a long and rather tedious process and was a relief to him and to others for he could not get well. Do you know about this.

(Yes.)

When he first opened his eyes to the light of this life it was a

---

580. The name Howard did not develop into anything relevant or recognizable. He is a cousin still living, but his wife died a few years ago. He was a nephew to the Aunt S. mentioned immediately.

great surprise to him but he did not think of it as death. He expected some [not read.] other . . . some other change to follow. But it did seem so good to have the use of his body and not have to be lifted about as he had been. He found a yng [for 'young' and not read.] young woman who had preceded him by some years. Just now I do not know the relationship but will try and find out. She is rather light and very happy and was one of the first to greet him. Do you know any one by the name of Ida who would be in that group. [Note 581.]

(No, but I can inquire. I hope you can go on and make it clearer.)

The best I can do I will do.

(I know that.)

You may rest on that. The Ida seems to be a younger person than the young lady who met him first. She is like a small child but was in the family group. [pencil fell and new one inserted.]

There is another woman with him a woman about sixty years old or a little more perhaps who wears spectacles and has mild blue eyes and soft grey hair parted in the middle and worn very plainly combed and she almost always wears a light dress of some thin material about the home. She is preeminently [read 'permanently'] pre-em . . . [correctly read.] a home body and seldom goes away from the house but she is with him in the spirit you understand (Yes.) and has a way of speaking to him as if he were a member of her family. I cannot now see whether she is mother or sister but they belong together and she goes to the home where

---

581. This Aunt S. is now very old and still living at the time of writing these notes, but may pass away at any moment. Her husband, one of my favorite Uncles died a few years ago. The two were very orthodox in their religious views. He was not a specially tall man but was slender and had very quiet ways, a serious but not melancholy man, with little sense of humor, but religiously conscientious and not afraid to die. The curious allusion to his surprise and expectation that he had to go through another process before his death had taken place is probably a way of referring to his expectation of the physical resurrection; for he believed in the resurrection of the physical body. The Ida mentioned in this connection is not recognizable by any one. If it had been "Lida" it might refer to his sister-in-law, my Aunt, who preceded him not many years. But some statements made immediately about her age discredit this supposition. But if it be a mistake for Adda it would be this Uncle's living sister.

S is and feels as if she belongs there. Is there a younger woman who lives with S——

(Yes.)

I see one there and a busy bustling sort of a young woman she is and the spirits know her as well as S——.

(Yes.)

The woman in the spirit was a woman who worked unceasingly. she always had to when the family was smal [small] and she never cased [ceased and not read.] ceased to do so as long as she lived. She is really more like a mother and I am now perplexed as to whether she is the mother of S—— or the man in the spirit but she belongs there as the mother of one of them.

Who is A——. Do you know.

(Not yet.)

I think this A has something to do with this woman. It sounds like Abby. yes that is it. Now let me look again. Have you ever been in the house where Aunt S—— is.

(Yes.) [Note 582.]

Do you know anything about a peculiar old fashioned bureau red brown and has some brass trimmings on it and has some extra drawers on the top. It looks like two small ones but there may be more but they are small. There is no mirror on it. It is a sort of heirloom and has been in the family a long time. I wonder if you know about it.

(If you can tell whose it is now I can be surer.)

I will se [see] what I can do but first let me tell you that in company with the bureau is a small table with drop leaves and two small drawers which look like the same kind of wood and

---

. 582. The woman described as sixty years old, etc., is not recognizable. The younger woman, however, "who lives with S." is Stella, so that the initial S. is right for that person. The initial A. might refer to my Uncle's youngest sister whose name was Adda, not Abby. I never heard of this person myself, not being acquainted with any of the relatives of this Uncle.

Inquiry of the living Aunt, now very old, results in the fact that her husband's, my Uncle Finney's mother died at 73 years of age, wore spectacles, had mild blue eyes, hair parted in the middle and combed plainly, but did not wear such a dress as described. The record is uncertain whether she was a mother or sister, but the A and Abbie, probably referring to his living sister may explain the association of the two words.

they were originally together but are I think now separated one party has her table and another the bureau.

(Good.)

I see a moving for the bureau as if it had been taken away whether for repair or not I do not know but it looks so new and good now as if put into new condition. It is strange but I cannot see to whom it belongs but I see [see] it and in connection with Aunt S—.

(Good.) [Note 583.]

She has several old fashioned things which will in time be passed along as they have a certain value to the girls. Do you know what that means.

(Yes, tell what girls will value them or it.)

Is it your girls Hyslop.

(No.) [I had her brother's daughters in mind, one of them the young woman in the home with this Aunt.]

I don't know then but it sounded like daughters and I of course thought of yours.

(No, I had in mind some daughters of some one else.) [Note 584.]

Do you know a Peter. Have I asked you that before.

(I think you have but I am not sure, as I will have to consult long past records to see. Go ahead.)

Do you know one named Peter.

(Not that I recall.)

He is in that same group and seems to be familiar with the

---

583. My informant, the Stella mentioned, writes me that "in one room of Aunt Jane (name is Sarah Jane) there is a red cherry bureau answering this description, given to her by her father when she went to housekeeping. At one time there was in the same room a small drop leaf table she had bought at the sale of an old friend in Clifton who died a few years ago. She sold the table. It had been repaired." I may have seen the bureau at some time, but I knew nothing of its history. The table I never saw or heard of, as I have not visited this Aunt for many years. It was also of cherry wood.

584. My informant tells me that Aunt has a number of things that will be handed down to others. She had no children and the girls will be her nieces, one of them now with her. The influence of the subconscious is apparent here.

conditions here and there is also some one called Frank who is alive. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

and I find a life of busy and active work. It is back and forth [not read.] b. . . forth back and forth all the time for Frank. So much to do and so much energy with which to do it. He is very much alive all the time and thinks he knows many things and really does know some. He is not half bad but is rather opinionated [not read.] opinionated yes [to correct reading.] not a bad case of it but inclined to be that way.

(What relation to Aunt S. is he?)

He seems more like her boy. Is he her son.

(You must tell.)

all right. I seem rather slow but I am working with raw material this time. When I find Frank I find a good man all right and I like his influences and know that he would be so happy to see you. It is a good strong feeling he has toward his friends for he is rather materialistic [not read.] materialistic [read 'underestimated' questioningly.] materialistic worldly. One world at a time for him but he is interested and will listen to any theory [not read: hand pointed.] theory or plan and keep his own opinion still. He is bright and makes friends and has [read 'this'] has many of them where he is.

(Can you give the initial of his last name?)

[Long pause.] I am only trying to catch it.

(I understand.) [Note 585.]

---

585. No one recognizes the name of Peter as relevant. Frank is the name of Aunt's nephew, the brother of the Stella living with her. He is not known to be materialistic in any respect. He is a member and elder in the Presbyterian church, and this is in a community where there is nothing to be gained by insincerity of any kind. It is not clear what the use of the term "materialistic" means here, as the man is otherwise correctly enough described here, according to information; for I have not seen him since I was a young child and he the same. From what I have accidentally learned through another channel it is true that he would be glad to see us. He lives in the far West.

I learn by inquiry of this Frank mentioned that he thinks the name Ellis is that of friends with whom his wife's sister lived after their mother died. He does not recognize the name Leighton. Frank is the brother of the Stella living with Aunt Sarah, living wife of the Uncle Finney.

[Long pause.] What about T—— ("T"?) Yes. does it sound like T—— [later writing shows it was probably intended for 'F'.] near them.

(You must say.)

[Pause.] Is this S—— a last name and the F—— [pause.] a F. S. I...

(That is all right for another person. Tell what relation that F. S. is to Aunt S——.) [F. S. was her husband.]

I don't want to get mixed here. it is so important. Let me move slowly. (Yes.) [Pause.] Is there a Fannie.

(Not that I know, but I shall inquire.) [Pause.] (It was the last name of Frank that I was after, you know, and ...)

Oh yes. I must get that if I can. [Pause.] Frank [Long pause.] Not yet do I get discouraged.

(I understand.)

I hear something with two syllables like Ellis or some such name that seems to be with Frank but I know I havent [Not read.] it yet ... havn't it yet. [Pause.] No use just now.

(All right.)

It will probably come lat[er]. Do you know [not clearly written.] know any one who begins with L—— there. It is more like Leighton or some such name. It is some one whom Frank knows Frank I think, yes. [to correct reading of the last several words.]

(I shall inquire.)

You have made inquiries of these people before on matters pertaining to these things and they are prepared to answer in all you say about it. Your father tells me that much and he also says they are surprised each time as if it were an entirely new subject. That is the way with all your family. They have no very definite idea of the sope [read 'scope' as I saw its meaning and no correction made.] of the work.

(I understand.)

Your father says he will have to take a hand here unless something more definite comes.

(I understand.)

Do you know Louie [pause.] or Lois Lois [read 'Louie'] yes [to reading] an old lady named Lois.

(I do not recall now.) [Note 586.]

Do you know anything about Sandusky.

(Only a little.)

Did you have friends there.

(Not that I know of.)

Your father must have known someone one from there as he gave me the name and he is so careful. I know it would not come through unless it meant something. It is about a railroad and do you know anything about a railroad going through some place where you l... [sheet changed.] you lived a new railroad. It seemed an event [read 'one went'.] an event.

(Go ahead.)

I see some light colored sand and a tint [not read.] of red ... tint [read 'and'] tint ['ts' crossed.] ... clay in it almost like a clay bank and I see rails and hear sounds and know that men are working on a railroad and it means so much to the people. I do not mean electric [not read.] electric but steam and there is so much talk about where it is to go and so much surveying [not read.] surveying and measuring and all that sort of business and then it is some time the matter is dropped and then after awhile it is resumed and the thing goes through and is a connecting link with the bigger world. It is a country district which I see [see] and there are pos [for 'pros', but read 'pos' questioningly after a pause.] and cons ... pros and cons in connection with it. Your father must have been much interested in it. Do you know about this.

(Yes I do. Go on and tell all you can about that and tell the kind of railroad it was and what the result.)

Yes he is all enthusiasm over it now as he was then for he was one of the men who saw the final good it might be although the fight was bitter each way at the time. It was hard to make

---

586. I did not get the initial I desired. But as said in the text, F. S. were the initials of the Uncle from whom I am supposed to be hearing. "Fannie" may be a mistake for the full name represented by the initial F. as his name was Finney Stewart. The name Ellis does not recall to the sister any one in connection with this Frank. The name Louie or Louis recalls nothing to either my Aunt or my cousin. What is said about the state of mind of these people in regard to my inquiries is quite true with most of them, and some opposition from many of them.

people understand that the railroad had rights. You know what that means do you not.

(Yes.)

Then there were the settlements and then everybody got greedy. One would have thought there [not read.] was . . . there was no good coming to anybody from the passage through this place but it was for the better carriage of products as well as for the future use by men you know there had to be some way of getting [getting] the goods to centers. I think that was what the first plan was. It looks so hevy [heavy] like freight and so much lumber yes [to correct reading after first reading it 'timber'] do you know about the lumber going through.

(I do not recall just now, but tell me the kind of road it was.)

Let me see if I know what you mean Do you mean its use or its make up.

(Its make-up.)

Well it was a rather hard matter to make up but I see some hevy [heavy] cord wood [not read.] wood sticks or whatever it would be called and rough road. It is rather level more as if in some places the rails were laid on the surface instead of being imbedded as they now would be but it was all changed later.

(I understand.)

and when the change was made it was wider and made some short cuts [not read.] cuts and there was some trestle work.

(Where was that trestle work?)

It seems to be over a gorge or river bed [both words not read.] river bed [not read still.] river bed or some such place and was a great event.

What is the B— and O— anything to do with this.

(I think it was some way related to the B. and O., but I think it was first . . .)

a branch of that.

(I think so.)

Your father will take this up tomorrow. It gives him a good subject to begin on.

(Yes.) [Note 587.]

---

587. There begins with the reference to Sandusky a remarkably interesting incident in the life of my father. I do not know any reason for the mention of Sandusky in that connection. It had no relation to the railway

It is late now.

(Yes.)

Goodbye.

I know by the power.

(Goodbye. Thanks.)

G. P.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Hello. It is a long ways out there.

(Where?)

Off where we have been.

(Where have you been?)

Don't you hear water running?

(What river?)

I don't know. [Pause.] [Reached for my hand and I took hers.]

[Sigh and strong pressure of hand, pause and cough.]

I see such a beautiful thing. It is a great big city. I walk to a beautiful building. [Pause.] Oh there are so many people, flags flying, and it is a gala day, all so level.

---

described. If it could be interpreted as a mistake for Zanesville it would be very relevant.

Long before my time a railway had been begun between Xenia and some point east and was abandoned. The old bed had grown over with grass and weeds. But there arose, somewhere about 1873 or 1875 a desire to build the railway. It was originally planned—the abandoned road—as a standard gauge but this new one was a narrow gauge. When it went into bankruptcy it was changed to a standard gauge. This is probably referred to in the statement “when the change was made it was wider.” There was an important short cut made not far from our home, abandoning at that point the old bed. There was also a trestle built not far from our home across a stream, a creek, not a river. The ties were at first simply laid on the surface and afterward filled up.

There was a great deal of local fuss about the road. It was to be and was a connecting link with the larger world of business east of us, and my father was the most enthusiastic man in the township about it. There was much opposition to it and much indifference on the part of others, and my father was on the side of building it, canvassing for subscriptions to its stock, and contributing himself.

I was mistaken about its being a branch of the B. & O. It was an independent road until it went into bankruptcy and was changed to a standard gauge, when it became a part of another system, the C. H. & D.

(Who says that?)

I see it. Do you know? Were you ever in Cincinnati?

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about it?

(A little.)

Is it pretty?

(I don't know.)

I don't know what this is. I am kind of lost. [Awakened.]  
[Note 588.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 5th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Did you know McKinley?

(No, why?)

I thought I saw him.

[Long pause in which we talked about telepathy and Thompson Jay Hudson and his work.]

I've got to go. [Showing signs of feeling outside influences.]

[Long pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh yes. [Pause.] I see the people. [Pause, a slight groan and a pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

I give you greeting my friend of humanity and come with a

---

588. The allusion to a gala day and to Cincinnati has no meaning to me, unless it refers to an Exposition which my father and I visited in my boyhood. Flags were plentiful at this exposition, many of them on the Exposition Buildings and many about the city.

The circumstance which might call out this reference to Cincinnati and the exposition there in this connection may be the following. The railroad about which my father had just been communicating was absorbed by the Cincinnati, Hamilton and Dayton Railway, and not the B. and O. It is possible that the attempt to give the name of the road that absorbed the narrow gauge would at once arouse the association with the exposition in Cincinnati, as there was but one other incident in my father's life that was associated with the place and that he would probably not think I knew.

glad spirit to add my testimony to the thousands which have already been given to the truth of the spirit intercourse [delay in reading.] and manifestations [pause.] My kindest greetings to my friends whom you may chance to meet but believe me it is to you I come with profound respect for your efforts and a desire to do what I may to serve you in this good work.

My young friend Philip Savage invited me here. Yours heartily, Edward E. Hale. [Pencil fell.] [Note 589.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

We let the friend come as he was invited and is a really [read 'ready' and hand pointed till correctly read.] h... helpful influence in many ways. We need the influence of men of worth and upright spirit over here as much as we need men in the world of materiality to work with us.

(I understand.)

I think Lilian Whiting will be pleased to know that he spoke especially of her and of Miss Field [not read.] Field Kate [in correction of my reading of 'Miss' as 'this'.]

[The 'F' in 'Field' was made exactly like 'T', a circumstance to be remembered in connection with the letter which spontaneously became 'F' in the work of yesterday in connection with the name of my uncle.]

He has met and has been charmed [read 'chained' and 'claimed'] charmed with her wit [read 'bit' and hand pointed till correctly read.] and audacity he called it. He says she was the most audacious spirit he ever knew expressing itself through a perfectly feminine body.

Now for our lesson in identity. Was the work good yesterday.

(Yes it was.) [Note 590.]

589. There is nothing evidential in this message from Edward Everett Hale. Mrs. C. knew him. Dr. Hale was acquainted with Philip Savage, and it might be a natural inference on the part of Mrs. C. to associate them, tho I do not think it probable.

590. This message from G. P. transmitted for Dr Hale has considerable evidential value. Miss Whiting knew Dr. Hale. Miss Whiting writes me regarding the message:—

Whenever I get to philosophizing or even talking to you as man to man Jennie P taps me on the head with a pencil and says rather scornfully stop gossiping and go to work so I am under orders you see and must obey. I think she is right after all for she knows how to make the minutes count for all time to come.

She returns to the work of yesterday and shows me a bit of railroad. was that where we left off.

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about a washout and a part that had to be done over. There seems to be some trouble as if there was a delay on account of it and people for some distance came to look at it. Any way this whole affair was of vast importance to the people of the section where it was and the wise heads shook many times in authority against the whole plan but it went through. it went through says your father.

(Yes, what can he say about the part he took in helping the work?)

He stops a moment and I see from his face that he was earnest for it all the time and just what he did beside talk I do not now know. Wat ['wait' but read 'but'] a . . . wait and I will see what he shows me. Do you know anything about a large

---

"The Brunswick, Boston, May 19th, 1911.

Dear Dr. Hyslop:

Soon after the death of Kate Field (which occurred on May 19th, 1896), I received in Paris, where I was at the time, a letter from Rev. Dr. Edward Everett Hale, one as comforting and beautiful as it was unexpected,—as I had not written to him or done anything to call it forth—in which he said that his sister Susan had told him that Miss Field's death would be a great sorrow to me, and after expressing his sympathy he added: 'I did not know Miss Field; I hope I shall know her.' And this sentence, in its perfect simplicity of faith, its taking for granted, of course, that the life beyond offers all opportunities for meetings and friendships, to be made, as well as renewed, impressed me deeply.

The letter which I still have, and the message to which you allude, seem to complete a sequence.

Most faithfully yours,

LILIAN WHITING."

There was no possibility whatever that Mrs. C. should know this in spite of her acquaintance with Miss Whiting, according to the testimony of Miss Whiting.

team with cattle hitched to it and lumber like logs being hauled somewhere.

(No, I do not recall that.)

Were there loads of lumber like logs on ties [not read.] ties which passed anywhere near where you lived.

(Probably, but I do not recall them myself.)

I see that passing and your father driving in a wagon an open [delay in reading but read before the next was written.] an open wagon passing these teams on the road and speaking to the teamsters and with a smile on his face feeling the joy of success. Your father was a man who could see the joke of a situation as quickly as a boy and always retained that boyish laugh when he was pleased. I hear his laugh over this affair. What does he mean about land [delay in reading.] land yes [to reading.] I hear something about land grant. Do you know what that means.

(In general, but be more specific.)

It is in connection with all this business. there was a land grant and then the farmers [read 'famous'] farmers had to make some concessions and all that sort of business but he jumps from that to a sound of cars and whille [read 'whistle' as I saw its meaning and no correction.] of engine which I hear as I am on his land. Do you know about the noon train up yes [to correct reading.] does that mean anything to you.

(Yes, tell what.) [Note 591.]

---

591. I learn that there was a washout in the building of the road and that it caused some little delay. I do not personally recall it. There was much doubt about its completion. I believe there were no oxen used in hauling ties. The incident here, however, which is not perfectly accurate, is remembered by my stepmother. But this inaccuracy is only a small detail. My father was going to church one Sunday with my stepmother and they saw the men at work on the road. It was against the law to do work of the kind on Sunday. Father stopped a teamster and asked him if he did not know it was against the law to be hauling timber in this way. The man was one of the foremen at the work. He simply swore at my father and went on about his work. My father did not feel "the joy of success" in this, but he would feel that he had done his duty. If this was the incident in mind we can see that the subconscious did not get the whole character of it. But it is recalled thus by my stepmother who was the only witness to it now living and it had impressed my father.

The reference to my father "seeing the joke of the situation" represents

Could you hear the noon train up (Yes.) and when that came it was a signal to go to the house. (Yes.) I see [see] your father looking out on the land away from the house and then hear the train and the whistle and then his remark and then you all move toward the dinner table. I can see the smoke above the trees and through a clearing [read 'driving'] clearing, catch a glimpse of the train I believe for I see him looking that way as he moves toward the house. One would almost [read 'think'] almost think your father owned the road as he was so much interested in it. [Note 592.]

Now do you know anything about a fire somewhere near where the train went into the town or village. I see some brush or forest fire and I see each side of the railroad and then it stops as if the fire had done its work. I have to hurry so I do not know as I express myself very clearly. [Note 593.]

(All right. Does he recall giving money to help build that road?)

[Pause.] He nods his head in assurance that he does know and recall but that did not seem a good picture to present. Sometimes events lend themselves to pictures more than other things.

(I understand and I wish he would do the best he can about that money.)

Yes he gave some money. He shows me something like a paper with names on it like a list of contributors and his name is among the first and he not only gave himself but tried to get others. He had as hard work to make some people believe the railroad was for their advantage as you do to make the world see

---

a characteristic of him, tho it might not describe his state of mind in the discomfiture of the incident described. He was always pleased with the prospect of success in the building of this road. The land grant mentioned was probably the earlier one in connection with the first attempt to build the road, tho it might refer to the last one, as I do not recall what took place in securing the right of way in this last effort.

592. The whistle of the train could be easily heard from my home, as the road was not more than half a mile distant. Often we could not hear the dinner bell and this whistle of the noon train told us when to go home for dinner.

593. I have no recollection of such a fire as is mentioned. It is probable, as such things frequently occur along railways, and so cannot have significance here without being more specific as to place and details. Cf. p. 936.

your position. But with the same spirit he kept at it. Some people seemed to think they ought to have passes for life and be paid for using [read 'working' and 'taking' and hand pointed till read correctly.] the road. using the road as well. Do you know an old Dr. [read 'Di'] doctor who was interested in that road.

(No, but can find out.)

I see a man who is rather heavy and a full grey beard and a florid complexion [two words not read.] florid complexion and a character about the place. He always had an interest in everything sometimes for and sometimes against but this road was a matter which interested him. [Note 594.]

Was your father to get any return for his money when the road was done.

(He expected dividends on it.)

He speaks of a disappointment in connection with it, a long deferred [poorly written and not read.] deferred promise or settlement. It did not turn out just as he expected.

(Why not?)

there seems to be some trouble at the end and then a swallowing [read 'settling'] up ... swallowing up of what should have come to the original projectors. Was there any litigation [read 'obligation'] litigation [not read tho clear enough now.] litigation in connection with it, not especially your father but some others. Do you know about that.

(I think so. Does he remember just how much he put in?)

I don't know but the moment you asked the question I saw 10,000.

[Pause.] (Ten thousand.)

---

594. My father did take around a list for subscriptions and sent me to one or two neighbors to get signers. He did have a hard time to get people to see that the road would be to their advantage and met with strong opposition and much ridicule.

There was a country doctor exactly as here described that was interested in the railway. He lived in a small village near us, had a heavy beard and florid complexion and a good reputation in the place. He was one of the few people in that village for whom father had any respect. His interest in the railway with father is attested by my stepmother. It is not a personal recollection of my own. I simply knew it was consonant with his character.

No one thousand. do you know about that.

(I do not know that, but I do know what stock I found after his death.)

That is pretty good. I saw some certificates [read 'difficulties' questioningly.] before ... certificates before you spoke and was going to write about those next but the money seems to have been quite a sum for him, about a thousand I think, but the stock or shares were more than that. How could [read 'ould'] that... could ... be.

(I don't know.)

Could he get in on... Could he get in on the ground floor and expect to have about 5 times what he put in. It is all a little hazy but it was one of the disappointments of his life. He intended to make a little money as well as hep [help] the cause along. The original plan was for help and the money was a secondary consideration.

(I understand.) [Note 595.]

Do you [superposing.] know anyone by the name of Church. (No.) or Churchill. (No.) That word is spoken. was there a hill that was called Church hill.

(Not that I know of.)

Strange [read 'swings'] I see this. Strange I see this building which looks like an old fashioned white meeting house and it has a steeple and it is up a little higher than the rest of the buildings near it and then I hear something about Church hill.

(If more definite things can be said about that church I can be sure.)

I will see what can come. It is summer and I see the people walking and riding toward the building and I hear steps [read 'stops' tho clearly written 'steps'] steps over wood and see some long wood steps before going into the church. there are three

---

595. Father took \$300 worth of stock and expected dividends on it. He did not take a thousand dollars worth. But he lost all his money. The road went into bankruptcy and was in the courts awhile and then was sold at auction, the original stockholders losing all their money. It was a disappointment to my father, perhaps more because the neighbors could say his arguments had proved unsound than for his loss. He went into the matter more as a public benefit than as private profit, and he lost the latter while he won the former.

or four or five of them and as I step in I see the plain glass windows with oval tops and a rather high platform and a simple pulpit. It is very plain all over and I think the music is behind [not read.] me . behind [not read.] me ... behind me as I walk toward the front of the church. I walk down the left aisle and about a third or a little more of the way I walk in and there is a lady sitting in the pew some one whom you ought to know I think. [Note 596.]

(How was the music conducted.) [Thinking of the old precentor method.]

What do you mean. a Quier [erased.] chorus or a few people a congregation. on your asking me about that I see a small organ. It is not a grand affair or very large but I see a man standing near the organ and then I hear voices but there are several. It is not a quartette simply but more like a company of people.

(What did father think of music in religious worship?)

Strange when you ask me that I feel a sudden aversion to anything except congregation singing. It seems as if these paid singers [read 'supers'] and ... singers and players and all that sort of thing was out of place in the house of God. Do you know if this is true.

(Yes, why, then, was the organ mentioned?)

596. While this communication about a church was going on I had in mind an old church which father attended in my earlier days, situated on the edge of a bluff sloping into a creek. But it was not white and not what the description soon showed was in the mind of the communicator. The church in his mind, as the sequel showed, was the one mentioned in my first Piper Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, p. 492), but not described there. The church in mind is not accurately described. It was not white, tho the steeple was white and the window frames in it. It was a brick church and people did come to it as indicated, some walking in the town and some riding from the country. The windows were plain glass and, if I remember rightly, round at the top. The platform was about three feet high and the pulpit plain, as those of most country or town churches were in that period. My Aunt Eliza attended that church at one time after her marriage. I do not know whether her seat was in the left or right aisle, and neither would my father, but the husband who died in 1898 would know well, and would be the source of most of the information conveyed.

The church in mind here was not on a hill, properly speaking, tho it was on a slop that rose from the lower part of the town and reached its summit at some height above the lowest part of the place.

I think simply because he did not care for it and he would say so too and did for he makes a move of his head in protest. Was that put in afterwards, after he had been going there some time.

(At another church about which he knew, but not at the church I am thinking about and which I supposed he was describing.)

[I here suddenly saw that the communicator probably had in mind the church mentioned in the communication through Mrs. Piper and which was mentioned in my first Report. My father, however, never went to that church. An uncle, the husband of the lady probably in mind here whom I ought to know, and deceased some years, did attend that church.]

Yes you are right. the man conducting was the way the music used to go and this organ was put in afterwards I think. you will know about this. [Note 597.]

(Describe the man who began the singing.)

[I had in mind the first church I thought of and wanted to see if the correct precentor, generally my father, would be mentioned. The sequel shows that the communicator remained by the church he had in mind.]

a man about the medium height with brown hair and a bit of age perhaps showing in it but not much. He is rather fair [read 'far' and hand pointed until read.] and has red face as if working out of doors [not read.] all . . . doors . . . all the week. He is not a professional singer [not read.] singer that is one who hases [has as] that his business but he had something to do with singing all the time. Do you know about singing school.

---

597. My father never attended that church. I suppose even that he had never been in it after 1858. The communication about the music confuses two different periods and customs which were separated by some years and which I learned after the Uncle's death and after my sittings with Mrs. Piper, the details of which were not mentioned in the first Report. Previous to the introduction of the organ there was a voluntary chorus conducted by the man who is mentioned a little later in this sitting. Then the congregation resolved on an organ and my Uncle left the church. It was put in later. My father's attitude about instrumental worship is correctly given, but it may have been suggested by my own question and the form of it in this connection, tho the phrase "house of God" is exactly his in such a place and not natural to Mrs. C.

(Yes, tell...)

Did not this man have a singing school sometimes.

(Yes.)

That is what I see as if he had a place where all the young people went and sang two part and three part songs and music of all sorts. Not particularly religious at the singing school. your father liked that all right. It was good. It was only the instrumental that he objected to in church.

(Yes, can he tell where that man lived who had the singing schools?)

Now again when you ask that I see him [not read.] him travelling about, sometimes he had one in one place and sometimes in another but he must live not far off for I see him sometimes talking with your father as if he had just come in for a little time not as if he had come a distance, but more like a near neighbor.

(What kind of work did he do when not teaching music?)

I se [see] his hands and the[y] look as if he were not a farmer [saw it was meant for this, but it was so poorly written that I would not read it.] farmer but as if he did something else with them. There are some stains or marks on his hands like a yellowish brown [not read.] brown color but the hands look rather soft. I se [see] him standing at a bench or table or something of that sort as if fixing [not read.] up ... fixing up something to work with. What is that stuff he puts in his mouth and does he use a hammer.

(I am not sure, but can father tell why he did not farm?)

He seems to have other business. You don't seem to know what this yellow stain on his hand is. Did he have a violin.

(I do not recall, but shall inquire.)

He has some long strings which look like violin strings. at first I thought he was a shoemaker and that these strings were waxed ends. Do you know what waxed ends are.

(Yes.)

Did your singing teacher have any of those.

(I do not recall, but shall inquire.) [Note 598.]

---

598. I was still stupid enough to keep in mind the old church which I thought my father had in mind and had not dreamed then that the affair was

all right. this much is true. He was a good man and most of people were glad to have him come to call and see them. Do you know about a woman connected with him, a black haired and dark eyed woman who was most active and talkative.

(Yes.)

I see her and I se [see] her when calling taking [talking] about an hour to get away after she says goodbye. She was one

---

related to my Uncle. I saw that the description was not accurate and took the device to make clear what church was meant, knowing that if my father was named I should know exactly what church was meant. But the description turned on another person who was soon identified and proved that it was the church which I have indicated as that of my Uncle and not the one I had kept in mind.

When the allusion was made to the singing school I recognized the man at once. He was a man of medium size, dark hair, whether brown or black I do not recall. My stepmother, asked what the color of his hair was, without telling her what was said here, replied that it was brown, not black. He was as old as father. His complexion was fair and face a little florid, not from working out of doors, tho he lived in the country. He was not a professional singer, but he did conduct singing schools in the country about to make his living. He went to the country schoolhouses to conduct his singing classes and the young people about the neighborhoods came to them. The music was not distinctively religious music and my father liked to have us children learn to sing, with objections to religious hymns if they were to be used in worship. I take it this was in mind when the communicator remarked, in connection with the description of the music, that "your father liked that all right."

The man travelled about from school district to district to teach his music classes, but he lived next to my father, and often came over to talk to father. He lived on a farm, but he would not farm. The answer to my question was not directly given, as readers will observe, but a better one could hardly have been given, when it was said that "the hands look rather soft." He was the standing joke of the neighborhood in the matter of farming.

The allusion to stains on his hands has no meaning to me. I do not recollect, and neither does any one else in the family, that he did any shoe making or mending. Inquiry of his daughter shows that he did not have a violin. It is possible that there was a change of subject here when I asked my question and the answer gets interfused with what the communicator had started to say. For this man lived on the old place, in a new house, where, in the old log house, a negro shoemaker and mender lived. We boys often took our boots there to have them mended. This was more than forty years ago, probably not less than forty-five years ago. Father would send us there for another purpose, which I shall not mention, as well as for getting our boots mended.

of the people who always stand up and finish the visit [not read.] at ... visit at the door or on the steps.

(I understand.)

but she was a worker and worked with her hands as fast as her tongue went and she always knew everything and everybody. Do you know any one named Maria [read 'Nora'] Maria.

(Not sure now, but if you can give the last name or initial of that teacher I would know.)

Of course if I gave you his name his work his nation and his pedigree [not read.] you... pedigree you would know him but I must give you just what I can.

What is B— for.

(That is right.)

all right then. my impudence just served [not read.] to... served to divert us both until Mary Ann sent it in. There is method in all our madness you see.

(Yes.) [Note 599.]

Now I have a strange little thing I want to tell you. I see an animal [read 'annual'] animal like a deer or elk. It is a horned creature and very wild. It seems to have stayed [so read, paused for better reading and reread 'stayed'] strayed from its native heath and to be seen about the place as if you boys had heard about it or seen it or something of that sort. Do you remember it.

(Not now. Go on, some one may recall it.)

I see [see] in connection with it a gun. Now the animal is not shot by any of your family but it is shot by some one else and is seen by the most of the people round [not read.] about ... round about but it is not for that I am seeing the deer but for the old

---

599. He was a man of good character, and his wife was exactly as the woman here described. She had very black hair and was one of the most loquacious and gossiping persons we knew. She was a very hard worker, and in fact did more than her husband to support the family. That she worked with her hands as fast and as much as with her tongue is quite accurate. Her name was not Maria, but the name of one of her daughters was Margaret, which may have given rise to the error. She was the oldest daughter and might be supposed to have been the one to verify the facts. B. is the initial of the family's name.

gun. Do you rember [remember] an old gun your father used to have.

(Yes.) [Note 600.]

It was used sometimes about the place to shoot anything that had to be shot. I don't know just what but I see him always so careful about that gun. No one [not read.] No one was to touch it or use it for it was kept loaded [not read.] loaded and ready for use.

(Yes.)

It seems to be behind [not read.] a... behind a door or near a door for I se [see] it hid there and then I see the open door and look out across some fields.

Did you have a door rock at at door [not read.] at that door.

(We did at some doors.)

This is a side door I think and looks like a flat rock as if you could step right out of the door down onto this flat rock. It is not made and fashioned but is just put there. [Note 601.]

(Can he tell what was shot with that gun.)

---

600. No one can remember any such episode as is here described in connection with a deer or similar animal. Long before my time and in the early boyhood of my father there were a few deer about, but they had disappeared long before I was born. It is possible that such an episode occurred in the earlier life of my father, but his last surviving sister does not recall it.

601. The gun referred to here is evidently the same as was mentioned previously. Cf. p. 544. My father was exceedingly careful about that gun, and certain stories were told us children by both parents to induce us to let it alone. I do not know whether it was kept standing behind the door in the old house or not. It is probable. In the new house it was kept, as said above (p. 545) in the corner of a closet and in that way behind a door. It was usually kept loaded, until perhaps 1870 and after, when it was not so kept.

The allusion to the "door rock" is a remarkable incident. The rock at the front door of the new house was a cut stone, made for the purpose. But in the old house there was a flat uncut flagstone, as they called it, for the front door. The cut stone took its place and the flagstone was removed, used for various purposes for awhile and was broken up. It disappeared as a door stone in 1860. Not even my stepmother would know anything about that rock as she did not come into the family until 1872.

In my early childhood the gun was used by my father for hunting squirrels, which might have been intended by the picture of his aiming upward, and the picture becomes distorted by the subconscious conjecture of Mrs. C.

I think so if I can only get it. Of course he remembers and want[s] to tell [two words not read.] and wants to tell but I am getting [getting] tired.

Was it a flying thing you have in mind.

(You tell.) [I had pigs, beeves and rabbits in mind.]

Of course there were several things but you must have some particular thing you want him to recall.

(Recall all he can.)

I se [see] a flying thing first. It looks like a hawk or an eagle or something of that sort for I see the aim [delay in reading.] aim is up. Then I see another thing a large ugly [not read.] ugly looking thing like an animal. all I see is eyes and dark fur or skin. it looks more like fur or hair and has a somewhat pointed snout. I am not clear as to what it is but I have a haf [half] fear of it as it is wild. It is noisy to [too] in its wild state. That is I hear something about its prowling [not read.] prowling around and being heard [not read.] heard and thus [read 'this] thus I know it was noisy [last two words written with great effort and care.]. Do you know about this.

(Not now, but there was something he used to shoot.)

I do not see that at all, perhaps tomorrow I will. This thing looked like a fox or small wolf [not read.] wolf yes [to reading.] Goodbye. G. P.

(Thanks.) [Note 602.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Reached for my hand and manifested much muscular stretching of the body and pressure of my hand, while talking French gibberish.]

Do you know Balm of Gilead?

(What is it?)

You know it.

---

602. The answers to my questions were wrong as the reader may see. Evidently the detailed description of the fur animal refers to a fox. But there were no wolves or foxes in that country. Neither were there any eagles. There were hawks and possibly hawks were shot with the gun, but my memory of its use was confined to the creatures named in the note at the time. The answer comes at the opening of the next sitting.

(Not sure.)

Don't you know Balm of Gilead buds put on \* \* \* \* [notes not legible.]

(No.)

Balm of Gilead Opadeldock?

(No.)

It smells something like \* \* [word not legible.]

(I don't know.)

Do you know Nancy?

(Yes. What about her?)

She has penny royal in her hands. She must have gathered herbs.

(I don't know.)

Well she did. [Pause.] I got to go. [Note 603.]

May 6th, 1911.

I called on Miss Whiting last evening and learned that she knew Edward E. Hale well. As she is a friend of Mrs. Chenoweth we must assume that his name may have been mentioned to Mrs. Chenoweth in the accidents of conversation, and besides the fact that he was so well known in this country makes the incident of his appearance here worthless as evidence. But Miss Whiting does not recall ever mentioning him to Mrs. Chenoweth and feels rather confident that she never told Mrs. Chenoweth of her own almost intimate acquaintance with Mr. Hale. However this may be, Mrs. Chenoweth could not know the facts which make Mr. Hale's reference to Miss Field so pertinent. At the time of Miss Field's death Mr. Hale wrote a letter to Miss Whiting in which he said, according to Miss Whiting's recollection, "I never met Miss Field, but I hope I shall."

---

603. My Aunt Eliza replies to inquiries that they had "Balm of Gilead" in their garden and also Pennyroyal, of which my Aunt Nancy or Nannie was fond. She was always fond of herbs, according to the testimony of the last surviving sister.

[Opadeldock I never heard of, but as this goes through the press I learn from two strangers that it was an herb much in use at one time.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 6th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] Sarcou. [Long pause, and then a sigh.] What a... What ... [Pause.]

(What is it?)

What are all these animals.

(Tell me.)

Do pigs mean anything to you?

(Yes.)

I see a whole lot of them. When speaking of them would you call them a drove of pigs? I see a whole lot of them, little and big and great fat ones. Do they ever kill little ones?

(Yes. Why do they mention them?)

I don't know. This is a stock yard. Oh it is funny. Do you know? Shall I tell you what I see?

(Yes.)

Do you know anything like a big corral like a stock yard? I never saw anything like it before. I see boards around it. It seems that a few go out at a time and are killed and dressed. Still it does not look like a big thing like Squiers, but there is farming land around it, natural country. Do you know about that?

(Yes.)

I see a gun and hear something like a report. It is a horrid thing to see. I don't like to see anything like that in heaven. You don't talk. May be you are disgusted.

(I am busy taking notes.)

[Pause.] Well do you know anything about a great big vat of boiling water.

(Yes.)

Out of doors?

(Yes.)

It is all sunshine and bright. Why, it's for the pigs.

(Yes.)

Because they scald them. It looks like something put in my hand and it scrapes to get the bristles off. Do you know that?

(Yes.)

I can hear it. Do you know what I mean when I say that's what the old gun was used for?

(Yes, that's what I wanted.)

All right. You think you are getting a good thing when you get that.

(Yes.)

Well I'd rather be excused. \* \* [word not legible.] business I suppose. Those were not killed for the family. Well I had better go on. I will give your hand a cramp writing on the past. [Pause.]

Now it's all lovely [Long pause.] Ce boo [pause.] [Note 604.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

Good morning again Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

We are here with all our neves [nerves] alert and every wish for the best use of our power.

(The incidents as she went out were awfully good.)

Thank you. We worked for that and thought if we could push it through far enough she would get it and it would serve several purposes.

(Right.)

It completes the [pencil ran off page and sheet changed.]

---

604. This long subliminal message is a perfect answer to my question the previous day about the old gun and its use. It is a complete picture of one of our butchering events. The subconscious contribution is in the term "stock yard" and "Squiers" which is evidently the name of a firm in the knowledge of Mrs. C. but the rest of it is our own butchering scene. It was in the country and the hogs were put in a pen and two or three shot at a time. There was a board fence on two sides of the pen. The water for scalding them was heated in large kettles and put into a hogshead, which is called a "vat" in Mrs. C.'s phrase, and we used corn cutters often or usually to scrape off the hair and bristles. They were killed for the family, but as said in a previous note (p. 605) we also butchered pigs for sale and the use of relatives.

It is interesting to see the subliminal revolt against such a scene "in heaven" and then at the end come to something which seemed "all lovely". The subconscious could not distinguish between mental pictures of the past and reality. It is an interesting fact to keep in mind when passing judgment on the nature of these phenomena and the supposed reality of the after life.

It is an instance [read 'natural'] instance of the completed evidence and especially as I could not get it all yesterday when I began on the gun and so I got several instances mixed up but it is all right now.

(Yes.)

This sort of work is the most fascinating \* \* interesting and good in its complete value is it not.

(Yes it is.)

If we can keep this up for awhile we can have some good ground [read 'general' and hand tapped, but I could not read it.] ground on which to stand, working ground I mean.

(I understand.)

Was the work yesterday any good.

(Yes, it was excellent.)

all right. We will go on. (Yes and I shall not ask any questions today.) There are so many ring [not read.] and ... ring [read 'ring' and 'rung'.] ring and picture and paper tests that those seem more out of that class and so of more value I think.

(Yes.)

You catch what I mean.

(Yes and do you recall anything about me last night after I left here?)

[Readers will notice I here broke my promise about questions. I had called on an old friend of G. P. early in the evening and I wanted to see what the reaction would be to my question.]

Your question sets thought working but after awhile I will tell you if I can.

(All right. Go ahead.)

One good thing about working with you is your understanding of the difficulties and patience with us and we are never afraid to tell [read 'let' and hand pointed till correctly read.] you the exact situation. the mental action is just the same here as with you only our mental action becomes visible to you for it expresses in words. The body is a cloak for mental processes. Do you know what I mean.

(I can get sufficient idea not to worry about that.)

Every word from another sets a train of thought in motion

and if your thoughts find visible or audible expression you would be thought wandering in your mind the greater part of the time but the whole process is almost instantaneous and so you are saved the ignominy of the charge [read 'change' and hand pointed till read correctly.] but with us the thoughts are found on the paper sometimes before we know it and so it takes practice and will to keep [keep] the line steady and express only what we desire. Much of the past work in various quarters can be explained by this statement. [Pause, cough and French, with gradual change of handwriting into the composite of Jennie P and G. P., and more rapid. [Note 605.]

Now I will go on with the evidence if I can. Do you know any one by the name of Julia [not read.] Julia.

(Yes.) [Thought of deceased Aunt by that name.]

She has not been heard from here has she.

(No.)

Shall I go on.

(Certainly. I shall be very glad to hear all you can give.)

[Pause.] When I wait it is for evidence which is being extracted by J P—

(I understand.)

either by fair means or foul. She puts everybody on the

---

605. This statement of the process involved in communicating is the best explanation yet given and evidently makes clearer what Dr. Hodgson and Professor James tried to express. Cf. pp. 51-61. I shall have to discuss it at length in the comments on this Report. All that I shall say here for the reader is that this recognition of what occurs in the margin of consciousness with all of us probably shows what G. P. meant by his comparison through Mrs. Piper of the process of communicating with the dream life. Cf. *Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XIII, pp. 362-370, and *Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, pp. 237-333. The idea conveyed here is that these marginal associations, which are not expressed in our physical life in conversation, but are inhibited, are as likely to come in communications as any other thoughts, and it is the function of the control to prevent as much of this as possible. We can well understand how we should regard a person "as wandering in mind" if we got his marginal associations in conversation and the comparison with a dream would be a good one. In communications with the dead where inhibition of communication may not be possible for the person doing the communicating, the thoughts would be fragmentary and confused, and especially if the control did not have good inhibiting power, as well as good judgment in the selection of what the communicator *intended* to send.

gridiron and grinds out some instances before she lets them slip off. [Pause.]

I se [see] very dark smooth hair and a quiet pleasant looking face but neither very old or young between old and young and that is in connection with Julia.

(I understand.) [Note 606.]

I now hear a merry laugh and see so many people about her. This is a spirit I am taking [talking] about. Do you understand.

(Yes, why do you put it that way?)

[At a shot I suspected that the desire was to distinguish between the Julia that I had in mind all along and another Julia living, a sister-in-law, and desired to see if this was what was really meant.]

I thought you had an earthly Julia in your mind.

(That is right, but I understood what Julia you had.)

All right. I did not want you to think I was taking [talking] about the earthly one. You understand now.

(Perfectly.) [Note 607.]

There is a drawn look [read 'drawback' and hand pointed till read correctly.] on the face and a worn manner as if the body was very much worn at death. I am impressed with all this as it is so evident but there is such a patient and sweet attitude that I know the spirit was at rest even in the midst of the rages [read 'ravages' and not corrected.] of ill health [Pause.]

Do you know anything about a book which was constantly read to or by Julia in the last days. It looks like a bible and I feel a Christian influence about her. Do you know about this.

---

606. Julia is the name of a deceased Aunt, the wife of an Uncle Joe mentioned some years ago in the New York sittings and fairly well identified in incidents. She is the mother of the Stella mentioned in connection with Aunt Sarah Jane and is now living with her. This Aunt Julia had dark smooth hair and a very pleasant face and manner. This last fact I get from others. Absolutely all that I knew about her was that Julia was her name and that she was a refined lady. She moved with my Uncle to the West in 1863 and I never saw her afterwards, to my recollection. All else that is here told about her in subsequent communications is absolutely unknown to me and had to be verified by her daughter and sister-in-law.

607. Julia is also the name of the living wife of my brother, whom my father knew well also.

(I do not, but I know a person who will.)

It is such a comfort to her and she died so to speak in the perfect trust and faith which the book gave. Her interest has always been as it was before her death with those whom she left for there are many who loved her and who still miss her but in the way one misses a mother or sister or some close one and still feels that it is right. There is no awful sense of desolation or rebellion as in some cases but a quiet and passive loneliness [not read.] loneliness. Do you understand what I mean.

(Yes.) [Note 608.]

I see a home and in it everthing [read 'laughing'] every-thing that is needful for this one but it all had to be left. There [read 'then' and hand pointed till read correctly.] was ['wa' written before hand pointed to previous word for reading and then after read hand finished the word by writing 'as'] a calm facing of the situation and all her belongings were disposed of in a satisfactory way. I do not know just why she should speak of that but as she does I will speak of it to you.

Do you know anything about a peculiar spread. It looks very old fashioned and of some interest as a an [superposed on 'a' erasing, and not read.] an article passed down. It is blue and white and looks like one of those hand made things. I mean hand woven. It is still in existence and is thought much of. Julia did not do it herself but it was done by some one before her day. [Note 609.]

Do you know any one by the name of Margaret.

(Yes.)

connected with her.

(Yes.)

And now I see her working about as if she had returned to

---

608. This description of the suffering and drawn appearance at the time of her death is said by the daughter to be correct. She was just such a religious nature as indicated. The Bible, however, was not read to her the last few weeks of her life, but seems to have been read to her much before this. She was too ill the last few weeks.

609. In regard to this "peculiar spread" the daughter writes me: "Mother had a blue and white handmade spread, quite a handsome one, handed down from my great grandmother Little. It was fringed on three sides."

the normal life. I se [see] a room rather low ceiled and open doors and the room is not very large but is so full of things. It seems as if there are things everywhere. It is a room where many come and go. I am not making it plain to you I think but this is what I mean. There are a number of people in the family and each one has something in that room for it is the common living room and everybody comes in and leaves something either in a chair or on the table or somewhere about.

(I understand.)

But it is all so homelick ke [superposed on 'ck' to erase.] [read 'houselike'] home ... and cheerful, liberty hall style anybody and everybody talks and laughs and has a good time and nobody is bothered with limitations. You know what I mean all right.

(Yes.)

Have you ever been in that home.

(No.) [Note 610.]

Shall I go on. (Yes.) I see her look up at an old fashioned clock perfectly straight sides and flat top. I say this in distinction to those fancy carved [not read.] affairs ... carved... affairs [delay in reading the first time.] It is on a bracket or shelf and is as comfortable looking an old clock as you could wish to see.

(Good.) [Note 611.]

It is like the face of a benevolent old grandma [read 'guardian'] She ... grandma ... glances at it now and then as she works and then I see her go the .. [caret inserted.] to ... door and look out and while I se [see] trees and grass and all that sort of thing but I also see other houses and hear sounds as if there were near neighbors. [Pause.]

I se [see] her step out and go toward the back of the house and close some blinds as if when the sun got around [not read.] around that way she closed the blinds from the outside.

---

610. Margaret was the name of her sister-in-law and an Aunt of mine. They had lived near each other at one time. The daughter, Stella, writes that the account of the living-room is correct and that the children were always made to pick up things which they threw about in this way.

611. Of the clock the same writer says: "We had a clock answering this description on a shelf in the living-room."

(I understand.) [Note 612.]

Was she not a relative of yours.

(Yes.)

I feel so familiar with you and so much interested in your work and in your family. Some of the family not in your time but away back where they all started. You know again what I mean.

(Exactly.)

[Pause.] I see [see] her stop and look at some flowers. They are ordinary garden flowers but she had such love for them and always stopped and looked at them as if they were people.

[Pause.] [Note 613.]

There is a dog there. It follows her into the house with the same freedom which everything and everybody feels. It is a short haired dog white with a brown spot here and there short ears and fat as can be. It ought to run [not read.] run but it doesn't. It is too well fed. [Pause and French.]

There is a man here standing near her and all I hear is brother. It is her brother. Do you know if she has a tall brother over here.

(No I do not, but I can find out from one I know.)

You know one brother you mean.

(No, but I know a living person who can tell, besides I know a person tall who was not a brother.) [I have learned since that my impression of the son's stature was wrong.]

Over here.

(Yes.)

Of course there is a possibility that the brother is not the tall man but I hear brother and I see the tall man beside her.

---

612. The same authority writes that they lived in a number of houses within her own memory and most of them were back from the road and apart from their neighbors. She has no recollection of the incidents about the blinds and neither has her Aunt with whom she is living and who frequently visited the family.

613. The reference to "away back where they all started" is very pertinent as the locality in which all of us lived before the moving west which separated many of the families. The daughter informs me of the flowers: "My mother was extremely fond of flowers and probably never passed without stopping to see them."



(Well, I said what I did so that you could make any doubts clear.)

I will tell you about the tall man. He opens his mouth as wide as a door when he laughs for he is as genial [not read.] genial and good natured as she is and he [is] so fond of her but I see some tools [not read.] of some ... tools ... sort beside him. They are in a box and seem to be kept around the house for {read 'in', hand paused, then read 'on'} little... for little jobs and things he wishes to do. He is what one would call a handy man about the house. He is often in that home where the grandma clock is and when he went to the spirit it was a sudden thing and very sad. [Note 614.]

I wonder if you know anything about school committee. Did you know any one connected with her who was on the school committee and also had something to do with the highways [not read at once.] the ...

(No, but I know who will know about it.)

all right. it seems as if this man was of some importance

614. This dog is not recalled. The dogs the family had were usually shepherd dogs. Of the statements about her mother's brother she says, also replying to the inquiry regarding her own brother whom I had thought was tall: "None of my mother's brothers were unusually tall, but I suspect they all had wide mouths. It would hardly apply to my brother Ed. He was short."

"My brother Ed. was handy with tools and had grandfather Bancroft's large chest of tools. I do not think that any of mother's brothers used tools much. One was a dentist, one a physician and one a telegraph operator."

The brother of my informant, however, recognizes the dog as one that belonged to his family, not that of his father. His wife died some five years ago and is described later (p. 691). He writes: "Once I owned a white bull dog which was very valuable as a watch dog and a great pet with the children who were small at the time. I don't remember whether he had any brown spots on him or not. He had short hair, short ears and would follow into the house." Inquiry also proved that the dog was quite fat, tho this feature of him is exaggerated here.

Inquiry proves that the "tall man" referred to would not be the brother of the communicator, my aunt. I thought the son tall, but I am told he was not especially so. He may have been tall relatively to his mother who, I know, was small. But the identity is not clear.

"The handy man about the house" describes the son very well who had a box of carpenter's tools that came to him from an ancestor and this son was in fact the "handy man" in carpentry work about the house.

always taking part in whatever was of interest and for the welfare of the whole town. And now Hyslop do you know anything about a store. Did any one connected with her have a store.

(I do not know, but the same person referred to will know.)

I see a store and I see a man with grey hair and a bald spot on his head and he wears his glasses up here about half the time as if to ornament [not read.] his head ... ornament. In the store or near it is the post office for I see him moving and talking about the mail [read 'small' tho clearly enough written.] mail. I do not know whether the pos[t] office is in his store or next door but it is near. I wonder if this is all connected ... all [not read first time.] ... with Julia. It seems to be and yet she is a new communicator to me and I am not sure of her power yet.

(It all depends on what man you have in mind. If anything of his name can come out it will decide.)

We will se [see] what more I can get. There are certainly two men here for one is shorter and stouter than the other and one is husband I believe and one is brother.

(Tell who the husband is.)

If I can I will. Wait a little till I get something else which is being projected. (All right.) Do you know any one beginning with S who belongs in his group.

(Yes, living or dead?) [The daughter in mind.]

I think it is living. (Yes.) It seems to be a woman. (Yes.) and she has a memory that reaches farther back than yours you understand.

(Yes.) [Thinking of the Aunt S mentioned in sitting of May 4th.]

What has your father got to do with all this.

(He understands all of it.) [Note 615.]

---

615. The same authority says: "I do not think my brother ever served on a school board, and do not know about mother's brothers." Of the store the same writer says: "My father kept a furniture store and undertaking establishment at one time in Maroa, Ill. I was quite small at the time and my recollection of the place is hazy, but my impression is that the post office was just across the street." He also wore glasses.

The "S" mentioned might apply to the daughter Stella or to the Aunt Sarah, but the careful and spontaneously made distinction that her memory

I know he does for he suddenly shows up as if he is in the most familiar conditions. Again I see two letters R— and J— are they...

(What is the J for?)

You mean what is the name. (Yes.) I thought it was James but am not quite sure whether it is that or John. [Pause for recognition.]

(Go on.)

It is short like that and is a family name. Right here do you know a Fred who ... (Not Fred.) is there Frank..

(Yes, how is he related to that J.)

It is close in the family. I am all in a bunch yes [to reading.] of relatives. I think J is father to F.

(Right.)

and I think Frank was very close in touch with his father and very much saddened by his death. yes [to reading of 'death'.] must know of that. Who is C.

(Not sure.)

a woman alive in that connection. I am near Frank with that letter.

(All right. I do not happen to know, but can find out. You have not got the name of J. correctly yet?)

You would like me to get it.

(Yes.)

I think J o [Pause and I remained perfectly silent.]

(Yes.)

Uncle Joe is it. [Note 616.]

---

reaches back farther than mine will apply to the Aunt and not to the cousin. Both are living, the Aunt being very old, somewhere near 90.

The brother replies to inquiries that he does not know of any one in the connections that served on school committees or otherwise took an interest in public affairs.

616. The R. is an initial of an Aunt of my informant, a sister of the Julia here concerned. The name in full came later in connection with my father, as it is also related to him here. He probably never knew her in life, and evidently his function here is to help get the names through. She died about 1876 or 1877.

J. is the initial of my Uncle Joe, husband of the Julia named, and father of my informant. The name came correctly a little later than the John which was wrong. He was the father of the Frank mentioned.

(Yes, he was mentioned here long ago in the New York sittings.)

Good he thought he would make a return trip. You see how impossible it would be to remember all these things (yes.) but they come in their own way and in the right connection usually.

(Yes.)

I wonder if you know any one by the name of Adde [Addie] or Ada.

(Not sure now.)

This is a spirit and is some one whom your wife knew I think.

(All right.) I am glad for she seems eager to send some word. She went away before she should.

(Who did?)

Adde [Addie] not your wife. Addie seems to have taken her departure before she was ready but I do not know as she would ever have been ready. Do you know about that.

(The Addie I have in mind would have to be made plain, that is, the Addie I thought of is still living.

[Pause.] That is strange. I heard Addie and I saw a spirit and then beside her I saw your wife and then I looked and saw this spirit as one who desired to live and went away rather against her desire.

(That may be a fact of the Addie meant and if it be made clear I can find out.)

She is rather a pretty woman with dark eyes and hair and a vivacious manner. She was always into something that meant a good time and when she went away it was a hard fight for life. Let me see if I can get another name or some place to help identify her.

(Good.) [Note 617.]

---

617. My wife knew two Addies, both living however, and neither of them described here. I learn from the Frank mentioned a little previously, the living son of the Uncle Joe referred to, that his wife, who died some five years ago, was a woman with dark eyes and hair, a vivacious manner and always in for a good time, and made a hard struggle to preserve her health, but had to resign at last. The only way to account for the mistake in the name and relation of the person to my wife who never heard of her is to suppose a change of communicator had to take place and in the process the "mental pictures" got mixed: for my wife becomes the communicator rather

Do you know any one by the name Miller or Muller.

(Not now.)

som[e] such name as that and now I se [see] a D—. I think it is [pause.] the name of a place. Was your wife in a place beginning with D.

(I do not recall, but where did she meet this Addie?)

It is a school I think and there are many others about. Do you know anything about Dresden [not read.] Dresden. (Yes.) Was your wife there. (Yes.) I think this girl is from there as I se [see] scenes and incidents that suggest the place now that I have the name. It all came so gradually that I did not know where I was. There is much that is connected with that life which is at home she tells me. Do you know about that.

(What home?) [Uncertainty whether my wife's or the other lady.]

Your home. (Yes.) Have you photographs. (Yes.) It seems as if the children never tire of those photographs and talk about the place and what happened and dream of going there some time. There is a reason for it in a way. Now what does Stuttgart mean to you.

(It means nothing to me, but it probably means much to Mary.)

I gave it as it came. She says her time is coming soon and she wants to get a word or two in, in anticipation of her trial [read 'treat'] trial [still read 'treat' tho I might have thought of 'trial'.] trial [not read.] trial [written slowly and carefully.] yes [to reading.] is that what you call a trial.

(No.)

She laughs as well as you. [I did laugh at the mistake.]

(It would be a treat to me, but if she is on the gridiron it would not be a treat to her.)

That is just the way she looked at it but she says no sacrifice is too great for a scientist's wife and she is happy in her anticipation of adding to your glory.

---

clearly in the next incidents, and she did meet an Addie in Leipsic whom she had previously known and also a young lady whose Christian name I have forgotten, but it seems to me it was one that might phonetically be confused with Addie.

(Thanks.) [Note 618.]

The father sticks by as if his hands were covered with glue. Now by the way what do you know about warts. Ever have any.

(Yes.)

When I spoke of your father's hands covered with glue he was instantly reminded of warts. It seems like a boyish episode. I mean a boy's episode when there was a pair of hands covered with warts. I mean a good number of them at once. Do you know anything about that.

(Yes, I do about mine.)

Yes that is just what I refer to. Do you know anything about a small closet over a shelf or near it. It seems to be in a sort of sitting room and as if it were a closet near a chimney. I feel heat [read 'had'] heat near [read 'never', tho clear enough.] near. I reach up to get something from that closet to put on the warts. They were quite troublesome and bled I think for I se [see] sore [not read.] sore looking hands for a while. Is that all right.

(Yes.)

What about a piece [not read.] of pork [not read.] pierc [erased.] piece of pork. Did you rub anything like that on them.

(Yes.)

It was at your father's suggestion was it not.

(I do not recall that part of it, but I recall the pork.)

How funny it seems now (Yes.) but it was serious enough then. I also see something which looks like mutton tallow or

---

618. My wife spent some time in Dresden, but Miller or Muller was not the name of the person there she would most likely mention to my knowledge. She may have met such a person abroad, but I never heard of it. She had an intimate friend, Meyer by name, with whom she roomed in Leipsic. Mrs. C. knows nothing normally about my wife, but as she has been frequently mentioned in the communications and her knowledge of German implied, the significance of the incident about Dresden and the name Muller is less than it would otherwise be. We had a lot of photographs of Dresden, but the children have seen little of them. However my wife got a lot of "Die böse Buben", as they were called, possibly in Dresden, comic pictures and the children at one time were excessively fond of them and this before my wife's death as well as afterward. All that I know of the meaning of Stuttgart to her is that she visited that place in her tour of Europe.

something hard which is melted [not read.] and ... melted and put on. They went away after awhile any way and nobody knew just what cured them.

(I understand.) [Note 619.]

I want to go back to this little clost [closet.] Do you know another one somewhat like it where papers were kept.

(Yes.)

Old papers that had war [not read.] war news and all that sort of thing in them.

(I do not recall, but it is more than probable.)

these papers I se [see] taken out and looked over. Sometimes on rainy days and Sundays.

See here what is the stage or coach which I see. Do you know anything about one.

(Go ahead.) [Thinking of the carriage.]

I se [see] something going down the road a little way off horses and driver [not read.] and all ... driver and all trunks and bags on top and back and it is quite like an English rural [not read.] scene ... rural. Your father seems to know about it.

(I do not.) [Note 620.]

---

619. The change of communicator and incidents is rather abrupt, and the allusion to my father's hands covered with glue had no meaning at first until it became apparent that warts were meant. The incident is a good illustration of the illusions to which the intermediary, Jennie P. or G. P. is exposed in work of this kind.

When a small boy, my hands were badly troubled with warts and they bled often. I remember that medicine was kept on a closet shelf next to the chimney, and I do recall the use of caustic for my warts. I remember being told by a neighbor that bacon fat or skin rubbed on the warts and then buried under the eaves of the roof would cure them. But I do not think father made the suggestion. He knew of the current idea and probably laughed at it. It is even possible that I actually tried the process, as I know I tried many ways to get rid of them. I do not recall the use of melted mutton tallow, but I do recall the use of something hot and melted on them, as I remember the burns caused by it. Mrs. C. might know the superstition about curing them, but no other incident could possibly come to her knowledge, as this was fully forty-five years ago, and no other member of the family knows the facts.

620. The incident of the war papers in the closet and the coach are not at all recognizable in the life of my father.

But my father had several books on the war kept in that closet which we read at all times of leisure, except on Sunday which was forbidden for secular

I think I am losing power. (Yes.) It has been a hard sitting. I do not mean hard except an effort to get so many things and the mine of information is exhaustless. I see now a dozen pictures which I cannot use as I am fearful I will use too much energy from the light.

(I understand.)

and if I exhaust that we are done for.

(I understand.)

I think I will go. Goodbye. G. P. [pause.] & Co. I have to put that in or my partner [partner and not read at once.] partner might refuse to go on. We all send greeting.

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Oh dear. [Pause and sigh.] Isn't it glorious to be able to get anything.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] Are you happy?

(Yes.)

Things come through anyway?

(Yes.)

[Pause, and then opened her eyes and I thought her awake.]

(There we are.)

[Mrs. C. simply stared and I thought Bumble Bee had come in..] Who's Alice? Do you know Alice? Oh dear. [Suddenly recovered normal consciousness and did not remember last statements. [Note 621.]

A few moments after recovery she suddenly burst out with the question: "Did Miss Whiting go under control last night? (Yes.) I just saw her shiver as if she got a confirmation."

Mrs. C. said she had not seen Miss Whiting for some time and Miss Whiting had told me this fact the evening before simply as an incident in our conversation, and Mrs. C. did not know that I had seen her, tho she might have guessed it.

The evening before I called on Miss Whiting to ask about

---

reading. The coach incident, however, cannot be twisted into any recognizable fact in the life of my father. His father came from Scotland.

621. The name Alice is not recognizable as having any suggestions or significance, unless it be that of an intimate friend of my wife, living, so far as I know. But there is no evidence for this significance.

the Hale incident and in the course of our conversation I had occasion to remark that in the history of Christianity the personality of God was not identified with *form* but with a stream of consciousness. She at once shivered, as she often does in conversation when outside influences act on her, and remarked that she heard Mr. Donald, the deceased successor of Phillips Brooks, say 'That is right' and give his name aurally. Apparently this is the answer to my question of G. P. about "last night".

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 11th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

[Mrs. C. sat in a chair behind the table for a little while before the trance came on.]

When I was in the chair I heard the name Sedie, not Sadie, but with a short *a*, not as if it was Seddie, but as if a little shortened up in the *a*. [Pause, and then a dry cough.] [Note 622.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Si mou coo \* \* [French or Indian.] [Pause.] Si oo. [Moved head and shoulders as if not in a comfortable position.] [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

\* \* [I am?] [Apparent difficulty in getting control.] Here we are and glad we are to be at the work again. It is growing most interesting to us to see just what can be done by different people and the way the characteristics [read 'individualistic' questioningly.] charac . . . [suddenly read and word not finished.] declare themselves in the communications. Your father is about the best and steadiest communicator we have yet had for he keeps to the main issue and does not let his thought wander and that is strange to one who wandered a little when he first came to the other place. . .

(Yes.)

Do you remember.

622. The name Sedie has no recognizable meaning. If it had been Sadie it might have been a wandering automatism or a reference to the same person previously named (p. 568).

(Yes, I do and I would like him sometime before this series ends to try to give his pass sentence here.)

Yes he will try and do so. The influence about each psychic is as marked as an atmosphere around a planet and sometimes the very atmosphere diverts [not read.] diverts the thought from any other psychic more than from one's own past.

(I understand.)

That is new is it not. (Yes.) I have tried to understand why the same references and sentences [read 'sometimes' and hand pointed till correctly read.] and communications could not come in completeness and entirety at all places.

(I imagine that the explanation that you gave before will cover that.)

that is exactly it and what I have I have been working to find out and give you. You see if one can remember all of one's life uncolored [read 'involved'.] uncolored or undiluted by the atmosphere of the psychic, that is what he naturally strives to express and not what was given through another light.

(I understand.)

[French etc.] We are being pressed by a woman named Lucy. do you know such a one who was a relative.

(Yes, and if you can tell the relation to a friend on that side it will make this matter clear. I do not know whether she is living or not.)

[I thought of a cousin, mentioned in the Piper Report, but do not know at this time whether she is dead or not. The last I knew she was living.]

This Lucy is with us and is most anxious to communicate. She is rather tall and not very stout and has grey blue eyes and grey hair and wears glasses and is a very outspoken and strong but kind woman. Her ideas are her own never borrowed and consequently is a strongly individualized person. With her is a lady who comes closely connected to you but as yet I only see her hand. I mean the lady who is near to you, not Lucy. Does your wife know this Lucy.

(I am not sure.) [Answer based on uncertainty who it was. My wife knew the Lucy I had in mind. Saw her but once.]

I see [see] her hand as if directing and helping the communicator. Is it a long time ago that you knew her.

(Not especially.) [I could have said 'Yes', but I had in mind an earlier period in my life. I was a small boy when I first met her.]

I feel the past so definitely as if the clearer and more definite knowledge would be in the past.

(Well I may have known a Lucy long ago, but will have to inquire. But tell all you can and I shall see.)

I find a busy and active woman and a great many duties which fall to her hand and I se [see] a street [not read.] street in a small town and I look from one of her windows and se [see] a river [not read.] river in the distance. It is of some size and has something to do with the interests of the town. I mean it is not just a pulsing [not read at once.] pu... [suddenly read.] limpid stream which flows over fragrant meadows [read 'frequent windows,' knowing it was wrong.] fragrant meadows. how is that for a poetical [read doubtfully as 'practical'] expression. poet ... [read.]

(All right.) [Note 623.]

I wanted to make a distinction in rivers and I did so. With this Lucy is a man who has been gone a long long time and he is much more of the spirit life than the earth and I believe he went before she did. Did you know anything about Aunt Lucy.

(That depends on what Lucy it is. If the other name could come I could tell.)

I'll do the best I can. I hear Aunt Lucy as if several people called her that and I se [see] her greatly mourned [read 'moved'] mourned when she died. It was a good woman more good than brilliant and she was very weak [neither word read.] very weak and her weakness communicates itself to me in a measure but the natural strength and independence will [read 'wear' and

---

623. "Lucy" is the name of a cousin of mine, the wife of Robert McClellan, who was a communicator through Mrs. Piper mentioned in my first Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, pp. 97-8). She was mentioned also in this same Report. I did not know at this time whether she was living or not. Inquiry proved that she was living at the time, and the same inquiry brought the information that she had an Aunt Lucy who died many years ago and who is well described in the passage regarding her. She lived in another part of the State near a river which was navigable and played a considerable part in the "interests of the town." I never knew or heard of her.

hand pointed till correctly read.] win I think. She keeps saying a word which begins with I as if it were Ida or a name in which the I is prominent as the initial yes [to correct but delayed reading of 'initial'.] Do you know an Ida or Irene or some name like that connected with her.

(I do not know what Lucy you were talking about and so cannot tell yet.)

Let me see if I can make this a little more definite. I think this is your own Aunt Lucy. Did you not have one.

(Not that I know of.) [Note 624.]

I see with this woman a man dressed in Highland costume and concluded [read 'conducted' doubtfully] concluded he must be of your kin and that she was also of the same branch of the family. Sh[e] [read 'It'] may ... She may be back a little further than you are thinking but I think she must be one of yours and that the effort is to give her the light as well as you. Have you any Presbiteriyan [Presbyterian] people about you.

(I certainly did have them.)

This seems to be a Presbityrian [Presbyterian] lady and she has strong ideas about all religious things and your father is laughing at her dilemma. You know some spirits accept the natural after life but have no idea of the communication with the living and are as apart from the thought and the knowledge as they were in earth life and she is one of those and now when she finds the door open she is puzzled. I think she belongs more closely with the father and the past than [read 'that'] with ... than with you. I se [see] her with a rather short skirt on and a small basket or [on] her arm as if she walked ['lk' fused, as often in this combination of letters.] a little distance to get some particular article of food. This seems rather strange but it realy [really] looks as if she walked out to the country for fresh eggs and some little thing like that as she had always a preference for country things. Have I made it plain to you.

[I was on point of replying when the writing went on.]

---

624. "Irene" was the name of my cousin Lucy's daughter and is living, and was probably never known by this cousin's Aunt Lucy.

Her early life was in the country the later life in a town and this was a little habit of hers. It is not eccentric as it may seem by its being mentioned [not read.] torn [not read.] torn from the context of her life but I happened to get a picture of it so gave it to you.

I see [see] a church which is rather large but it is with other buildings and that is where she worshipped. It looks to me like a stone or brick building. [Note 625.]

Who is Marvin or what has the name to do here.

(I do not know.) [Know an unconnected living Marvin.]

Shall I let it pass.

(Yes, I have not the faintest idea who this Lucy is.)

You know how we cling to a point when we get one and this is a case in hand.

(Yes, but a simple name more definite would clear up the whole thing, the last name.)

[Pause.] Yes I know and I think it begins with M. [Pause.] and I think the Marvin [not read.] Marvin which I gave was not quite right but had some connection with her last name. Do you know any relative whose last name began with M.

(Yes, go ahead.)

Is it Mac [Pause.] (Go ahead.) McIntire or some such name as that.

(Clear it up.)

Thank you for giving me backbone. Let me struggle with it a moment. It is Mac something but just what I do not now know. It will come I am sure after a little.

(All right.)

I want to talk about something else for a moment and will return to this.

(All right.) [Note 626.]

---

625. It has been impossible to verify any of the incidents in this passage regarding the lady mentioned, the Aunt Lucy. I could not get into communication with any one who might know the facts. Her relatives in my locality in Ohio do not remember much about her.

626. The name Marvin is apparently a mistake for the name which becomes more nearly right in a few moments. The Lucy Mac. represents Lucy McClellan, not McIntire, and she was the wife of the Robert McClellan mentioned in my first Piper Report. She also was mentioned there. I did

Do you know anything about a light colored house with a door in the middle and a few steps up to the door and the house is out in the sunlight with no trees [not read.] trees or shade [not read.] shade [read 'shaste' purposely.] shade near it and yet inside the house it is always cool and quiet and seems so peaceful [read 'heartful' doubtfully] peaceful. This is not way back in the past but belongs to your generation but it is away from where you live but some one in the family lives there. It is more like a country place than a city one and as I walk up the steps and go into the house I find familiar scenes and faces familiar to your father. Do you know this place.

(I think I do, but make it more definite.)

Of course I only wanted to know if I was on the right track of evidence ['evidence' read 'course'.] evidence. As I go into this house I see a lady who is not old yes [to correct but delayed reading.] She is middle aged and very quick and active and there was a strong attachment between her and your father and I see a man come into the room somewhat taller than you and rather slender [read 'stouter'.] slender and he is glad and happy or rather would be if either you or yours went there. Is this not right.

(Yes.)

I go all over the house with perfect freedom. It is a sort of home one would feel at home in and there is so much to see both inside and out for the interests of those people are outside their house as well as inside. You know what I mean. There is work work work outside.

(What kind?)

It is something which makes demands [not read.] demands on time and energy. I cannot see [see] yet but I think there are animals there. I see something like a horse and a barn when [probably intended for 'where'] I go to from the end of the house but there seems something growing there. I do not know as it is the way they make their living but these things are a part of their life. [Note 627.]

---

not know at this time whether she was living or dead. The sitting of May 19th (p. 752) shows that she was still living, I having ascertained the fact in the meantime. The mistake will be explained there.

627. The house here described is apparently that of my Uncle James

(What was beyond the barn and of interest and to the South?)  
[I had a railway in mind on which I had loved as a boy to watch the cars pass.]

[Pause.] Let me look there and see. I see [see] another building. What is this tall round building. do you know. Is there not a tall round building near the barn which has a special use and which is more modern.

(That may be, but it is not known to me and it is not the thing I had in mind.)

You had in mind something besides buildings I think (Yes.)  
for I see beyond the barn and the silo. what is a silo?

(Probably a silo is there and I shall have to inquire. That would be the round thing, but I had something else in mind.)

Yes I know. Did you have in mind a stretch of something growing.

(No.)

I see something growing and waving in the wind like grass or grain but it looks more like grass and then I see some low fencing of some sort and something running about ... running [not read first time.] ... Is there poultry there.

(That might be, but I had a most important thing in con-

---

McClellan, also the home of his son Robert and this Lucy McClellan. It was not a light colored house in my time. It was dark brown. What it may have been after I left the locality I do not know, as it was painted brown when I knew it. The door was in the middle of the house and there were no shade trees in front. The house was exposed to the sun, but nevertheless inside was a remarkably cool one and it was always a very quiet place. The house did belong to my generation, tho built before I was born probably. It was in the country, and the scenes were especially familiar in that house to my father, as this Uncle was a favorite with him and he was doubly related to us by virtue of his two wives, the first my father's sister and the second my mother's sister. The attempt to give a more detailed description of the house in response to my inquiry was a failure. While what is said fits well enough it does not identify it distinctly. The barn was at one end of the house and between house and barn there was something of a garden tho not all of the garden, as there was another back of the house.

[A visit to the locality in which my cousin Lucy lived brought me the opportunity to look at the house described and I found that I was mistaken about its being dark in color. It was quite light, a gray color tending toward white and my cousin Lucy told me that it had been so ever since she knew the house and she knew it in 1872 when she was married to my cousin.]

nection with that farm in mind and it would identify it completely.) [Note 628.]

Yes well your father will tell you all as soon as he can. He is not the one to let anything slip if he can get it through.

(Yes I know.)

I keep seeing some trees but I did not think you meant [actually written 'nent'.] those and then I see something like [pause.] reddish brown rocks that are away across somewhere. they seem to have some glistening stuff mica [not read.] quartz mica [not read, as it looked too much like 'mice'.] mica something of that sort on them. Do you know about these.

(I do not know, but I know that rocks are in that region.)

I see them and I see your father always looking at that sort of thing with more than ordinary interest. It is strange to see him stoop and look at them always. It was his hap... [erased.] habit. [French.]

Now for that other landmark if I can see [see] it. [Pause.] I am only waiting to see more clearly you understand.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] It is not a windmill is it.

(No. it is a railway, if I have the right house in mind.)

Do you know if there is any little thing that goes around (No, not there.)

Do you know if there is any little thing that goes around and makes a creaking sound (No.) when the wind blows. I hear it. It is not like a great pump but every [not read.] time ... every time there is a heavy wind it creaks. [Note 629.]

---

628. Inquiry of this Lucy herself brings the information that there was no silo or round building, such as a silo is, on that farm. The growing grain and low fencing are correct enough but not evidential.

629. Evidently my father takes the place of the communicator who was probably my cousin Robert and who knew the place well enough but he proved as poor a communicator as he did through Mrs. Piper.

The reddish brown rocks are not quite accurate and the reference to mica is not correct. There were limestone cliffs near the place, not exactly beyond the railway as it was in my mind, but farther away. It was not quartz mica that shone in them but crystals of the lime stone and these were not marked. The color of the rocks was usually dark grey, but some may have been reddish brown, as I think some did have that appearance. I never knew my father to have any habit of examining such things. He had no interest

The railroad is of interest to your father but he did not know that was what you wanted him to see. He thought of everything on the farm and most closely connected with the buildings and the people . . . buildings [not read first time.] That railroad is past history now, that is the novelty of it is worn away.

(Yes, and perhaps it was a personal matter with me that made me recall it and wish for it. Perhaps he can tell where they got the drinking water.)

Perhaps he can for he had in mind some such thing I think. It is brought [not read.] brought from a little distance. It does not seem to be exactly [not read.] beside . . . exactly . . . b . . . the house as is the custom at such places. Has there been talk of piping for it to the house. I see some long iron pipes but they do not seem new but I had an idea there was some new work to be done sometime.

(I do not know. But tell from what the water came.)

This looks more like a large lake. [writing now became suddenly more rapid and confident.] You know Hyslop when you first asked me all I could hear was spring but when I came to look I saw a large body of water which looked larger to me than a spring ought to be but it is some little distance away but is such lovely [not read at time.] good water that it is worth [read 'both'] worth any ['any' not read at first.] effort to get it. any. Perhaps you know about that.

(Yes.) [Note 630.]

There was another place where water to [too] could be got. It was more like soft water. I have two places in mind. One

---

in geology. Information from this Lucy indicates that there was no windmill on the farm.

630. The drinking water was brought some little distance to the house from a spring and had to be carried. I learn from my cousin Lucy what I never knew that nearly every spring they talked of putting in pipes to this water. It had to be carried up hill, but the pipes were never put in. It is quite possible that the allusion to a windmill was also a memory, as they would have been obliged to put a windmill in to carry the water up to the house.

The reader should be interested to note what conception of the spring as a lake was created by the allusion to pipes, and then the spontaneous correction of it. The spring was an exceptionally fine one, large, with an abundant flow of water, and very cool, coming out from the limestone beds.

seems to be for the stock in a yard or some place like that and the other seems to be in the house itself and to be pumped. Do you know that.

(Yes I do.)

Then do you know about an old abandoned well. It has a stone or rock around it but is left flat with a cov... cover I d ... think. It is called an old well. Do you know about that.

(I think I do and I feel that it will be verified by others. I hesitate only because I want to be sure about my memory.)

All right but that has nothing to do with the cistern. There is one you know, and way off in the woods beyond the railroad you know beyond the railroad in some wooded land and up in there is a little spring which forms a little brook in the spring of the year and is only a little pool [read 'part'] in ... pool in the summer where I see the boys drinking [read 'climbing'] drinking from their hands and stoping [read 'stopping'] stooping over it and drinking direct as boys will in spite of bugs and such things.

(Yes.) [Note 631.]

What about pollywogs. Do you know anything about them.

(Yes.)

Was there not a little place by the side of the road where you would see them in the spring.

(Beside whose road?)

I see a bit of road somewhere at the back of that house. It seems to be a side road. [Pause.]

(All right, I merely wanted to know if you had in mind the same house we were talking about.)

You know I go to the original farm the father's home for the [sheet changed.] for the pollywogs and I see on the way home from school this place where the pollywogs grew.

---

631. There was a cistern for rainwater in the house and a pump in it. The place for watering the stock was near the spring mentioned and was the little stream into which the spring flowed. It was in a corner of what they call a barnyard. There was an old abandoned well at one end of the house. It was covered with flat stones. I learn from my cousin also what I never knew, that there was a wet weather spring that went dry in summers leaving only a little pool of water in the woods west of the railway and on the other side of it. I never heard of this spring. It is very probable that the boys used it for drinking water when out in the fields at work.

(All right.)

Do you know about this.

(A little more definite.)

and do you know about the swamp [not read at first.] yes yes [to correct reading.] ... Was there not a place down behind the barn somewhere which was called the swamp or meadow.

(Yes.)

That is where the pussy [not read.] willows ... pussy [read 'spussy' doubtfully] willows ... pussy ... grew and some kind of rod [so read.] root which the boys went after in the summer and fall.

(Yes, give that name.)

Is it flag root. Wait a minute. I see blue flowers growing there like blue flags or something of that sort and cat o nine tails too. What a place it was and the root. Did you scrape bark [not read.] bark and eat it.

(Yes.) [Note 632.]

---

632. My father here suddenly changes the scene to his old home and leaves that of my Uncle.

There was an open ditch along the roadside, draining a wet piece of ground. It originated near "a bit of road back of the house" from a blind ditch and in the late spring and summer it was full of pollywogs. My father would say "tadpoles", not pollywogs, but Mrs. C.'s habits would be otherwise and we must remember that the messages are supposed to come in mental pictures. I saw at once that the scene was not my Uncle's home and so asked "Whose road?" to see the reaction. The reader will notice that the first answer locating it back of my Uncle's home was wrong but, without definitely suggesting it, the correction is made to my father's home. This was on the way home from the old school which was torn down and removed in 1863, so that the events were 48 years before this time. Off from this ditch and road and behind the barn was a swampy meadow. Another open ditch ran through this and there were a few pussy willows on its sides. Also sweet flag grew there, not blue flag, tho externally the difference is not noticeable, and we boys used to dig up the roots and chew them. We called the root calamus, not flag. I do not remember any cat o'nine tails there. They may have been there at one time, or a few of them in my time, as I remember being familiar with them. But they certainly disappeared very early in my life if they were there during it. The calamus or flag disappeared fully 40 years ago, and perhaps 45 years ago.

A detail regarding this "side road" should, perhaps, be mentioned. It

Sa... Sas... I think it is either black birch or sassafras or something like that. You can chew the stuff and such yellow looking lips you have after it. I think it is beyond me but your father laughs like anything and says it will do the boys good.

(What about calamus?)

Is that yellow. (Sometimes.) and sometimes red. (No, white.) What is the red stuff.

(I do not recall the name, but I know what he means.)

[I had in mind an herb which grows in the woods, but it is evident to me since the sitting that sassafras and sarsaparilla was what was in the communicator's mind.]

All right. It must have been bitter sometimes for some of the boys make up serious faces when they chew it and sometimes it is discarded as being no good. You had some fun after all did you not..

(Yes.) [Note 633.]

There was something some of the boys were ... felt fear [both words not read.] felt fear of in that meadow. It looks like some sort of snake.

(Yes, what kind?)

adders was it. I see [see] them always on the watch [not read.] watch for the venomous thing which looked like the ground or like the things around the place. It is a heavy looking thing. Was it not poisonous or supposed to be.

(It was supposed to be and for all I know was poisonous.)

Your father speaks of it in that way but I only see a brownish [not read.] brownish with some spots on it and a rather lazy looking snake. (I understand.) I think myself I would not care to step on one and that [not read.] was ... that ... the fear for each one looks carefully where he places his feet.

---

was inside the farm and connected the pasture with the barnyard and it was just at the end of it that the open ditch issued from the blind ditch. The manner of locating the ditch was excellent.

633. There was no black birch in that region, but there was plenty of sassafras in my early days and we did get the root of it both for tea and for eating the bark of it. It was the sassafras that was red, not the calamus. There was also a good deal of sarsaparilla about, some of which my father occasionally used for bitters. The root was yellow and the taste was very bitter.

(Yes.) [Note 634.]

I think we must go but we have made another good start [not read.] start I guess.

(Yes we have.)

and tomorrow will be good as we hope. (Yes.) Goodbye.  
G. P & Co.

(Thanks.)

[Pencil dropped and then immediately picked up again and wrote.]

Right while I am here I want to ask you if [superposed and sheet changed.] if you know anything about any little berries which grew in that same place. They look red and hang in clusters and are not very tall and are not especially good to eat.

(Name them.)

They look like st... [erased.] [Pause.] I don't know yet. Just a minute, but as I saw the snake I saw the berries and there seemed a popular[?] [not read.] common notion [not read.] notion that made both poison the snake and the berries [Pause.] I think they are not pigeon berries although I see some of them higher up.

(I shall have to inquire as my memory is not clear.) [Note 635.]

---

634. The fear of snakes in connection with that meadow is a remarkable incident. It is strikingly true. We boys always went barefoot in the summer and as snakes always more or less infested swamp meadows we were dreadfully afraid of stepping on them. My father who always wore boots probably did not appreciate our position. It was not adders that we feared, as there were very few of them in that locality, but it was any kind of snake and especially the black snake and blue racer, as they were called, and which we thought very poisonous. We did not call the adder by that name and I believe that one type of snake by that name is harmless, tho not so known to us children at that time. The description of this adder, or what we called house snake, here is correct, but probably known to Mrs. C., as it is found in all parts of this country.

635. After the sitting I recalled the berries described and my step-mother at once recognized them as the same without being told my identification. They were very plentiful in that locality and many others, and grow in most rich soil, especially about decayed stumps or trees. They are what we called pokeberry. They have large clusters of red berries, a very beautiful red, and are popularly supposed to be not only poisonous, but also the cause of poison in snakes, which were supposed to eat them.

All right. [Pencil fell and a pause. Again it was picked up and wrote.] Do you know anyone called Snow. [Pencil dropped and picked up again.]

('Snow'?) [No indication of reply.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Did you hear anything about Professor James?

(What do you mean?)

You have not heard from his people.

(No.)

Did they owe you something?

(Yes.) [They owed me a letter, having failed to reply to one written two weeks ago. Mrs. Chenoweth knew nothing about it. I wrote a second one a few days ago.]

It makes him kind of cross. They haven't acted just right with you have they?

(Seems not.)

Never mind. [Pause.] They are ashamed to be connected with you. They would rather be connected with the University than with psychic research. While he was there and big enough to hold the respect of the world that was a different thing. They haven't the same strength as he. That is what I say. That may be wrong but that is what I think. It is awful late. [Reached for my hand. Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Are you tired?

(No.)

[Pause, opened eyes a moment, paused and closed them again.]

Beautiful fields, beautiful. [Suddenly awakened.]

---

It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know any of these facts, except about the characteristics of "adders" and conceivably the characteristics of the pokeberry tho I very much doubt this. But she could not have known the other incidents as they are almost exclusively memories of which the physical evidence disappeared from 40 to 50 years ago and no one now living in that neighborhood would know anything about them except the pokeberries. I myself and one living brother are the only persons who would have a personal knowledge of the incidents and possibly he would not know most of them.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 12th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

It is a strange thing, but I think Dr. Corson is not going to live very long. I saw it before me. I doubt if he will stay another winter. [Pause.] [Note 636.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] What makes me always hear Caroline and Carrie. (I understand. Go ahead and get that name.)

Is there some reason why that should be impressed on me? (Yes, get the rest of it.)

If I can. Its ... it was spoken right into my ear by a man's voice just as Caroline [uttered very slowly.] [Pause.] I don't hear it as distinctly as I heard Caroline, but I see two O's together. It looks like M or W. I am puzzled by it. Wood or Moody.

(All right. Go ahead.)

[Pause.] It seems a longer name than Moody and longer than Wood. It is as if somebody dropped a little white thing before my eyes with this name on it and it keeps wiggling and I can't see it. [Pause.] Woodbury [pause.] You know I ... [Pause.] Woodbridge [questioningly.] I think it is Wood something but there is more to it than the first part. I haven't got it have I?

(Not quite.)

It's not Woodman is it.

(No.)

I am afraid I am guessing. Are you anxious for it?

(Yes, if it's that Carrie.)

Would you know it?

(Yes, if I got the full name of that Carrie.)

I have given all I see. [Pause.] There is another letter there as if it goes up and down below the line. [Pause.] Do you know

---

636. Dr. Corson had had sittings with Mrs. C. and had arranged for others following mine. In the meantime he had taken ill and Mrs. C. knew it but the last word from him was that he was better and on the way to recovery. He was an old man and an early death could be predicted, but normally Mrs. C. seemed to have no apprehensions of his early death. He died June 15th of this year (1911).

anything about F? Would it be connected with that name. It seems to be another word or as the last half of another word as field. Springfield, Westfield. Do you know anything about that.

(Not sure.)

There is something about an address where "field" is the last half of the name of a town or city. [Pause.] I've got to go.

(All right.)

[Pause.] Brookfield. [whispered and not heard.]

(What is that?)

Brookfield, or more like that. [Pause.] [Note 637.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

[French. Pause and two pencils used on previous days rejected.] I [made in the usual manner.] I [made in style of Myers.] only want to give you the assurance that we are eagerly watching the results of this work and we are working on this side to produce the condition best adapted for the use of those who do the clerical work all over the world. the influence is being fel[t] [read 'very full' at the time and no correction.] and new and unexpected help is on the way. We are all making concerted attack on the most sensitive souls and there will be a revival of interest in the work and it will be on a different plane of action than ever before. The old days of every man for himself have passed away. I sometimes think I was too much like that but there was not the same kind of interest in my day as yours. a decade or two makes much difference in the attitude of men toward a tabooed [tabooed] subject. I [made in the ordinary way.] was like you. you will notice my slip in the I.

(Yes.)

was like you in some respects for I made many investigations on my own responsibility and studied many cases from my own viewpoint. Perhaps you know this now, if not I tell you and I am not sorry for any independent action which I took.

The masses move slowly and groups of men and especially scientific bodies are more slow than any other people. They dare not jump at a conclusion and so are very loth to change

---

637. The name Moody is suggestive of an old schoolmate who died many years ago, but none of the other names, whether of persons or towns, are relevant and have no recognizable meaning to me.

opinions. But all over the world the influence of the thought of communication between [pause.] worlds continents cities and souls is being modified by discoveries of new and valuable laws and psychic laws will be in time better understood.

I must take no more time for my congratulations and words of encouragement to you but we all look to you for the upbuilding [read 'opportunity' and hand pointed till correctly read.] of faith through knowledge. What is it Saint Paul says For the things I have seen I trust the unseen or something of that sort.

(Yes.)

Saint Paul was a most marvelous psychic unless his history fails to tell the truth about him.

(I understand.)

Your friend. Myers.

(Thank you.) [Pencil fell.] [Note 638.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

I was afraid I was not going to get the pencil and I guess I jogged [read 'fogged' doubtfully.] j [dotted and I read 'jogged'.] his elbow and made him forget his quotation Any way he looks rather red [read 'sad'.] and ... red ... flustered [read 'flushed' and hand pointed till correctly read] when he passed me and I can hear him now scolding away about impetuous George. That is all right but impetuous George has more impetuous Jennie at his elbow and we have tasks to do and past experience to recall for a whole group of people who are waiting to give their depositions.

You must not think that Myers and I are quarrelling. It was only fun.

(I understand perfectly.)

We are just human that is all and the Saints are somewhere else. I don't know where.

---

638. There is no evidential note in this passage from Mr. Myers, except the allusion to St. Paul. This would be a natural reference on his part. If there are other characteristic touches I cannot recognize them as I knew him only from his publications in psychic research.

Mr. Myers wrote a poem entitled *St. Paul*. Mrs. C. knows nothing of this fact.

(All right)

Perhaps in the cloisters and churches. anyway not giving evidence here.

(I understand.)

I believe the light calls you Saint James. (Yes.) but that is her idea not mine. I think you will have to wait for your halo to grow just like the rest of us and if you don't make better head-way in heaven than Hodgson and [read 'did' and hand pointed till read 'and'.] James did your halo will be a lurid red and will be placed there by some poor psychic researcher who hoped to make the truth plain at last and is foiled in his efforts.

(Perhaps if I do not try to come back at all I might save myself.)

Do not for one moment believe you will be excused. We have the apparatus ready to squeeze information out of you.

(Thumbscrews?)

no hanging will do, suspended between the two realms trying to shout your message both ways. That is what some of us come to.

Now here are your friends and your father is feeling very good about yesterday. Did he get things through.

(Yes he did, and good.)

I am glad and will see what can be done now. O did the Caroline come through.

(Not the Caroline I had in mind, but some one she knows got a correct name through.)

I only asked because they gave her a chance. Now do you happen to remember any one by the name of Rhoda.

(No, go ahead.) [Note 639.]

It is some one with your father and seems like a friend of the early days. It is a woman and [read 'but'] I ... and I think she is about twenty five or thirty years old a small rather dark and very active and talkative [read 'all alive'] talkative person

---

639. This name Rhoda had no meaning to me and to no one in the family, my Aunt Eliza having no memory of any such person in her acquaintance or in that of my father. But I accidentally ascertained from my cousin Stella, mentioned above (p. 658) that the initial R. there mentioned might apply to her Great Aunt Rhoda. My Aunt Sarah thinks my father could not have known her. She died in 1876 or 1877.

[delay in reading.] person. It is rather strange but I see her about a home where there are very many of the conditions which I have seen about your father's earlier life and I hear something about coffee and West Indian molasses. Was there a time which you can remember when coffee was brought to your home in sacks of large bags and then ground at home.

(I do not remember that far back, but perhaps one other person will.) [Note 640.]

I see a little machine which look[s] much like a meat grinder but I see coffee put in it and then hear a noise of grinding and in this room are many other things for cooking and preparing food. I see two women standing there working and all around are tins and all sorts of things. It is not like a modern pantry [read 'painting'.] pantry but a sort of a work room off the kitchen. Do you know anything about that.

(Too far back.) [Note 641.]

It is the old home [superposed while I was writing my statement.] It is the old home I hear some one say and I think you will find it out.

(All right, does he know who may be likely to verify it?)

Yes the same people who have been pumped before on various occasions. There is with your father today another man who stands in the same relation to your children as he does and he is very eager to say a few things and your father seems eager to help him. Have you a father-in-law over here.

(Yes)

He is very kind and courteous [not read.] courteous and

---

640. I have not been able to place this incident about the woman "twenty-five or thirty years old" and the "coffee and West Indian molasses." Inquiry results in no confirmation of its relation to the Rhoda mentioned just before and whom my father never knew. My Aunt Eliza does not recognize the incidents as within her memory.

641. There is nothing evidential in this allusion to an old coffee grinder and the utensils of a kitchen. They might well refer to my grandmother's old kitchen which would fit, but perhaps the same holds true of most kitchens, except the coffee grinder which did resemble a meat grinder of these days. But we must note that neither my father nor his mother ever heard of or saw such a meat grinder. Possibly, however, my father in his last days may have seen one. Mrs. C. knows them well enough.

rather quiet but very firm in his own opinions. That much you probably know.

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about an earlier home of his. He seems to have had two homes. I mean an earlier one that was somewhat removed from the place where he passed away. Do you know about that.

(Just the fact of it is all I know.)

In that earlier home there was more freedom than in the later one. I mean a freedom as of one on his native heath. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, go on.)

The latter part of the life the changes which had come somehow made him often think of the other life which he left when he was comparatively a young man but it was business and business interests which brought him away I think. Am I writing. [read 'right' at time and not corrected.]

(So far as I know, but shall inquire.) [Note 642.]

He seems to be striving to recall some incidents. Do you know anything about some silver. It looks like family silver as if it had been a long time in the possession of the family. Do you know about it.

(That will have to be more definite.) [Not recognized at this time.]

Let me [superposing.] Let me see if I can describe it. It looks like a tall piece of silver like a pichr [pitcher] or something of that sort and it is quaint and unusual and seems to be in your home now. Did Mary have some silver that was passed along from the family.

(I think so, but shall have to look. I do not recall anything like a pitcher.)

I may be wrong as to its use but it is rather tall and may be a coffee or tea pot or something of that sort and here I see some flat pieces as if they were marked with the original names. They

---

642. Inquiry of my father-in-law's relatives results in the information that what is said about the greater freedom in his earlier home is true. Business did absorb him greatly in his later life.

My father-in-law was an extraordinarily determined man in both his opinions and actions, when he once made up his mind.

are not used often but are among Mary's things spoons they look like.

(Good.) [Note 643.]

This old gentleman is rather fussy about what he wears [read 'wins'.] wears. He is not so particular about the style or the care but they must be what he likes and he uses about the same kind of goods and style for a long time as I see him here. I see his waistcoat very much wrinkled like one worn [not read.] by ...worn...by a man who sat a great deal and did not sit up straight. He is very fussy ab ... [pencil ran off page.] about collars they must be just his kind and while he has notions he is not notional. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

Did he have a good deal of trouble with his feet before he went away.

(Go on)

I se [see] some trouble about \* \* ['bathing'?] and I see him looking at his feet with so much concern as if he wished they were better and I see him as he sits he has a cane between his knees and his hands clas... [pencil ran off page.] clasped over it. It is not especially heavy but he has a way of pushing or poking things about it [erased.] about with it as if he could not get about very well. Do you know about this.

(No, I think you have some one else than my father-in-law in mind.)

Did he have trouble with his eyes.

(Not that I know of, but the other person might have had, tho I do not know.)

This is rather funny isn't it but I see the hand go up to the eyes now and again as if there was difficulty in seeing or as if adjusting glasses. This man has [read 'had' and hand pointed till read 'has'] a woman [not read.] woman leaning over him as if she too were in the same group but it is not Mary but I feel it is Mary's people.

643. My wife did have a silver tea set given her that had belonged to her mother. It was not a pitcher, but resembled one very much. This I had forgotten as the things were put away after her death and not used. She had silver spoons of her mother's also and they were marked with the original name.

(Go ahead.)

I suddenly see a bed [read 'vest' then 'bust'.] bed and this man in it and I see the leg and foot much swollen and very red not just [French.] not just a lame leg but some inflammation and pain in it and some attention has to be given to it.

[I here thought of my grandfather on my mother's side who died from trouble in the leg and his home was in the country.]

This does not seem to be in a country place. if it is it is where there are all the modern conveniences and everything done for the comfort of this man. Is it all Greek to you.

(Yes it is, without some name for a tag. [Note 644.]

[Pause.] Was there an Uncle or Grandfather in Mary's family anything like this.

(I do not know but should have to inquire.)

Do you know William in connection with her people.

(Go on.)

I hear that name and I also se [see] an H—— as if it belonged in the same group. It is either the second name of W. William or another person but it is like a capital H—— and then I see another J—— as if that too belonged there. Does that help you any.

(Not yet.)

Shall I k . . . [pause.] keep on or try another.

---

644. My father-in-law was not what one would call "fussy" about what he wore, except that he was particular about the kind of goods, not at all about the style, except that they be standard, and he did wear the same style without regard to changes of fashion. He did sit a great deal at his work and was especially particular that his coat collars should not be wide. This incident I did not know but learned from his widow.

The same source informs me that he had a great deal of trouble with his feet at last, they were much swollen, not inflamed, a fact which I did not know or do not recall, but she does not know whether he sat with his cane as described. His niece tells me that he did. Domestic differences and the care of a nurse resulted in his wife's knowing little about his smaller affairs for the last two years. There is no knowledge of his "poking things about with it". The woman leaning over him is evidently the nurse, for she had to give him a great deal of attention on account of pain. She was not a relative, but had been in the family as nurse for several years. His home was in the city, that of the grandfather I thought of, in the country. I did not know the facts at this time and so thought of my grandfather. My father-in-law had all the conveniences of a modern home: my grandfather none of them.

(You must judge.) [Note 645.]

Did not ... [superposing.] Did not Mary's father go after she did.

(Yes.)

and was there not a slight illness and then a rather unexpected [not read.] unexpected death. Of course he was old and might go at any time but this seems a rather unexpected hour. I cannot tell why for some reason while the death may have been a thing thought of it was not at just that time.

(Whose death?)

The father of Mary. [Pause.] Do you know about this.

(I know of his death but it is not clearly put here in the record as I thought the reference was to some one else.)

[I thought the unexpected death referred to his sister which was very sudden, but as I copy the record it is clearer than I thought at the time of the sitting.]

There seems to be a mixture [read 'mention'.] of ... mixture ... influences but a great desire to communicate.

Was there a nurse [read 'music' without excuse for this.] nurse for the father of Mary.

(Yes.)

I see this nurse trying to ease some pain and working about and expecting the death but before this occurred there was a hope of better conditions. I don't know just what it is but I think perhaps the old gentleman himself did not expect or know that he was dying. Was he unconscious at last.

(I believe so.) [Note 646.]

---

645. There was no Uncle of my wife so affected, but an Uncle by marriage and whose name was John suffered from cancer of the abdomen, not from any trouble with his feet. His son's name was William J., but H. is only the second letter of his surname, and it is said here to be a capital, which would not make it correct.

646. My father-in-law died six years after my wife. The fatal attack did come on with a slight illness that created no concern, as he had been an invalid for some years, but it soon turned to a fatal form and his death was not unexpected to the rest of us, tho it was to himself until near the last. He had a nurse as indicated in a note above. She did work with him constantly to keep up circulation and relieve pain. He was, as perhaps in most cases, unconscious at the last, and was delirious for some twenty-four hours before, perhaps longer.

That may explain all this which I call unexpected for when one lies in a comatose state if I have the right word (Yes.) there is sometimes a great surprise when the consciousness is regained in the spirit life and that is probably what is making trouble for us.

I se [see] some one left who had charge [French.] of some things and the settlement of the estate.

(Yes, who is that?)

Wait and I will se [see.] [Pause.] I se [see] a man and he is talking with you about something. Was there anything you were concerned in in connection with that.

(Tell me all about it.)

It seems like certain rights or inheritances or something like that and I se [see] papers and plans and some conditions which in a way affect you and yours. There was some time to elapse before the final settlement but it looks as if something was done now all right and to his satisfaction. Do you know anything about this. [Note 647.]

(Yes I do, and I would like to know more about that man who had and has things in charge.)

I mean a man alive of course and I suppose you do.

(Yes.)

He is someway connected and is rather [pause.] I don't know just how to express it but he seems sometimes [read 'Somewhat' and then 'something'] sometimes so very hard and business like and then in the end he does not bite as his bark gave you to believe he would. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes.) [I had in mind only the language.] [Note 648.]

---

647. It would be a long story to make clear the exact pertinence of the allusions here to the settlement of his estate. Briefly he talked with me about it and certain inheritances were left my children with conditions of maturity at some time in the future before final settlement.

648. What is said of this executor is the exact opposite of the truth. There is nothing hard or business like in his conduct of affairs. That was more characteristic of my father-in-law. The executor is a very humanely disposed man.

[When I wrote this note regarding the executor, I had not the slightest suspicion that there was any reason to question his character. But in the fall following these experiments he committed suicide from irregularities in busi-

He is not alone in his plans. There is another influence at work and that is not always for the best for you or yours but you must have taken an independent stand and that brought matters to a head. Do you know about that.

(Explain definitely.)

It seems as if there had to be some plans and agreements between you in some way and after awhile [read 'another' and hand pointed till correctly read.] you were very plain and outspoken and then things went better.

(I understand.)

It was that which pleased the old gentleman for he was some surprised and troubled at the outcome after his death. You I think know about that.

(Explain more fully.) [I had in mind certain communications through Mrs. Smead *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. I, p. 707.] [Note 649.]

I will do the best I can. It was a plan to be carried out which was understood but not passed legally on I think or something of that sort for the old gentleman expected to have certain [read 'another' doubtfully.] certain things done which looked at one time as if they would not be done but were eventually settled. Is this any where near the situation.

(Yes, but it is not what I had in mind. I thought of a certain thing he told me after his death.)

You do not mean anything about executor do you.

(No.) [I could almost have said 'Yes' truthfully.] [Note 650.]

I cannot seem to get much more from him but let me tell you

---

ness which might have affected my father-in-law's estate of which he was one of the trustees.]

649. The incidents to which reference is here made are too personal to narrate, but the account is astonishingly accurate and to the point, so far as they can be expressed so briefly. The surprise and trouble after his death seem to have been indicated in the message through Mrs. Smead in the reference mentioned in the text.

650. I had in mind the message through Mrs. Smead. It did not come. The statements about a plan to be carried out but not passed on legally, etc., but finally settled, apparently refers to a matter about which he and I often talked. He had hesitated and finally did arrange a part of it and was satisfied with the course taken with reference to the other part of it.

one thing I know. I see a long mantel piece and a large mirror [read 'woman' doubtfully.] mirror over it and some ornaments like a clock and a few choic [read chore.] choice not many but a few and in that room a body is waiting for burial service. Its th... ['Its' erased.] Is that where he was.

(I am not sure, but will inquire.)

I cannot stay. [Note 651.]

(All right.) [Pencil fell.]

[Since the sitting I recall where the body waited for the service. A long mantel piece was there and a clock on it. I do not recall the mirror.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] Langdon, Langdon, Langdon. [Pause.]

(Who is Langdon?)

Hm! [Pause.] Hello.

(Hello.)

[Pause.] Hard work today, wasn't it?

(Yes.)

Did you ever go to the beach, Dr. Hyslop?

(Yes.)

I see a great stretch of water like the ocean and a beach and did you go there with your wife?

(Yes.) †

Because I seem to see you with her. She loves the ocean and loves water. I see these little white sailboats just before the motor boats came. It is grand and beautiful.

(Where was this?) [Thinking of Atlantic City.]

It don't seem to be here around Boston. It seems a different coast, a different place unfamiliar to me. Such a quiet beautiful place. There is quite a lot of rocks around. I see rocks at low tide stretching into the water, but it is a good beach just the same. But I see a dark thing like sea-weed and a place higher place looking off. You climb up and look off for pleasure.

(Where is that?) [I thought of a certain beach on the English Coast.]

---

651. There was no mirror over the mantel piece. This mirror was over a table at the right of the mantel piece. On this table was a piece of statuary resembling a clock somewhat. But there were a clock and some choice ornaments on it. His body lay in this room for the burial service.

The beach.

(Yes.)

I don't know. [Pause.] I can't tell you now. I will try and find out and tell you tomorrow. Do you know anything beginning with B.

(Yes.) [Still had the English beach in mind which my wife visited.]

It seems that is it. Isn't it a funny name.

(Yes, tell it.)

Is there a Z in it?

(No.) [Thinking of English beach, but S is in one probably intended.]

Wait till tomorrow. I'll talk to her. B is the beginning I think. [Pause and reached for my hand and then after another pause awakened.] [Note 652.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 13th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is this man [pointing to her right and behind herself.]

(I don't know. Can you tell?)

[Pause.] I wonder if you ever knew any one by the name of Lucien?

(I don't recall.)

I hear the name Lucien Gale. I don't see him, but that is the name isn't it?

(Yes.)

[Sigh and pause.] Oh that's lovely. [Pause.] I'm going out into the country now. [Pause.] I suppose you want me to tell everything I hear whether it has any bearing or not.

---

652. The name Langdon has no recognizable meaning to any of us. My wife was fond of the ocean beach, and in her younger days went often to Atlantic City. But one summer we spent at a beach on the Connecticut coast. There was one spot there of which she was very fond and we used often to go to it to watch the sea and the breakers. It was a very small dwarfish cove with sea-weed washed up on the shore of pretty sand, and at its left a pile of rocks of some height on which we sat to watch the waves.

B is not and neither is Z the correct letter for the name of the beach, except that the word "Beach" is the last part of the name. But B is the initial of a beach in England where she once visited.

(Yes.)

I heard the name Maggie.

(Who said it?)

I can't tell you. I think the name is Margaret, Maggie is the pet name. Do you know a Maggie alive?

(Yes.)

I feel all the time that it is some one living. Isn't it funny that I feel the difference. [Pause.] Well... [Pause.] Do you know as there is a man who would speak the name? It is a man's voice (Yes.) saying it to me. (Yes.) as if ... I rather think it connects with some of the references and things about the sittings.

I don't always speak connectedly do I.

(No go ahead.) [Note 653.]

I lose words. [Pause.] I have a certain consciousness too of your trouble to write what I say. [Pause.] I'm going farther. [Long pause.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

We are all here and ready for more work. It is intensely [read 'interesting' and hand pointed till correctly read.] interesting from our side. We see the work going on in a different light than that which you see [see] and we are greatly [read 'generally' and hand pointed till correctly read.] helped and encouraged by the way the tests of identity are coming through. You know this work is especially on identity and that was needed not only for evidence [read 'identical'.] evidence in the specific case but for our practice and growth in obtaining it under [not read.] under these new conditions which we have established.

Hodgson is as happy as he used to be when [read 'where'

---

"Z" is the initial of her music teacher's name who lived in Leipsic whence she went to the English beach. I have no assurance that he is meant. The association would have to be abrupt and the message more than usually fragmentary to give it this interpretation.

653. Maggie is the name my father always used for my stepmother, the name being Margaret. She is still living. The name Lucien Gale, however, is not recognized.



and hand pointed till read correctly.] he discovered some evidence in some work at the Piper light.

(Yes I believe it.)

He used to be as elated as if he had been left an heir when he found a good point and his interest in the work did not die with his body.

(I understand.)

Some of the futile [read 'future' first and hand pointed and read 'fullest'.] futile efforts he made rather discouraged him but [read 'and' and hand pointed till correctly read.] he is quite [quite] willing [willing] to let some one else drive if the wagon only reaches the place with supplies.

(Good.)

He is a good soldier and does not have to be Captain in order to fight his best. You know he had that element in him in all the work and often he used to let some one else drive just to let them see how they could re [erased.] wreck the sitting and then he took hold of the reins and drove safely on. He was rather politic about these things sometimes for he was a good soldier just the same.

(Yes.) [Note 654.]

and he is our good friend in the work. Now we will proceed. Jennie P— calls: Time's up. She does not let us do much gabbling but makes us get to business.

(Yes, I understand.)

The old gentleman of yesterday's sitting. [superposed and hand pulled down.] sitting went away feeling a little better but not as if he had done as well as your own [delay in reading.] father. We told him he had not had the same experience and there was not the same intimate relation between him and you nor the same bond [read 'boat' doubtfully.] bond of physical and material sympathy. All these things count.

He is here today with another lady. I say another in distinction to Mary who was helping him yesterday. Do you know if her [so read.] he had a wife in the spirit when he went away.

(Yes.)

---

654. All this is perfectly characteristic of Dr. Hodgson as told by G. P. It is not what Mrs. C. could know except by inference or direct inquiry.

This is his wife who is here today and she is most beautiful and has a wonderful spiritual element about her. You do not seem to know so much about her as she does about you for she has watched you from this side and there is a tenderness in her heart for all you have been through with the little ones left in your care and for all the good and beautiful life which was yours with Mary.

You will understand this interpolation I know. (Yes.) It was impossible to leave it out even [not read.] in the midst [read 'interest'.] even midst... of the other evidence. [Pause.] [Note 655.]

I see [see] a shawl. It is thrown around this lady and was once hers and had some specific value and was left... [Pause.] It is still in the family and I do not know just who has it but I think another lady who was close connected to Mary. She is the wife of someone who has had more or less to do with the affairs. Has Mary a brother or brother-in-law. [Pause.]

(Tell the relation a little more definitely.)

All right. I see [see] a man who is either one of th... ['of' erased.] or the other of those I named [read 'meant' and hand pointed till correctly read.] and he has had something to do with the whole situation and his wife has many of the articles which were in her family. They do not seem to have been carried any [not read.] dis... any distance to speak of but fell naturally into the keeping of these two. I wonder if that helps you to understand.

(Yes.)

Did the father-in-law not live with a younger man and woman who would stand in that relationship to him.

(Yes.) [Had in mind his own son, tho knowing this was not accurate.]

That is why the shawl is there. It is of no especial value to them as an article of dress and is not kept for [read 'over'.] that ... for that but is one of the many things in the house. Mary speaks of it as mother's shawl which she remembered.

(What lady had that after Mary's mother?)

---

655. My father-in-law's first wife died more than twenty years before I met my wife.

[Pause.] I see another woman who seems older than the present owner and she too is in the spirit world now. Do you know about that.

(Yes.)

It is one of the things that is passed along. There is also a sort of jewel. I'M [read 'I'm' and hand pointed till read 'I am'.] not sure just what it is but it looks \* \* [erased.] like a gold pin . . . brooch. It is rather old fashioned and is repousse work. Do you know what that is I do not but that is the word J P uses and I suppose she knows.

(All right.)

It is of some value as an heirloom and seems to have come from some place across the water originally. Do you know an Aunt that Mary was exceedingly [exceedingly] fond of who took the place of her mother in a degree after her mother's death.

(Yes, tell about her and give name.)

I will do what I can. There is such a love existing [delay in reading last two words.] love existing between the three as if the Aunt were the mother's sister. Is that true.

(Yes.)

and there is much sadness when this one passes away. You know about that also.

(Yes.)

Now who is the M in the connection. Do you know.

(Yes, go ahead.)

and again do you know any one who begin[s] with H—— It sounds like Hattie or Harriet. Do you know that one.

(I am not sure.)

To return to the M. I think that is the beginning of the Aunt's name for their is a title before the M. Like Aunt not right.

(What title?)

Like Aunt. [Pause.] You must wait just a moment for I have two M's and another letter here all together. Mary and Ma [pause.] r [pause.] y. Ar... there [not read.] Are there two Marys.

(Yes.) [The writing of the name Mary was remarkable. The second pause was a rather long one, and I refused to help.]

One is Aunt Mary. Or is that the mother.

(The Aunt.)

Al [All] right. When you did not say yes I thought I must have made a mistake but [read 'and'.] I se [see] your method [read 'without' doubtfully] method. You want me to be sure of what I say.

(Exactly.)

This Harriet was often called Hat for I hear the name very clearly. These three women are very happy together and it is a day of joy for them to come with the father and try their hand at the work. [Note 656.]

Do you know a J [read 'I' at time and not corrected.]

(Go ahead.) [Thinking of my wife's mother deceased.]  
in connection with them.

(Go ahead.)

I se [see] the letter and then I se [see] John. Who is Uncle Joe. Do you know.

(Yes, Uncle Joe was mentioned the other day, not a connection of them.)

656. The incident of the shawl would be a good one if it were clear and verifiable. But no one seems to recall a special shawl of my wife's mother, tho she had several. There was a special shawl which the widow had and has, and there was a special shawl of the Aunt that lived in the house and which came, not to my wife, but to her children after my father-in-law's death. My wife had a half-brother. He, his father and mother made the members of the family. There is no evidence that the son's wife got any of the things in the family. It is believed by the widow that the nurse took many of them and there is some evidence of this, and it may help to account for the confusion.

The Aunt who died prior to my father-in-law and his sister, older than the surviving widow, had a number of brooches and some of them were probably purchased in Europe, as she had been there. No one identifies the one described here further than to say that she had a gold brooch set with an amethyst. My wife's favorite Aunt was the only mother she had any distinct memory of. The Aunt was her mother's sister, a fact which I did not know until I learned it by inquiry. Her name was Mary to which the M. probably points. This is made clear a few moments later when "Aunt Mary" was given as the name, and in a remarkable manner considering that it was the same as that of my wife which always came easily. Here it was written very slowly and with difficulty.

Hattie or Harriet was the name of the wife of a cousin and she died many years ago.

Yes I somehow feel that I must get at something else. [Note 657.]

Do you know anything about an old square piano one of the long family kind which was in the old home.

(Whose home?)

Mary's.

(Yes.)

It was one she used to practice on and I see both the Aunt and the other laugh as that is referred to.

(Yes, tell something about another piano.)

Just a minute. I must finish this.

(All right.)

First there was a cover to it. I mean a cloth cover with a little fancy edge to it and I se [see] it as I se [see] Mary sitting there. The other one you refer to is I think one in another house and is much more beautiful and better toned. It seems to be of some particular kind which Mary liked much. It is one in your own home which I refer to. Yours and Mary's home.

(Yes, go on.)

and it was a great pleasure when that one came. She was enthusiastic [not read.] enthusiastic over music and when that piano come [read 'came' and hand pointed till read 'comes'.] I se [see] her touch it as tenderly as if it were a baby and the tears [not read.] come ... tears ... in her eyes for very joy and there is a turning [read 'tuning'] to you ... turning... as if you were in the happiness also. Do you know about this.

(Yes I do, and take up the idea suggested by the comparison with a baby.)

I don't know as I quite get it but I will try. It is some sort of an occasion. Perhaps I may get more of your thought than of hers but I want to get hers. I se [see] a bed and I am up stairs and come down. Was this piano given after a sickness.

(No.)

Better let it drop now for I am not steady in the subject.

---

657. There was evidently some confusion here. The John might be identifiable as the man who died with cancer of the abdomen, as that was his name. Uncle Joe was a relative of mine and no connection of my wife's family.

(What was ....)

You mean that it was a baby grand.

(Right.)

Just as soon as I got away from the baby suggestion of sickness and all that sort of thing which I thought you meant I got her laugh and then the words Baby Grand.

(Tell who had something to do with getting it.)

I cannot seem to get that just now. It will come later I think.

(All right.) [Note 658.]

Do you know anything about a picture of a child. It looks almost like a fancy picture a rather large painting with a tree and a child for the ground and very old style of work but a good picture. I return to the old [not read.] old piano and the room where that was and I see this picture as if it had always been there. I mean it is a part of the furnishing of that room. Do you remember it.

---

658. There was a large square piano in my wife's old home and it had a cloth cover with a fancy fringe edge to it. I would wager much that the cover was mentioned to distinguish the piano from her own which had a rubber cover. My wife did practice much on this square piano before her marriage, but did not like it, and I can understand the allusion in that connection to the Aunt and the other lady. The piano was one of "the long family kind" exactly.

The other piano was her own in my own house. It was not a square piano but known as a "Baby Grand" which she got in response to my query, almost a suggestion. It was infinitely better toned than the old square piano at her former home, and it was very characteristic to allude to this, because that was the feature which induced her to buy it. Every one who hears it remarks this feature of it. She was excessively fond of it and had the affection for it that she would have for a baby. The comparison here was very apt, and the joy she showed in it when she first got it, often manifested in tears as she would play it, is also a striking incident. It was bought just after our marriage and I did share in that happiness.

When I asked in my indirect way for the idea suggested by a baby to be taken up I, of course, had "Baby Grand" in mind, and it is possible that my question may have been a suggestion. Inquiry showed that Mrs. C. was familiar with the name for that style of pianos. But it was possibly significant that allusion to sickness was made in response to the mention of the baby. We did not buy it after a sickness, but I tested two of the children for reactions to musical sounds soon after they were born. If this was what was meant by the allusion to sickness it was distorted in the transmission.

(No, but I can find out) [Possibly Charlotte Corday.]  
[Note 659.]

You have none like it.

(I may have and shall look it up. I am so busy with this work that I remember little else.)

The sad sad story of the one idea man.

(Yes.)

It is pitiful but true but remember that your halo is growing and that may reconcile you to your loss. Did Mary like Shakespeare.

(I am not certain.)

I think [superposed.] I think so and I think it is al [all] the better that you are not certain for it will be a little stronger.

(Yes.)

Now I se [see] something in connection with the father-in-law. Your children must have known and gone to see him sometimes. Is that not true.

(Yes.)

I se [see] them in his presence and I se [see] him thinking very much of them and yet there is a sort of fear of him in their minds. I do not mean a real fear but they are not exactly [read 'really'] exactly at ease in his presence. It is visiting Grandpa and a certain stilted [read 'stillness' and then 'stilled'.] stilted [delay reading.] st... yes [to correct reading.] It would not have been so had Mary been with them. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes.)

But it is all a pleasure something like the Sunday plea ... pleasures children have when they ride to church in state. It is a part of the program and they would miss it but it is not like playing hop scotch [read stretch.] scotch and noisy [not read at

---

659. There was no such picture as is described here, but there was one, an excellent painting, of Charlotte Corday looking through her prison bars on the wall opposite the square piano. The one with trees in it and over the piano had no child in it. The prison bars in a mental picture might give rise to the idea of a tree, but it is possible also that there is a confusion of the two paintings in the message, as they were the only two paintings of special value in the house.

the time.] games. Al [All] this you know and the little one[s] feel a relief to get home and make a noise.

(Yes.) [Note 660.]

The old gentleman often visits your home now and is so different. He goes with Mary when she is there sometimes. But the grandmother is the sweetest influence you have.

Do you know anything about another child in the family.

(Tell about it.) [I thought of a deceased son of father-in-law.]

I se [see] another child. At first I see it a little infant and then I see it larger grown and it is a boy but it is away [read 'a boy'] away [not read.] away from your children. Have they a boy cousin who is a little younger than your boy. He is in the family and yet is away and is some one [two words superposed.] is some one whom Mary is interested in. I think she only [read 'any'] only knew him as an infant or small child and the growth has been since her passing. Do you know any one by the name of Fred.

(I do not recall now.) [Note 661.]

Perhaps you will think of it and I will let it go. When I let a thing go it is not because I want to discard it but it seems best sometimes to do so.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Have you any letters of Mary's put away.

(I am not certain now. I did at one time.)

I se [see] a few that were saved. I do not know why but they were suddenly . . . I see a new picture. I am in a country place in the Winter. The snow is everywhere and the trees are everywhere too. . . everywhere [not read first time.] too but all bare [not read.] bare and snow on them and in the distance I se

---

660. All this about the children's visits to their grandfather is accurate enough with qualifications for overdrawn dignities and current ideas of children's visits to grandfathers.

My wife had no fondness whatever for Shakespeare. I doubt if she ever read him. She had a richly illustrated Longfellow.

661. There is nothing recognizable in this incident about the child unless it refers to the Fred mentioned who was a friend of my wife's childhood and is still living in the West. His sister was an intimate friend of my wife's.

[see] hill [hill] hills high hills and so much untroden [not read.] untrodden paths and wild land about. It is not simply a farm but is a wilder and more remote region. by remote I mean away from travelled haunts [read 'farms' and then, as hand pointed, read 'points'.] haunts. Do you . . . Did you ever go away to a hill country in the winter for a rest.

(Yes.)

Was that after Mary went away.

(Yes.)

She was with you and when you felt as if the end had come she was trying to make herself manifest to you and to give you strength for all the wonderful work which has [read 'was' and hand pointed but had to rewrite.] followed. Those were sad days for you. The old life had been swept away. One thing after another until you were alone in the world with the silence and God and the cares [not read.] cares and responsibilities had to be left to other hands. It was then that the old life died [not read.] died and the new one began and on and on with Mary's hand in yours you have climbed out of the depths to the hills where the sun shine falls upon your brow and the message of [not read.] of the heavenly spheres can be whispered in your ears. The world waited for your message and Mary is content even to have died [written and read 'did' but hand pointed till read correctly.] if she has been able to help this life of yours to completeness.

How wonderful how beautiful and how clear is the story. I have wandered because her thought wandered back to those days and the comparison was so helpful to her.

(I understand.) [Note 662.]

I see [see] on her finger a ring. She wore few jewels but this ring seems to have been worn for years and years. I think it was one given her which belonged to some one else. It is

---

662. This allusion to the hills and snow is evidently to my hermitage in the Adirondacks during the winter of 1901 and 1902. My health had broken down and I went thither for my recovery. I certainly thought the end had come and so did every one else. Mrs. C. most probably knows of my pilgrimage for health and her interest in my work may account for much else.

very plain and simple and may have belonged to her mother. It is more like that than anything else. Do you know about that.

(I think I do. I remember the ring and shall refresh my memory.) [Note 663.]

She showed it to me as if it might be significant and now she shows me a very warm [read 'worm'] warm long garment which was to wear outside. Did she ever play or sing. It is play I think in public.

(I am not sure but will find out.)

public or concert. I see [see] this heavy warm garment as if it is a loose and comfortable article and one she wore a great deal. It reminded me of a warm wrap to wear outside some lighter weight [read 'bright'] weight clothes. Do you know about a long garment of this sort with fur on it.

(That's right.)

She always thought so much of that garment and it is still in existence. It almost [read 'doesn't'] seems ... almost [delay in reading.] It almost seems as if there had been talk or plan [not read.] plan to use it for some one and each time that plan had been discarded. Is it not a garment which can be used sometime by the girls.

(Yes.)

That is the reason it has been kept and not made over or used. you understand.

(Yes.) [Note 664.]

Do you know I feel [not read.] as ... feel as if I am losing power.

(A question. Mary referred to a beach yesterday as the light

---

663. My wife had such a ring in addition to her engagement and wedding rings and wore it for years. I think it was her mother's. I knew well enough at one time and have simply forgotten.

664. My wife had a cloak lined with fur. It was bought while she was in Germany studying music and used there for several years. She often wore it to the Symphony Concerts abroad where the rooms were cold. She played once in public there, but never sang. She thought as much of that cloak as she did of her piano. The garment was put away after her death and we have it in keeping for the children. This I had wholly forgotten and learned from my sister who has things in charge. My sister, however, knows nothing whatsoever about the history and associations of the cloak.

came back and got one letter of the name, but as it was not clear it will be important to get the full name of that beach when you can.)

We will kep [keep] that in mind and drop it in when we can.  
Is it late. Is it late.

(Time is up, but not late.)

We go with reluctance but we think Mary and her people have made a good beginning.

(Yes indeed.)

Goodbye with love from her to you always.

(Thanks, the same to her.)

G. P & Co. Notice the Co by order of J. P.

(Thanks)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Cough.] What a lot of lovely spirits. [Pause.] Hm!  
Have you got a sister over in heaven?

(Yes, tell me about her.)

She never communicated with you did she?

(Once.)

That is what I mean. She hasn't much has she?

(No.)

She is going to some day with your mother. [Pause.] Have you got two mothers?

(Yes.) So have I. I think this is with your own mother. I don't mean mother-in-law but stepmother. Your father must have a funny time with two of them there. He laughs at me when I say that.

(He ought to.) [My stepmother is still living.]

Were they sisters?

(No.)

I must go. They are pushing me back. [Pause.] Are you happy?

(Yes.) [Note 665.]

---

665. A sister was once present at a sitting with Mrs. C. in New York, and died a year or two later. Once before she communicated since her death through Mrs. C., and came then with my mother.

The confusion about my "two mothers" is interesting, as it evidently was the same as a later reference to my Aunt Nannie who had kept house

[Pause.] I wonder if you ever knew an animal called Bose, Boze or Bose, more like a dog than a horse. It is some creature around a place. Must I have the name right?

(Get it right.)

Do you know it?

(Not that name.)

I can't. I am too far back. Did you have a dog about your house?

(Yes.) [Thinking of my early days.]

Was it a short name like that?

(No.)

It isn't Jack is it?

(No.)

I can't get it. It is some dog. I am all gone. You won't be down on me for that. You won't think I can't do anything will you?

(No.) [Pause.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 18th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Oh I see a spirit of a woman, very tall and slender, dark eyes and hair, not over 35 or 40 years of age. She is so full of life. I wonder if it is Jennie P? Do you know what Jennie P. looks like?

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] Any way I got to go. [Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Everything is purple. [Pause.] What does the world say it does?

(I don't know.)

Sometimes do you think all those things are imaginative?

(No.)

---

for my father after the death of my mother. His two wives were not sisters. The confusion here is a reminiscence of the confusion about my Uncle James McClellan's two wives, one of whom was my father's, and one my mother's sister. My stepmother is still living.

I change from that to yellow. Everything is yellow now like gold. [Pause.] Oh! [Sigh, and peculiar appearance of distress on the face. Muscles slightly drawn.] Do you remember the Carroll? [Pause.]

(Carol or Carrie?) [I thought the 'Carol' a part of 'Caroline' and so spoke as I did with the hope of getting the name more definitely.]

Carroll, the man Carroll. He comes around every little while. Do you know it?

(Yes.) [I mailed a letter to his daughter this morning informing her of an appointment.]

Are you still hunting for Carrie.

(Yes)

Is it a little short name?

(I am not sure who it is.) [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[First pencil rejected. It was the one G. P. used last week.] So glad we are to get to you. I did not intend to come but G. P. said go on and give him a word of greeting and so I am here. R. H. It is good to see [see] the work going on uninterruptedly and we are watching with great interest the results of the sittings for identity as G. P. calls it.

(I understand.)

W. J. is with me and sends greetings also and is grateful for [read 'over'] for you[r] work. He says it is good enough to \* \* or and a little later he will try again for his own identity as indeed we all will when the chance comes and more people are sharing the responsibilities of the work with you.

(Yes, have you and James been trying elsewhere?)

Yes we have and have succeeded in a way in impressing ourselves on the light I am not very swift this a. m. but it is because I was called on unexpectedly [read 'especially' and hand paused till read correctly.] you know I liked to prepare my addresses. I am not like you. You are always loaded. I always wrote out and prepared what I wanted to say. I was all right in conversation but my early training forbade any speaking extempore yes [to correct reading at which I paused a moment.] we have made the effort and we are still eager for the coss

[cross] reference and as soon as that can be done right we are ready.

You have been having some good evidence from your own friends have you not.

(Yes I have and shall be glad to have all I can get, but if you can tell anything about what you and James tried to do elsewhere I should be glad to have it.)

We tried to write and we also tried some mental work but I do not suppose that is what you refer to. We were much interested in the physical [not read.] physical demonstrations and would have been glad to do more but for the impossible problems confronting the future of the light. What was the use in developing a power or the use of a power when the energy used would be so much loss to our other plans.

(I understand, but I had another case in mind.)

You do not refer to the man do you.

(No.) [I had in mind two men, one in N. Y. and the other in N. J.]

yes there is a man where we have been asked to do something but could [read 'ought'] not do ... could ... much but I think I know what you mean. There is another light where we have been but not for you, for another. Do you know what I mean.

(No I do not. There was another where you and James purported to be and where I was present many times.)

We are on the wrong case. I am referring to one where some one we know has been and we were there. Do you know anything [last syllable not legible but read doubtfully as 'any' to have it corrected.] thing about L———— and where she has been.

(No.)

There was a talk of her going to some one else and I thought you knew about it.

(No I do not. Was it a man or woman?)

She thought of a woman and was talking with a woman about it but nothing was done. It was where we have been sometimes. You know we would go anywhere if we thought we could get in but \* \* [we] \* \* [we] would not take the responsibility of being a part of a band [read 'bond' and hand paused till cor-

rected.] or group around many a light where we might go occasionally. [Note 666.]

The light of which you talk is one where we are more familiar and where we felt sure that you knew we were there. I did not know you meant that one.

(I understand. Go on.)

It is not a new case. I was looking for new ones. It is all right but complex. The conditions are complex. that is what I meant. There is often doubt about the future there but that light will never go out. It is good and pure but varies [read 'wears'] varies [read 'bares' doubtfully.] varies in intensity and that is because of the conditions surrounding it. That you know.

(Yes, but I do not know what specific things you mean by the conditions around it.)

People people people who know so much too much in fact. Take that light and isolate it and we could do much but we must do as we can with the conditions unchanged for they will [two words not read.] they will not be changed materially and so we catch a chance when we can and send you a word when we may [not read.] may. We are sometimes there when you are not and sometimes in the evening when there is no demand on the time. We go there and see what can be done. Do you know the man in those surroundings.

(Yes, if you have the right light in mind. I am not absolutely sure whom you mean yet.)

The man to whom I refer is not our kind but is interested in a degree but for another purpose than we have (What is...?) and he in his profession is quite sure he knows everything. It may be he does in his own argumentative work but he cannot get us to [pause.] state his principles even in our terms.

I may not be as kind about him as I ought to be for he seems most generous [read 'gracious'] generous about some parts of the work but in others he is too much in evidence. Do you know what I mean.

---

666. Inquiry of Mrs. L. results in the information that she had gone to see a psychic she had never seen before, found her engaged, and had spoken often to a friend about it who had given the address of the one she failed to see. I had not know the facts and neither did Mrs. C.

(I think I do. There were two men, and now I think you narrow my inference down to one.)

You mean the doctor.

(No.)

I do not either [not read as it was superposed.] either. I mean the one who has right to do and say and yet does and says what he has no right to. That must make it clearer.

(Not as clear as I desire it in order to be sure. If I have the right man in mind his name has been mentioned here before long ago.)

that is the one all right and we have been bothered [not read.] bothered sometimes with him in the past but we know better now how to overcome his influence.

(I understand and wish you could give his name.)

Do you think I had better stay for this when I was only let in for a moment.

(Do as you think best and as the others think. I was led into it by the desire for a little cross reference.)

Perfectly legitimate and natural and I ought to respond more readily but I am some hampered by my knowledge of my usurpation. Do you know a C— in connection with the case.

(No.)

[As I copy the record I see that I should have said yes, as C. is the first letter in the lady's name. I had in mind the men referred to.]

I see [see] a large letter C as if some one by that name was near there now and the letter was brought to me. I think I will not stay for there are patent [patient and so read.] waters [read waiters] at the portal who were told they could get their word in and Jennie P— assures me that she will have my life if I do not let go.

(All right.) [Note 667]

---

667. I have a fair conjecture as to what case is meant here. It is the one which G. P. identified so well earlier (p.302), but the evidence is not as clear or objective as may be desired, tho the allusion to the man in those surroundings who is quite sure he knows everything is a very good indication of who is meant. He is very argumentative, and is rightly characterized otherwise. The reference to "the doctor" is also excellent. He is an intimate friend of both of us. The C is the initial of the lady's name, and as I

My heart is with you if my head is in the clouds.

(I understand.) [Pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

Good morning Hyslop.

(Good morning.)

You kept our friend at it and made Whirlwind whirl excessively [not read.] in . . . excessively in her mad endeavors to get him back. Your own people are here and think they may have some more good things for you.

(Good.)

Some day when we have nothing particular to do we will take R. H. and put him through this same process and see how well [read 'full' doubtfully.] well he can testify. It may be the best way for him to give evidence.

(All right. Go ahead.)

[Pause.] this seems like being back in the hotel in New York but we know it is not six o'clock and time to go. Do you understand to what I refer.

(In the hotel reference?)

Yes [superposed.] yes.

(No I do not.)

the music which has now ceased. .

(Oh I see.)

[There was music outside and while I had noticed it I did not recall the fact that our sittings in New York were always closed with the music in the restaurant.]

You remember how we always stopped when the music began.

(Yes.)

Now for the serous [serious] work . . . serious work. [I had read 'for' in the wrong place.] Do you know any one by the name of Arthur alve [alive] I mean.

(No.)

It is some one to whom Mary refers and seems to be some one away from New York. Did she not live farther West at one time.

---

was thinking of the man's name I did not recognize this at the time. Collectively the evidence is fairly good, and the facts were not known to Mrs. C.

(Yes.)

This seems to be some one farther West and associated with the earlier life and in a sort of relationship I think not by blood but by marriage with some of her people. Do you know a cousin of hers a girl who had fair [read 'far'] fair hair and who was rather stout and plump and a happy sort of girl.

(No, go on.)

I se [see] this girl as a much older woman now and in that connection I find the name of Arthur. The woman is still in the West and has no particular association with your family now. Let that stay as it is.

(All right.) [Note 668.]

With Mary I see a woman who has a small box or writing desk in her hand. It is a portable one and seems to have belonged to Mary when she was younger but it is a fancy arrangement. I mean it is not plain wood but seems of some light color with flowers or figures on it. Do you know anything about that.

(I think I do, but I am not sure and will not be until I inquire.)

It was I think a gift and was much prized. I se [see] now a light grey dress very simply and plainly made with some what lacy or fancy trimming at the neck and sleeves. It is a sort of evening [read 'wearing'] evening or afternoon dress and is soft and prety [pretty]. I think it must have been one of Mary's dresses which she left. It is quite light but not white. I suppose you will have to inquire about that also.

(Yes, more details.) [Note 669.]

Do you know I seem to see it as a dress which had some significance at the last. Was she put away in a light dress.

(I shall have to inquire.)

Strangely enough I see this dress as if there was a question whether it should be the light one or a darker silk one. She

---

668. The name Arthur and the lady described are not identifiable, and I know of no means for making inquiries.

669. Two persons confirm this incident about the portable writing desk. I remember it and it may be about the house still, or broken and thrown away. It was a fancy affair with carving in the wood. I do not remember whether they were flowers or figures. No one knows positively whether it was a gift or not. It is possible.

had a black silk one You remember do you not. ['lk' fused both times in 'silk']

(I think so, but tell more details about the one in which she was buried.)

All right [superposing.] All right. I se [see] some one with these two dresses, the light one and the black one and I hear words of discussion as to which would be the better and finally the decision [read 'discussion'] decision seems to be for the dark one and then the light trimming or arrangement on another is used for lighting up this dark one. All the talk seemed to bring a mixed [not read.] mixed condition to me but I think I have it right now and that the light one is still in the house as I first thought. I se [see] something which I do not understand but I will give it to you and you can make it out perhaps.

(All right.) [Note 670.]

[French.] I se [see] a wide piazza with a few steps from it and then a broad step and a turn toward the street and two or three more steps down. This piazza is on a light colored house and in a smaller [not read.] rather small town where the most of the houses are of wood like suburban houses.

(What was this one?)

This is of some harder material for I see some gray stone at the bottom yes [to correct but delayed reading.] as if a heavy foundation were there for a heavy building and I se [see] a lady come down those steps and walk up the street and away. There is a very large building with many windows like a factory or public building of some kind which I see as I walk with this lady up the street I seem to look across somewhere and see this large building. [Pause.]

(All right. Go ahead.)

It is in the midst of shadow like trees and is on sloping ground and is a dark building. It is of no consequence except that as I

---

670. Her cousin writes that my wife had a gray dress. I remember a light yellow one, nearly white trimmed much as this one is described. She liked gray dresses I know and it is probable that she had them. I do not think she was buried in the dress described. Two other witnesses verify her possession of a black silk dress, which I also remember, but no one beside myself recalls any discussion regarding the burial dress, and my own memory is not at all assured.

look across I see [see] it and then as I walk [read 'look' and then 'took'] walk on and [not read.] on and on I come to a bridge or some connection which goes across to where that building is. I do not cross that bridge but I may if I wish and it is either [not read.] either over a railroad or a river [not read.] river and I do not know which but as I follow on I come to more buildings and stores on the side where walks the lady. I think this is a place where Mary used to be. do you know about it

(I think I do, but if she can tell more about that house and whether I knew about it I can be sure.)

Now [hand pointed as I first read it 'Noro' and then 'Nora'] Now about the house was what I was going to write for she suddenly turned about and I find myself in the house. It is large and so comfortable. Everything is [not clearly legible.] made [written 'nude' but not read.] Everything is made for use. No particular show but so good and substantial and elegant in its way and all used [not read.] used. It is a sensible and individualized re... house. I se [see] you there. I think you have been in the house all right for is [it] seems so familiar to you as I feel the place. There are some people in that house a man and a woman who are older and more or different. I do not know what the difference is but I feel different with them. Did you ever live there.

(Not in the house I thought she was talking about, and wish she would tell when I was there and all about associated incidents.)

[Pause.] I am only waiting for the picture. (Yes.) There comes in connection with it a picture of a foreign land and a large building where many people come and go all the time and the building is near a large arch yes [to reading.] This is a st [not read.] st [read 'St'] set of public buildings in a square or section where study and work is going on and it is so high and lofty. Yes it looks like a foreign University [not read.] University. Did you ever go to a University abroad.

(Yes.)

Did you ever go to H—— It looks like H——

(Heidelberg?)

I do not know. Were you ever at Heidleberg [Heidelberg.]

(Only on a visit.)

Is it not very high. The most prominent building with a sort of square [not read.] square tower on it.

(I do not know. Let that pass as I only mentioned it to bring out associations.)

Well to return I see this place which is a home in America had something to do in point of time with a trip to a University abroad. I connect [not read and hand pointed till read.] the two as if there were a connection or association between the two.

(Yes.) [Note 671.]

[Pause.] Just a moment. I am trying to see some other thing. Do you know any one by the name of Eliza. (Yes.) who was alive at that time.

(Yes.) [I had my own Aunt in mind in my answer as well as her Aunt Elizabeth, tho she was never called Eliza.]

---

671. Her father had a suburban home. It was of dark gray stone and most houses in that suburb were frame. It is not light-colored as here indicated. I thought it was until I saw it a short time ago while passing it on the railway. It had a wide piazza on it. There is a factory near the place and it has been there many years. It was there when I first saw the place. The factory is on the edge of the slope that leads down to the river. Such darkness as it shows is merely that of age, and there is a railway not far from the boundary line of the land on which the house is built. The bridge is farther off and passes over the river.

The account of the inside of the house has no recognizable features that would be significant, but the allusion to a foreign land in this connection is as good an incident as any one should desire. I had asked my question about the time I was there to see if some allusion would be made to the real facts. I had met her in Germany and returned home three years before she returned. When she did return I met her at the dock and a few days afterward visited her at this home. There is no definite mention of this circumstance, but there is an allusion to a foreign university which is pertinent for the place where I met her. This was at Leipsic while I was there at the University. The reader will see it was not Heidelberg. The University at Leipsic was situated on a square. That at Heidelberg I believe is not. The Leipsic buildings are not what we should call lofty structures. The Aula was new and high for Leipsic. I do not remember any square tower over it. The only connection that her home had with this university was just the one that I explained. I met her first in Leipsic and then visited her immediately on her return at the home under consideration. It was not possible for Mrs. C. to know these facts.

I wonder why that name was dropped in. It may \* [scrawl.] have an indirect association. I do not know. I se [see] another thing across the water which is strange. It looks like a combination of rocks and as if they were formed into a fountain [not read.] fountain or something of that sort. [Hand put to face and apparent crying for a moment and then French sounds and it cleared up without meaning.] The rocks are all damp as if water was around them. This is near that st [set] of buildings which I first saw. Do you know about that.

(No, I do not.)

They are foreign looking people at least there are some who come there. Does Z mean anything to you.

(No, is she trying to give the name of that beach?)

It may be but that beach begins with B— does it not.

(One beach does and that is why I wanted to have it cleared up, as one thing mentioned belongs to another beach.)

I se [see] there was a little mixed condition you think. (Yes.) Yes she understands and sometimes she laughs and sometimes she makes a funny grimace as if she had got into deep water and was bound to gt [get] out.

(All right.)

I do not see the B— and the J ('J') Z— belonging together any more than the beaches do. At first I thought it was Baritz but I think it is two words although that name is familiar to her. [Quite a pause.] [Note 672.]

Do you know anything about a watch which Mary had (Yes.) suppose I drop the beach business and wait for a clearer day.

(All right.)

I se [see] a watch with a long chain. It seems as if the two were not always worn together but the watch is not large nor yet

---

672. I do not recall any fountain in the square near the University. The only meaning that I can assign to "Z" is that is the initial of her music teacher's name, as indicated in a previous note. The name would not easily be confused with Biarritz. This may also be the explanation of the Z in connection with the attempt to name the sea beach: for while she was at Leipsic she made her visit to Bournemouth, and if so she had two beaches in mind and confused the two. Cf. p. 722. I do not know whether the place named was familiar to her or not. I suppose it is meant for Biarritz.

exceedingly small but is a good size and a good watch too. She says it is the second one as if she had one when she was younger. Do you know about that.

(No I do not and shall inquire, but I know about the one just described.)

The first one seems only one which a young woman might have as a necessity for teaching or something of that sort. I think you catch my meaning. The one I described has more significance and seems like a gift as if she thought [read 'might' and then 'brought'] much of ... thought much of it. She had a choice in it. Either she bought it with money given her or she knew where it was purchased for it seems a gift and yet her choice [read choice but it was rewritten spontaneously.] is ... choice is in it. Do you understand.

(I do not know the facts, but can she tell who gave it?)

I only hear father over seven times. It was not your gift I think for I think she had it before. Do you know about that.

(Yes I do.)

It is being kept all right. It does not seem to be in use now I mean it is not being worn. Do you know about that.

(Yes.)

There are a few jewels I do not know how valuable but a few precious things to her which are in safe keeping for the girls. You also know about that.

(Yes.)

She refers to it as a thing she is pleased over. I think she will get [get] on better [better] tomorrow. R. H. rather disturbed the situation [situation]. Not intentionally of course.

(I understand.) [Note 673.]

but J. P.— was not prepared for the interruption. It all

---

673. No one remembers anything about a second watch, but all remember the one described. It was smaller than a man's watch and larger than the usual lady's watch. It had a long chain whose origin I have forgotten and which her relatives cannot recall. All that I remember now is that it did not come with the watch and I think it was her mother's. The watch described was a gift from an Aunt, but I cannot verify the associated incidents about the purchase of it. They are probable, however, from what I know of her tastes which others knew as well as I. It has been kept for one of the daughters and is locked up.

goes to show [read 'there' as hand was superposing.] show how carefully [carefully] everything has to be prepared. We must go now as it is late I think but I will return again tomorrow with your group.

(All right.)

G. P. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Do you know Sam?

(Sam who?)

It is Collyer or Collins.

(Can you be sure?)

Which?

(Yes.)

[Pause.] I can tell what he looks like.

(All right.)

He is taller than you are and lighter and bowed, not extremely bowed but some bowed. He is a very kindly looking man. [Pause.]

Is it awful late?

(Quite late.) [Note 674.]

What is that pounding?

(I don't know.) [Some pounding outside the house.]

I thought they struck me on the head. Do you smell anything?

(No.)

Don't you smell something burnt?

(No.)

They must have opened that burnt house. [Fire near by recently.]

Somebody always pays the price for the safety of somebody else. Don't they?

(Yes.)

---

674. Samuel Collins is the name of a brother of an Uncle by marriage and to which latter Uncle allusion was only once made and that only possibly in the form of "Colls." in later sittings with Mrs. Piper, published in the second Report, which Mrs. C. never saw and no clue to this brother appeared there as he was not mentioned. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV., p. 549. He was slightly bowed and was a very kindly man as well as looked kindly. It was characteristic of the family.

'They burned four people there. Then the first thing they put on fire escapes. It is a hideous mockery of carelessness. Good-bye. [Pause.] Isn't it awful the world is so careless?

(Yes.)

Greedy. Life means nothing, souls mean nothing. [Pause, and then suddenly recovered normal consciousness with the question: "What is it?" No determinable meaning in the query.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 19th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

Do you know what an Irish setter is?

(No.)

I see something like this, with long reddish brown hair. I think he is connected with a man, an English man with an Irish setter dog. That is funny combination. This looks like an Englishman as I have seen them on the stage. I see a Norfolk jacket, then a plaited coat and a little hat that sits down over the face and the man has a gun out with this dog. He has high boots which come up over his trousers that are like Knickerbockers but are partly concealed by the boots. I don't get any name.

(I wish you could.)

You know that is a friend of that man, do you remember Podmore?

(Yes.)

He is a friend of his. Strange, I don't know why I say that to you, but I feel the old condition of drowning when the man comes. The other man who was the friend of him is still alive. His name is Will I think. It sounds like Will or Wilson. The whole thing is gone. It just slipped away. [Long pause.] [Note 675.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Who is Rice? Rice? Do you know any one?

(Not now. Make it clear if you can.) [I thought of the lady later mentioned but being unrelated to me in any way I ventured 'No'.]

---

675. I have not been able to verify any of the names or incidents in this message apparently said to be from a friend of Mr. Podmore.

[Pause, and hand reached for pencil. I gave it.] What did you give me?

(A pencil.)

What for?

(You reached for it.)

I did not. [Pause.] I beg your pardon. [Pause.] Oh it's lovely. [Pause.]

*[Automatic Writing.]*

[Pencil fell over as hand relaxed and some apparent difficulty in getting control, but hand suddenly stiffened and clutched pencil.]

Here we are once more and we are as happy in the giving as you in the receiving. You may depend on that for it is our [read 'one' and then 'over'] our purpose to make plain these matters of the spirit. The Rice The name Rice was just a passing influence. Mrs. Julia Dumaresque the friend of Mrs. Cora [read 'Eva'] Rice ... Cora ... whom you met last Winter was in the room and was just saying to R. H. ['R' superposed on an attempt to start some other letter, but erased in this manner.] I wish I might sometime send a message to my friend Mrs. Rice and the light caught the word as she passed into the [pause.] state you understand.

(Yes I do.)

These people often come with a desire to do what we do but it takes long practice sometimes to accomplish what we have done. This Julia was one evening in the room with us if you remember and the association since then has been more or less frequent for she has many interests in the earth life and her thought is often with those she loved. Young Jordan sometimes worries her but she does not feel alarm. she only [read 'really' doubtfully.] sends ... only ... love and greetings to her dearest and most devoted friend—C—R.

(Thanks.) [Note 676.]

---

676. A Mrs. Rice had had a sitting with Mrs. C. after the evening alluded to in the text and heard from her friend by the name of Julia Dumaresque. The name was mentioned to Mrs. C. after the sitting, tho the real name came through at the sitting. No record of it was kept and we cannot estimate its character. Jordan was her maiden name and is also the name

So much for that explanation [not read at first, but read before it was rewritten.] explanation. It is always well to explain when we can for there are some instances [read 'mistakes' and then 'incidents'] instances where it is impossible for us to do so.

We have a group of your own people here again [read 'eager' tho knowing it was false.] to ... again today. I know my writing is execrable.

(Not altogether.) [The 'a' in "again" resembled 'ei' and I ignored the lines for 'ain'.]

I write hurriedly for I must catch the spirit of the thing and J. P. is a hustler. (Yes.) She never lets any grass grow under my feet.

(Can you explain the Podmore reference as you did the Rice?)

Yes that too was a picture of the past in Podmore's life. I do not know as the name of Will was the one wanted but it may be. Podmore haunts [read 'lauds'] haunts us as much as any spook ever haunted an old English castle. He should have been a better boy and he could now have been sitting on the front seat but as it is he cannot drive nor even be a passenger in our coach but he can see us drive by in state.

(All right.)

I have no fight with him. It is you he is after. You and he crossed swords and he got the worst of it but he did not give in. He thinks he died too early. I think it was too late.

(I understand.)

It is all in the making of history anyway and an opponent [read 'apparent'] opponent or two makes business brisk [read 'frisk'] brisk but who has taken up the cudgel since he departed. We have no time to argue with him and nobody reads his articles and nobody wants his books. Oh he lost his job when he left the scene of his activities. He was earthly and there was his home. This is all fun but it is also true.

(I understand.)

I say it to him and he thinks his time will come when he can prove some of his new theories. He must find his own coach.

of her son to whom reference here is made. Mrs. C. probably did not know this. Mrs. Rice's name is Cora and it is probable that Mrs. C. did not know this.

He cannot always borrow ours. Let him have the Piper light. That was the case he fought so bitterly.

(I understand.)

Now I want to know if you have any over here named John who was a near relative to you.

(I think so.) [Delayed answering because I thought of a small boy by that name who was a cousin, and of old John McClellan as perhaps meant but not a near relative.]

I see [see] a man who is much taller than you are and is erect and unbending as a rector and as kind in heart as one would wish. He is talking with your father and he seems much interested in the work. He is an old gentleman with grey hair and beard [not read.] beard and a thin face and a thin body as well. He has clear and straightforward looking eyes and manners are the [not read.] are the same. Is that any help in the deciphering of his identity.

(Not to my present knowledge: for if it is the John I have in mind he was a very remote relative and I *may* not have seen him. If I could get his last name I would know more.) [I had in mind old John McClellan.]

Rest assured we will give all we can. This man is a remote relative. That I know and he is not familiar with your life or with the manners ['manners' but not read.] of this ... manners ... part of the country [read 'writing'] land [and hand pointed to 'country' when I read it.] It is only because of his relationship that he is here and because of a woman who is connected with him. I feel like calling him Uncle John but it seems removed from the first generation. He is a thoughtful and good man but with no knowledge whatever of these things. Have I ever told you of an S a woman who frequently comes here with your people.

(I think not.)

Do you know of an Aunt Sarah. Was she not a little removed, (The Aunt Sarah you have talked about before is still living.)

The one I speak of now is here as if that were a family name and had been passed down.

(I know nothing of her.)

Then I think you will find out about it and that the Sarah

living had an Aunt Sarah and an Uncle John and that they have been gone a long time. That is the way it comes now. Now for a minute I want to leave that as there seems no more to say just now.

(All right.)

I take it for granted that you would want us to go on just as we have been doing.

(Yes.) [Note 677.]

Any time you want to suggest a change you are at liberty to do so and J P— will consider it and probably go on just as she pleases. She is an autocrat and I am her humble slave and scribe [read 'servant'] scribe yes [to reading.] what else is my mission.

(I understand, and may I ask a question?)

Yes indeed.

I would like to know when that Lucy Mac you mentioned passed out, if it can be ascertained. I do not mean any exact time but some matters then would be cleared up.)

[Pause.] Yes we will see if we can do it right now. It was some days ago that the message was given about her was it not.

(Yes.)

Do you know her or did you know her personally.

(I knew the Lucy Mac personally.)

All right then you know what she looked like. Was there a woman connected with her who was very stout and with a red face and blue eyes and smooth evenly parted hair, parted in the middle I mean. Was that the description of some one very near her.

(I do not recall that person as having been mentioned but the difficulty is connected with the Lucy Mac herself.)

677. The facts that establish coincidences here in connection with the names "Uncle John" and "Sarah" with references to this name having been handed down, are very remote. I never heard of the parties before. I had no "Aunt Sarah a little removed". My Aunt Sarah, still living, is my mother's sister, and has been referred to before. But I learn by inquiry of her that Uncle Finney, her deceased husband, had an Uncle John and that besides her mother the sisters-in-law of her mother were both named Sarah, all dead a very long time. My living Aunt Sarah had no Uncle John, but the two Sarahs mentioned would be her Aunts by marriage.

Yes I understand but when you asked the question I saw this woman immediately and felt she had something to do with that communication. I suppose you do not know about the death of Lucy M [read 'on'] M and you want to see if we have not made a mistake. is that it.

(Yes.)

It is quite possible that some one here most interested in her may have given her name and in an attempt to send a message to her have made us understand that she was here. That is one of the possibilities and at this moment I feel that Lucy M is not her[e] but is alive.

(Yes,....)

in your world and that this stout lady was one here who was so eager to get a message to her.

(Yes, it is true that the Lucy M. is alive. I did not know it at the time. Now you see how important it may be to get the name or some part of it of this stout lady.)

Yes we will try. Do you know if Lucy's mother is over here. (Yes.) and was she not a stout woman.

(I do not know.) [Note 678.]

It is in that relation that I se [see] her. Now just a word or two. I see a home some distance away from here and I se [see] the very close relation which existed between Lucy and her mother and I see a rather long and serious illness which took that mother away. There is such a relief for everybody when she is gone. Not in any sense because of the added care but because of her surcease [not read.] surcease of pain. There was no understanding of this continued companionship and it is with a desire to make it plain to her that [not read.] the . . . that the mother come [so read.] came. Do you know whether Lucy is slender rather not extremely and not very strong. I feel a sense of not being well but not sick in bed. you understand [not read.] understand.

(Yes.)

and I see more people about Lucy in the body that is She

---

678. I never knew anything about this Lucy McClellan's mother, but on calling on this cousin of mine I discovered the fact that her mother was rather stout and with face, hair, and eyes as described.

has many friends and people about her. Sh[e] is not young herself. You know what I mean.

(Perfectly.)

I think als[o] [superposing.] also that she is not to stay long but that is not to be told her.

(I understand.)

It is one of [the] things which made the message mixed. She had so little hold on life. that is plain is it not.

(Yes.) [Note 679.]

Now this mother has a man with her who is very near to Lucy not a father. he is more like a husband or son. Someone out of her personal life who has been gone a little while but he seems too old for a son. Do you know if she has a husband over here.

(Yes she has, and a little more of his identity will help greatly.)

Yes that will come. I have to say this much for ourselves that the close association between Lucy's husband and her mother in ther [read 'them'] in their effort to reach her made it look very probable that they were husband and wife but it is plain as day now what the relationship is between them [not read.] them.

He laughs heartily. He is a man who always had a welth [not read.] wealth [read 'weather' and hand pointed till correctly read.] of good nature. You know that about him. He was as strict as he could be about some things and as easy as a boy about others. Not contradictory at all as it might seem from my statement but the matters that were of no personal concern to him did not trouble him in the least. He minded [not read.] his ... minded his own affairs and never troubled about other people's business but his own affairs were attended to just exactly [not read.] exactly [read 'readily'] ex... [read.] as he pleased. No one could tell him [read 'when'] what ...

---

679. I also learned from this cousin in conversation that her mother suffered very greatly from a long illness with diabetes and died at a sanatorium under the influence of morphine administered to prevent pain. The reference to relief is therefore very pertinent.

him what to do. He would not let them. Do you know this about him. [Note 680.]

(No I do not, but if he would tell some special thing about his relation to me and what he did I could have excellent evidence.)

[I had in mind my last visit to him and a political speech which he arranged for me.]

Do you know anything about a school or school house. (Yes.) I mean in connection with him.

(I know of a school to which he went. That is all.)

I see a small building. It looks to me more like a little country school house than anything else. Do you know about that (Yes.) and do you know anything about an Elm which was near it.

(I do not recall it, but go on, as I know one who may recall it.)

I hear him say something about the school house being no longer as it was. It seems to be changed or taken away. Do you know about that.

(No but it is probable and I can find out.)

I go away from that school towards a set of buildings. There is more than one for I see a group but they are all in such good condition and seem to be so well cared for and as I go toward the house I seem to go up a little as if there were a slight incline from the road. I think it is road [not read.] road not street which I ought to call it.

(You mean you ought to call it street?) [I saw the ambiguity.]

No road. It is not like a street altho I see buildings farther away as if belonging to other neighbors.

(Yes.)

as I go up toward this house I se [see] a pile [superposed.] of wood on the left and the house on the right. The wood is back a little way but I see a pole or [read 'on'] st... stake near the end of the wood and something hanging on it and a

---

680. The account of my cousin's attitude toward other people's business is not especially evidential, tho it is true. He had a good deal of prudence in this respect, but perhaps not in any striking way.

woman [not read.] woman walking out beyond as if putting something out in the sun to dry. Did they ever put pails [read 'parts'] pails [read 'pants'] pails [not read.] pails [not read.] pans or pails [not read.] buckets [then read, tho perfectly clear all along.] milk pails [pails] or something of that sort out in the sun. do you know. [Note 681.] ●

(I do not know, as I saw little of his later life and remember only a few incidents of the earlier life, but I will ask him if he knows anything about political speeches.)

[Pause.] He nods his head in acquiescence and is first all smiles and then all emphasis. He is a man of ideas just as I said he was. He had some fighting to do. I do not know what it is but I see another place not his home where I went first but a building more like a small public building rather old fashioned but used for public affairs but the funny thing about it is I see lamps as if the place were lighted with lamps which hang from the ceiling or beams or something like that and see men [not read.] men [not read.] men walking about with lanterns as if they had come some distance to this [not read.] this place and brought their lanterns with them.

Do you know anything about this.

(Yes, go on with more details.)

There is a very high feeling among the people. It is a case of more than town affairs [not read.] town affairs for I feel the national [read 'natural' and hand pointed till read 'national'.] and state interest as well and I see something which he did which turned [not read.] turned the tide of influence. Do you know anything about copper heads.

(Yes.)

Did that have anything to do with this affair of his.

(Yes, but not of the war. But if he can mention the subject of that campaign it will clear it up.)

Don't hurry him he is working as fast as he can. he has a hatred for the sort of people who might be called copperheads and this affair is like that. Wait till I make myself plain. It is the old story again.

---

681. The incidents here so fully described are not verifiable in the life of my cousin, as he did not keep a dairy.

(Yes.)

copperheads mugwumps [not read.] mugwumps and all that sort of thing but here is an issue of another kind. [Pause.] This must have been after the war was it not. (Yes.) but still I see some uniforms and some soldiers as if there was an appeal to them or about them. They are mixed up in this discussion some way and it is strange but is there anything about Grant in this.

(Not that I recall and it would not be more than indirectly and slightly related. The issue was something else.)

Yes yes I think I know and I think I know why he is wandering from the subject for he was always interested in these things before this hot fire campaign when he jumped [not read.] jumped in. You know what I mean all right. [Note 682.]

682. There begins with this answer to my question a confused message about a political speech which I made in the gold campaign in 1896 just after the death of my father, made at the invitation of this cousin Robert McClellan. It is a curious mixture of true and mistaken incidents. What I wanted in particular I did not get, and what I did not expect I did get. Apparently what I got was snatches of mental pictures, as usual in this case, and often at points where they are not at all important to the main incidents.

The meeting was held in a public building in a small town and it was lighted with lamps. It was a plain and perhaps old fashioned building, but I do not remember whether any lamps hung from the ceiling or not. Probably some of them did. They were on the walls, however, and men had come from considerable distances with lanterns. There had been something like a procession to the place, tho it was at night I spoke. There was a "very high feeling" at the time and as we know it was a national campaign. The use of the term "copperheads" is pertinent as this cousin had no use for democrats, who were called "copperheads" by people there and elsewhere. It is possible that the general ideas of a campaign would suggest many of the coincidental incidents here, but the hits are collectively so true and apt that it is equally possible that they should have consideration, especially the reference to lamps, a national issue, and "copperheads" who were the detestation of my cousin. He would accept any political error or illusion rather than vote the Democratic ticket.

Mugwumps, or independents, were as much hated in that community as the Democrats and the fact simply reflected the bitterness of Republican prejudice. I do not recall that any such appeal was made to the soldiers in that campaign as would make the reference to them here significant. Grant had nothing to do with the campaign. He had long since been dead. It is possible that the psychic's mind was working on the Grant campaign which

(Yes, who spoke at that meeting and be more careful in the reply.) [I had myself in mind.]

I'll be careful for I se [see] no one yet. [Pause.] I se [see] a man about the ... about the medium height and not very heavily built and very quiet and assured not a fire [not read.] eater ... fire e... ['eater' read] at all. He has rather a polished way of speaking and has hair that is rather longer than usual. I do not mean very long but it look's heavy and rather long and I see him standing on a platform beside an ordinary table with a very careless [not read.] careless attitude and speaking in a clear and concise way. There are other men on the platform with him but I see only him now. There are other speakers too for I se [see] a shorter man with a more active and forceful manner come forward and talk as vigosly [not read.] vigorously as the other did calm [so read.] calmly.

Do you know any one who had a smooch [read 'smoke' and hand pointed till read 'smooth'.] face and polished manner who spoke there.

(I do not know, but I know one of the speakers intimately and so did the communicator.) [Myself in mind.]

I get no name but did not the description of one answer to the description of your friend.

[Not that I know of but the smooth face would fit him, but he did not speak.]

[Pause.] You do not understand me. I gave a description of a man I saw speaking. Was not that the one you have in mind.

(No, not at all.) [Myself in mind.]

I rath... [superposing.] I rather think he will kep [keep] it at [at it] until he gets it through for he seems [read 'sends'] seems to recall the incident [not read.] incident and 'to be ready [not read.] to do all... ready to do all he can. Was your father there that time.

(No, my father had just passed out and had been buried.) [Note 683.]

---

had been a hot one and mugwumps figured much in that. My cousin also was interested in that fight, but it had nothing to do with the issues in my mind.

683. There is not a bit in the account of the speaker. I do not recognize even any coincidence with the chairman of the meeting. I was the only

How strange that I should ask that here was it not— Was it not. Coin what is coin [read 'com' both times.] Coin [read 'Com'] Coin [still read 'Com'] Money money I think coin [read 'com'] C o i n I think. What do you know about that anything.

(Yes, that was the . . . .) [hand did not wait for me to finish but began to write. I was thinking of the subject of the campaign.]

Gold and silver was that the subject of discussion.

(Yes.)

Yes yes no wonder he lost it was the sad old question of copperheads and mugwumps. It was [?] . . . Now do you know anything about a man with a beard a slender form and a scholarly manner who was there. he wore glasses I think.

(I do not remember him. The man who spoke did not wear glasses, but . . . .)

That will come Hyslop Just as the coin did after awhile. The gold standard was all that any one talked about. God [Gold] and certain percentages what is 1 to 16 Is that anything to do with it.

(Yes it has.)

He is gaining [not read.] gaining. [Pause.] Who was S. who had something important to say. [Pause.]

(I am not sure. Others will have to say.)

[Pause.] It seems to be about the wheat growers and the farmers as if that also had a part in that platform and do you know Carl who had strong messages on these things.

(Carl Schurz?)

I think that is the name. Was he an advocate of free silver or something of that sort.

(No I think not, but I do not know. I put it only to see if the thing would be cleared up.)

He was not your speaker was he.

(No.)

I think I cannot get [get] it now but it may come through tomorrow. You see he is clearer than he was at first.

speaker on the occasion and there is not the slightest tendency to suspect that I am the person. Telepathy certainly has very limited powers in this business and it would seem that the guessing was not very alert.

(Yes.) [Note 684.]

Do you know anything about bees [read 'furs' doubtfully.] bees [read 'fees'] bees. (Yes.) Did you ever live where they were kept. (Yes.) I se [see] some hives and then some honey and I hear something about the bees and I thought it was for a bit of evidence to you. They, the hives I mean, are back of the house somewhere where you walk around to them. Do you know.

(Whose house?)

I se [see] a pile of new cut [not read.] cut [not read.] cut wood and a little pah [path] between it and these hives. Did this man who belonged [read 'longed'] to ... belonged to Lucy Mac have bees.

(I think he did but will have to inquire.)

I think he did too and I see a woman with an apron of [so read, and hand pointed and again read.] over her head walk out where the bees are and look [read 'walk'] around ... look ... and then walk back to the house and drop the apron.

This is all new to me Hyslop. I never had bees of my own. I must go now but will continue this tomorrow.

(All right.) [Note 685.]

G. P. & Co. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause.] Oh! [sigh.] [Long Pause.] Who is this man?  
(You tell.)

684. All this is a very pertinent account of the issues in that campaign and it is probable that Carl Schurz was an advocate of the gold standard. But there is no hint of the correct speaker. I had indicated in my first Piper Report that this cousin and my father were interested in that issue and tho Mrs. C. had not seen that Report, it is possible that she knew enough of the campaign to make the points here less valuable than they might be, tho she was rather young at the time and might not have had any interest in the campaign.

685. Lucy McClellan's father kept bees in the garden back of the house. No special incident of a woman with an apron is remembered in connection with them, but the bees had a special antipathy for her mother and her father had to cover his face when he did anything with them. It is probable that the incident associated with the apron was something not fully given. My cousin, Robert McClellan, Lucy's husband, did not keep bees.

[Pause.] I see a man who is so kind of brown from working out of doors, that man who looks like . . . Do you know Bryan?

(Yes.)

Do you know him personally?

(No.)

[Pause.] Why would I see him?

(It is not he that you see but another.) [It did not occur to me at the time that the name Bryan was associated with that campaign as the leader of the Democratic party.]

Who looked like him?

(Yes.) [The communicator resembled him only in a shaven face.]

It isn't McKinley is it? Was McKinley like Bryan?

(A little.) [McKinley also had a shaven face and resembled the communicator as much as Bryan. He was also the candidate of the Republican party in that campaign.]

I don't know \* \* Is it some one you know.

(Yes.)

He isn't in heaven is he, the one you know?

(Yes.)

You know what I mean by 'in heaven', in spirit land. Bryan is here. [Pause.] He is looking into my face. What is he doing that for?

(Get his name.)

[Pause.] I can't. I'll see him again, won't I?

(Yes.)

When I say Bryan you will know what I mean. (Yes.) He don't give his name. Is he your uncle?

(No, his father was.) [Said purposely.]

Eh heh. That will make him your cousin. It don't take much of a brain to reckon that out. [Pause.] Well goodbye.

(Goodbye.) [Note 686.]

Wait a minute. Do you know an H connected with him. (Yes.) Is that a part of his name? (Yes.) I mean an initial like the beginning.

---

686. The leaders of the campaign were, as Americans know, Mr. Bryan and Mr. McKinley. Strange to say my cousin had a smooth face as did both the political candidates, and there was that resemblance in his features to them.

(It was one of his initials, but not the one usually used.)

Well when I said C. H. I meant not like Charles or Christopher but one with a period after it, an initial that will come later. [Pause.] Do you know a Charles in connection with him.

(No.)

Sure?

(Not any more than with me.) [I had a brother Charles.]

[Pause.] It is awfully mixed but it seems as if an Uncle Charles or a relative. I don't know, but I am mixed. [Pause.] Oh how lovely. [Note 687.]

After recovering normal consciousness Mrs. C. remarked that she seemed to have been where she saw great gorges of rock like a canyon. There was a small canyon of rocks not far from this cousin's home and it has a special reason for its association with him.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 20th, 1911. 10 A. M.

Before starting into the trance Mrs. C. told me that she had been haunted all afternoon of the previous day by the vision of a face and hearing the name of John G. Carlisle. She remarked that she did not know whether he was dead or not. I told her that he was. She said his face seemed long, his cheeks sunken, and his nose seemed long. He seemed cadaverous and thin. [Note 688.]

[*Normal.*]

I got to go. [Pause.] Funny I can see the people but I

687. C. H. would be the initials of my deceased brother Charles. H. was the middle initial of my cousin's name. There was no Uncle Charles in this connection. There is evidently a great deal of confusion here, exactly of the type that was connected with this cousin in the Piper experiments.

It is possible that "Uncle Charles" is the same mistake that was made through Mrs. Piper for my Uncle Carruthers. Cf. *Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, pp. 316, 422. The same confusion once occurred in the Piper case between the names of my Uncle and my deceased brother. Cf. *Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 408.

688. No discoverable reason was found for this allusion to John G. Carlisle. He had once been a United States Senator and Secretary of the Treasury, and that he had been a prominent man was known to Mrs. C. But she proved on inquiry to know nothing special about him.

am conscious and seem to be kind of . . . . I feel awful funny.  
[Pause.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Head fell slightly to one side and showed a relaxed condition, followed by a long pause.] Who are these people who seem so happy. [Pause.] Your friends.

(All right. Let them tell their story.)

I can't hinder them if I wanted to. They are the ones that can do as they wish. They have all kinds of plans for you. Have you ever had a message from your mother?

(Yes.)

From both of them?

(No.)

You have two mothers over there.

(You tell all about it.)

Well I'll tell you just what I see, because I may make a mistake you know. But I see a woman who had some care or responsibility about you. She is with your father. She doesn't look like the woman I always supposed was your mother. She is larger than your mother. She is so quick and busy and seems always active about household things. Then I see her for a long time sitting with her hands folded as if she did not have so much to do. It is not very clear is it?

(No.) [Note 689.]

Perhaps they would rather give it themselves than have me. Do you think so?

(Let them decide.)

What makes you so good? [Pause, and hand reached for pencil. Two of them rejected, and then a pause again.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Here we are and I have the wrong pencil but I think I will

---

689. This passage with reference to my two mothers shows the same confusion that had occurred in the subliminal before. Cf. p. 734. I saw it at once and resolved not to help it out. Evidently it was my Aunt Nannie who was my father's housekeeper after my mother's death until he was married again. My stepmother is still living. My aunt was larger than my stepmother and much larger than my mother and also very quick and active.

go on. Some one felt as if the hand ought to be used and tried to do it but it was no use so I begin. We have a group of your own people here again today and there is a great interest in what was said and unsaid yesterday.

I think I like the smoooh [smooth] pencil best so I will change if you please. [Pencil changed.]

Thank you. that is better. We tried to get some things through yesterday and were not able but we will go on I think with the same kind of work for your father is much interested to see what the others can do.

Do you know a Henry who was connected with your people. [Pause.] He is an old old gentleman with very white hair and white beard and he is rather a large man with a red and beaming face. I believe he is a neighbor and not a very near one but one who had some part in the life at some time. Do you recal [recall] now.

(No, I do not, unless the last name be given.)

The last name is short and sounds more lik[e] Rush or Reed or some name like that. It is some time ago but your father thought you might remember him. He always walks around in his shirt sleeves and has much to say about everybody's business. Not a bad man but an interested one and he passed away very suddenly. This is all near the old home way back in the life.

Do you know anything about oxen. Did your people have them.

(They might have had them before my time, but not in my time.)

Henry has oxen and is walking along beside them in the road. I see in connection with this a name of Sally. Do you know that name.

(Not in that connection.)

Is there a Sally in your family. An Aunt [not read as it was partly superposed.] Sally ... Aunt ...

(I am not sure.)

I hear some one say this is in Aunt Sally's time and I know I am way way back. I emphasize this for I do not want you to think of too recent [not read.] recent happenings.

There are some things that may be found out that are always better evidence than some others [not read.] others and that is the effort I believe now.

(Good.) [Note 690.]

It may be that the Uncle that communicated yesterday may have something to do with this for I see him here now, and a twinkle [not read.] a twinkle is in his eye and he says I cannot afford to lose my reputation so easily for I must kep [keep] up with the rest. We are all vieing [read 'viewing'] vieing with each other to see who will do the best work. Yes [to correct reading of 'do'] There are a few things which you remember well about this Uncle but this last or rather first today is not known I think. Do you know anything about a yung. . [not read at time.] younger woman who is living and who is near Lucy now. Is there not a daughter or daughter-in-law who lives there.

(I think so.)

He speaks of this younger woman I do not mean a girl but a woman of some years and experience but who is young enough to take some care of Lucy and the affairs. Lucy is not so far gone that this is absolutely necessary but it is a part of the life. You must understand all that.

(I understand, but it is news to me and I shall inquire.)

You mean you do not know that there is a younger woman near her who helps and is interested in her life and affairs.

(That's right.)

All right, I see Lucy talking to a dark haired woman who has a very pleasant [read 'pleasing' carelessly and then 'pleased' and hand pointed till read correctly.] face and is in the surroundings and is attentive to her. [Note 691.]

---

690. All the names and incidents here mentioned are not verifiable. Not a feature of them would fit any one I know. I have not been able in any direction to find a clue to them.

691. The daughter, whose name was mentioned earlier, was living but is not now living with this cousin Lucy. Her daughter-in-law was ill at the time of this sitting and had been ill for some time. She died in June after this sitting and her children have gone to live with this Lucy. The mother of the daughter-in-law lives near and has a share in the care of the children left. If all this is meant and forecast it is very much confused and certainly not evidential.

Do you know anything about a family that was left by the [read 'her' and hand pointed till read 'the'] younger man who came here yesterday.

(What family do you mean?)

Do you know how he lived [not read.] and if ... lived ... he did not leave a family behind when he went away.

(Yes.) [thinking of his brother-in-law.]

I see a woman left and a man as if they were very near and very much saddened by his going. You know about that.

(Yes.) [Note 692.]

And do you know if not long after another man the one who was saddened followed him. (Go on.) I see two deaths not far apart and the double sorrow falls on the woman who is left. Do you know about this.

(Yes, give all the details you can.) [Note 693.]

All right. I will give as fast as it is given me. I see [see] these two men together and in the hand of the older one is a large key. It seems to belong to some building not a house but a building to which he went into for business or in some capacity [read 'especially'] capacity where he let himself in with his own key. It is away from his home. Am I making this plain.

(No, I would like to know about the death of the two mentioned.)

Yes yes that is coming but this key is the beginning. I see this older man go into another building as if he had a right there. then he comes out and goes home and there is news of the death of the younger one. It seems to be some word [not read at once.] word or news or trouble for I see [see] him instantly troubled and there is no more light until after the death.

692. My cousin did leave a family of wife and three children when he died. There was a sister and brother-in-law left who would especially feel his death as they had been helped by him.

693. The allusion to two deaths is very pertinent. It evidently refers to the death of the "man and woman" that were left by my cousin's death, the sister and brother-in-law. The sister committed suicide and the husband died soon afterward, but after the death of Robert McClellan, and a sister survived to mourn their passage. The suicide of her sister came near causing the insanity of this surviving sister.

It comes along so fast. It is almost instant death. It is either very sudden or accident. I do not know which.

(Make that clear.)

The word gets to the home before the body. I do not know why I say that except that I have a picture of something happening away. Do you know about that. [Note 694.]

(I am not sure yet which person you are talking about.)

I am talking of the son of the older gentleman. Do you know now.

(No, there is much complexity there and it would have to be made clearer.)

Wait until I can see what I can do. To begin with we are with Lucy Mac are we not.

(Yes.)

and here is a husband and son of hers is there not.

(I do not know anything about the son.)

Did they not have one.

(Yes, living.)

All right. I see [see] a younger man in the spirit whom I took to be their son but he may be another who was away and brought home as I stated. The Uncle knows about it all and it may be that he is only living [read 'trying'] living [not read.] it . . . live living with your father.

(All right. You see a name or initial always enables me to know where I am.)

Yes I realize this that not every spirit is as clear as your father and he had to learn and if we have to educate all of your friends you will keep us busy as long as you live. [Note 695.]

694. The incident of the key is not verifiable. The husband of the cousin who committed suicide was out of the house at work when the catastrophe occurred, but it is not now determinable just what he was doing.

695. The communicator seems not to have been as much confused as I was. The reference to father and son brought to my mind the deceased cousin and a living son—there are two of them—and hence I did not see who was meant until the allusion to "Uncle knows about it all". Then it became clear. It was evidently my Uncle James McClellan and his son Robert McClellan, both deceased and mentioned in my first Piper Report. This Uncle could not have known the facts except from information long after his own death. But the incident makes clear who is meant in the incident of the key

Do you know a Fred in this connection who is alive.

(No, you see the fact was this, George. I had in mind the death of a woman to whom I thought you were referring and it turned out to be a young man you were talking about and that threw me off the line. I do not know a Fred.)

Fred is alive and is of some rather close association with the people of whom we have talked. I understand your position perfectly and you see how we are hampered. We must first catch our spirit then name it then let the incidents prove identity and after we have the spirit named and placed we seldom fail in getting sufficient evidence that they know what they are talking about. I think I will leave this little group and try another and return to these sometime later. Do you object to that.

(No, do what is best.) [Note 696.]

We might spend a long time unravelling and miss a good opportunity for something clearer and Jennie P— says switch [not read.] it . . . switch it when the train is on the wrong track and take another and not waste energy. So there [so read.] we . . . here . . . go for another. [Pause.]

I am only waiting for pictures.

(I understand.)

I see a lady standing beside your father a small and rather delicate looking lady with a small [small] face and spectacles on and bright eyes and grey hair and a very active manner. She is looking directly at you and seems to know about you and your work. I see [see] no name just now. I will tell you as soon as I do but she looks up at your father and I see that he is some taller than she. She must have passed away before he did for I see [see] the picture of him with her gone and then a look of pain is on his face. Then there is a connection with the past

and that is the main point, as I was uncertain until then, tho it would still be possible that this cousin was communicating for the other one that may have been associated with the key incident.

It is possible that the son alluded to as brought home is a cousin of mine and son of the two referred to as having died near each other. He had taken tuberculosis and went to the mountains for his health, but was brought home without improvement and died soon afterward. All this, except the fact of his death, I did not know, as it occurred long after I left the locality.

696. I have not been able to verify the name Fred in this connection.

with her. Do you know a lady whose name begins with H. who had any connection with your father

(No.)

It sounds like Hety or Hetty.

(Yes.)

Do you know that name.

(Yes, but she was not called that by him.)

Never mind if that was her name and this was a sort of family way of speaking I think. Did you know her.

(Yes I know the Hetty mentioned, but I do not know whether you mean the one in mind, for I never heard the family call her Hetty.)

We are on the right track I think only you may have one family and I another in mind. You are thinking of your own family and I am thinking of a family when he was younger. Do you know what I mean.

(No I do not.)

It is possible that I am wrong again.

(I cannot tell.)

Do you know the description of this Hetty as I have given it.

(No I do not.)

[Pause.] I am nonplussed [French.] but not discouraged. Was not Hetty a relative.

(I never heard of her.)

You do not know anything about the name at all do you. (No.) or I misunderstood you. I thought you said there was a Hetty whom your father knew.

(Yes, his own daughter, but she was not called Hetty. This is the nickname for what hers is.)

This Hetty that I se [see] is in the spirit and must have been a relative. I told you that there was a longer name which was her real [read 'res' doubtfully.] name ... real ... and I think the trouble is that you do not know about the one in the spirit.

(That is right.)

It is just possible that the name was given the daughter because of this one I se [see] in the spirit. [Note 697.]

---

697. The name Hetty suggested my living sister and I was a little impa-

I se [see] now a great bush [read 'dark'.] bush or tree [read 'the'] tree of white blossoms. They look like snow balls or big blooms or bunches [read 'batches' doubtfully] of . . . bunches of blooms [read 'flowers'] blooms yes [to reading.] They grew near where your father last lived. In a sort of yard or near the house. It is more like an ornament this time of year but later [not read.] later there is a following fruit so I think it is blossoms and not simple snow balls. Do you know if there was a small tree near the house that would bloom about now.

(Yes.) [Thinking of the old home, not his last, not wishing to disturb the situation by a negative answer.]

It sounds like the cherry tree is in bloom. Is there a cherry tree near there.

(There was one at the place I am thinking about.)

Yes and father [farther] away there were some blossoms that were pinker [letters 'puker' but read 'pinker' questioningly.] yes [to reading.] less like the snow balls because of the deep color and when these were blooming it was the joy of your father to see them. He loved the spring-time so he tels [tells] me and the small apple trees were so lovely in blossom. The cherry tree never amounted [read 'were anointed' questioningly.] never amounted [not read.] amounted to much as a fruit product but the others did. You will know this I think. He always

tient with the situation, thinking it wholly confusion and error. But after the sitting and while making these notes it occurred to me that there might be some relation between my stepmother's connection and the name of my sister as here intimated. I had never known from whom she was named, not having interest enough in that particular thing to inquire. But I find that my stepmother's mother's name was Harriet, not Henrietta, with a much longer name as here indicated, but that my sister was named for her, my stepmother debating for some time whether she would call her Harriet or Henrietta, but deciding on the latter, taking her mother as the person for whom she was named. She was smaller than my father and a very delicate woman, but as my stepmother remembers her she had quite black hair. She died in 1842 when my stepmother was only 8 years of age and she remembers nothing about her except her size, dark eyes and black hair. I of course, never heard of her until after this sitting, but the evidence is not conclusive that she was meant. If the reason for my sister's name had not been half suggested by the situation the evidence might be stronger.

tried to get all he could out of a tree just as he would out of a person but the cherries defied him and beat his power. They always died in sections. I don't know what he means but I think you will. [Note 698.]

Do you know anything about a quince apple. (Yes.) He speaks of that and he also says that he often walks around with the same interest he used to feel except that it does not make so much difference in the autumn. [Note 699.]

There was one low branching apple tree, that was some distance away from the house. The limbs [not read.] The limbs were very low and spreading [read 'specially' and hand pointed till read.] and it seems to be near a wall or fence between a field and some wilder land like pasture. It had small yellow almost white apples on it. Do you remember that.

(Not very specific yet.) [Still I recalled it.]

It seems a very early apple ['apple' written first and then 'early' inserted.] and as if it were not much good except [not read.] except for cooking [not read.] cooking but it tasted about as good as anything because it came so early.

(Yes, if the name of that can come it will clinch matters.)

[Early Harvest was the name in mind.]

Perhaps it can. He picks some up from the ground and turns them over and over [not read.] over and calls them something like [pause.] two names. (That's right.) It is a color I think

---

698. There were no snowball bushes at my father's last home. There was, however, a large bush of them at the old home where I had lived and they were in the yard near the road. Near, perhaps fifty feet or more, was a cherry tree. This allusion confirms the reference to the snowballs and shows that it was not his last home that was in mind, as neither cherry tree nor snowballs were there. Besides I learn from my stepmother what I may have known at one time but had wholly forgotten, that an Almond Shrub grew right at the foot of the snowball bush. It had a pink flower. The snowball was white and I think we did not have any of the pink or purple snowball at that place. Both shrub and snowball disappeared from the place many years ago, and so did the cherry tree. The cherry tree was an Oxheart and father being fond of them tried hard to succeed with them, but always failed. They always died on his hands and, as said here, "in sections".

699. There was a quince tree behind the house near the garden. That too I believe disappeared long ago. Father was very fond of the quince.

but am not sure. Is it white something. He shakes his own head so I know I have not it right yet. [Pause.]

Do you know a larger red apple or rather striped that came a little later.

(Yes, that's right.)

and was so juicy and good.

(Yes.)

I do not seem to get either names but I get the pictures all right.

(Yes let me mention the names. The first was Early Harvest.)

Yes. (The second was Red Astrakhan.)

I would have given that Astrakan in a moment but the early one I could not get but he is happy over it any way. [Note 700.]

Now he goes cross to that wilder land I don't know why I say wilder but it looks as if it were grown up to bushes and had rocks and rough places as if not under cultivation as the other was. Realy [really] it looks like pasture and it sounds as if he said I'll go over into the pasture and there I see him stoop and pck [pick] some little red and green stuff. It looks as if it grew in a moist place and he shakes a bit of dry moss or leaf of [off] the ... off [correction.] the top of it as he picks it and if you believe me he eats it and smiles [not read.] smiles. It is a little thing that grew low in the pasture. Do you know that.

(Not yet.)

Was there a little sprig that had a little blossom half pink. It seems like the blossom of a berry and as if he tasted the whole thing. It is not time to eat it but it is so tender [not read.] tender and young that it tastes good. He says that he loves to browse around in the sprg [spring, and read 'sky'] spring and early summer.

---

700. The low branching apple tree was some distance from the house and stood just by a low rail fence next to the pasture field. The apple was yellowish white, and was the earliest apple of the season and was a good cooking apple and as good to eat. It was the Early Harvest.

The larger red apple mentioned, not striped, but spotted, was a little later, but was also an early apple and a very good eating one. It was the Red Astrakhan.

(Yes.)

Can you not walk across that pasture and find a little brook in the spring. It seems to be gone in the summer but is there early and crossing that and walking a little way along there is a direct [not read.] path ... direct ... to another road over back somewhere [last syllable not read.] where. You must know about this I think. do you not.

(I am not sure yet because that might apply to several things in my memory, but I would like to hear more about that berry he ate, as it would prove so much if he could more fully identify it.)

All right. it is a pink and white blossom and grows red and then quite dark later more like a blueberry (No.) or berry of that sort. It is [not read.] is not a blackberry as you buy them in the market but it is blue blueish and small and sweet. (Yes.) and later there are a great many of them there. They grow without cultivation. Do you not know about them.

(Yes I do, and it was only to make it so clear that others could see it and so wish you to get more if you can.)

All right. I will see. You see there were some red berries lower down in [so read.] in [so read.] on the ground and he made the distinction. The red ones look like cher berries [so read doubtfully] chererberries [again read 'cherberries' questioningly.] checkerberries. Do you know those.

(I am not sure.)

Pigeon berries or something like that but those others are different. (Yes.) Do they begin with W.

(Not that I know of, as the name I knew them by began with another letter.)

He is trying to tell me. Right here I know what the low ones were. they are low wild strawberries but just here and there [not read.] here and there not a lot of them.

(I understand.) [Note 701.]

---

701. There was no "wilder land" in that locality and no rocks or rough places. Persons asking for information or making statements about that place and the whole region would get no such ideas. The whole passage about the berries is not clear. There were no whortleberries in that locality and not within fifty miles of us. I never heard of pigeon or checkerberries so that there could have been none there under those names. There were wild straw-

What is h... [pause.] h... no I don't gt [get] it but don't tell me and when he can he will drop it in.

Do you know anything about thistles.

(Yes go ahead.)

I se [see] him looking at some very pink [not read.] pink thistles and they are a pest. (Yes.) They are very [so read.] every [not read] everywhere and he hates them but it is no use to burn them. they come [read 'run'] up ... come up bigger than ever. They are bad [read 'hard'] for ... bad for the soil and for [superposing.] and for cattle. Do you know about that.

(Yes I do. Does he know a special place where they were so thick on the farm.)

Yes and he had to have them cut but that was no good either. They bleed [read 'bleed' questioningly.] bleed and propagate. Were they Canadian thistles. (No.) just plain p... [superposing.] plain American Thistles.

(Yes.) [Note 702.]

Is there a W in those berries he ate.

(Yes.) [Thinking that *Wild* was a part of the name, tho not certain.]

Is that the beginning of the name. (Yes.) he kept pulling

berries, or rather the vines of them, sometimes plentiful, but they rarely bore any berries. In fact I do not recall ever getting a berry on these vines, but I have occasionally seen a wild strawberry there. The strawberry vine has a yellow, not a red or half pink blossom. They did grow in moist places.

The only berry that would fit the color named and described as like a blueberry, was the ground cherry which was sometimes plentiful and father was fond of it as were the rest of us. It was blue or purple when ripe. I do not remember the color of the blossom or whether the berry was ever red in the course of its growth. It was a sweet berry.

It is quite possible that the word "cher berries" and the allusion to the ground just before are a confused reference to ground cherries of which I was thinking. But wintergreen is described and none was there.

702. My father hated thistles and carried on many an invasion against them. To prevent them from propagation he would often burn them, but while he diminished their harm he never wholly exterminated them. There was one place where they grew so thick that even a hare could not get through them. He had them cut and burned. He did not do it himself. This was more than 40 years ago.

a W for me. Now is Whortle berries [pauses between each letter of first part.] Is that right.

(It may be but it was not the name we knew them by.)

[Since the sitting I have found that "Whortleberries" are the same as the Blueberry. What I had in mind was nothing of the sort.]

That is what is he trying to give you. the name you know and I fail but I will keep trying until it comes. It may not come today but it may. We cannot tell.

(I understand.) [Note 703.]

He laughs and says after [read 'often' and hand pointed till read.] other people monkey [not read.] monkey with the machine he has to rearrange and get things righted around again and he thinks he will let the family wait [not read.] a while ... wait ... until they know more. He is only saying this for fun.

(Yes.)

for he knows they must have experience. The work must not hang on one man's testimony. Do you know anything about a cap which your father used to wear.

(Who made that cap?)

I se [see] a cap with a part to pull down over his ears and it leaves only his nose and eayes [eyes] out. he is muffled up from the throat [not read.] throat and the cap on his head and he looks as if he might be protected from the weather. This is a cloth cap which I have shown me and has something like [not read.] like braid or binding on a part of it and a vizor and it is some faded [not read.] faded as if it had been out in the sun and storm but was so comfortable and then later I see another cap which is of something more like fur as if \* \* [that ?] that were a later and better addition to his wardrobe. Do you know the cloth one.

(Yes.) [Having in mind the knit one mentioned in Piper Report.]

It is not like R. H--[s] that has been dspoiled [not read.] dspoiled so long but belongs to your individual father.

---

703. A previous note explains the error in the name, Whortleberries, but we got no further with the incident.

(I understand.) [Note 704.]

Do you know anything about some fur that is light and made into a sort of collar.

(No I do not.)

Are [superposed.] are you sure that the mother did not have one.

(I do not know, but will inquire.)

It is yellow and brown and is a sort of collar and I connect [read 'loomed' questioningly.] it ... connect it with the old cap and I also see a fur robe of dark brown. What is a buffalo robe. Do you know.

(Yes I know what a buffalo robe is, but go on so I can be sure.)

There were several robes in the family arrangement but I see one light brown and rather rough and worn as if it had been in use some time and then I see a heavier dark one. It is not all black but is a sort of mixed one and is a better robe. I am speaking of a carriage robe or sleigh. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes I know what you mean, but will have to refreshen my memory on them.)

All right. so much the better. I think it must be getting late is [it] [sheet changed.] not.

(Yes, the time is up.) [Note 705.]

I hate to go this time I can tell you for the thing seems to be opening [read 'going' doubtfully.] up ... opening u.

(Yes, George, you know that next week is our last this spring. I expect to go on experimenting with another for a time and for cross references from the same family group that has come here.)

Yes they understand and will go with him and do what they can. Is it to be South [not read.] South you go.

---

704. Father had a knit cap, which was mentioned through Mrs. Piper and which was used but once, I believe. So far as I know he never had any other cap in his life, and certainly none with fur on it unless in his childhood. The incidents as told are wholly unverifiable and most probably wholly false.

705. I do not know of any such furs as are described. I do not recall any buffalo robes in our family, tho I know other families often had them. So far as my recollection goes we had no fur robes of any kind. We used other means to keep warm in our winter driving.

(Yes.)

Al [All] right. we all understand and will help all we \* \*  
[ 'know ' or 'can ' ]

(Thanks.)

Goodbye. G. P. & Co. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Do you know anything about wine?

(Yes.)

Well has there been anything about wine?

(In the messages?)

Yes.

(Not this time.)

Did any body want to say wine?

(Not this time.)

Dit it come connecting with anything else?

(No, but if you will say who was thinking it I shall know  
why you got it.)

Your father, your father.

(That's right.)

[Pause.] Do you know anything about white wine? [Pause.]

No, no. I like your father. [Pause.] Goodbye. You are not  
troubled over the sittings are you?

(No.) [Note 706.]

They are coming along all right are they?

(Yes.) [Pause and awakened.]

After the sitting Mrs. C. remarked that her husband was going out to the country to gather some dandelions for wine and asked me if I had ever tasted it. On my replying in the negative she said she would give me the recipe for it and I accidentally remarked that my mother would know how to make it as she made Elderberry wine. Mrs. C. remarked that she now knew that I had a mother here.

706. My father frequently made small quantities of wine from grapes. It was not white wine, but red. The white wine was made from the elderberry blossoms.

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 25th, 1911. 10 A. M.

Before the sitting Mrs. Chenoweth told me that some one came a few days ago and told the maid that Mrs. Piper was in England. She went on to say also that now one tells her she is in this country, and another that she is England and that she really does not know where she is.

[*Normal.*]

Do you know any one by the name of Rhoda or Rhodin. It is Rho and another syllable.

(No.)

May be it is something that just comes without meaning.

(No, it has been mentioned before.)

In this state?

(No, deeper.)

Then it may be more than I think for. [Pause.] [Note 707.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Hello. [Pause.] Heh Heh. [Pause.] Do you know any one they used to call Pa.

(Who called Pa?)

It is a man and they call him Pa. I think his children call him Pa instead of father. I hear a lady grown up calling some one Pa every time she tries to direct attention to him. I see an old man with spectacles on and bald, not entirely bald but partially. I see his scalp. His hair is grey.

(Who was it that was called Pa?)

The old man described.

(Can you find who he was?)

I'll see. [Pause.] I connect him with your wife. I am not very far over yet, but I feel a connection with her. You understand I only feel it, I don't know. It might be her father. It does not seem to be \* \* \* \* [few words lost.] It may not be

---

707. The name Rhoda was identified earlier as that of the Great Aunt of my cousin Stella. Cf. p. 713. It is interesting to remark that the second name Rhodin may be a fusion of the first and last names of the Aunt. Her full name was Rhoda McGookin. The allusion to "Rho and another syllable" suggests consciousness of error and incompleteness.

your wife at all but it is father and daughter. Does it mean anything to you?

(Not clearly.)

[Pause.] I'm not trying to stay here but I don't seem to get beyond.

(Go ahead.) [Meaning to go on deeper in trance.]

[Pause.] Shall I tell you what I see? (Yes.) I see him, the man, sitting at a table near the window and a lot of papers and books around him and in a home, but he makes out accounts and bills and things like that. He seems to take care of expenses and all that sort of work on himself and look after things and it is just like a girl comes in and calls him Pa. He looks up and answers and goes on with his work. It was not just before he passed away but before earlier in his life. [Note 708.]

(Describe that table.) [I thought of my father-in-law's desk.]

[Pause.] It is rounding, nothing at all like this one you sit at, rounder, either oval or round. A lot of things are on it in connection with his work. I can barely see the work. I see an inkstand as if things were written with it. They are like bills. Some are looked over and some are made out. The table has legs of the ordinary size and not very large but with a little curve to them. It is rather pretty and old fashioned looking and could be used for other things. It is not strictly a desk but a table. When I look out I look into a sort of yard or closed in place, not country but out into a little yard like a city yard. I think it is the back of a house.

I see something else in the room. Shall I tell you? (Yes.) Back of the man is an old bureau or drawer or drawers of some kind, like an old fashioned secretary you know. He takes things out of it. Do you know what these are?

(Yes.)

I can't tell whether they are written on. It is darker in that

---

708. The reference to making out accounts and bills at once identified my father-in-law and I kept the inquiry going. I never heard him called "Pa". His son, as far back as my knowledge of the family goes (1890), always called him father, and so did my wife. But this is said to have been in his earlier days. He had a number of children who died.

After he retired from active business he took positions of trust and his chief work was keeping books and making out accounts and bills.

corner. These things are taken out by a light. It is a funny room and funny things are there. Do you know about a lamp that had glass prisms hanging down from it.

(No, but I can find out.)

It is like that. I think I have to go on farther. Do you mind?

(All right.) [Note 709.]

[Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

[First pencil rejected, and a little difficulty in getting control.]  
[Writing very slow at first and not much improved in rapidity at end, and hand had to be helped back to left side of paper pad.]

I have wished that I might do [Pause.] [I had moved the pad.] something here before you go.

(Yes I hope you can also.) [No idea who was present at time.]

I often recall the conversations of the past, not so many that I have difficulty in doing so but enough to guide me now. The field is so broad and I had so little time to give to it in spite of the popular belief to the contrary. One might think I dined on psychic phenomena but I only nibbled [read 'enabled' doubtfully.] nibbled [not read.]

(The letters are too crowded.)

---

709. The desk in his sitting room which he used as an office until he became a confirmed invalid, resembled a roller top desk, but was not one. There were two doors with round tops and when opened they revealed a large number of pigeon holes for his papers. Similar pigeon holes were in the back part of it. When opened a leaf came down which turned it into a table. It stood on legs, not like ordinary desks directly on the floor. I do not recall whether the legs were curved or not. It was an old fashioned desk and not a table.

He did not look out into the back yard from this room, but into the street in front. But after he became ill he changed his bedroom to a back room looking out into the back yard which was a city enclosure as described. In this his working desk was an old bureau like piece of furniture but was not a bureau, tho usable for that, but was here put to service as his working desk. It had a leaf to be drawn out for the purpose and was an old fashioned secretary. It was a rather dark room, but I do not know of any special relevance in the allusion to taking things out with a light.

There was a chandelier in the parlor that had glass prisms hanging from it. The parlor was always kept dark and might need a light as indicated.

nibbled [perfectly clear, but read 'enabled' because I was under the illusion of the previous reading.] N [not read.] n i ... [suddenly read.] at it after the regular work. It was too vast and important for the treatment [French.] received at my hands. [At this point a struggle to maintain control was apparent and handwriting changed slightly.]

I will settle [read 'still'] down ... settle down to the experiments as soon as I can and will try and use the Smead hand for the pink pajama test.

(Good.) [Note 710.]

I do not wish you to think I have deserted you or your work. I am pleased with the outcome [not read.] outcome of the C. W. Wright experiment.

(So am I.)

That was hatched over here and will help balance the Tanner affair.

(Yes.)

We could not let that go without a trial at making it right and the R. H. incident which came about that time was to help some matters. I am to drop in something now and again as I can to make my record clearer.

(Good.)

We have no idea of allowing this work to go to seed and we will work the best way we can. Did you think the Bull matter might have been stronger.

(I had hoped that it might be *made* stronger.)

you see there were two Bulls by us [read 'is'] us us us [not read assuredly.] by us at the time and we hoped to make additional records later. [Pause.] [Note 711.]

I have wanted to talk about some of my books. Some of my autograph copies, not my own work.

(I understand.)

A friend has had a look at some of them and was pleased to have that opportunity. It was an old friend and he gave me

710. The public did think that Professor James "dined" on psychic phenomena, that is, spent much of his time at it. This was not true.

711. The allusion here is probably to Dr. William T. Bull and his wife. They were referred to before (p. 494).

some of them [struggle followed for control, with a pause.] I think you know him. I must go. William James.

(Thank you.)

[Change of Control.]

[French gibberish for some moments. Head shook from side to side. Hand reached wildly for pencil and medium spoke.] Give it to me. [I had some difficulty managing pencil and paper at same time.]

Well well well how did that happen. He meant to tell some special things and when he got to philosophizing and dreaming [read 'dealing' questioningly.] dreaming around [read 'about' knowing it was not correct.] around J. P.— moved him on and she said he could come again when it was not a busy time. She has a few things to do for some of your own people and W. J. uses up energy as a sponge soaks [read 'takes'.] p . . . sponge soaks ['sucks'.] soaks up water.

(I understand.)

He does not mean to but he does and the result [read 'usual' and hand pointed till read correctly.] is just the same as if he did it willfully. [Note 712.]

We have a group of your own people. How dd [did]. How [not read the first time.] the last work prove.

(Excellent.)

So glad. That always gives us so much courage to go on. There are many good things happening about now and you will see the hand [not read.] hand of the spirit workers in it all and you will have much more work to do. You cannot die yet. You must stay and work a while longer.

(All right. I don't object.)

for your crown [not read.] crown is not yet done. J. P. says that when it is near completion she will kep [keep] it at that point until she has accomplished what she wishes to for she thinks there was never a better combination for work.

---

712. The incident about the autograph books seems not to have any truth in it at all. This is the information I obtain from the family.

The abrupt termination of his communications, and the explanation which Jennie P. gave of the situation, may account for the failure to get the facts rightly. There is apparent evidence here of the dream state which he had earlier denied. Cf. pp. 216, 254, 278, 292.

Seriously it is hard to get the combination for perfect work. There are as many difficulties as in making a solution in chemical affairs.

(I believe it.)

but your father is a star [not read.] star witness and he makes all the family turn out and do duty for you when he can.

Do you know anything about a woman who [was] red haired in the family way back.

(I do not recall now, but go on.)

I se [see] a woman with red hair and a white and clear skin. She is rather large and a fine [not read at once.] fi... looking woman. She is connected with the family and passed to the spirit a long time ago. She did not live near here and he [so read and hand pointed and it was read 'the'] her name has an O in it. It seems more like Olive or Olivia or some such name. Is that of any hep [help] to you.

(Not yet.)

With her is a smaller man, a man perhaps five feet seven or eight. That is not a large man is it.

(No.)

and he has dark hair and blue eyes and rather dark skin and they visited in the family way back. I think it can be verified and your father seems eager to drop it in here just now.

(Good.)

It is not a near relative but a connection. [Note 713.]

I se [see] now a lot of ice piled up as if cut for use. Do you know anything about an icehouse.

(Go on.)

This seems to have been an innovation [not read.] innovation when it was first done. That is your father seems to have something to do with it in the early days of the work. I se [see] a rough building and some stuff which looks [read 'work' and hand pointed when I read 'took'.] looks like sawdust and I se [see] these cakes of ice put in this rough building. Later a better one was put in its place. It is rather funny but I se

713. The woman described and named Olive or Olivia, and the man described are not identifiable by any one in the family and my aunt whose memory goes far beyond mine does not identify these people.

[see] a number of people who are working together as if to make a company affair of it. Do you know anything about this.

(Not yet. Go on.)

Was there a small stream near the house or home where your father once lived with a pond or small lake or something of that sort near also.

(Which home?)

It looks to me like a later one not a city but a country place.

(Not that I know, but I shall have to inquire.)

You do not know about an improvised ice house.

(No I do not.) [Note 714.]

Perhaps you can find out for this seems to be something he recalls and desires to speak [read 'express' doubtfully.] speak of.

(All right.)

[Pause.] I wait a moment as he talks [read 'takes' and hand pointed till correctly read.] to J. P.

Do you know about some building that was put up near the old home with boards sawed [read 'saved' tho thinking it was intended for 'sawed'] sawed near the place.

(Go on.)

When I saw this water like a small pond and the ice I saw also a wheel and heard noises as if sawing and then I saw new boards and planks and work going on near the old home. It look[s] more like a building in which stock [not read tho suspecting what it was.] stock or something of that sort is to be kept and later I se [see] a large building with open doors at each end and it is so roomy and big so much better than the old ban [read 'van' purposely tho knowing well enough it was for 'barn'] barn.

---

714. My father certainly did not have an ice house that any of us can remember, and my stepmother does not recall his even talking about one. They were not known in the neighborhood. There was no such pond as described, much less any recognizable "company affair". There was a creek and a mill pond a mile or more distant. I doubt very much if my father ever had an ice house in his earlier days before my memory came into service. I do remember being in an abandoned ice house, very small, in my childhood, where there was sawdust and I learned then what it was for, but I cannot fix where it was and I can hardly imagine it to have been on my father's farm. I think the whole incident, if true, would have to apply to some one else.

(Yes, what kind of a barn was the old barn?)

Do you mean the material or the size.

(Material.)

I see [see] a lot of stone and rough ... I do not know just what they are but they are rougher [Pause but read.] rougher than the new one is. I put my hand on it and it is all so rough not like smooth finished board or shingles but as if whole big things were put together and strongly fastened, but there are some half round like half log effects inside and worn very smooth. Do you know what I mean.

(Yes, now go on with the new one.)

The new one is so large and high. The first impression in comparing the two is the height and roominess [not read.] space and then the attention is drawn to the better lumber and materials [not read at once.] materials. The foundation is better also and the cellar [not read.] underneath ... cellar underneath for one can [not read.] can go in under on one side and do some work there for something is kept there.

(What was kept there?)

It is something alive for I see the moving about and running back and forth and I see a sort of pen as if something was kept penned in as well. What it is I do not see. It is smaller than a cow or a horse and is more like pigs or lambs. They do not look much alike and yet in general the size is not unlike. Did you have both [read 'with'.] both hogs and lambs.

(Yes.) [Note 715.]

715. The account here is a very good one of the old and the new barn. A part of the lumber for the new barn was sawed at the mill run by the pond just mentioned. It was not a steam mill. The barn was built especially for the better housing of his stock and grain. To say it was "big and roomy" represents just the idea, tho perhaps not the exact language which father would express: for he built the inside so that no space would be lost by posts or "mows" as we called them with their attendant compartments. He made the barn so that he could drive in and turn a wagon inside it. This was impossible in the old barn.

The lot of stone alluded to as associated with the old barn applies to the new one, not the old. There were not many stones in the foundation of the old one. But the old barn was very rough in appearance and had no weatherboarding on part of it, the shed additions being built around the log portions. It was a log barn of the old style, put up in pens, so to speak. The "half round and half log effects" describe exactly the appearance of it: the logs were

I se [see] sometimes a hen [read 'pen' and hand pointed till read 'hen'] go in there but it is not its place. It goes and steals [not read.] steals [not read, but spelled 'steats' aloud doubtfully.] steals a nest sometimes and makes all sorts of trouble for the boys. They had to hunt up that setting hen and break up her nest. Do you know what that means.

(Yes I do.)

It is so strange to me. I did not have that particular kind of sport but it seems to be serious business sometimes.

I see a barrel [read 'band' hesitatingly.] barrel and some straw or hay in it and a little feathered bead [not read.] head [so read.] and ... bead [read 'beast'.] \* bead [read 'head' doubtfully.] bead [not read.] b... Bead [not read tho clear, because it had no meaning to me.] Bead eye in the midst of it and a boy's hand go down and snatch that biddy [so read, tho possibly intended for 'birdy'.] from her hiding [read 'holding'] place ... hiding [not read.] place ... hiding ... Any box [not read.] or ... bx box or barrel or place where an egg might stay a hen can be found in the spring so says your father. (Yes.) They are harder to manage than an obstinate woman. He laughs as he recalls the old days. [Note 716.]

kewed on two sides and were so old that at very many places they were worn smooth.

The new barn was larger and higher, and the lumber was much better, a part of it being pine. The foundation was a very fine one on which he put some expense for the æsthetics of it. The expression "cellar underneath" is a good expression for what is meant. It was not a cellar and I do not know what technical term should be applied to it. But the barn was what we called a "hank barn" which meant that it was a two story barn. The upper portion was exclusively for housing the grain. The lower portion, somewhat like a cellar, except that it was open in the rear, was for housing the stock. The cattle were fed there, and in the spring when the young of the swine and the sheep were likely to be exposed to too much cold and wet weather. little pens were made for the young pigs and the lambs. The new barn was built in 1878, so that the old one disappeared at that time.

716. The incident about the hens is accurate enough, except the allusion to barrels for their nests. Rarely did we have hens in barrels. But we made them straw nests often enough and little houses for their hatching. Hunting the eggs and finding the nests was a great occupation for us children, and the allusion to the difficulty of managing them is a true fact in my father's life, but the comparison is not natural. How much Mrs. C. knows of chicken raising can be determined only by herself, and possibly all the incidents are

Do you know anything about mixing up feed for the calves.

(Yes, go on.)

Was there a big box with some meal a sort of chest and was there a tall machine or cutting affair. It looks like corn stalks which are chopped or cut and it is near this chest where the meal is and then I see something put together and taken to the little creatures to eat and how they do eat and how funny they smell. Do you know about that.

(What sort of stuff besides corn meal was mixed with that food?)

Sometimes there is something which looks like potatoes. I don't know what it is but there is a word which seems like mash [read 'mach' questioningly.] yes. Something like that and there is a liquid too. Do they not sometimes add milk.

(I do not know about that. He added something else, not potatoes.)

Wait and I will see if he can tell. [Pause.] It is not a liquid which you mean is it.

(No.) [He used water for the 'mash', but I had bran meal in mind.]

I thought not for I had written that but he goes to another place and takes something in a round looking box. I think it is a measure of some sort and pours it in. It goes in very much like another grain. Was there not another grain.

(Yes.)

There were compartments in which different grains were kept and there was some in a bag [not read.] bag which he did not raise himself but had brought there from another place. you know about that.

(Yes, and one little word will tell exactly what that was.)

Yes is it oats.

(No.)

Never mind. it will come in a minute. Is it not something which was ground up for that especial purpose. (Yes.) some kind of meal I think it is. Is there such a thing as bone meal yes [to reading.]

familiar enough to most people to discount the incident here as possible guessing.

(No.) [Note 717.]

I cannot now get it but it will come as those things usually do. I see your father with a finger [not read.] finger done up as if he had hurt it and it is about the time of this new barn. It looks as if he had had a bad squeeze and lost a nail. It is either a squeeze or jam of some sort for I see him first shake it and move about as if he were in pain and then later I see it done up in a white cloth and see some one looking at it as if it were very tender and sore. Do you know anything about putting on pitch to draw out a splinter.

(Go on.)

I se [see] something put on the hand or finger and it looks like pitch

(It . . . . ) [Intended to say it was not pitch.]

or some sticking stuff and it is dark and it is all around your father's nail. He had quite a time with it but it got well after a while. Do you know about that.

(Not at that particular time, but it describes what I know, except that it was not *pitch* or dark.) [I had bread poultice in mind.]

I see something it may be salve which is a household remedy with him but it is certainly not white and is a light brown but nearer dark than white. He used to make a kind of salve for use at home. I don't know as he made it himself but it was made there.

---

717. The feed was not mixed for the calves but for the cows, tho calves, when they were old enough, shared in this same kind of food. The account is somewhat confused, but important points are true. We did not cut corn stalks for any of the stock, but we had an oats cutter which we used for cutting the oats for the cattle and horses. This was next to a chest or box that contained meal which was mixed with the cut oats and thus fed to the stock. This was usually moistened with water. No potatoes were ever used. The mixture for the calves was of fresh and old milk. Only when they were old enough did they get this meal. The food was always measured out in a round half-bushel. There were different receptacles for the materials used, but they were not compartments, as I believe is the case with some New England barns, and perhaps others. The meal for which I asked was brought from another place and was not raised on the farm tho it was made of the same kind of grain. Father usually bought it at the mill and did not have it ground. It was bran, one of the refuses of wheat. Probably the

(Yes.) [Note 718.]

and do you know about a cake of some kind of hard soap like looking [read 'cooking' and hand pointed till read correctly.] stuff with a string in it hanging on a wall in a shed or porch or something like that.

(Yes.)

It seems to be used to grease [not read.] greace [grease] something with. Either harness [not read.] harness or boots or something like that. I think it is tallow. Do you know about that. (Yes.) Was it not boled ['boiled' but not read at time.] in a ... heated ... small basin or dish and then when cool [read 'tool' doubtfully.] cold hung up for use. (Yes.) I se [see] it and your father smiles as he recalls those days. He says you or rather we made everything turn to our use and then he shows me a piece of lamb's wool as [not read.] if it ... as ... it were a little bit of the hide of a sheep or lamb and it is used for ... used. [not read first time.] polishing something. I do not know what but there was generally a piece around for use. Do you know that. [Note 719.]

word "bone" in the message, perfectly absurd for any one who knows anything whatever of stock foods, is a relic of the attempt to say "bran".

718. No special incident of this kind is remembered by me and no one recalls such an incident in connection with the new barn. But my father long before had a cut back of the little finger which injured it for the rest of his life. I must add that I did not know this fact myself. But my father told it to my stepmother without telling her just how it happened. I had simply asked her if he had injured a finger about the time the new barn was raised and she replied that he did not and added that I myself had let a hatchet fall on that occasion on the finger of a neighbor and nearly cut it off. I had wholly forgotten this and even now the memory is not of details. She went on and added spontaneously that my father had the injury which I have described and she remembered it only because it explained a fault of that finger which she knew.

It is very probable that a poultice was used on this as in connection with most injuries of the kind in those days. The communicator was right about the color of it when he insisted that it was dark. It was not black like pitch, which was sometimes used for injuries. But we often made a flaxseed poultice which was a light brown from the brown skins of the seed. This sort of thing was a household remedy. The injury to his hand was long before my stepmother knew him and possibly in his boyhood. I was never told of it. The barn raising was in 1878.

719. In the earlier days of my father's life tallow was used for harness

(I do not recall it, but does he know about when we had to polish our shoes?)

You mean the boys. (Yes.) Yes indeed and they were polished for Sundays [all but first letter clear but I refused to read it.] Sundays all right were they not.

(Yes.)

Did you have a sort of open shed or back kitchen or something of that kind where you had to do those things.

(It was not an open shed where we blacked our shoes, but one was near.) [Note 720.]

I see well do you know [sheet changed.] well do you know anything about a balloon.. It looks to me like a child's balloon and it is hanging out there somewhere near all these things. Your father puts up his hand and touches it and laughs. It is hard and strong but it looks like what I have said. Do you know what it is.

(No, go on.)

[Pause.] Was there anything like a [pause.] bladder there [pause.]

(Go on.)

It seems to be blown up and hanging up a little high. Do you know about that. [Note 721.]

---

grease. I do not recall its being hung up with a string when saved for this purpose, but I do know that we often had to hang it by a string to keep the mice and rats from it. I do not remember any wool from lamb or sheep used for this purpose. It is possible that a piece of sheepskin was so used before my time. Very early in my life he began to use an oil for his harness and he did not, so far as I recall, use a piece of sheepskin with wool on it for that purpose.

720. We did always blacken our shoes for Sunday. We were not allowed to blacken them on Sunday, but did it the evening before. I asked my question here with the very purpose of seeing if any reference would be made to the restrictions on this act. It had been mentioned through Mrs. Smead by my father and Mrs. C. has not seen that statement. The room in which we blackened them stood next to the open shed mentioned.

721. We used to blow up beef or pork bladders for various forms of amusement with them. I do not remember their hanging in that open woodshed. It is very interesting to see it described as a balloon, because the method of communicating here would give rise to exactly that impression, as the blown bladder was always the shape of a balloon, oblong and elliptoidal.

(Yes, that is all right. Now does he remember anything about codfish in that open shed.

He smiles and says yes as if there were some kept there for use. I do not know. Was it fed [not read tho clearly written.] fed to you boys.

(No. He will recall an incident that is very funny.)

[Pause.] He does I think but I do not yet get it. Perhaps tomorrow he will begin on that.

(All right.) [Note 722.]

Is this the right kind of work for you.

(Yes, exactly.)

All right. Then we will continue tomorrow. The energy is gone now.

(I understand.)

Goodbye. G. P. & Co.

(Thank you.)

[*Subliminal.*]

[Pause, and French.] Was your father buried from a church?  
(What makes you think that?)

All at once I saw a lot of people, a coffin and flowers. It looked like a church or building like that. It is quite light and I see pews and heads.

(No, he was not, but another was.)

In your family?

(Yes.) [Note 723.]

Well that's funny. I just see it. He must have been there then all the same. I can't see plainly I am kind of gone. Is it late?

(Yes.)

All right. Perhaps more will come \* \* \* \* [some words not caught because I had to get the next.]

---

722. I asked this question to see if my father would tell a story which he used to tell and which was a source of much amusement to him. It was not answered here, except wrongly. It was answered later. We never ate codfish, and the sequel will show why.

723. I need not at present comment on this incident further than in the text. Suffice it to say that it describes the main features of one funeral in the family and the only one in a church.

Have you got any old fashioned tongs, shovel and poker?  
(Go on.)

I see them. They were not just made yesterday and labelled twenty-five years ago. They are not specially pretty. The only thing is in their form and their real age. [Pause and awakened.] [Note 724.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 26th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Normal.*]

I see Dr. Hodgson just as plain as can be, outlined against the window. [Pause.] There is a woman with him. She is small and slender, a short delicate looking woman. I think she is a relative [I had thought of Q.] of his. [Pause.] Has he got a mother in the spirit? It seems an older woman and to be a mother. She has been gone quite a while. She is quite spiritual. I don't know how to tell you how I know, but she seems more ethereal than he. There is somebody's name that sounds like Bob. I think it is some one easily identified with him. [Pause.] Did you ever know Ingersoll?

(No.)

Do you know any one that looks like him?

(Not that I recall now.)

[Pause.] I don't know whether that Bob suggested it or not. After a second or two I saw a person that looked like his pictures. I never saw him. [Pause, cough and paused again.]

I hear another name but it is in a different direction. It seems to come from behind me. It is Flora. Does this mean anything to you.

(I think so, if more could be said to make it clearer.)

[Pause.] I am conscious you know.

(Yes.)

I had two impressions, one to call it cousin Flora and the other Flora McIvor or Flora McIntire. That is all I get with it. It is not an old person, she does not seem to be of an old age

724. We had the shovel and tongs which were used in the old days, but not any poker within my memory. The shovel and tongs belonged to the period before my memory began and there may have been a poker with them.

but a little past the young, happy and an ordinary sort of influence. There is nothing particularly marked in it. [Pause.] I'm going. [Pause.] [Note 725.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Oh, how pretty the daisies are. [Pause.] What is this country? (I don't know unless you can tell.)

[Pause.] So pretty, so big and so open and . . . most wonderful sunsets. I see it setting away off miles away. It seems to set right over a road as if you follow that road and walk right into it for where I stand is a great big red barn. Did you ever know a big barn near where you used to live?

(Tell more definitely.)

It doesn't belong to you. It looks towards the sunset and is off higher up off where the sun just shines on it. It is big and other buildings about but the barn is twice as big as the house. The house is low and rambling, the barn is big and there is an open porch on the house which is white. The open porch and door are on the side and as you walk toward the setting sun, you come to a drive way first. The house sets at the end of the road and you drive in to the steps and piazza and go in. It is a place where you have been. That is where the red barn is. It is awfully pretty. When you go in the place is well equipped. Does any one live in that place? A relative or friend?

(It may be, but I am not clear yet.)

Have you got an Aunt Sarah?

(Yes.)

Well I seem to connect her with that place. It don't seem to be her home so much as to be some one that belongs to her. You just want me to go deeper and write it rather than talk it.

(Just as you please.) [Note 726.]

---

725. Inquiry of his sister brings the information that Dr. Hodgson had a friend Robert, but she does not know whether he was called Bob or not. He also knew a Flora, not a cousin and not McIvor or McIntire, but McDonald. She is not living, according to the statement of his sister who gave me some account of her life.

726. These incidents are not recognizable in my experience. There was no such house and barn in our vicinity. The mention of Aunt Sarah indicates that the places described were connected with her and she writes that the family left the old Urbana home when she was three years of age—she is now

It will be easier for you. [Pause.] [Hand reached for pencil and it was given. Then it rose slowly in the air and then moved slowly down again to begin the writing.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Glad glad glad am I Father [pencil fell. Pause.]

[Change of Control.]

Here we are again. It is good to be here and we are already under the shadow of the long summer of rest but we shall not be idle. There are so many things to be done to get ready for more work later and we have also to work on the people who are to help in the furtherance of our plans and we do not forget our service to you even when you are away and whatever we can do to help you even in an unrecognized way we do with alacrity.

It is G. P. and Co. [not read.] Co. and our opinions and plans are shared by the who[le] group of s... [pause.] Psychic Researchers. Such a company we have. You would never guess. Some are arguing [arguing, and so read.] for one way some for another, some for less and some for more and it is a Babel at times I can tell you but this little Co. keeps right on sawing wood and hopes to make a record that will silence our Babel and bring light to the darkened intellects of these Psychic Researchers.

This is more or less chaff but there is some wheat in it just the same. You know how your Board sometimes disagrees with plans and all that sort of thing until one wishes that the power might be vested in one man and then we would have a kingdom and not a United States. You see what I mean don't you.

87—and she remembers nothing about it, except that she thinks the barn there was red. Her brother, somewhat younger, says he knows nothing about the Urbana home, but that the description of the house fits the Clarke County home, where the brass and glass globed lamp with pendants was. He says: "The rambling low house would fit our old Clarke home pretty well. It was low and spread out and the porch and front door were on the side and in coming towards it you were going towards the setting sun, but there was no red barn there." He adds that he was born in this place.

I myself never heard of this Urbana home until I began these inquiries and I never saw the Clarke County home, so that, if the red barn be a true incident and confused with the later home, it is 87 years old.

(Yes.) [Note 727.]

Do you know anything about cucumbers.

(Yes.)

Your father has been talking cucumbers until we all thought there must be some unusual reason for it but it is after all only one of his points and he did not want [not read.] want to forget it as he has meant to write about it before. I see [see] a very long green one and it seems a new kind and as if there was an effort to make it especially good in size and quality. Did he have a cucumber patch.

(Yes.)

and is that what you would call it. (Yes.) I never heard that term before but he used it and then showed me a place quite sunny and open and a sort of rail near it and under the vines I see them.

(What word goes with rail?)

fence.

(Right.)

There is a good deal of pride [not read.] pride about those vines [read 'ones'.] vines and there was much trouble about the early growing. It looks as if he had some one watch the vines for a little yellow flower and then immediately there was something sprinkled over the leaves. What was that for.

(You tell.)

Was there some pest a bug or worm that had to be kept away. (Yes.) He calls it a grub. Yes [to correct reading.] Is that right.

(I do not recall the exact word.)

The stuff which is scattered over looks white and can be seen some distance walking from the cucumber patch. I find a little way off some other vines similar but rather larger and some of that same white powder on those. What is that Squash vines.

(Probably.)

Do you know a cucumber while [read 'white'.] had ... which had a name of White something.

---

727. There is no such feeling and has not been in connection with the Board we have in this work. The remark is true of many men at the head of institutions.

(No, he will have to tell that and it will be good.)

Was there one with a name that was white [pause.] and another word White Spine or something like that.

There are two kinds, one is an early [pause.] one and one is for later use and for pickles. He says they made them.

(Yes.) [Note 728.]

Do you know anything about a large brass or copper kettle. I se [see] a large round kettle and It is either brass or copper and has some liquid in it and it seems to be in connection with these pickles or cucumbers.

(I understand.)

Is this the kind of work you want.

(Yes, and can he tell what else was made in that kettle?)

Yes I think so for I see some thing boiling as if it were boiling hard and fast and then I se [see] some thicker... What shall I call it. It looks like sauce or some heavy liquid. Was

728. My father was very fond of cucumbers and had his "cucumber patch" every year. After the sitting I asked Mrs. C. what she would call the place where cucumbers were raised and she had no special name for it except garden. I asked if she ever heard of a "cucumber patch" and she said she had not and would never call the place such. It was the exact name my father gave the place and so perhaps do most people. His "cucumber patch" was usually behind the garden and was enclosed by a rail fence. The garden was enclosed by a picket fence. The watermelons, muskmelons and cucumbers were usually planted in the same "patch". It was evidently the muskmelon that was presented to the medium's mind when she asked about the squash. He nearly always put the three together. I supposed it possible, however, that he sometimes planted them with squash, but my stepmother says very emphatically that he did not. The vines and muskmelons resemble some squash, so that in mental pictures I can understand the possible confusion. The squash leaves were larger than the cucumber leaves. The cucumber had a yellow flower and we used to sprinkle some white substance on the leaves to prevent the bugs from eating them. I do not remember what it was. Two other witnesses say plaster of Paris, and one recalled soot which is black and mentioned ashes, which I recalled. But I remember the vines white with it and this was before the time of Paris Green which was used on potatoes. No one remembers that he had a special kind. There is a "White Spine" cucumber, but no one recalls this as any favorite. He did have two kinds, one for vegetable early and the other for late pickles, of which we made a good many. The best point in the incident is the allusion to the rail fence. Mrs. C. could not possibly have known that, however much she might know about cucumber raising.

cider ever boiled in that and then was it not made into sauce of some kind.

(Yes, go ahead.)

apples and cider. It is very dark and heavy and comes out in the Winter with a glisten and as if frost [read 'first'] frost was in it. Was it kept in a cold place after it was made.

(Now what was done to it while boiling in the kettle?)

Do you mean the stirring. (Yes.) It has to be stirred constantly. One reason is to keep it from catching on the bottom and the other to keep it from boiling over the top and again to make it smooth. What is that thing you do it with a paddlle [paddle and so read.] It looks like wood. (Yes.) whittled out for the purpose.

My but it makes one want to return to the soil [read 'sort']. soil does [read 'don't']. it ... does it not.

(Yes.)

and to bring the same appetite to the table on a Winter's morning. Your father was a real old time providr [provider]. Great quantities and the right sort, not much like lobster salad and Welsh Rarebit was it.

(That's right.) [Note 729.]

Do you know anything about some large earthen [not read.] earthen crocks he calls them in which were kept things to eat like preserves and sauces or something of that sort.

---

729. It was some years before we owned such a kettle as is mentioned here. The custom was for some one in the neighborhood to have one and it was loaned about. Hence it was sometimes brass and sometimes copper. Our first was brass. When we got one later I think it was copper, but I am not sure. I do not recall making cucumber pickles in it, and my stepmother says they were not, but were made in a smaller brass kettle.

But I remember well enough our making apple butter in it. This was the answer to my question. We first "boiled down" the cider, as we called the process, and then mixed it with the apples to make the butter. It had to be constantly stirred to prevent the apple butter from sticking to the bottom of the kettle, "burning" as we often called it, and also to prevent the butter from being lumpy, as we said, or to make it "smooth". This was done with a paddle shaped piece of wood fastened on a long handle. The whole process is excellently indicated. I asked Mrs. C. after the sitting what she knew about making apple butter and she said she knew nothing and in fact said she did not know what apple butter was, and asked me if it was sauce. I explained and she seemed to know nothing about the process.

(Yes, go on.)

He shows me a number of them and there are several kinds of eatables and he is or was as interested in them and their preparation as the women of the household. [Note 730.]

But right here I see [see] something in a barrel. It is a mixture of some kind and is wet [not read.] wet. I say this in distinction to dry vegetables for it seems something which is wet and brought up stairs in a dish and then cooked. Whatever it is I do not know but it seems several [not read.] several [not read.] several things together. Do you know what it can be. Do you know anything about cabbage prepared [pause till read.] in some way and cooked.

(Yes.)

See here Hyslop's [is] that sauer kraut.

(That is what you mean no doubt.)

Did you have that as well as all the rest of the stuff.

(I do not remember the sauerkraut, but I wish he would tell what else he used those crocks for.) [Note 731.]

Yes I will see if he can. It is something to eat I think but there is also something kept in one of them that looks more like a brown shiny half hard and yet running substance. I don't know what it is. Do you.

(I think so if he will go on.)

Was it something to put on your hands.

(I do not recall that.)

It is something with which I am unfamiliar I think for it

---

730. We had stone or earthen jars for keeping various eatables in as indicated. Sometimes it was this apple butter, sometimes liver wurst, sometimes pickles, sometimes sausage, and so on.

731. My father did not like sauerkraut and never made any himself. He was very fond of cabbage, however. But after the sitting I recalled that my brothers at one time planted a lot of cabbage with the expectation of selling it, but they could not do so and they thought to save it by turning it into sauerkraut which they did, but did not do much better with the kraut than with the cabbage. The episode was the subject of some amusement in the family, and other observations as well. Whether this was in mind in the incident I cannot tell, but if it was as badly distorted as some of the messages were, it was probably this that he had in mind, as it was a memorable incident. It occurred after I had left home and I only heard about it on a visit.

suggests nothing to me unless it is syrup or something like that. Is that it.

(That may be, but it was not that which I had in mind.)

All right. I see something else now. It looks like cakes small cakes not cookies but some small almost white cakes. There was a crock used for some little cakes which were made to eat on the table. They were sweet and a treat. by that I mean they were not served every day but were used occasionally. Those you know about I think.

(Yes, what were they made of?)

Is there anything like honey cakes or some such name. I don't seem to get that. I only see them and they are eaten with a relish when they are served. I mean a relish of an appetite not a sauce. [Note 732.]

Right here. Do you know anything about an old fashioned latch on doors. I hear a sound like a latch as if there were metal clicking as a door opens. Do you know about that.

(I am not sure.)

Some one else can tell you that all right I am sure. [Note 733.]

(Yes, he has not yet told me about that codfish.)

Yes that was yesterday that he said he would try and tell you the story about the codfish in the open shed. Is that not right.

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about a dry codfish that could be hung by a string in his tail [not read.] tail.

(Yes, go on.)

It looks as if there was one [of] them in that shed and then after a little I do not see it. It is gone. Was it stolen.

732. It is probable that the half hard yet running substance is maple syrup, as we made much of this and with it made the cookies here indicated. They were kept in a crock and served frequently on the table, not daily. They were a great treat. Honey cakes may be guessing. I never heard of these until my later days and we never had them, of course.

733. I do not remember any old fashioned latch and none in the family would remember it. But is very probable that such were frequently used in his younger days and on the old house which was torn down when I was six years of age.

(No, it was not stolen, but have him tell why it had to be put there and what was done with it.)

Just as soon as I can get at it I will. (All right.) First I see it ... first [read 'fast' the first time.] and there seems to be something the matter with it. There is some one looking at it and turning it around and inspecting it and it is there [not read.] f... there for a little while and then I see it taken down by some one and carried away as if stealthily. that is why I asked if it were stolen.

(I understand, and in what special manner was it inspected?)

Was there not something the matter with it that made it impossible as a fish. [Pause.]

(Go ahead.)

It looks as if whoever inspected it had a turned up nose. Do you know what that means.

(Yes I do.)

Did they bury it at dead of night with military honors. It should have had such interment.

(Who objected to it that made it necessary to hang it in the shed?)

Some one in the house who was in authority on such matters. I only see turned [not read.] turned up nose and take it away expressions. Why it would spoil the flour [read 'flavor' and hand pointed till read.] and everything else. That was funny all right.

(Yes.) [Note 734.]

734. I shall tell the story as father used to tell it about the codfish and the reader may make the comparison. He thought he would like to try some dried codfish and bought one. When my mother tried to cook it, it produced such an odor in the house that she would not allow the fish to remain there. Father fastened a string in it and hung it in the woodshed mentioned. A poor neighbor was asked if he liked codfish and he replied in the affirmative. Father told him of this one and why he could not use it. The man said he would look at it, and when he inspected it he put it to his nose and smelled it. He remarked that it smelled all right, and was allowed to take it with him and as father could never stand the smell of it he always regarded this as a very funny experience and told us children about it. He may have told some of the neighbors, but it was his last experience with codfish.

The reader will see that the essential features of this story are repeated, some of them apparently in pantomime. Mrs. C. could not possibly have

Rich but too far gone. I am glad that much is over. Now to return to the house. Did your father have an old fashioned picture of a woman. It looks like a fancy picture but not very pretty [pretty] but it had always been in the family and belonged to his mother or some one before him. Do you know about this.

(Yes.) [Note 735.]

He showed it to me as one of the familiar things and now I see a very peculiar iron for ironing [pause and I read 'ironing'] clothes but it is very large and in two pieces I think. I see [see] a woman making something of heavy cloth and pressing it with this peculiar iron. Do you know about it.

(No I do not recall that.) [Note 736.]

Do you know anything about some home-made clothes.

(Yes.)

I mean like coats and trousers and that sort of things for boys. I see [see] a woman working over something like that and as happy as if she had ordered them [read 'him'] them at the tailors and had been free to gad about. She loved to do the sewing and that is what I see her using this big iron on. Was there something in a dark gray cloth.

(Very likely.)

It does not seem to be any trouble but a joy and that is what impresses me.

(Who was the woman that did the sewing?) [Thinking of my mother.]

I see a woman at least I see [see] two women. one lives at the home and one comes to help or to visit. I do not know which

---

learned this incident as only my stepmother and myself and my sister remember it. It occurred more than forty or forty-five years ago, before my memory of such incidents became clear.

735. There were two of these old-fashioned pictures, both, I think, of ladies. They were fancy pictures and colored. I do not know whether they came from his mother or not. It is quite possible. They were in the parlor at one time and were then transferred to the dining-room, a fact which I mention to show that my memory of them is correct. They disappeared many years ago. My stepmother does not remember them and she came into the family in 1872.

736. I do not recall any "peculiar iron in two pieces." In those days all the irons that I recall were in one piece. There might have been such before my time but I doubt it.

but the two are working together to get the winter supply made up. The woman I see most clearly is a woman of rather slender form and dark hair combed rather plain on the forehead and a very quiet and pleasant woman but she is able to take care of herself in conversation all right. She talks and laughs and has a good time. The other lady is slightly older and lighter in complexion and not much stouter but is plump and well rounded out. Those are the two women I see. Do you know anything about someone whose name begins with M—— yes. [to reading.]

(Don't recall it in that connection. You would have to give the full name.)

Yes I suppose but do you know any one who was connected with those two women who had the name of Martha.

(Yes.)

all right. What is that but M. I see you had to have a little more. Martha is more definite than M. which might mean Mary or Mehitable. Does Mehitable hit you anywhere.

(Yes you tell where.) [Note 737.]

If I can I will. I have to tell just what that Jennie P. passes me. She has just given me a push or two . . . or [not read first time.] and told me to hustle for time was passing and that is

---

737. I remember the home-made clothes well enough. Nearly all our clothes were made by my mother. She did love to do the sewing and was always busy with it when not at other housework. She often had outside help, but I do not recall any special person as described. My mother was small and slender, very dark hair, plainly combed with a curve on the forehead and side of the face, and was a great talker in company. Her name was Martha, and the reader will notice the funny mistake which I made in not recognizing the initial. I was thinking of the other person. The name Martha has been given before through Mrs. C., but not so distinctly as that of my mother. But the remarkably interesting coincidence is the mention of the name Mehitable in this connection. In the early Piper sittings, when Dr. Hodgson was present and I was not, my mother purported to communicate and gave the name Mehitable (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 443 and Mehittie on p. 432). Mrs. C. has never seen this Report, and the confident humorous attitude of G. P. here was exactly the same that he showed when we made fool blunders in the Piper sittings, and to ask: "Does Mehitable hit you anywhere?" was almost to have recalled or shown knowledge of that incident in the Piper case. It could only come to Mrs. C. casually in very improbable conversation with a reader of that Report and I doubt if she ever saw or talked with any of its readers.

why I am writing more swiftly now. [For a little time previous the writing became much more rapid.]

I see a little something [not read.] something I hardly know what to call it but it is a small flower which looks like foxglove. Do you know what foxglove is.

(No I do not.)

Ask some one for there seems to be a familiar flower in the little garden which was near that home. It was an old fashioned garden with a variety of things growing and was not always there but sometimes it did well and sometimes not and it depended on how well the boys carried water [not read.] carried water to it. There were poppies fanning [read 'fancy'] red ... flaming red and some yellow flowes [flowers] like marigolds [read 'margolis'] marigolds [read 'magnolias'] margolds [marigolds] and some other things which I do not see clearly enough to name. But do you know anything about some large flowers which blossomed in the fall. I think they are dahlias are they not.

(Yes.)

Were they not beautiful. (Yes.) Some one cared for those I know for they are as thrifty and fine [not read.] looking as ... fine ... as one would wish. There is a little girl with light hair and blue eyes who runs [not read.] out ... runs ... to those flowers. She must have been a visitor [not read.] visitor I think for she seems to be dressed up and there is a very evident desire to kep [keep] her from soiling [read 'sorting'.] soiling her clothes. She is grown up now and alive and I only see this picture as it was. [Note 738.]

I am rushing on for something I do not know just what. But do you know anything about a tomb. Yes [to reading.] (Yes,

---

738. I remember distinctly the poppies, both red and white, in the garden. They were very plentiful there, but I do not know what fox-glove is. The dahlias were all over the front yard. My mother was very fond of the poppies, marigolds and dahlias and may have been fond of fox-glove. I do not know because I never heard that name. My stepmother remembers fox-glove in the yard and does not remember any poppies, marigolds or fox-glove in the garden. My mother also had dahlias in the yard. The incidents, associated here with my mother evidently extend beyond 1872, and they are certainly characteristic of her. It occurs to me also that in later years the poppies and marigolds were not permitted to grow in the garden, so that they may belong to the period of my mother previous to 1869 when she died.

explain.) I see a cemetery and a country place. It seems to be town. I mean a neighborhood affair and I see a tomb in the plac[e]. It is an old and forsaken [read 'fashioned'] forsaken looking thing but one day I see the door open as if some one had been put there. It is fall and the grasses are brown and dry and all around is like the early November weather when it is warm after it has been cold. I do not know just why this is shown me but I see suddenly a man by the name of E p h r a i m y s ['yes', to correct reading of name.] if I have spelled it right and that seems to be one who was put in the old tomb. Do you know if there was such a man in your neighborhood.

(I do not know but can inquire, tho it would help to have the last name.)

I do not see that but I see the man as a rather stout man with red face and dying suddenly. [read 'doing something' and hand pointed till read correctly.] Yes [to reading.] and this tomb [not read.] has something ... tomb ... significant about it.

Now let us go back a little. Was there a country burying ground not far from your home.

(Yes.)

Was there a tomb door [?] which was under the side of a hill or slight elevation. It looks as if the door and all around was burnt [possibly 'turned'] the color of the grass and dry bushes about the place. You could see this burying ground from the road and this tomb is on the father [farther] side away from the road. It may be only a receiving tomb. That is what it seems most like as if any one could be buried there instead of its being a private mausoleum. I think this man died suddenly under some suspicious or unusual circumstances and was put there for a time. It seems to be a memory of your father's. But I may have to wit [wait] until tomorrow to get the rest of it as I did the ... did the fish story.

(Yes.) [Note 739.]

I seem to have no more energy to get at it. Is it late.

(Time is up and past a little.)

That is why I am losing I guess, but tomorrow I will take up

---

739. I have not been able to trace a single incident of this message. No one recognizes the name or any of the details.

the matter again. I think there have been some good things today though have there not.

(Yes indeed.)

Godbye [Goodbye] for now. G. P. & Co.

(Thanks.) [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[French and slight groan, and then a pause, followed by a sigh.]

I got rested, didn't I?

(Yes.)

They put some energy in me didn't they?

(Yes.)

Do you know anything about an old cistern and pump?

(Yes, where?)

At your old home.

(Yes, what did we have to do with that?) [Thinking of cleaning it.]

You mean you cleaned it out sometimes.

(Yes.)

Did you ever find anything in it, a snake?

(Perhaps so.)

You know don't you? Did you not hate it, to clean the cistern?

(Yes.)

That was your job. If everybody hated their jobs nothing would be done. When the water began to be dirty. Do you know that thing, didn't it squeak, that pump was it iron?

(I do not recall.) [Note 740.]

Goodbye. I could see a lot of things. I hate to bother you writing so much. Have to have a stenographer I suppose.

(That depends on who ...)

---

740. We had a cistern which we had now and then to clean out and it was a very disagreeable work. The pump that I remember most distinctly was wood and I do not recall any iron pump in the cistern. There was one in later days in the well. It is quite probable that we found a dead snake in the cistern. We found dead toads there and these were one of the reasons for cleaning it out, as we had always to do this the moment we found such in it. I do not recall this pump squeaking.

The stenographer is.

(Yes.)

[Laughs.] I guess it does. [Pause.]

Kate Field sends her love to Miss Whiting and pays respects to you.

(Thanks.)

She says sometime she hopes to have a part in this work. Mr. Pelham [real name written.]

(Who is he?)

[Pause.] Heh! Do you think I don't know? Heh!

(No.)

Of course I know. It is George you are trying to find out. Did George fall dead?

(Yes.)

My! On the street.

(Yes.)

Was it hot?

(I don't know.) [Note 741.]

Something. Oh too bad. Goodbye. [Awakened.]

Mrs. C. J. H. H.

May 27th, 1911. 10 A. M.

[*Starlight Control.*]

[I was unable to take everything Starlight said, but I caught all the important statements affecting the contents and meaning.]

Hello, I just came in to tell you I wanted to see you before you went away.

(Glad you came. How are you getting along on that side?)

All right. We are trying to get others interested. I know all your people, but I don't come near when they are working. I have to be particular about people when they are thinking around us. We have lines up just as you do to be connected with people. I call those here the band. I think you call them the group.

(Yes.)

---

741. G. P. did meet his death by a fall in the street. I do not know whether it was hot or not. This incident is one of the things that evidently come involuntarily from the communicator.

It makes no difference what you call them. Do you know that minister that came the other day?

(No.)

He sent me a message. [I saw the letter to Mrs. C.] You wouldn't like him as a sitter. He wouldn't let me finish a message, but would ask a question and wanted Yes or No for an answer. You put a muzzle on all your people. They are scientific people.

I'll get out in a minute. I came to quiet her mind. The music affected it. [A small orchestra played before the sitting in front of the room.]

You didn't see Bumble Bee as you said you would.

(No, I had no time.)

You are coming back next year. I don't know as it will be the same work. It will be other people. Your father is trying to make a special case for himself. I mean other people will come. Goodbye. I put my cap on. [Handkerchief on head.] It is to keep my thoughts in. Give my love to Mr. Jones.

(Yes.)

All right. [Pause.] [Note 742.]

[*Subliminal.*]

Did you say I was no good?

(No, where did you get that?)

[Pause.] What did somebody do to me?

(I don't know.)

[Pause.] They said I was no good and they would have to have somebody else do the work.

(That was a joke evidently.)

It is no way to joke.

(Not unless you understand it. Sarcasm is sometimes all right.)

Eh, Eh. Well I can't help it. I do the best I can. I don't

---

742. A minister had a sitting with Mrs. Chenoweth some time previously and it is not possible to verify the statement about his actions. They would show subliminal memory if they were verifiable.

At the time of this sitting I had no expectation of returning the next year for experiments. The prediction is fulfilled, tho the fact is not evidential.

have to do it at all. No one could make me if I didn't want to, could they?

(No.)

[Pause.] I know what they meant. Some other spirit came in because my brain would work. George explained it. He said they were afraid I would talk. Would I?

(No.)

Do you know a Joe and Robert who would go together?

(I know a Joe and if the Robert were made more definite I could tell.)

Well has this Joe got a son Robert or brother, a relative, related by [pause.] related someway. I think it is by marriage you know.

(What relation?)

I think Joe is Robert's brother-in-law. Do you know?

(No, but I shall inquire.) Eh? (How is Joe related to me?)

This is in the spirit life I am talking about. They are not alive.

(I know it.)

I see. Isn't Joe your uncle? Hasn't he some relative to him like Robert a brother-in-law or brother in spirit land?

(I don't know whether he has such or not, but there is a relative Robert there?)

Perhaps. I have got relationship often together. You want good facts.

(Yes.)

Do you like Joe?

(I know little about him. Was Robert a relative of mine also?)

Yes.

(What relation?)

I don't know. I can't tell. I just heard yes you know. Looks as if you have a mother in spirit land.

(Yes.)

Because I see this Robert touch this lady and say she is your mother, you are James. Have you a brother Robert?

(Who was this Robert's mother? What relation to me?)

Say, there is something mixed up here. There are two kinds of mothers and two kinds of children. Do you know about that?

(Yes.)

Your father had two wives, one in heaven and one alive and somehow I think this Robert don't belong to your own mother. Do you know about that?

(Yes, that is clear.)

Well it looks like a beautiful relationship between all. Your mother has a most beautiful feeling toward the other mother and takes care of the other mother's children. They just exchanged children. Have I made it plain?

(Yes, but I made a mistake when I admitted that this Robert was especially related to my mother, except in a sense. Who was his mother in relation to me?)

She was your aunt you mean.

(She was. Whose sister was she?)

I don't know. I would think of your mother's sister in the other mixed affair. Did your father marry two sisters?

(No.)

Did you have a brother Robert?

(I have a brother Robert.) [Note 743.]

---

743. This Joe is my Uncle Joe mentioned before (p. 690) and taking the Robert to be my cousin Robert McClellan, the Joe would also be his Uncle but only by a complicated marital relation. The whole question of relationship here becomes complicated as the communications proceed, and I shall state the facts.

This Uncle Joe was my mother's brother, James McClellan. Robert McClellan's father, as stated before (p. 702) married my father's sister for his first wife and my mother's sister for his second wife. Robert McClellan was born to his first wife, my father's sister, and so can be said not to be strictly any blood relative of the Uncle Joe. As Uncle Joe was brother-in-law to James McClellan by his second wife it would make Robert McClellan by marriage a nephew or what may be called that relation minus the blood tie. Probably it was this complication that brought the term "brother-in-law" into the message. The psychic got the idea as before (p. 735) that it was my father who had married sisters when it was his brother-in-law that had married, not sisters, but one sister of his and one sister of my mother. The reader may understand why the medium should spontaneously confess to being "mixed up here." It is interesting to have her remark, in all innocence, after so many previous allusions to my mother and "mothers" on that side, that it "looks as if you have a mother in spirit land," as if not previously known. My mother ought to be mentioned in this connection and she is, as it was necessary to explain the relation. I also have a brother Robert, and he had been mentioned before (p. 646). There is no

[Pause.] I guess I had better wade out. I think your father better tell his own relationship and his own wives. Don't you?

(All right.) [Pause.]

[*Automatic Writing.*]

Good morning again. Everybody is most eager to say something just as they would be at the last day of school but we, G. P. & Co. intend to keep [keep] right on as if there were to be no vacation and let the last half day be as important in its work as the middle of the season.

We know only too well that we have to make another struggle at the next port in command [read 'torment'] command yes [to reading.] the next light and we want to be so filled and saturated with these particular scenes and incidents in your father's life that we may be able to repeat some of them there and thus make one of the strongest and best series of cross reference work. It is our plan and we hope nothing will happen to make the plan

---

special reason why he should be mentioned in this connection, unless for distinctions between the two deceased Roberts. The reference to "two kinds of mothers and two kinds of children" is drawing near the facts which I have mentioned and it is made clear in the next statement. Robert McClellan's stepmother, who was my mother's sister, was a kind mother to the first children as well as her own. But it is here said with reference to my father's wives, not with reference to the person of whom it is true, and the interesting thing about it is that the psychic now spontaneously corrects her previous idea that my "two mothers" are dead by saying one is dead and the other living, which is true, but both wives of my Uncle James McClellan are dead, and the remark made of my father earlier that it must be funny to be with both wives really applied to this Uncle James McClellan and not to my father. Then it was also pertinent in answer to my question to say that "I would think of your mother in the other mixed affair," as it did refer to my Uncle James McClellan's "mixed affair" above explained, and this again was getting away from the confusion about my father.

I think this set of messages one of the most important in the whole record, just for this confusion which is so easily made clear by one who knows, really knows, the facts. It represents the same value as my sitting with Mrs. Piper where there was an attempt to clear up the mistake about my stepmother's name and which sitting Dr. Hodgson, living, regarded as the most important one I had had with Mrs. Piper. When Mrs. C. finally remarked: "I guess I had better wade out", meaning go into the deeper trance, she showed evidence of the confusion and that she had better let it alone.

fall through. When you have so many people involved there is always the liability [not read.] liability of change but we keep [keep] posted on those matters and are seldom surprised.

(George, I would like Jennie P. to try and give both her names there, that is, Jennie P. and Whirlwind.)

Yes she will make every effort to do so. It is just possible that she may represent the Whirlwind by some pictures so be on the lookout for those.

(All right.)

The name lends itself to picture writing very well and the Jennie P will probably come through all [superposed.] right ... all right.

(Now I wish my father to try his pass sentence there.)

He has not given it here yet has he.

(No, why?)

It seemed so much easier to do these other things that he got interested and went on with that kind of evidence but almost any time he is liable to drop it in. apt ['liable' not read.]

(All right.)

We are watching for it and will pass it along as we can. There are some good things coming there I think for some of the group have been making ready. Altogether the year's work has been unusually good and clear and we hope for steady improvement in every direction from now on.

This work is not in the hands of thes[e] people on earth altogether. We have an organization with officers and working forces and are all the time working and planning to do what is best for the world. [Note 744.]

The [pause.] object of the organization is for the upliftment of the people and not for the exploiting of peculiar power and so whenever any way is discovered to let light in there the group sets a sentinel and then some work is done.

I talk like a philosopher this morning and Jennie P says that it is not the time for speech making that you must do that before

---

744. There is some evidence that this statement about the preparation at the Smead case was true. But it is mostly in the spontaneous references to it here at previous sittings, tho the records with Mrs. Smead show traces of it.

the men whom you would induce to put their gold into your treasury and perhaps she is right but sometimes my real purpose gets uppermost and I find my tongue or rather my pencil flies away with the thought I cherish.

How wonderful is truth wherever expressed. We who have enlisted in her [read 'her' and then 'the' doubtfully.] cause ... her ... find no other mistress whose smiles set our hearts a beating to [pause.] music as dear as the song of victory over error and ignorance.

(I understand.)

Now here is your father knocking at the door and bidding me to tell you that he forgets not the sentence and forgets not his past and relies on your memory to make himself clear in his identification of his past existence. Yesterday the work was all right and no one better [better] knows the value [not read.] value of insignificant and small facts in this work than this particular group working here. The larger and more dominant facts might more easily be discovered by a spirit strong [so read.] striving to impersonate or talk about your father but the small talk of the farm and the daily life is best.

(That's right.)

You understand that.

(Yes.) [Note 745.]

Do you know anything about a dash churn [not read, as it was partly superposed.] churn. I don't know whether he is politely [politely] swearing about it or whether it is the name of it.

(It is the name.)

All right. Did it have a sort of stick or arrangement that went up and down in a rather tall round [read 'rimmed' doubtfully] round tub yes [to reading.]

(Yes.)

It is an old fashioned affair and a slow method but it did the work.

(Yes.)

---

745. I would not expect my father to give his pass sentence here by the method used in communicating. It would reveal it to others on that side. He would have to directly control the writing to get it through without imparting the knowledge of it to others.

Strange but I see that supplanted [read 'supplemented' and hand pointed till correctly read.] by another thing on legs and a big machine thing in . . . [end of line.] inside [delay in reading.] a . . . inside a box like arrangement. I have not made it clear perhaps but it seems to go with a crank. Do you know about that.

(Yes.)

Did you boys have to churn.

(Yes.)

Did you have a dog at that time.

(Yes.)

Was there any talk of making the dog churn.

(Yes.)

That is new to me but it looks as if the dog had a kind of harness and could be made to walk around and make the thing go.

(Yes.)

Now that strikes me as about as good as anything we have done.

(Yes, describe that dog.)

He is a short haired dog that is it is not very long but is sort of curly and has brown on it. You know about that. Are you thinking of the light dog with short hair and a few spots on him.

(No, the color of this churn dog was not given correctly.)

Let it rest. It will come just as the others did when you do not expect it.

(It is not specially important, but can he tell about the habits of that churn dog?)

I think he wants to tell something about him for he has him here. Isn't that funny but it is here.

That dog was almost human in many ways but there was something he had to do which he hated and would slink away and have to be dragged out or hunted for. He seemed to know when the day came yes [to correct reading of 'day', first read 'dog'.] You know what he refers to.

(Yes.) Note 746.]

746. The accounts of the churns are good incidents, especially for the chronological order in which they come and the reference to the dog.

The type of churn used in my earliest boyhood was the upright tall

that dog going out with the boys and out toward the woods and after something. I cannot tell whether it is the cows or after some load [not read.] load of something. I se [see] a sled and something piled on it as if it were a liquid in a pail or can and it is brough[t] some little distance and is partly snow on the ground and partly rough ground as if an unbroken road or rough path was being gone over. There are two boys and the sled and the dog. Do you know about this.

(No I do not, but I can find out and I imagine what it was that was so hauled. If he will tell what was done with it, it will help.)

Was it sap.

(Most probably.) [Note 747.]

round churn in which the butter was made with a dash that had to be jerked up and down by hand. The churn that followed this stood on legs and the dash, a different kind from that of the upright churn, was turned by a crank, still by hand. Then came the dog churn. Hence it was exceedingly interesting to see this mention of the dog, whose meaning I at once saw. We were the only family in that whole country that used a dog churn and the death of the dog about 1882 put an end to it at that time and it was only a memory from that period on. The dog did have a kind of harness but it was only to hold him on the treadmill of the churn in such a way that he could not stop it. He had learned to do this and a sort of harness had to be devised. At first harness was not used. He was a shorthaired dog, but not brown or curly. The other dog had a few spots on him, but this one did not. The dog soon learned to hate the work and would slink away and hide under the barn and had to be hunted up and dragged out for the task, just as indicated in the record, and it was often remarked that he seemed to know the day he was wanted, and this happened often enough, even when the churning day was not regular, to make it appear that it was intelligence of some kind.

The dog is not correctly described. The dog that I remember was yellow and had short, but not curly hair. This was the dog that slunk away and hid himself. My stepmother tells me that they also had another dog to do the churning after the disappearance of the first one. He also had short hair and was a brownish yellow with white spots on him, but was not curly. It is probable that the two dogs were confused in the description, one of them not being known to me, and not having any such interesting traits in him. The "moving pictures" might easily confuse them.

747. Occasionally the dog was used for another task by the younger boys and that was drawing a wagon. I do not recall his drawing a sled, and no one can confirm his drawing any maple sap as indicated. It did not seem probable to me when mentioned, tho I encouraged the communicator by the

That is what it looks like and sounds like him [so read and hand paused till read 'this'.] You know we talked of sap in N. Y. once.

(Yes.)

and we have never forgotten that and the surroundings and country look like that.

(I understand.) [Note 748.]

Now he begins another series of pictures. Do you know anything about a peculiar kind of sheep or goat or something of that kind with short horns and hair hanging from the neck. It is rather a tame looking beast but has an ugly looking eye. Was there a creature like that on you father's farm. [Pause.] (Go on.) What does ram mean. Was there one in the flock. (Yes.) Was he a treacherous old buck. (Yes.) He looks as if the old harry could not stop him if he got started and all sorts of stories [read 'stones'] stories were told of his prowess.

I se [see] a woman with an apron taken up over her head and running toward a fence where she lets down a part of the fence and slips into a place where something is going on and she takes out a boy who is rather scared and some hurt. It seems to be Mr. Ram that has caused [not read.] caused her to run so hurriedly. It is warm weather and everything is beautiful around. Was any one ever hurt by that creature.

(I think so, but I shall have to inquire.) [My answer is not a memory, but was designed to avoid confusion.]

I think he was killed [not read.] at ... killed at last just because he was so ugly. I see a sense [not read.] of relief ... sense ... as if everybody felt safer after his death. Do you know about that. [Note 749.]

---

opposite view, but the dog was used for some sort of amusement at the little toy wagon.

The sap was drawn on a sled or sleigh by horses and it is possible here that the sudden change of subject carried the impression on the subconscious that the dog was the agent in hauling sap.

748. There were some excellent communications about the maple syrup making at the earlier sittings in New York.

749. The incident of the old ram or buck is not given accurately. I never heard of it until after this sitting and when I came to make inquiries for the present note. We had two or three troublesome rams in our time.

(I am not certain, but I wish he could tell about what he did with the sheep in the early summer.)

If I can get a picture I will. Do you know about a place where there was a little stream of water and some [read 'one'] some trees and grass and rather a picturesque [pencil worn out and changed.] looking place where all the sheep are together and a man is at work on them. I do not know what the water has to do with it. I se [see] some sort of instrument long and sharp and I do not think they are being killed or branded [not read.] branded but sheared [read 'speared' tho thinking of correct word.] sheared or washed is the beter [better] term.

(Both.)

Now what is this red mark that [not read.] that is put on some of them. Were some of them sold. yes. [to reading.]

(Yes.)

You heathen [not read.] heathen some were sold for slaughter but they were taken away alive.

(Yes.) [Note 750.]

but there was one after I left home which was a special object of terror to the younger children. Father and the older of us were not afraid of him, if forewarned in any way. Not remembering any incident of the kind here described I simply asked my stepmother if she remembered any affair with an apron and an old buck. She looked up and smiled and said she recalled one with my sister Henrietta that she would never forget, and then told the following facts.

This ram often came home with the cows. On one occasion my mother went out to do the milking and Henrietta was with her. Neither of them saw the ram, and had their backs to him. Presently their attention was arrested by his "Ba", and my sister turned around to see him near and then ran for the house, never stopping until she got over the fence. My stepmother ran to the barn, and the boys had to be called to eliminate the ram. My stepmother remarked that she never saw Henrietta run so fast.

The ram was not killed, but sold. The incident occurred about 1880 or 1881. It was in warm weather. My sister was six or seven years old.

750. The reference to a stream of water was a very pertinent reply to my question, as it implied the washing of the sheep which I had in mind. There were trees beside the enclosure in which the sheep were confined before being thrown into the stream, but there was no grass at that point. It was on the other side of the creek. Possibly the term "picturesque" refers to the high bank on one side of the creek there which was a mountain to me, tho not high to people living in a hilly country, and it was

(Yes, can he give the name of the stream where they were washed?)

That is a corker but perhaps he can. Was there a brook to the name. It is not cold stream is it.

(No.)

Does not come yet. O I wish I could answer many questions you ask but I am doing the best I can. You know that, don't you Hyslop.

(Yes I do perfectly.)

This is the most pastoral [not read.] pastoral picture I have yt [yet] seen. I know the wool [read 'wood'] wool [read 'wood' still tho clearly 'wool'.] wool was a good bit of income but it was not all sold for some was carried home and used at home in some way. [Note 751.]

(Does he remember a certain little trouble about the sale of some wool.)

You mean about the pay for it.

(Yes.)

Yes he says he does but did he not get it at last.

(Yes, tell a little scene in getting it decided.)

[Pause.] I see another man and some papers and some of the wool as if the whole [read 'wool'] whole matter must have rested on quality or something of that sort. I see some coarse bags [read 'boys'] bags with a lot of this wool in them as if pled [piled] up. I don't know as this has anything to do with what you ask.

(Not that I recall, tho it may have been. The little scene I have in mind concerns a personal dispute when I was present.)

[Pause.] Don't se [see] it yet but do you know anything

---

very picturesque, sufficiently so to make my dreams for many years create mountains about that place.

Soon after the washing of the sheep, perhaps ten days or two weeks, they were shorn of their wool, as described here, and we often painted a red spot on them to serve as a mark of identity. We never killed any sheep, but sold them alive for market after they were shorn and fattened.

751. The wool was all sold and none of it used at home. We got a very good income from it, more than was usual in that locality, as my father was more of a sheep raiser than most people there. In fact few people had them and none had near so many.

about a long black [delay in reading.] wallet [read 'wattled' purposely knowing it wrong.] dark wallet that could unroll and when it was rolled up it looked quite bulk [so read.] y and bills were kept in it. I see your father take one out of his pocket as if he would unroll it and pay some money for something. Has that anything to do with it.

(I am not sure, but let that go.) [Note 752.]

All right. do you know an old lady who was very much wrinkled and who always wore a sort of cap on her head sometimes white [not read.] white [read 'while' and hand pointed till correctly read.] of cloth sometimes black of lace [not read.] lace with a bit of ribbon on it here and there. I se [see] this old lady at that place where I was and she seems to be knitting as if the very wool [not read.] wool we [read 'were', tho clearly not that and yet I supposed it an abbreviation.] talked of ... we ... was being put into use [read 'like'.] use. She is like a grandmother or some relative and is a quiet sort of old lady but she is so old very old. Do you know her.

(Before I recognize her more specific things should be said.)

Let me see what I can get. Sh[e] is a slender and not very large woman and she has a place where she sts [sits] by herself a great deal. I don't know as she lives there all the time but she comes sometime and when she does she is at home. She wears [read 'bears'] wears a very dark dress with a little smal [small and so read.] small figure in it like a leaf or a flower here and there. I ....

(Yes, in what room did she sit much by herself?)

I se [see] a room which has windows on two side[s]. one side they look out toward [not read.] the ... toward the front

752. I did not get a correct answer to my query. The reference to "bags" and "quality" are pertinent in this connection, as the bags had been the cause of an incident which raised the question of "quality", but I did not get enough to suggest evidence to one who did not know the facts and I do not care at present to tell them.

The reference to the wallet is not recognizable, and if it were would hardly be evidential. I do not know that anything of the kind figured in the incident named, tho my futher did one thing on the occasion that required the use of or reference to his pocketbook.

I think and yet the room seems to be slightly in the back. Was there a room you called the North [not read.] North room.

(We did not use the word North, as it was not a North room. Now in whose home was that room?)

[Pause.] Let me describe the room to you a little more. There is a fireplace and she sits there by that a great deal and has a rocking chair with a cushion in it but the chair itself is of wood and rather high back.

(Yes.)

and a peculiar drab or greenish gray color and there are many things in the room which are her own. It seems to be especially fitted up for her and I see a pile [pile] of wood in a little corner near the fireplace and the boys are supposed to keep [keep] her box... [pencil ran off page.] box full and a pan [read 'pair'] of ... pan ... chips besides. It is a pan or a small basket but it has chips in it and do you know about a pair of bellows [read 'pillows' and hand dissented and I read it correctly.] yes blowers. I see [see] something like these.

There is another chair [read 'clear'] here ... chair ... which is straight backed and has arms and is more like a rush bottomed chair and in that I see [see] your father sit [sit] and talk to this old lady sometimes. Is that not something which you can recall.

(Yes I do.)

Do you know about a closet in that room (Yes.) where there were a few things which belonged to her. I mean some old fashioned things. I see [see] a little sugar bowl [both words not read.] sugar bowl [not read.] bowl or pitcher. I cannot tell which but it has a raised flower in color and is just a part of the picture with her. Do you know anything about a metal [not read.] metal box. I cannot tell whether it is a spectacle [read 'peculiar'.] case... spectacle case or a snuff box but it is a silver colored box. Do you know about it.

(I think so, and can find out. Who was that lady?)

Is she not your father's mother,

(Yes.) [Note 753.]

---

753. There was an important association between this dispute to which I referred and my grandmother who figures in the next and spontaneous reference. She did not want my father to do what he felt his conscience

I thought so by the great love and reverence which ... reverence [not read first time.] ... which was evident in his talk and attitude.

(I understand. Can he tell me where she passed away?)

Don't see it yet but I se [see] a long stretch of railroad track and a station, whether that means that it was away from home I cannot tell but I think so.

(Yes.)

I se [see] the journey in connection with the others. Was the body not brought back to the old home.

(No, a single word telling the relation of the person at whose house she passed away ....)

---

required him to do, but this incident, of course, does not figure in the communication about her, but it is a natural association to have her brought to mind.

A very important detail in this association was the room which is described. The accident to the wool which caused the quarrel occurred in that room many years before my grandmother came to live with us, so that her double connection with the incident makes a most important item of evidence for the fragmentary character of the messages.

She was very much wrinkled and always wore a white lace cap with a ribbon, not a "rib" to fasten it under the chin. This fact my stepmother tells me, who had often to fix her little remaining hair, which the cap was to conceal. She was very slender and never a large woman. Was always very small. She knitted a great deal.

After my Aunt Eliza's marriage, my grandmother came to spend a part of her last days with our family. She had what we called the "back room", (not the "North room") where she sat nearly all the time in extreme old age. The room was north of the parlor, and west of the kitchen, and could well have been called the "North room" from its relation to all but the kitchen. The room had two windows, not windows on two sides, and these two windows did not look out toward the front of the house, but to the west. From my account of it the reader will see that the psychic's statement that "yet the room seems to be slightly in the back" is exactly correct. We could see from the windows to the front part of the yard. There was a large fireplace in it for heating the room and by it she sat most of the time in a rocking chair with a cushion in it and the chair was of wood with a high back, and was the "black chair" which father afterward used and to which he has referred through Mrs. Piper, Mrs. Smead and Mrs. Chenoweth. The chair was a drab green at the time and painted black afterward by father. My grandmother wore a dark dress, but it was cashmere without any figure in it, according to my stepmother's statement. We boys had to keep a pile of wood for her in the corner of the room near the fireplace and

You mean his brother's. I se [see] a woman leaning over the bed as the old lady dies and sh[e] mets [meets] you [so read.] your father and even at the great age she had lived there was sorrow and tears for this lady is in tears as she talks with your father and there is a man present who is not so much affected [French and shaking body, and then exclaimed: "Oh dear!"] but in a degree. [Note 754.]

What happened?

(Nothing but pumping energy.)

Is it late.

(Not yet.) [Looked at watch.] (Yes it is.)

Is it not dreadful to have to stop when it is so interesting  
This has been good all right.

it was in a large box to prevent bark and chips from getting on the floor. The basket of chips I do not remember, but it is more than probable, because it was always our habit to have a basket of chips for rekindling a fire when it went down or nearly out. Nor do I recall any bellows then or ever about the house, but my stepmother recalls very distinctly a pair of bellows in the house when she came there, but says she never knew them to have been used by my grandmother while in that room. Father used to sit with her and talk to her for company a great deal, but the chair mentioned was not a *rush*, but a *splint* bottom chair, an old rocker of my grandmother's which she liked to use and it was in that room, according to the testimony of my stepmother. I do not remember that particular chair, as I was away at college much of the time that my grandmother was living with my father. I saw her mostly in the summer and during holidays.

There was a closet—two of them—in the room in which the few things my grandmother had with her were kept. But no sugar bowl was there. She brought none of these things with her when she came to live with us, according to my stepmother's statement. The same source says she had no snuff box. I thought this exceedingly improbable, as I had never known her to use snuff and she had no vices. But she lived at a time when many people used snuff. However, my stepmother says she thinks she had a metal spectacle case which may have been mistaken in the picture for a snuff box.

754. Before her death she went to stay awhile with her daughter, my Aunt Eliza so often mentioned here, and became too feeble to return. No railway trip is connected with the death, but in changing the mind from the home of my father to that of his sister a railway would inevitably be involved in a mental picture of the place where she died. It was in the home of father's brother-in-law, not brother, as the story shows, that she died. The incident of a lady leaning over as she died points to her daughter, who, when called by my sister at the watch, came, as my sister told me at the time, and knelt over her dying body.

(Yes.)

I think there is no end to the evidence which can be given but goodbye for now with greetings from all the group who watch with eagerness these experiments in identity. Yours  
G. P. & Co.

(Thanks. My greetings and gratitude to all on that side.)

You are much beloved by all. [Pencil fell.]

[*Subliminal.*]

[Long pause.] [Cough.] Dieu! [Pause.] Goodbye.

(Goodbye.)

Are you happy?

(Yes.)

Was it good?

(Yes, awfully good.)

Glad [whispered.] [Pause.] Your Mary kisses you and sends her love to you.

(Thanks, mine to her.)

She knows it. Oh dear! Oh dear! [Pause, and awakened.]

---

### PART III.

#### SECOND RECORD OF MRS. SMEAD'S SITTINGS.

May 28th, 1911.

In the course of conversation Mrs. Smead remarked, with corroboration of Mr. Smead, that some six or eight weeks ago she saw a vision of the Greek letter Omega with a cross in it and a monogram of the letters F and P. This occurred after she had gone up stairs to retire but before she had gone to bed. She had not yet begun to prepare for bed. She could not tell the date of it, but said it was on a particular night related to another event which we are able to determine exactly. This was a sitting she had held for a friend. The record showed that this was on the date of February 8th (Cf. p. 132), so that this vision was on February 7th. On April 6th at a sitting with Mr. Smead the control remarked that he wanted to bring an English friend who had recently come over. On May 4th in the morning, from

a reference in the *Outlook*, she learned for the first time that Mr. Podmore was dead.

Tho Mr. Smead was a member of the Society I purposely withheld the publications from him that mentioned the death of Mr. Podmore and these were the *Journals* for September and December, 1910. He lived so far in the mountains out of reach of anything that would mention the fact that there was no reasonable chance of either of them learning the fact except through me. I did not send him these *Journals* until after he had informed me of what had come in the sitting and what they had seen in the *Outlook* on May 4th, 1911. Mrs. Smead and Mr. Smead then conjectured that the monogram of F. and P. was intended for Frank Podmore. They did not understand what the Omega meant. I recognized at once its coincidence with what had been given through Mrs. Chenoweth but said nothing.

For a more detailed account of how much and how little Mr. and Mrs. Smead knew of Mr. Podmore I refer the reader to Note 45, p. 137, and Note 57, p. 146.

Mrs. S. J. H. H. May 29th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* \* \* just wait [a] moment \* \*

(All right.)

[Pause.] \* \* \* \* you [long pause.] we will needs be ready soon yes [to reading always unless otherwise indicated.]

we will send them word to greet thee.

(All right.)

[Long pause.] Hello H. did you get it our message.

(What message do you refer to?)

P i P E R.

(None was sent to me, but I shall inquire.)

w[e] cannot get the new found friend to try [read 'to-day'.]  
no no to ... [suddenly read.] yes. [Pause.]

(I understand. There is no hurry about that because I shall be here...) [intended to add 'some time'.]

we are talking listen.

(All right.)

we could not get the new found [read 'friend'] friend ...  
found friend to try over there [read 'these' and hand wrote

'ere' above to correct.] [wavy line drawn for ' across the ocean' as always in Mrs. Smead's references to England.] [Pause.] he says to [too] hard work yet.

(I understand.)

very much disappointed is he with the Sub... yes consciousness [wavy line drawn again.] and surprised to find we u [you] and I H [small 'h' made and then the line added to make it a capital.] were right [not clearly understood and so not clearly read.] do u [you] u. d. u [you] and I you you and I H were right.

(I understand.)

yes to [too] scientific there had to give it up here. do u u. d. it [not read at time.] [Pause.] says now he thought it might be so but felt he would lose his scientific Reputation to come out [read 'and'] out [written above first writing of it.] and say so to the public.

(I understand.)

yes, ready now ... ready [not read first time.] now to confess his faults.

(I understand.)

yes he will be here soon we have sent for him H.

(All right.)

[Pause.] [I saw fingers had been pushed down to the pad on the pencil and so took it to change it. The hand resisted it.]

(Let me change the pencil.)

no [Pause.] Says lots of things are different than he expected yes. [Pause.] Tel. do not [both words erased.] does not work here he says as he was inclined to believe it must. indivu... [erased.] individual work alone [read 'alive'] counts here ... alone yes.

(I understand perfectly.)

[Pause.] yes we are going to give him a chance and see how he prospers.

(Good.)

So sure always he was just right did not like to open out to all truth as coming from us.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] now it will be for him to show his colors yes.

[Pause.] Mary [?] tried to call us often. do u u. d. (Yes.) good. we will test his scientific ability to get it through o. k. (Yes.)

I will go for the Present [present] H. R. Hodgson. yes.

(All right.) [Note 755.]

got another ready. [Gave a new pencil assuming that this was what was meant by last statement.]

[Change of Control.]

speak to me. get me nearer. don't u u. d. [all mirror writing and not readable till finished and sheet turned over.] don't u u. d. (No, I do not.)

Hodgson says go on tak [talk] wit [with] H.

(Yes, I shall wait patiently and help all I can by my presence and thinking.)

we agree Hyslop now. Sorry I did not listen to your advice [read 'alive'] advice yes. do you remember I refused once to much more than look at your work because I said yes and told the Society not to waste [not read as it was written 'wane' and then 'ste' superposed on it.] its ... wastes [read 'wasted'] no not to waste its money on your case of Sub as we had enough of it all ready [already.]

(I understand.) [Note 756.]

---

755. As the symbol "F. P." had indicated clearly enough who was meant by it I took it here that Mr. Podmore was meant and the sequel proved me right. There is perhaps nothing here so far which cannot be attributed to the subconsciousness, as Mr. Podmore was well enough known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead in the general reputation he bore to require discounting what is said here. I think, however, that we shall in the future hear of more who are surprised at the limitations of this subconsciousness. Whether Mr. Podmore consulted his scientific reputation in his writing as he did cannot be determined, but he certainly wrote like a man who did this in preference to seeking the real truth. He did extend telepathy in his explanations, as every reader of his work knows, and this is too well known to make a point of the reference here. The expression: "So sure always he was just right did not like to open out to all truth as coming from us" states a fact apparent in much of his writing and is too fine a point for Mrs. Smead to have known it, tho the consonance of the thought with her own beliefs about spirit messages deprives it of evidential value.

756. In 1901, I think it was, I sent my Smead record to England for examination and publication in the Society's *Proceedings*, and it was returned

But you know some of us had to get here to know where [so read and hand wrote 'at' over previous attempt, making it 'what'] side we were on yes.

(I understand. Good.)

yes [long pause.] but our work is not done yet. [Hand moved to me and I had to fix rubber shield on pencil.]

[Pause.] no not yet. I will soon tell him. I must free my mind first. yes get a clear conscience [read 'consciousness' tho seeing that it was 'conscience', thinking it intended for the former, but hand dissented and I read it 'conscience'.] yes yes [Pause.] made a fool of myself by denying [not read.] denying [read 'changing'] denying this life, yes all I could [read doubted'.] could. [Pause.] now I must except [accept] it as a reality. do u see Hyslop my scientific position [read 'Researchers' doubtfully.] P O S I T I O N amounts to nothing as a reality.

(I suppose the difficulty now is due to the fact that you had opposed it so . . . .) [statement unfinished as writing began.]

that is what I just said did you heare ear [written over last to correct.] me.

(No, I did not get that exactly, but I inferred as much.) [Writing began before I wrote the last three words.]

same thing Same idea. yes. Tell L I would that I could talk to him as easy over [waving line drawn to signify 'across the water'.] as here yes. he is all right in his bele . . . [pause.] belief of our life. not so awfully scientific.

(It takes some common sense does it not?)

and c o u r a g e of his own personality yes.

(I understand.)

with the verdict that there was not enough evidence of the supernormal in it to justify the expense. The Smeads knew this, but not Mr. Podmore's possible relation to it. Miss Johnson writes me, in reply to the query whether Mr. Podmore had spoken of it as here asserted, as follows: "I do not think Mr. Podmore ever read the Smead Report." This is not an answer to my question. Mr. Podmore was a member of the Council that decided against the publication and it is possible that the general character of it was before him. It would be a natural verdict for him to make, if judged by the spiritistic standard, but as I sent it as a case of secondary personality, it would have been a good point for his theories to have favored its publication. But it would have been an expensive thing considered from the point of view of evidence for the supernormal, as there was little of this in it then.

wish I had done so. [pause.] so yes. H brought me to tell you I b ... how I found my existence was continued when I left [wavy line.] and said I could tell you al [all] about my experience on arriving.

(Good.)

I left there sooner than expected. do u u. d. and ... [Note 757.]

(Yes, and tell how you did leave, as this lady does not know.) not yet. [pause.] no no I will some time, not yet, not yet.

(All right. I understand.)

they [erased.] the friends were all here waiting. S widgwick [Sidgwick] came first to tell me I was o. k. yes and said he was glad to help a friend in need. I did not really believe I was [pause.] but [Pause.] I [Pause.] but found I was out of it as far as going back to my old body was concerned. and he told me I had better come along with him [pause.] yes and I left before the friends over there were ready to believe it. yes a dreadful pain seized me H. [Pause.] then a few of the others came from I could not see where and I found I could no longer go batch [read 'watch' doubtfully.] go back so they [then 'e' written over to convert it into 'the'.] friends brought me to you[r] light and we tried to get you word that I was here before the world knew I had left it. E a r t h.

(I understand.) [Note 758.]

I told H. [written 'h' first and then line added to make it a capital.] it was no use as it your case was only sc .... [secondary.] consciousness.

(I understand.)

yes unconscious working of the mind and not worth bothering with but each and all of the scientisst [scientists] here

---

757. The expression "I left there sooner than I expected" indicates a fact and conditions about which the Smeads knew nothing.

Readers and friends of Mr. Podmore will have to form their own opinions of the accuracy of the statements about him. I could not make inquiries regarding them.

758. Mrs. Chenoweth had an experience indicating the apparent presence of Mr. Podmore before she knew anything of it, but Miss Whiting knew it and identified the meaning of the experience and told Mrs. Chenoweth so. Cf. note 57, p. 145.

agreed with [with] H and said I must try and I watched for a chance and do you know if I succeeded. [Note 759.]

I find it hard to give contents of messages written [apparently 'written'] and sealed yes hard because the years past have almost blotted them from our consciousness.

(I understand.)

memories yes [erased.]

(One of them did get through in the light's sleep.)

yes no not so.

(All right. What was it?)

I would try to remember what was promised about sealing our messages

(All right. Go ahead.)

but H. It is no use. that part is a failure [sentence not read in correct order.] that part is a failure yes.

(I understand.) [Note 760.]

did you say something to me [not read.] to me.

Hodgson was talking to [too] [pause.]

(Yes, I said something seemed to come here . . . .)

Yes I know I tried to \* \* ['w u' ?] it in Greek but do not know as you got it through to your side. [Pause.]

(All right. Take your time.)

I tried I said when I had only been here a short while [Pause.] It was that I wanted to make sure I could be alive that I tried

759. This depreciation of the Smead case is perfectly characteristic of Mr. Podmore's attitude of mind, but we cannot make an evidential point of it. There was no apparent success of Mr. Podmore at this case until the sitting of October 4th, 1910. Cf. p. 131. On this date the Podmorean monogram came. On April 6th, 1911, (p. 134) R. H. referred to him as an English friend that they wanted to bring.

760. The explanation of sealed letters is a very pertinent subject of reference for Mr. Podmore. He had emphasized the failures of certain persons to give the contents of sealed letters, as objections to the conclusiveness of the evidence for spirits, and this position here naturally reflects the natural position of a man who discovers he has not known as much about that matter as he thought he did. Mrs. Smead did not know what position he took on these matters, unless Mr. Smead saw a reference to it in Mr. Podmore's "Naturalization of the Supernatural" and referred to it; for Mrs. Smead has not read that book, nor anything else of or about Mr. Podmore.

to tell you in the \* \* [either an attempt at the cross or the letter 'F'.]

[Long pause.] S S \* \* E E \* \* cannot do it. it goes around too fast.

(Yes, too fast.) [Alluding to this last writing, tho the attempt at the undeciphered part was slow enough.]

[Long pause and some scrawls.] \* \* E [Pause.] well I will tell you I tried to give my name too. [Pause.] did you get t h a t.

(We got a certain thing that implied it.)

[Pause and scrawls.] I tried to give it but was afraid I would fail but H said he was sure you would know of it if only a piece [pencil fixed.] got through.

(Yes, that is right.)

[The Greek letter Omega was here drawn and then a cross after it.]

(Yes.) Yes. (Who did that?)

[Again the Greek Omega was drawn.]

(Yes, who made that sign?)

[Sign of the cross made.] said it was all right to continue here. yes u u. d. [Greek Omega drawn again with cross after it.] yes.

(I do not mean the cross, but the other.)

no Together.

(Yes, who gave the two together?)

[Long pause.] I thought you would know us always by a sign H.

(Yes I would, but I asked . . . .)

[Pause and scrawls.] and for light received it.

(It is not clear yet. I asked because that sign came in a connection that made it necessary to ask whose it was.)

[Pause.] How long will it be Hodgson. [Pause.]

(How long what?) [Pause.] (I think we had better cease to-day and it will be better to-morrow.)

Hodgson says it belongs to the last fellow Frank Podmore. do you wish me to come again.

(Yes, by all means.) [Note 761.]

---

761. I saw that the mention of the Greek letter Omega was either a

well I am glad of a chance to right my wrong doing as it is wrong to try to \* \* [superposing and read 'change'.] the pe ... make the people believe there is not another life.

(I understand.)

I could have done so much if I had done as L is doing. sorry. tell him to never make my mistake. good by friend. will come again and try to help.

(Thank you. I shall welcome you.)

it is dreadfully tiring. cannot use another as if it were our own.

(I understand.)

thanks. [pencil fell.]

[Change of Control.]

I guess it is o. K. H. he is learning his lesson. [Pause.] yes though [so read.] thought he could talk any kind of Chalk Talk [not read.] too bad ...

("Choctaw"?)

Chalk Talk. he thought he could talk any kind of Chalk Talk H but had to come to the good old English language. do u u. d.

(Perfectly.)

yes Plain F. R. [evidently intended for 'P', and so read after reading it 'R'.] yes. [to reading.]

we will come again if you so desire.

(Yes, certainly.)

on the morrow. R. Hodgson.

In the evening about 9 o'clock, Mr. Smead and I were engaged in a discussion on the piazza and Mrs. Smead went into the trance without our knowing it at the time. When

---

mistake or evidence of the presence of Professor James and I wanted to see what would be said to this and whether it would be corrected or not. But it finally came out that it was "the last fellow Podmore" who did it. This was wrong, if we are to suppose that Professor James had anything to do with this sign anywhere. But it is significant that the allusion is to "the last fellow" which implies that some one else had been there. The error is spontaneously corrected later. I was careful not to indicate here that there was any mistake.

The capital letters S and E may be attempts at the sign Omega which did not succeed till a little later. There, is, however, no assurance of this.

she awakened she said, as she was going in she saw the cross and the letter S. and at one juncture heard "Neither do we". She went into the trance a second time as we talked, but had no experience to report this time.

Mrs. S. J. H. H. May 30th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* \* \* \* ['will' ?] [Pause.] Myers [?] my name [Pause.] nearer [?] \* \* \* \* \* [Pause.] Speak until H come he comes.  
(All right.)

[Pause.] Myers I said is my name ['Myers' not read at time.] Myers I said my na... [pencil ran off page.] name is Myers.

(I understand.)

speak until H comes yes.

(You are welcome.)

[Pause.] we are all most all over here H. you u. d.

(Yes perfectly.)

those at our first meeting in the upper room yes near the crossing.

(Yes, I remember you telling me that before.)

yes there was nothing much in that room friend. [Note 762.]

(I understand. Can you give me the same sign of your presence here that you use at the other light?)

[Greek Omega drawn and cross after it, and then a pause again with a second attempt to make the Omega, but prevented by pencil running off page. Then after a pause again the Omega was drawn with the cross inside.]

(Who made that sign?) [Thinking of W. J. in Chenoweth sittings.] [Note 763.]

---

762. At earlier sittings with Mrs. Smead some similar allusions were made to the room at which the first members of the S. P. R. met and it was located near "Charing Crossing", which should have been "Charing Cross". This is another allusion to the same incident, but more fragmentary. It is true that nearly all of the first leaders in the Society are "over there".

763. It was not the Greek Omega and the cross that was Mr. Myers' sign, it was a peculiar way of making the capital "I". Cf. p. 626. I asked my question here to see if I could get the error of the previous day corrected. But it only called out an explanation of the sign of the cross.

a prophet of the olden dispensation. u [you] want us to tell what our greater Light desireth us not to do.

(No, that. . . .) [Writing did not wait.]

he hath said not one shall do so.

(I understand. . . .) [Writing would not wait for explanation.]

but himself.

(I understand, but was not asking for that. I wanted . . . .)

[Pause.] yes but he hath said we could be recognised by the sign but not the name.

(Yes, but another gave that sign elsewhere and it was he that I wanted.)

I u. d. and shall ask that he be called

(All right.)

[Pause.] I was talking friend concerning the original sign + we can sometimes use it when permission is given and the original is is [read 'user'.] not be present can u [you] [previous 'is' read.] yes is not p. . . ['present' read.] yes but friend we did not recognise it so when I came firs. . . [pencil ran off page.] firs. . . [pause.] yes [to reading 'first'.] now so many are here that know and think it that we often use it in this new Light.

(I understand.)

when I [circle drawn around the letter] is not present it is [pause.] now when I [circle drawn around it.] is present it is used differently now.

(What does the . . . .)

yes. [Pause.] He is not seeing the need of more of his own personality is demanded upon the Earth and so will try to impress more of it for the benefits of enlightning [enlightening] the m. . . souls [superposed on 'm' erasing it.] of men. yes finds the sign of + not now enough to prove his personality and is now preparing to do more.

(I understand all that. You can go on with the regular work of the day.)

yes H. will come soon. [Long pause.] [Note 764.]

---

764. Sometime in my conversation with the Smeads I had remarked that Emperor might be the prophet Isaiah, and evidently that idea is here in the allusion to the "prophet of the olden dispensation". The explanation involves a misunderstanding of the question I asked, and that is quite reason-

[Change of Control.]

[New pencil inserted. Got wrongly placed and hand moved to me to see that it was correctly fixed between the two fingers, which was done.]

coming nearer \* \* to you [not read at time.] \* \* I [pause.]  
Coming. I am ready now. [Pause.] do you know H we tired him out yes he said he was surprised that he couldn't talk easier to you yes.

(I understand.)

and we will let him try again [three words not legible.] soon. [Pause.] let him try again soon.

(All right.)

[Long pause of 7 minutes.] He used to talk wih [with] me, bu[t] now he says we must go on don't the friend know I was \* \* \* \* tell him H for me please. [Pause.] do u [you] know wher[e] I was Hodgson when I came here. [Pause.] all right tell him about it if you g. . can. [Pause.]

old fashioned idea [pause.] of it. [Pause.] bed to the South of the room yes. chairs to the north yes. stand on the north side and [pause.] dresser [not read at once.] and [pause.] no dresser East. Closet west yes. [Pause.] light overhead yes. [Pause and scrawls.] large mirror on dresser. yes.

(Who says this?)

never mind. [Pause.] windows at the East door on the n

---

able, since we may suppose the subconscious aware of the meaning of the cross and possibly not aware of having associated it with the Omega. In her normal state Mrs. Smead knows well enough that the sign of the cross is used in her automatic writing, but she has never known the meaning of the Omega, tho knowing that it came in a vision.

The drawing of a circle around the capital "I" may be an attempt through this personality to give the sign of Mr. Myers. It is a modification of that letter and that is what his sign was in the case of Mrs. Chenoweth, but it was made there like a capital "L," in print, reversing the stroke toward the left. Here, however, Imperator is involved.

The further remarks by that personality, Imperator, or for him, are pertinent to the idea that he does not see the importance of putting his own personality forward so prominently as formerly, and if we may judge from the way in which the deceased psychic researchers are put forward instead of the Imperator group we may understand this allusion. It consists also with the modification of the sign of the cross which has appeared in the case of certain communicators.



... [erased.] [Then straight line drawn and at left a line drawn down a little to the right making an angle with the straight line of about 45 degrees. Then a vertical line from this point drawn across the first straight line to a point above the first one and then turning at a right angle a short straight line drawn parallel to the first and then lines like N or M drawn cutting the first line.] no no north west corner. north West yes. [Pause.] writing materials South East [pause.] a little place out [?] off the corner of the west side. [Pause.]

the ft [foot] of the bet [bed] was considerable lower than the Head H. yes. [Pause and scrawls.] tell him I did not co... ['come'. pencil ran off page.] as did G. P. tumbling down ['come', 'as' and 'tumbling' not read.] come as did G. P. tumbling [tumbling] down out Side of my room.

(I understand.)

but my room is now in good order and looks dark to me. [Pause.] not much light in it and [so read.] at any time. [Pause.] streets mor... narrow [superposed, erasing first effort.] Streets and houses too close close [superposed erasing.] together to admit light freely. H do u u. d.

(I don't know who is saying it.)

not yet

(I must wait to understand it.)

[Long pause.] paper on wall of light color curtains [read 'contains'.] dar... curtains ... yes dark H. [Pause.] yes streets narrow yes [to reading of 'streets' which I first read 'shut'.] did I tell you that once.

(Yes.)

bed rather high yes [Pause.] looks dark to me now. can u u. d. the material [written 'materil' first and then 'al' added.] it is made of. I mean ... [Pause.] cannot make the right impression yet for the light to see me clearly. I will soon H. before you go away from us. H. says still it is identity you want of me and so get my room identified.

(I understand.)

dresser dark like bed white on the top not around [not read.] the glass ... around. [Pause.] pictures are few room up stars [stairs.] yes. [Pause.] I must make this light see me as I did not know her when there.

(I understand.)

yes [pause.] think you can know it is really me. F. R. P. [superposed on 'R' to erase.] yes. yes. [to reading.] yes. [Pause and scrawls.] I will give you more more More. Yes but I must not stay today and get so [pause.] weary again.

(I understand.)

but I must undo my wrong impressions I gave on your side. [Pause and scrawls.]

(I understand, and have always thought you believed more than you expressed.)

yes but nevertheless I left the impression of being a non-believer do u u. d.

(Yes perfectly.)

yes too much scientific knowledge. I thought to be one [erased.] on the other side would be safest but not so when we \* \* ['come' or 'over'.] come over here.

(I understand.) [Note 765.]

yes you can ask them to tell you about the arrangements of the room yes.

(Yes I shall inquire)

good morning friend. thanks for this privilege [not read.] priv... [suddenly read.] yes. [Pause.]

[Change of Communicator.]

The father [read 'further' and then at once corrected.] yes says he will do what is pleasing to Son James. does not want

---

765. It was always clear to me from Mr. Podmore's mode of expression that he believed more than he appeared to believe in his writings. Ordinary readers did not reckon with the fact that he was criticizing evidence, not beliefs, and hence a man who made that distinction clear would see that, at times, he slipped and gave evidence of believing what he did not think proved. But it is true that he gave the impression of being a non-believer and he was apparently willing to have that impression left on his readers. Mrs. Smead did not know this and I know that Mr. Smead never suspected this view of Mr. Podmore's mind, because I engaged him in conversation to ascertain whether he had seen it and he had not. He has not read carefully the book of Podmore that he owns.

Miss Johnson replies to inquiries regarding Mr. Podmore's college room as follows: "No verification can be obtained of the supposed college room."

to control as in the bgng ben [pause and erased.] beginning but greets you.

(My greetings to him.)

before we go this day (Yes, I understand why that is and shall be glad to hear from him) [Pause.] we will see the [thee] on the morrow friend Hyslop.

(Yes, thanks.)

yes. [Pause.] R. Hodgson. R. Hyslop.

[When she came out of the trance Mrs. Smead remarked that she saw five lights and a sort of double cross within a circle. By a "Double" cross she meant, as represented by drawing, a cross as often made at the end of writing by Miss B——, and it resembles a cross made of a wide board.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

May 31st, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

[Wavy line across the page and apparently a cross made at the end when the pencil returned on a wavy line to the left side of the paper and began the writing.]

Coming now [wavy lines drawn as before. Then writing which had been very slow and clear became rapid and indistinct.] why do you not find out what I tell you about it yes.

(About what?)

information I have given [none of it read and pause.] I have given to you yes. (I. . . .) you can cable them [wavy line.] don't you u. d.

(Yes, I understand it but will have to inquire later.)

[Pause and scrawls.] I did not think friend that It could possibly be so much trouble from this side.

(I understand and you are doing well.)

yes for a beginner and experimenter it is not like the one V [Mrs. Verrall] over there that I tried so much.

(I understand.) [Note 766.]

---

766. It is curious to see this half reproachful suggestion about my cabling about the communicator's room. Mrs. Smead knew perfectly well it was impossible and the communicator would have to be in a trance for him not to know it. I do not know at this date (July 18th, 1911) whether Mr. Podmore has tried Mrs. Verrall or not. Mrs. Smead could not possibly know it, tho we can suppose her guessing it.

[Pause.] different objects do carry their influence Hyslop more than you know.

(All right. I am glad to hear that.)

yes. [Pause.] yes and in somm... [erased.] some cases it is all from your side. yes. [Pause.] do u know I wish to convey the meaning S C I Co m e t r y [Psychometry] (Yes.) yes. [Pause.] yes but only when objects are used continually does it come like second nature to the "Medium". [Quotation marks inserted by Mrs. S.] [Pause.]

(I understand.)

A case of Practice makes Perfect. yes that was how I found [erased.] find it was with some of those I experimented with [with] since I have been here.

(Good.)

all of the earth side [pause.] can u [you] know that... [pause.] do you know that.

(No I do not, but I am glad to learn it.)

yes, there [so read.] these workers of whom I speak did much in this way [pencil fixed, fingers having moved down to paper.] believed it was from here but only of the S C I— [pause.] ("chometry"?) yes of earth life. [Pause.]

(How is the influence kept on objects?)

It is left until a higher life is sought yes after we begin to loose [lose] our influence or I might say rather thought for them then the influence leaves and it is only by continually thinking of earth memories that they stay.

(I understand.)

impressions of ours are left more distinctly on those things we have kept about our person con in ... .. tinnally. yes do you not find it so.

(I do not know unless you mean ...) [Writing began.]

you get best result as you term it H from such.

(Yes.) [Pencil moved to me to be fixed which was done.]

but some times the owner of it is not present and yet you get information from them.

(Can you get little incidents of their lives, that is, of the owners from the objects alone?)

not it [erased.] it [erased.] not I but some on your side H. can. can u u. D. me.

(Not quite fully because that must be long investigated.)

F a c t yes.

(All right)

positively so too. [Pause.] Yes [pause.] it does not of necessity need be that we are with them to have those earth memories. but [?] I hardly H. know just how I would word it to made it perfectly clear to you, but I was about to say, take these memories from it. see what I said connectedly.

(Yes, do you mean that the associations .....)  
remain with them.

(...affect the mind of the ...)

yes, yes, yes that is it exactly H. that is why so much is taken for S P I R I T S that is not really so.

(But .....)

S C I C O metry stops there.

(Does the psychometry .....)

and if you keep the object from there [their] personal touch H. you do not get much. can u u. d. my expression.

(If you mean that many thoughts from the spirit world are conveyed to the mind of the psychic and then are recalled by association with the objects.)

no. no. I mean that those objects hold for a whil[e] the impressions our [read 'on' doubtfully, and hand added 'r' above.] S P I R I T S left wih [with] them [written imperfectly and then 'm' added.] yes. we do not at once take all our Earth influence wih [with] us. impressions are of necessity left behind.

(Yes, but do you mean that thoughts are left on the objects and can .....)

certainly be picked up if you please by the ones having the gift to so do. Not tel. [telepathy.]

(I understand that.....)

they H. would not get them if the objects were not brought in contact with them.

(I understand, but it is incredible to me.)

no but if you keep it the object from their touch and your own as it has been subj... [erased.] suggested we can keep more in touch wih [with] our earth friend as it is then a case of our personality and kept eppt [attempt to correct first effort.] out

of reach of the others touch the P s y i c [psychic] touch it if you like. you know I did not believe in S c i [psychometry] having any hold when there but when I came to try those I had experimented with I found the new difficulty.

(Good.)

yes. (Then would it be better always not to . . . .) yes. (. . . have objects near at hand when experimenting?)

not to let the P s y c i c [psychic] com[e] in touch personally wih [with] them. do you now get my thought.

(Yes.)

if you desire a perfect set of facts and clear ones never let them see or touch them H. [Pauses after several words.]

(All right.)

as they will always get impressions if personally [so read.] personal contact exists.

(I understand.)

keep them as H. was told to do I ridiculed the idea when there but it is true nevertheless H.

(Glad to know that.)

if cared for in a proper and scientific manner they [erased.] the influence from us us can remain for some time. better only a few small articles from pursonl al [added.] [personal] use be kept. others as soon as possible disposed of. yes their own memories can be concentrated as if in a book.

(Then you simply read of the object your own . . . .)

life history, yes.

(Then it might be difficult to prove spirits at all.)

\* \* [scrawl.] if as I said H. you let the P s y c i c [psychic] touch them. can you not understand yet.

(Yes I understand perfectly and you can go on.)

it is only H. when no other comes in contact with our earth memories can they be proven as of Personal Identity [written 'I den' and then hand wrote 'dentity' indistinctly and superposing on the first and read doubtfully as 'personality', a part of it not legible as I thought.] Personal Iden . . . . [suddenly read.] yes. cannot you see that if another comes in contact it takes away the proff [proof].

(That may be, but go on with your other matter.)

this must be taken from my thought.

(All right. Free your mind.)

It was hard for me to believe it.

(Yes, and it is hard for me to believe it now, in spite of your statement.)

fact just the same.

(All right.)

I never did give in.

(No, and I shall have to get much more evidence to make me give in.)

try it for yourself [not all read.] try it f. . . try it for your self with my thoughts in view [not read as it was superposed.] view. see if some of those you experiment with do not find it difficult to get information without personal touch of objects H.

(All right.) [Note 767.]

[Handwriting totally changed in what followed for a time. It was very deliberate and the words were not separated.]

W. J. believed it much am [and] foun[d] it difficult to see it. . . see the reason for not excepting [accepting] all as spirit communications, yes, we will have our experiment soon to prove this fact. [Long pause of 10 minutes.]

[Change of Control.]

(May I say . . .)

r E C T O r

(" Rector ")

[Pause.] D. \* \* \* \* \* [Pause.]

[Possible Change of Control.]

[Rapid and illegible writing began.] \* \* \* \* \* [apparently the words 'speak' and 'work' are among the attempts.]

767. All this discussion of psychometry will have to explain itself. I do not know whether Mr. Podmore was interested in it or not, either affirmatively or negatively. I certainly do not believe that any such view of it as is apparently taken here is true. It is to me preposterous, and Mrs. Smead knows nothing whatever about it.

Of Mr. Podmore's relation to psychometry Miss Johnson writes: "He did not believe in psychometry. I am pretty sure he never tried any experiments in it."

The developments which immediately follow offer a plausible explanation of the phenomena.

(I can't read it.)

\* \* \* \* good communicator. [Pause.] Friend Hodgson  
\* \* \* \* \* [word 'stay' legible.] but do you understand.

(I can't read a word.)

[Pause and change of handwriting and Control.] [Writing  
clear.]

I do not wonder at your not understanding it clearly. D. says  
that I Hodgson [Hodgson] must stay near, not leave \* \* [pos-  
sibly 'woman'] alone. Rector said it + and that was why you  
could not get it. he was talking so rapidly.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Says Says I must be here to help.

(Yes, take your time.)

The lady that came a short time ago was helping and telling  
P her experiences. Says she alway[s] took objects to hold yes.

(Who was that lady?)

[Pause and scrawls.] name began also with P. [none of it  
read immediately.] [Pause.] and also began P.

(Any more?)

her name, yes. Said to Podmore that she would hold objects  
in one hand then sometimes talk yes. could get information  
clearer that way yes. Pil [last two letters not assured, but either  
'il' or a scrawl.] She does not \* \* want to give it yet. all of  
the name. P i [dotted.] [Pause.] pers Piper ['pers' and 'Pi-  
per' written almost illegibly and with cramped hand.]

(Did I know that lady?)

[Pause.] yes

(Did you know her Hodgson?)

do u [you] [changed to soft pencil.] not know I told you  
about her first.

(First what?)

yes. I do not understand. First I told you about Her.  
[Pause.] She is mixing everything up with P. and he cannot  
see it. She [not read at time.] never did ... She never was a  
thinker to keep it clear.

(Do you remember Pilly?)

[Pause and scrawls.] we will need hold the thought \* \* and  
I \* \* [scrawl.]

H will come. I will come first and see to it myself.

(Good.) [Note 768.]

Yes. Podmore is no good as an experimenter.

(I understand. Shall . . .)

just let him see it for himself.

(All right.)

I will come first, yes, R. H.

(Shall we . . .) [Intended to say 'sit tomorrow', but hand went on.]

yes on the Time suggested [suggested.]

(On the morrow?)

yes but H. not further for this time after the Sabbath [Sabbath] we see thee also yes. how long.

(I expect to remain here three or four weeks and wish to do all I can.)

3 or 4 Sab. . . . [Sabbaths]

(Yes.)

Then I shall do my part.

(Thanks.)

R. H.

After recovery Mrs. Smead remarked that she saw a woman with brown hair and apparently blue or brown eyes, leaning over talking to some one. She had a light dress, and hair was in a puff in front and coiled a little back of the top of the head. The woman is unrecognizable to me.

---

768. The message from Dr. Hodgson clears up all the talk about psychometry as really not coming from Mr. Podmore, but from a lady whom he nearly succeeded in naming by the pet name by which he called her when living. This was Pilly and Mrs. Smead neither knew nor could know anything about her or this name. She was one of the sitters at the experiments with Mrs. Piper and known there as Mrs. Holmes. With great difficulty, requiring six months' investigation, I found her surviving daughter in Berlin, Germany. She writes me that Mrs. Holmes used to experiment both herself and with others at psychometry and was a firm believer in it, tho not very successful in her own experiments. It is thus apparent that there was either some confusion of the subliminal of Mrs. Smead about the communication or, as Dr. Hodgson remarked, the Podmore personality was trying to communicate for her and impersonated her as himself.

Mrs. S. J. H. H. June 1st, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

Coming we are coming nearer. [Long pause.] I will get it soon [sentence not read at time.] I will get it soon.

(All right.)

[Pause.] Yes. [Long pause and scrawls.] we would let P try for the [thee] again but we told him he must wait.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] as [Pause.] he [Pause.] would not take the suggestion from the Rector.

(I understand perfectly.)

[Pause.] So positive H. he knows just what to do.

(Yes I understand, and shall wait patiently for your wishes.)

we know the work here and we do not desire it changed.

[Pause.] and when we cannot get it through one way we can another.

(Yes.)

yes, a point we have found useful yes. [Pause.] [we can] not talk directly [only a part read.] no [?] [erased.] no. we can talk to the Sub. and it will go through o K.

(Yes.)

and a point can also be given as a suj [read 'subject'] and seen [?] [possibly 'sent'.] by the Light for us [pencil broke and another inserted.] yes yes consciously or by suggestion to the Sub.

(Yes.)

and we can come in better contact with the Brain by talking directly to it as if the Spirit remained with it. that is we occupy it for the present as if it were our pisical [not read.] brain not hers [attempt to erase 'pisical'.] phisical [physical] not hers. that is why we have difficulty to control.

(I understand.)

the mecan [pause.] ism [word not read, but I suspected an attempt at 'mechanical' and read 'mecan'] yes mecanism [mechanism] yes (Yes.)

[Pause.] but H. we have done it so that we have it working now and P. would come in and change it all over to suit his whims.

(Good, I understand.)

[Pause.] we have asked [Pause.] R. and he said he had to give

in as all rest of us [not all read.] did ... the rest of us. [Pause.]  
can not make it over easily.

(Yes I understand.)

and as the complications work together it is better and surer  
yes of results. He would [would] [read 'wanted'] no would  
yes that we concentrate all our energy on the writing portion  
of the B—— ['Brain?'] yes and Rector says no.

(I understand.) [Long pause.] [Note 769.]

[Change of Handwriting.]

[Words connected for a time.] Seeing is believing with  
[with] some and positive knowledge of facts with [with] others.

(I understand.)

I wanted to tell you about the little house Hyslopp in the  
mountain. [At this point outline of house drawn.] not exactly  
a log one but looked much like it. Sadly in need of paint. Berry  
pastures all around us there and now it is closed and looks as if  
there were no windows in it

(Yes.)

[Pause.] [I had to close window.] not on the mountain side  
but down [then a line was drawn apparently to indicate a moun-  
tain at the foot of which another line was drawn whose meaning  
is not indicated and at the corner where it turns a cross was made  
possibly to signify where the house was.] from it distance not  
much woods either. do u [you] remember when we went there  
together. [Long pause.]

(More details needed.)

the little house si... [erased.] was set apart from all its  
neighbors. [Pause.] it was almost the only trip we took to-

769. The brief characterization of the two methods of communicating describes just what goes on with Mrs. Chenoweth, but not both of them with Mrs. Smead, so far as appearances go, except in her visions. Mrs. Chenoweth gets messages through the subconscious as well as through automatic writing, and often better, and sometimes she can get them through the normal, possibly as post-hypnotic suggestions made to the subconscious. If this be true the use of the word "suggestions" by the communicator or control is very pertinent, and more so as coming from Dr. Hodgson.

It is also especially pertinent to have the same communicator allude to the method of communicating by contact with the brain of the medium, as there is here a very definite suggestion or outline of Dr. Hodgson's "pos-

gether [Long pause.] you could follow this [then wavy line drawn across the page.] [Long pause.] it was in the A. mountains H. ['h' written and then line to convert it into a capital.] [Pause.] and we never had [first read 'were' and second 'ha a'.] we never had another chance to visit each other or together I mean for rest.

(Go on.) [Thinking of a University friend.]

You did not agree with me on the rest part of my trip and said we ought always to keep busy.

(Go on.)

yes then I left you there and went farther north yes before returning [not read.] to Boston ... returning to... yes. After that I only saw you occasion... [delay in reading.] on ... [read.] yes.

(Yes.)

mostly when you came to me [pencil fixed.] [Pause.]

(Yes, did we climb a mountain?) [Thinking of my University friend.]

in the morning and I was fond of the lake though I did not stay long

(Yes . . . . .) [Thinking of an incident with my friend.]

and I was just a going to tell you about how you would insist on believing we could not talk to those that had passed into unconsciousness [Pause and scrawls.] did not think it could be possible.

(Who thought it was not possible to talk with the dead?)

you did. I did not mo... much more than you but was just

---

session" theory. The allusion also a little later to "concentrating all the energy on the writing portion of the brain" is reminiscent of the statement of G. P. through Mrs. Piper that they used different parts of the nervous system. The use of the term "mechanism" is also significant of the same communicator, as it was his mode of expression sometimes, tho perhaps as frequently using the term "organism" in life. But throughout there are characteristics of Dr. Hodgson here that would involve a very minute acquaintance with his style of thought and expression, which acquaintance Mrs. Smead has not obtained by reading, tho conversation with Mr. Smead may have transferred these two terms to her knowledge casually. But the definite knowledge that would manifest the distinctions implied in this whole narrative is more than she would casually obtain and even Mr. Smead has not shown in his conversations with me any such knowledge of the phenomena.

beginning to see there was something supernatural to the [pause.] working of the unconscious mind [sort of dots made in a line.] but for science *we* agreed to hold it back. u u. d.

(I understand, but I am not sure yet who it is that is communicating.) [Note 770.]

770. There is a good deal of confusion in this account of the house and a trip in the mountains. It ends in messages from Dr. Hodgson that related to his stay in the same mountains, and many of the incidents are suggestive of him rather than another, but at the same time so many are not at all suggestive of him in detail that there is no sure way of unravelling the confusion. I can only tell the facts.

Dr. Hodgson used to spend some of his vacations at Putnam's Camp in the Adirondacks, and the houses there were about as described here, namely, very much in need of paint. The locality of the house is accurately enough indicated. And there were "berry pastures" near by and dense woods were all about it. We never took a trip together but had plenty of chances and did see each other often afterward, save for the last visit I paid him there. The allusion to differences about work and rest does not fit any knowledge he had of my habits, tho he always insisted on doing no work while I did in my vacations. I know of no occasion when he "went farther north". Returning to Boston would be correct.

The other person suggested, the university friend whom I had in mind from some of the incidents, is also not clearly indicated. He spent the summer on a lake and came to see me and we climbed a mountain together. I am not sure what house is meant by the one indicated here. If it should refer to his own summer cottage I cannot tell anything about it, as I never saw it. The account, however, does not fit the place in which I was staying. It was on the side of a mountain. That of my friend, I know, was not on a mountain side and it is extremely probable that berry pastures were all about it, while the forests were at a considerable distance, there being little woods immediately about in that locality, as it was a farming region.

The reference to the trip is the first significant incident which I know. We had once before travelled together to the Adirondacks, but the trip possibly meant here was a mountain climb, which was as much suggested by the statement that "we never had another chance to visit each other or together" for a rest as by the allusion to the Adirondack mountains. I cannot at present tell the details of this trip because certain incidents are connected with it that would absolutely prove the identity of the person and I wish to withhold them at present. If I am right as to the person communicating he came very near telling the incident in the allusion to our differences about work and rest, and I must refrain from details. This friend did go farther north after leaving me, but I do not know whether he went to Boston. But it is true that we saw each other after that only on occasion and I always went to him. It was in the morning that we climbed the mountain and an incident was connected with the lake on that climb.

[Pause.] you think me H. 3. [read 'H. S.' thinking of Sidgwick.] but not so.

(No, I did not think it was H. S.)

H. 3. H. 3. [written while I was writing my statement.] [It is the abbreviation used in this case for Mr. Hall, my father-in-law who had also been in the mountains with me.]

(No, I did not think it was H. three. I thought of . . . .) [had in mind to say 'an old University friend'.]

never mind I am an early [read 'earthly' and on dissent read 'early'.] yes investigator.

(All right. Go on, I may recall just who you are as you proceed.) [Note 771.]

[Long pause.] Then . . . [pause and scrawls.] I ask you about that key [delay in reading.] yes to my room. did they find it H.

---

He stayed only two days on the trip. We talked long on psychic research in this climb. I certainly could not have taken the position asserted of me here. It was after I had my sittings with Mrs. Piper and was convinced of spirit return. He was the one that was sceptical on that occasion, but open minded and sympathetic. I defended the possibility of communication and he was sceptical of its possibility. He was beginning to see that there was something in it and it became clear afterward that he was very much convinced, tho not avowing it. He did hold back his opinion, but I did not tho always manifesting due conservatism in discussion.

I needed the name to complete the identity and to assure me that it was not Dr. Hodgson who was meant, especially as incidents in the common lives of Dr. Hodgson and myself coincide with those of myself and friend, and Dr. Hodgson himself soon takes up the cue, so to speak, and the result is a doubt about the presence of my friend in proportion to the strength of the case for that of Dr. Hodgson.

771. There is evidently no telepathy here, as I was not thinking of my father-in-law, who had been with me several times in the Adirondacks. It was a point in favor of my conjecture that it was said the friend in mind was not he. This, however, would also be true if it were Dr. Hodgson, but there should have been no such trouble with the name if Dr. Hodgson had been meant, as his name comes easily enough, and the "never mind" had been indication that the name could not be given at once. The reference to an early investigator would fit my friend as well as Dr. Hodgson, tho at this time there was no excuse for referring to him in this manner. My friend had become interested in the subject while in college and remained interested for the rest of his life, becoming a member of the new Society.

(Who find it?) [Thinking of same incident in connection with Prof. James through two other lights.]

the Lady at the house where I kept my few earthly belongings. I was sorry to have misplaced it and it has troubled [read 'haunted'] me at... troubled ... at times to remember where I left it. I thought I put it under the Hall rug [read 'way'] rug. don't you remember I came to the City to go with you on my trip.

(I do not yet know who you are.)

I cannot get the Identity idea away from me when you are near.

(That is right and .....)

it is what we always agreed yes upon proving it you u. d. yes.

(I understand, and when I am sure who it is I can answer questions.)

I gave up my having my a home of my own for the cause of science. Every one thought I was of the oppinion [opinion] that I could not get married but it was not so. I could not ask one to share what [not read.] I ... what I had as it was so meager. So u will u. d. that I gave up all because I knew I could not pay the expenses of 2 [two] S. P. S. R. ['P' superposed on first 'S' erasing it.]

(Yes, is this ..... ) [Thinking of Dr. Hodgson.]

never mind yet. I will tell you.

(All right.)

yes. She had enough for both but I could not excep... [pencil ran off page and I read 'expect'] except [accept] charity and love combined yes. I know u know me now.

(I think it .....)

yes but it was hard to endure [read 'induce'] but ... endure ... but better so well [?] Hyslop \* \* [possibly scrawl for 'will'] and will you tell her [not read.] so... her so. yes. She is still living near Boston. [Pause.]

it is almost impossible to go on further now. So I will stop.

(I understand.) [Note 772.]

772. The long pause here gave a chance for a change of communicator and as Dr. Hodgson undoubtedly is meant by the rest of the passage relating to the Adirondacks he may have been in control all the time and in communicating for another may have intermingled some of his memories with

and we will come in better condition after the Sabath [Sabath.]

(I understand.)

R. Hodgson yes. (Thanks.)

[Change of Control.]

James son I canot [cannot] come to stay like I did but help and watch for opportunities to aid. R. H.

After recovery Mrs. Smead remarked that she saw four lights as she returned and an unrecognized man with back to the window.

She complained of a headache and I held my hand on her forehead and she was going to sleep when she resisted it and said I was hypnotizing her. I said I was not and asked her to go to sleep. I held one hand on back of her head and the other on the forehead. She was soon in the trance again

---

those of my friend. That would account for the reference to Boston, if it did not apply to my friend.

The incidents that identify Dr. Hodgson beyond mistake are those relating to the key and to the episode about his matrimonial intentions. The key incident was this. He had lost some keys and could not find them anywhere after his return home. His housekeeper was involved in the interrogation and the keys were alluded to through Mrs. Piper and the place where they would be found somewhat described. They were afterwards found in the Adirondacks. This episode was described in his Report (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. VIII, pp. 21, 64). It was not the lady of the house in which he lived that found the keys. He did not come to the city to go with me on a trip, but he did intend, after my last visit to him in the mountains, to come to the city to see me. I did not recognize this key incident at the time and hence my own confusion as to who was meant, especially as I was not yet clear of the apperceptions about my university friend.

The "Huldah episode" however, which the next one is, made the case clear. The Report of Professor James on the incident explains it. The Smeads knew all about this and an evidential point cannot be made of it. Dr. Hodgson had proposed to a lady and was refused. Whether the grounds of refusal were what they are stated here to be I do not know but the characteristics of Dr. Hodgson's devotion to the work are correct.

I know nothing about the lady's financial condition, but I believe the lady did not live in or near Boston, tho it may be that the exigency of concealing her identity may have led to indicating that she lived in another city. She is still living I believe. But the Smeads knew or believed as much from their correspondence with Professor James about it.

and I left her quietly. Her left hand moved occasionally and once went through the act of writing. After she awakened spontaneously she said she saw the same man she saw at the window with white straw hat, broad black band, straight rim and flat top. Hodgson said to tell me that Frank Podmore would tell about that subject Monday.

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 5th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

We are coming nearer Hyslop friend. [Hand then moved to right side of pad and wrote from right to left in mirror writing the following sentence.] we will come back.

(That is mirror writing and I shall have to read it later.)

[Pause and then normal writing.] did u [you] hear us say we [read 'my' at time.] we would be back again soon.

(No, but I got it now.)

[Pause.] all right. [Long pause and then dots in a line and another pause. I held hand a few moments to stop trembling.] we are waiting H. [Pause.]

(Yes I understand.)

[Pause.] He is [read 'H is'] not always Punctual [not read at time.] [Pause.] He is not always punctual yes that is what I said.

(I understand.)

yes. had to send for him [None of it read at time.]

(I can't read it.)

had to send for him ... had yes [read 'hard' first time and also this time tho doubtfully,] no h... [suddenly read.] yes yes. [Pause.] no reason for his delay ... no [to reading of 'no' as 'the'.] on our side. [Pause.] no. [Long pause and scrawls.]

\* \* will. I will greet [read 'go to'.] him at once. [Pause.] good morning H. [Pause.] I said I would greet thee at once.

(Good, my greetings to you.)

yes and now I will to work yes. [Pause.] and try to help you understand better what I have already said, yes, about James's idea when we were there. I told you I did not agree with everything having [superposing and not all read. Pencil broke and new one inserted.] everything having a SOUL ['L' not clearly made and corrected by making a small 'l'.] [Pause.]

as it is sometimes spoken of yes, but when we come here and find so many just living, yes, on and on as if still of the earth you see it as we do.

(I understand.)

[pause.] sort of an attraction yes or compelling force keeping them down in darkness [sheet changed.] darkness [pause.] still remembering only their earth life and the use of which they made it and by so doing they can the better remember incidents connected with the articles and the souls.

(I understand. Go on.) [Note 773.]

so when it is (the article) [parentheses inserted by automatist.] taken and placed as one of my ex \* [erased] many experiments on the head [read 'hand' first and then 'head'] yes head or in the hand of a Sensitive it is easier that events connected [pencil ran off pad and wrote 'ed' on table.] with same be given and be called only Earth memories.

(I understand.)

not nec [pause.] ecissary [necessary] that a soul be over on our side. often it is on your side of life but in either [read 'other'.] case ... it is not of nec ... [erased.] necessity a spirit at all. [Pause.] Just that the sensitive has has a power to see the events connected with it (the article) [parentheses inserted by automatist.]

(Are the events stamped on the article?)

if you wish to call it so. Every Soul leaves some connected link with all it comes in contact with either to help or hinder the progress of the soul.

(That might mean that we could not prove the existence of spirit.)

no not so. not so. [Pause.] Just as I told you do not let it

773. While Professor James did not express any belief in "everything having a soul" he alluded to such a possibility among the hypotheses which had to be considered, but Mr. Podmore had no temperament for this and I do not recall a statement in his works that would lead him to be as tolerant of possibilities in this direction as Professor James. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of the facts that make this passage pertinent.

Nor does she know enough about historical spiritualism to have made the remarks about spirits in darkness and their relation to communications. She may have derived sufficient knowledge, however, from her own experiences to hold these views.

(the article) [parentheses inserted as before.] come into personal contact with the sensitive if you desire it [?] the best proffs [erased, tho read 'proofs'.] proof of personal identity. cannot you see the logic of my statement H.

(I see the logic of it, but I do not see the truth of it at all.)

why not as I do. [Pause.] cannot you see if you let it be handled or touched there is likely more chance of guessing [not read.] of guessing [pause.] and [pause.] if a word is dopped [dropped] in the affirmative it will help encourage fraud, yes.

(I understand.)

and where some have a personal gift, other do... yes [to reading of 'personal' which was delayed.] others do not but get good results from making a "hit" [quotations inserted by automatist.] yes.

(Good.) [Note 774.]

and we have agreed here that it is best scine ... Scientific proof where the articles do not touch another person or is seen [written 'see \*' and 'en' written over.] by them [read 'their' and erased.] them than your prof [proof] of us is almost [read 'most', doubtfully.] perfectly assured yes. [Pause.] that is what we are to aim [not read at time and so not rewritten.] for now perfect personal identity.

(I understand perfectly.)

alone connected with the soul that is at the time talking to you or any other of our Scientific circles yes. [Pause.] do you not see the value [read 'nature'] of it ... value. [pause.] that it be so.

774. The discussion of articles is a rehash of what came before from the same communicator (p. 837). But the expression: "If a word is dropped in the affirmative it will help encourage fraud", is quite accurate for the position of Mr. Podmore, as he made all he could out of that objection to the evidence for the spiritistic theory, and Mrs. Smead probably does not know this fact, and I hardly think her well enough acquainted with the phenomena of hints and suggestions to express herself in this way, especially in using the word "affirmative" in this manner. But my opinion on that point will not make the incident evidential. It is also very characteristic for the word "hit" to be put in Mr. Podmore's mouth. He used it in life tho Dr. Hodgson also used it and the inserted quotation marks may be an indication of his presence and influence, as well as the desire to make a point of the word which is not familiar to the habits of Mrs. Smead in her speech.

(No, but go on and give evidence of your identity.)

[Pause.] you have not as yet ascertained what I have all read [already] given.

(It is not evidence to me of the identity of any one.)

[Long pause.] I could tell you \* \* The Light of H. could do nothing be... beyond [only part of sentence legible at time.] no That we found the Light of H. after he came here was to us [not read.] us nothing as he had given us to u. d. [not read.] understand.

(Why, what was the difficulty and difference to you after his death?)

[Pause.] \* \* would in so many cases have to place the articles in the hand to get better results [pause.] and the incidents of H's presences was fet [felt] by us all we did not get as much [pause.] supernatural evidence as we were given to believe we should from his reports of the case.

(I understand.) [Note 775.]

was what we could term a fizzle [fizzle]. H. has since told me he could not control there.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] impossible [pause.] and what he did say was through [read 'thought'] another ... *through* another yes.

(That is .....) [intended to make a reference to the subliminal.]

not H's personality talking there yes.

(Whose personality was talking?)

[Pause.] Sometimes one or Sometimes another for him. The whole group [group] changed at his entrance to this life.

(Good.)

and hence not results as we expected.

(Did the knowledge of the light affect it?)

somewhat but not much. it was because of the work he had done there and found it was not possible to control on this side as he had on yours.

(Good.)

was not able to from what you would call on your side mental

---

775. This is a revival of the psychometry incidents related to Mrs. Holmes. Cf. Note 768.

[pause.] ly [pause.] able \* \* a mental conti. . . . condition [read contradiction.] no [read 'condition'.] to take control [pause,] yes. [Pause.] and it is often so. [Pause.] one that is a good conductor of experiments cannot do so readily [readily, and thus read.] here. . . as readily h. . . [some of it superposed and hence read 'so readily'.] as read . . . [suddenly read.] yes here. [Pause.] and he wanted to control at first but found his condition would not permit him to yes do so lest he become Earth bound or bound to one light alone.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] and so he did his talking there through others. [Pencil then tapped on table at left side of pad.] the light is now almost beyond use for us.

(Good, I understand.)

yes and so we would tell you to try what we said about the first way for personal identity in the future.

(Yes.) [Note 776.]

yes and it was well for you u [you] did not take up the control there in H's place. [Pause.] her ch. . . personal feelings so much [not read at time.] enter in . . . Enter so much now into the communications that they ['y' made at time so that it made

776. It was the opinion of Mr. Podmore that the Piper experiments after the death of Dr. Hodgson were, if not "fizzles", inferior to previous sittings and perhaps none would dispute this. The reason assigned for it that Dr. Hodgson could not control there, if interpreted by the later allusion, that this control was "mental", is interesting. It indicates what is true and also what Mrs. Smead did not know and could not conjecture from her little knowledge of the subject, that it was his influence on the normal consciousness of Mrs. Piper affecting her attitude toward the subject and sittings, that determined the character of the results. This I believe to have been true and it was the fatal mistake of Mrs. Piper after his death to have taken the affair largely into her own hands and that caused deterioration in the results. I think all who know anything about this complicated problem would admit this to be true, or at least possible.

It is possible, however, that the allusion to "mental conditions" affecting control is to those in himself after death, in which case the interpretation mentioned is not so well assured. But the danger of being "earthbound" is an idea that Mrs. Smead is not familiar with and it may explain much in the failure of his attempt to prove his identity through Mrs. Piper and others and the fact that he had to receive so much aid on the "other side" to prevent the on-coming of the earth-bound condition.

me think it was a capital 'G' for 'Group' and so read.] are colored by the.... they ... them, yes.

(I understand. Have you tried .....) [Intended to say 'elsewhere'.]

yes yes.

(Tell us about that.)

yes yes.

(Only when you can.)

[Long pause.] not this time.

(All right. Go on.) [Note 777.]

do you think my identity assured now. I have known her personally and did not like to think hodgson had wassted [read 'washed'] waisted [wasted] so much time & patience on her as to believe it a perfect case [pause.] yes and [erased.] of Spirit possession [possession] [read before rewritten, but delayed.] possession [possession] that was not to be bettered [read 'believed'.] no bettered and we tried our level best to kep [keep] quiet while holding experiments and the spirits did likewise.

(I understand.) [Note 778.]

777. This allusion to the personal feelings of Mrs. Piper toward me is a correct incident, as she decidedly objected to my taking charge of the sittings, and it is also true that her subconsciousness entered more into the communications to color them after Dr. Hodgson's death than before. Neither of these facts were known to Mr. and Mrs. Smead, unless I may have casually dropped enough in conversation for them to infer it. But I do not recall doing so. I do know that I was extremely cautious about saying what I knew regarding the situation and certainly had said nothing about the influence of her subliminal, tho an incident in my last Report in Mr. Smead's possession might suffice to give information on this point. In regard to Mrs. Piper's attitude toward me I did not myself learn this until after I had last seen the Smeads.

778. It is probable that Mr. Podmore knew Mrs. Piper personally, as she had been in England twice for a considerable period and sat for many of the members such as he and made the acquaintance of many more. The allusion to the "possession" theory is a pertinent reference, as this was Dr. Hodgson's view of the case. I never heard the Smeads allude to communications in these terms and I doubt much their acquaintance with the specific conceptions and distinctions denoted by the term in the usage of Dr. Hodgson. But perhaps we cannot be certain of this. Trying to keep quiet, however, is a better incident. The Smeads did not know that Dr. Hodgson had insisted, to the English group of experimenters, that the communicator should not be badgered with questions too frequently or persistently, but that he

for our experiments failed [written 'faldied', the 'ed' added after a pause on writing 'fald'.] [Pause.] Well H. says I must go.

(You have done well.)

and will beg the privilege [privilege] to try again.

(I shall welcome you.)

F. Podmore. [Pause for some moments.]

[Change of Control.]

Hyslop R. Hodgs... [so read and erased.] R. Hdgs \* \* [on] [evidently intended to write 'R. Hyslop'.] R. Hodgson.

(Thanks.)

and F. Myers also to be thanked this time.

(Yes.)

Myers is a good soul H. [not read at first.] a good yes. \* \* [scrawls.]

After Mrs. Smead recovered normal consciousness she indicated what she saw by asking me what an old fashioned English A meant.

A few minutes later she described a man she saw in a dream last night. After the storm a man called for me to go with him. Her son George got the horse and buggy for us. The man was as tall as I am, had gray in his hair, whiskers and mustache sprinkled with gray, blue eyes, soft felt hat of dark blue and touched in at the crown. He wore a dark blue suit. She thought we went eight or ten miles and returned in half an hour, and the dream ended by answering Mr. Smead that I had gone for gasoline.

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 6th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* [scrawls for 'comin'] [Pause.] we are coming coming nearer. [Long pause.] good morning friend.

(Good morning.)

---

should be allowed to tell his story. There is evidence in the records that they did "keep quiet" more than previously, and that "the spirits did likewise" is a fine illustration of Mr. Podmore's humor in such situations. Mrs. Smead could not know this characteristic of him.

we greet thee [pause.] all greet the [thee]

(Thank you. My greetings to all.)

[Long pause and trembling of hand in which some illegible letters were made. Among them is apparently the letter J or I.]

yes [Long pause.] \* \* likewise greets thee.

(Who?)

yes [pause.] \* \* ['T' or 'Y'.] [pause.] E. \* \* \*

(Cross, Imperator.)

Y e s is ah. [Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

did they find my letter Hyslop friend.

(I do not yet know. Say all you can about it.) [W. James in mind.]

[Pause.] I told son to give what I would desire to give to help out this cause of Science.

(I understand.)

yes and will be much grieved if it is not given as it will necessitate my working more to help that cause or part of it here.

(What letter was that?)

[Pause.] documentary [not read, but stumbled at doubtfully to have it rewritten.] one ... no. [Suddenly read.] yes. yes [Pause.] Specially interesting to me. wanted to help [read 'paper'] continue ... hepp [erased.] in interest. [Pause.] did he not tell you of it yet.

(No I have not found the existence of such a letter but if you give the contents it will be found, I have no doubt.)

[Long pause.] was [pause.] an adition [addition] to one already written and pigeoned [pigeon] holed for convenience [read 'communica'] [Pause.] convenience yes. [Pause.] did they look [pause.] (For it?) [pause.] in the special papers.

(I do not yet know but would be glad ....)

it takes time over there.

(Yes I understand.)

[Pause.] Tell Will [not read tho suspecting it intended for 'Will'] to hunt it hunt it up he will find it.

('Tell' what?)

Will my boy yes.

(Where?)

[Pause.] yes. [Pause.] with the Special papers.

(All right.) [Note 779.]

[Pause.] it was an addition [addition] a m to a special request.

(Who made that special request?)

Hodgson. hodgson, yes always asking how [not read.] we could continue without the aid of proper funds ... how we could... [passage then correctly read.] yes.

(All right. Go on.)

and so I wrote this little note to show my willingness to help and wanted it given at once before as Hodgson said it would have to be disbanded yes. and it is so important not [or 'but'] [erased.] to continue. I wanted to help the finances because I was not able pibically [physically] [read 'publicly'.] no. phys.... [read.] yes ically to aid in the ['aid' not read.] aid in the experiments.

(Good. Go ahead.) [Note 780.]

779. I have had many references to a letter purporting to come from Professor James and inquiry proved that no one knew of any posthumous letter having been written by him. The sequel here shows what may have been meant all along. "Documentary one" is a pertinent word to be used, tho I do not know that it would be characteristic of Professor James. "Pigeonholed for convenience" is also good, but not evidential perhaps.

Professor James had a son Will or William, and inquiry proved that Mrs. Smead did not know the fact. He, however, is not the son that Professor James would most naturally mention for a service of this kind and he did not mention him through Mrs. Chenoweth.

780. This long passage possibly makes clear what letter was meant all along, and in other cases as well as Mrs. Smead. It was the allusion to disbanding the Society and helping it financially that brought the letter to my mind and then the whole message became clear. The facts are these.

After Dr. Hodgson's death a large part of his material was turned over to me and in some of the debris of his office I found a circular letter which had been sent out to members asking for funds and showing that the work would have to be abandoned unless a fixed sum was guaranteed for it. I should not have remembered the letter but for one provision in it. The letter expressly limited the donation to the personal service of Dr. Hodgson. That is, it was to be signed and certain amounts given, amount fixed by the donor, on the condition that Dr. Hodgson was to be the Secretary and only so long as he remained this. I was struck with the oddity of this, assuming that he had himself gotten up the letter. But here we have the possible solution of this. The letter never came to me, but it was prepared as if

I would have so much enjoyed it but my [Pause.] Heart would trouble me and I was afraid to let the others know for fear it would frighten them. [Pause.] they did not think it was my heart in the end [not read as is was partly superposed.] end but I thought it was best not to tell.

(I understand. Tell your story as you are able.)

[Pause.] it was a long period [pause.] of time. [pause.] Sometimes. it would [pause.] seem as [pause.] if it would break [pause due to difficulty in changing sheet and fixing pad,] as my breath woul[d] be so short in coming.

(Good, I understand that, and so will the friends.)

[Pause.] so I was not able to continue my work as teacher for so long a time. I just keep [kept] the position in or because of my name and influence. (Yes.) yes [Long pause.]

I would I come nearer [words so read.] could come nearer to the home [letters seem 'monie' and read so.] place. I would ... home ... with you [Pause.] I think we could find it.

(Yes, I think so, and I shall now know what to inquire for as the letter is clearer than it has been.)

[Long pause.] Takes me longer to remember now and were we nearer the [so read.] them I could tell it clearer. [Note 781.]

---

some one else than Dr. Hodgson had written it. Mrs. Smead could not have known anything about the facts and I never knew them myself until I saw this letter and then did not know who was responsible for it. All I ever knew was that a certain person known by Dr. Hodgson and myself had failed to keep a promise made to pay so much money yearly to the support of the work. That others had promised it I did not know.

Inquiry, however, of Miss Edmunds, Dr. Hodgson's Secretary, resulted in the information that it was not Professor James that prepared or sent out this letter. It was a gentleman out west. But a reply to an inquiry of one of the persons who was a possible donor to that fund brought me the information that Professor James had written and sent out a letter to have the debts of the Society paid after Dr. Hodgson's death. The Society was then disbanded or dissolved and the new one, the present American Society, organized.

Apparently there are two incidents confused together here. Mr. and Mrs. Smead knowing neither of them.

781. The reference to heart trouble is pertinent to Professor James and it was probably not known by Mrs. Smead. She certainly did not know anything about the trouble with his breathing that characterized his last illness especially. How much she may have known about the retention of his con-

(Yes.) [Pause.] (Do you remember what you promised to try to say here? a special message?)

[Long pause.] I ko ... \* \* y [all superposed but a few circles were made.] time to give it could only come in the proper order. (All right.) when It is crowded we I cannot [cannot] remember clearly.

(I understand and can let you take your time for it.)

[Pause.] did I not have [read 'hear'] a ... have ... The sign.

(Yes give it.)

[Omega, last letter of the Greek alphabet, drawn twice with a cross in the second one.]

(That is excellent.)

[Omega with the cross in it drawn again.]

yes and by it you will always know me.

(Perfectly.)

It was I that came with F.

(Yes, good.) [Note 782.]

told him about get it ing [written above 'it'] it through first. did you receive us together.

(Yes.)

yes [pause.] tell tell my son to come not to lose in ... interest in my special work. (Yes.) he will know how glad I was to have him with [with] me when I left over there.

(Yes I understand.)

it is getting cold here ['h' written and then a pause when it was finished by writing 'ere' over it.] do you know my head feels so strange.

(I can understand.)

---

nection with Harvard as Emeritus Professor cannot be determined, but she seems to have known absolutely nothing about it.

782. This sign Omega had appeared first through Mrs. Smead before even Mr. Smead knew anything about it or even recognized it in the automatic writing. Cf. p. 132. Then it appeared in a vision recorded above where both knew it but did not know its meaning. Cf. p. 822. Then later it came through Mrs. Chenoweth. Cf. p. 157. But the most important part of the message at this point is the spontaneous claim of the sign for himself and that it was he that came with F., evidently referring to Mr. Podmore. Cf. p. 822, where both their symbols are mentioned.

cold yes. [Pause.] H. says I better go for I might find it difficult. I do not want to.

(I understand. Do what is best. You have done well to-day.)

we have more trouble as the time [read 'trance'] no time passes after coming here. do u u. d.

(Yes, perfectly.)

yes and I have so many times thought of our [read 'one'] our mistaken views of the whole problem when [read 'where'] we began ... when ... yes in the early days yes. [Pause.] before you joined [read 'found'] joined in our experiments. it was more with some a case cause [written over 'case' to correct.] of amusement [pause.] for amusement wih [with] some. [Pause.] do you know that phi .... little frenchman has not yet put in his appearance to me.

(No, that's good.)

no I think we will have some interesting talks [superposed and not read.] interesting talks.

(I hope so and you can report them.)

yes. [Pause.] I certainly will if it is possible yes. I will try to find out why he was so stubborn yes persistent in having it as he wished. he may try to go back to the light now that we are not using it yes.

(I understand.) [Note 783.]

[Pause.] H. friend when you go leave me a little influence to help when I come with new friends. (All right.) it will aid me. aid [not read first time.] yes. and keep my light clearer. yes. They told me to talk today and let the other friend rest.

(Yes I understand. I hoped you would do so and you have .....

we are all so desirous of aiding [aiding] our one [read

783. It is true that experiments in the earlier days, before I came to the subject and before Dr. Hodgson made it a serious business, were more of an amusement. Many who went to the Piper case at first had no intention of scientifically proving survival, and Phinuit, the "little Frenchman" here alluded to and familiar to Professor James in the early days, did not encourage seriousness by his methods. Mrs. Smead did not know the facts which make the views expressed here so relevant to the communicator. Phinuit was stubborn about having things done as he desired and that too was not known by the Smeads.

'our' great cause ... one great cause and cannot all do so at once.

(I understand.) [Note 784.]

[Pause.] Well I will go now and let H. Close. yes. William James. [followed by letter Omega with sign of cross on it.] yes. [Pause.]

[Change of Control.]

we do not give *them* for each other Hyslop friend.

(I understand.)

and so when you asked the new friend who gave it he was not at liberty [not read.] liberty to tell.

(I understand.)

yes, H. remember we all have our individuality [individuality] here.

(Yes.)

yes and are glad to find it [read 'u'] so... it yes. [Pause.] Sometimes when we come together we each give a word and it gets through before we wish it to. So you may think it is the the [written over first instance, because not read.] one ... the one talking giving it

(I understand.)

and hence you would think it a case of mistaken identity and we are trying to avoid all such.

(That's good.) [Note 785.]

---

784. It is curious to see the request to leave an article. The Smeads already had one and Mrs. Smead knew of its presence well enough in her normal state.

785. This further explanation of the failure to have Professor James' name given when I asked for his sign while Mr. Podmore was communicating is relevant and rational. Apparently it was designed to forewarn me, as well as to explain the confusion. It is especially interesting in the light of the fact that I had concealed the meaning of the sign from the Smeads and its association with that of Mr. Podmore might have suggested his name to her subconsciousness, as it seems to have done when "that fellow Podmore" was alluded to as the sponser (p. 829). But the spontaneous correction and explanation of the liability to mistaken identity cleared the matter and also manifested more scientific and characteristic an incident than is natural for Mrs. Smead, tho conceivably possible. The best part of it, however, is the latent knowledge of the liabilities in communications associated with the

well I will wait [not read at time.] again and the mong  
[‘ morning ’ erased.] until the morrow.

(Good.)

yes so good morning friend hyslop. R. Hodgson \* \* [scrawl.]  
+ came to help first [?] and give his blessing.

(Thanks, I asked.) [Mental request only for Imperator after  
we sat down for the séance.]

As soon as Mrs. Smead recovered she remarked that she saw a lot of Hebrew letters in a vertical line. She was asked to draw what she saw and she did so. Mr. Smead then secured a Hebrew grammar and asked her to point out the letters she saw and she pointed out Samech and Aleph, the symbols for S and A. She remarked that she saw the letter A over Aleph. Her drawings made before the selection represented the two letters. [Note 786.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H. June 7th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* soon get it. [merely legible.] Yes we will soo[n] get it. [Pause.] We are coming friend coming nearer to you yes. [Pause.]

There is that mountain looks like snow all over yes. it is only [sheet changed.] only a short distance from our house very [not read.] white at the top yes . . . very wes [yes] [Long pause.]

I could do no mental work while there H.

(All right. Go on.)

you know that troubled me. [Pause.] \* \* [lines like a capital ‘ U ’ but superposed on each other and probably served for ‘ W ’ when the writing began.] [W]e were nearer to that mountain than you. [Pause.] I was glad to have you talk wih [with] me during my sojourn there yes you know.

possibility of unconscious impersonation, all of which Mrs. Smead knows nothing about, and Mr. Smead too for that matter.

786. Dr. Hodgson when living had evidence of Hebrew through Mrs. Piper and the Smeads probably knew this fact. It is indicated in the reference to the “ prophet of the olden dispensation ” (p. 857).

(Yes.) [Note 787.]

[Pause.] you can recognize [pause.] the truth of my promise now. its fulfillment. [Pause.] please tell my son I have kept it that he may know and realize the value of a spiritual life yes. (Yes.) he will tell the others for me. [Long pause, and hand scrawled across the page and back to the left with another pause.]

Everything is mixed up when I try to remember clearly where I lived then. [Pause.] I want to tell about the city place H. [small 'h' made and then stroke for capital.] near where son lives yes.

(Yes, take your time.)

it was there where [read 'when'] I ... where I wrote it. and put it in a plac[e].

(What did you put there?)

letter.

(Good, I thought so, but I wanted to see it on the paper.)

if I was only near I could find it yes.

(In what room was it?)

Library yes. [Pause.] cannot recall just which box. [Note 788.]

(All right.) [Pause.] (Whose picture was in that room?) [Hodgson's in mind, mentioned through another psychic.]

---

787. The allusion here to "that mountain" looking like snow is evidently to Chocorua mountain at the foot of which Professor James had his summer home. It is a bare peak and the resemblance to snow capped mountains is noticeable, but, of course, not a marked resemblance. Mr. Smead knew that he died there: Mrs. Smead also. But she thought his summer home was in California, having known nothing about his whereabouts since the story of the "nigger talk" which associated him with California. But Mrs. Smead herself had lived within eighteen or twenty miles of Chocorua.

Professor James was unable to do any mental work after his return from Nauheim. He was nearer that mountain than I and from what the Smeads knew of my summer place this circumstance cannot be emphasized. But I did not talk with him there. I stopped there on my way to Chocorua mountain to see him but found him unable to see me. The Smeads did not know this fact, so that the allusion could not have been due to knowledge, whatever place may be assigned to guessing.

788. There was a reference to a box through Miss Burton associated with the name of Professor James (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V, p. 618) Cf. present Report pp. 147, 182, 187.

[Pause.] in the frame did you mean

(I do not know whether framed or not.)

[Pause.] on the wall. [Pause.] I had severall [several] in the [with, and so read.] the books yes. [Pause.]

(There was a . . . .) [Thinking of Hodgson's.]

one [pause.] of each of us. [Pause.]

(There was one of a special person that you mentioned at another light.)

[Pause and scrawls when Mr. Smead rang telephone. After moment's disturbance from it the hand went on.]

cannot remember just now but I said I had one of each of us.

[Pause.] Hedgson's [Hodgson's] myself [myself] too.

(Good.)

and one one of [written over 'one'] you [read 'my'] you.

[Pause.] Photos like [pause.] of some others. had to have mine taken you know to please the family.

(I understand.)

it was not that I cared to mentioned [attempt to erase last part.] mention it here as I was so clearly seen. had to at the other place speak of it.

(All right.) [Note 789.]

not necessary to tel [tell] it here I said. do u u. d. me.

(Yes, I thought . . . .)

made myself seen here yes and was pleased to have the power of doing so. by [read 'try'] it I myself. . . no [to reading of 'by'] rea. . . [attempt to erase all before.] by it I myself could realize that I was still a living soul.

(Yes.)

---

789. This is an interesting passage. Professor James mentioned a picture of Dr. Hodgson through Mrs. Chenoweth and said it was in the library. Inquiry proved this to be true (p. 212). Whether there is one of himself there or not I do not know. But the Smeads neither knew that Professor James had such a picture of Dr. Hodgson nor knew that it had been mentioned through Mrs. Chenoweth.

[Later inquiry resulted in the fact that, for a short time, Professor James had a portrait of himself standing in his library. It was made for some institution and was not his own property. Mrs. Smead could not have known this.]

and not an unrecon i. . . . [pause and I read it as spelled.]  
unrecognizable light

(I understand.)

but could even after leaving the earth body I still had something about me that could be seen and know [pause and read 'known'] yes by the friends of earth yes.

(Yes, I understand.)

I did not believe it was possible when I was there but took your suggestion H. and tried it [pause.] to make myself known. [Note 790.]

(Has any one at your home felt your presence?)

[Pause.] if they were to look more clearly they too could see me there. I have tried to try to [pause.] get them to be willing and was afraid they could never see me. you know h. H. [superposed on 'h'] it is hard for them to realize the possibility of my really [really] communicating yes.

(Yes.)

I have on so many [read 'summary' after much delay.] different times tried . . . so m . . . ['so many' read.] yes. [Note 791.]

(Do you remember ever discussing the unseen and the . . . .?)

unseen and thee [the] possibilities of its truth or being true that the unseen could be made know[n] and . . .

(Yes and do you recall discussing the consciousness of presence?)

yes and it is a fact now. I have found it to be so. [Pause.]

(Yes, who told you the three experiences of it?)

\* \* [scrawls and illegible attempts at writing.] [Pause and hand came over toward me, as if indicating that it was I.]

(Not I.)

[Pause.] I felt it but could not conc . . . sent [superposed erasing 'c'] to it.

---

790. The allusion here is apparently to Mrs. Smead's apparition of the communicator before she learned of his death (p. 95). The sceptical attitude indicated regarding apparitions is correct, but I do not know what he actually thought about it. I made no suggestions to him to try it.

791. Inquiry of the family shows that no apparition or consciousness of presence has been experienced there.

(Yes, but a friend told you three of them and you did not give his name in the book. Can you tell who that was?)

\* \* \* \* I will go to it to it presently and recall it... go to it ['to it' read 'out' first time.]

(I understand.)

[Long pause.] H \* \* \* \* back out ... [Long pause.] I cannot find it just now for him. tell him so for me Hodgson, but will try to get the name he wants through. tell them H. ['h' written and then converted into capital by second stroke.] you are now holding the light for me.

(Tell who?)

[Pause.] Hyslop [written excitedly.] yes tell [pause.] Hodgson will you tell him I ... no [to wrong reading.] will tell you for me. [Pause.] I will I will try to get it for you Hyslop friend (All right.) but cannot just now.

(All right. Take your time.)

[Pause.] I talked with friend Hodgson about it too. (Yes.) and on several occasions to my boy and now it is confused in my thought.

(I understand. I wanted only the name of the person who told of three special stories that were his experiences and he was a scientific man that you highly respected.) [Hodgson in mind.]

[Scrawls.] I will try too [to] get it back to you soon.

(Good.) [Note 792.]

[Pause and then Omega with the cross in it drawn.] W. J. going.

[Change of Control.]

can you H. now see the value of my position concerning the soul of things. [Pause.] your idea of letting lights touch them I do not like and you must see my side of it. come over to my view as it is right.

---

792. I asked the same question of the communicator through Mrs. Chenoweth, with Dr. Hodgson in mind, and his name came through, but not as a direct answer to my query, and it did not so come here. In both cases there is the apparent attempt to give another person. Cf. p. 275. It is true that others had given him incidents in that connection, but I knew that Dr. Hodgson had given him a certain group of them for his "Varieties of Religious Experience".

(I can act as if it be right and . . . .)

yes and you will learn its [read 'this'] value . . . its value.  
[Pause.]

(Do you recall any one on the council?)

[Pause.] H. there was a friend that came here soon after I did that was interested in our work. [Pause.] and L [read 'I'] will know . . . Lodge . . . know about him. he was also interested in the service [not read at once.] of Kings . . . service . . . the King's service.

(I understand.)

yes about [three dots made and to test meaning I said 'one, two, three,' and hand went on.] months past [read 'just'] past.

(I shall look that up.)

[Pause.] we would be glad to have you [pause.] do so.

(Yes, I shall at the first opportunity.)

very much interested in science and [pause.] cannot get the other word through. (Psychic Research?) but does not . . . did . . . believe as much as friend L

(I understand. Go on.)

but well known over [wavy line drawn for ocean.] in the [pause.] cannot remember. [Long pause.] [Note 793.]

Hodgson says it don't work right today the machine.

(All right. I understand.)

and we must wait till it gets clearer. [Pause, and the monogram for F and P was made carefully.] do you know me.

(Yes I do.) [Pause.]

[Apparent Change of Control.]

we are all here. Friend J. too. we must go to [too] friend R. Hogon [Hodgson].

(Shall we sit tomorrow?)

we will try.

[I supposed the reference to the mountain was by Hodgson and only later suspected its real meaning. I asked Mrs. Smead if she knew where Professor James spent his summers

---

793. This personality is not recognizable, but the same person was involved in the last sitting. Cf. p. 932.

and she replied that she did not, but thought it was in California. She remarked that she knew where he died. Mr. Smead knew of his summer home at Chocorua. The Smeads themselves once lived at Center Sandwich, some sixteen miles from Chocorua, and Mrs. Smead may have seen the mountain meant.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 8th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* \* \* \* [apparently 'coming yes we are coming y...']  
we are coming here [pause.] do you hear us friend h [H].

(Yes I do.)

[Pause.] We are coming here. [Pause.] I would speak with  
him friend [pause.]

(Yes, with whom? Do you mean ....?) [Mr. Smead in  
mind.]

H.

(All right.)

Do you remember our talks on the tele [uncertain of reading  
at time.] of Souls [pause.] ye[s] [to reading of 'tele'.]

do you remember how the Dr. and G. P. would tell me to  
think hard about what I desired to have them tell [not read.]  
tell [pencil broke and new one inserted.]

(Don't press so hard.)

me that they could get my thought clearly.

(Good.)

do you remember our talks of it (Yes.) [Pause.] and I  
did not see the necessity of it but did it to please him yes,  
not believing it at the time possible unless it could be cal....  
[erased.] considered thought transference.

(Good.)

yes from [not read.] my ... from myself to the psychic and  
not of necessity Spirits at all. Do you remember it.

(Yes, go on.)

[Pause.] and [pause.] I could not for more than fifteen years  
get it distinctly through my mind that I should try to do as sig-  
gsted [suggested] then when I began to try to be more as told  
we were able to get clearer [pause.] answers to our desires.

(I understand.)

yes [Pause.] I have wanted many times to tell you of it and the reason is now clear to me.

(Yes, explain it.)

[Pause.] I will try. [Pause.] you see friend Hyslop when we remove [read 'strive' and then 'desire' doubtfully.] the ... remove the Soul fom [excitedly erased.] from our machine and then try to [pencil broke and new one inserted.] use it as if it were our own we can only use part of it. cannot control the [sheet changed.] the whole organism and so have the more to concentrate our own personality that we may hear [hear] and talk clearly so if you do like-w... [read 'talk' and 'take' doubtfully.] do likewise we can do [erased.] hear you better.

(I understand.)

it is not a case of tele [telepathy]

(I understand.)

and just as we were talking over lthere [there] in our fleshly body. in part do u u. d.

(Yes.)

So my idea of it was not correct when we had our talks together.

(Good. I understand.)

does it make it clearer to you

(Yes.) [Note 794.] ...

Good then I have not \*\* in vain... talked. [for unread word.] [Pause.] I \* \* s as I have said we would be able to correct [read 'converse'] no. [read.] our statements if we were wrong on them over there.

(Yes, that is good.)

---

794. All this is true about what Dr. Phinuit and G. P. told Dr. Hodgson was necessary to get his thoughts and desires and also our talks on that matter. Mrs. Smead could not know the facts, unless brought to her casually and then she would not know of our conversations on the point. It did take some years for Dr. Hodgson to be convinced that this claim had an important significance and the circumstance was explained through Mrs. Chenoweth by G. P. and forms an important contribution to the subject of the conditions affecting communications. Cf. p. 682. Possibly it was the intention to bring up that idea here, as there would be a medley of thoughts transmitted, according to that view, unless there was concentration on some one or more of them.

[Pause.] It used to trouble me when I tried to explain the Sub. for my own satisfaction and try to get it to coincide with ... no [to reading of 'consider' as 'consist', and then I read it 'coincide'] my ideas of tele [telepathy] together. did not always seem to be consistent [consistent] you will understand.

(Yes.)

we talked of them every time we came together yes.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] [Mr. Smead came into the room and remained a moment.]

we used to wonder where we would eventually [read 'continually'] no eventually end. [Pause.] yes.

(Do you remember your talks at my home?)

[Long pause.] they were not as often as in my room and at the headquarters for P. S. [Note 795.]

(That's right. Do you remember the things in the room at the office?)

[Pause.] There was not much there. [Pause.] Some [not read.] are with you ['some' read.] with you not here but where had our talks together, yes.

(Good, tell what you desire.)

[Long pause.] there were no ne [read 'no one'] of my f... none own family friends to bid [not read.] be [erased.] bid me goodbye over the h [read 'the'] there H. and none [read 'more'] to ... no [read 'none'] came to me afterwards.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] altho many friends yes. very [not read at time.] [pause.] were conc... siderate [read 'considered'.] considerate [read 'considerable' tho clearly 'considerate'] of ... no considerate ... yes ... of my feelings as it was though[t] but it

---

795. All the talk about removing the soul from the body and using only a part of it is characteristic and not known to Mrs. Smead unless by her own knowledge of the subject from her own experiences. But she would not know the reason for ascribing the view to Dr. Hodgson about using only a part of the body, as he talked of that to me. We did talk of the general subject of telepathy and the subliminal often and perhaps every time we came together, and these times were more often at the headquarters and his room. All this would have to be guessed and was not known to Mrs. Smead.

was as I would it to be, not one long suffering to be placed as charity which I despised. u [you] know how we talked of it too.

(Yes.) [Pause.] (Did Mrs. L. know about all this?)

[Pause.] Some of it not all H. [small 'h' then finished by second stroke.] ... some [not read first time.] I could not tell her. [Pause.] I could not let her think I was so financially embarrassed.

(I understand.)

yes. [Pause.] Else she would have thought of me differently. [Pause.] but lets s [let us] not talk of it. I never did enjoy it.

(That is right. Take the next subject as you desire.) [Note 796.]

[Pause.] do you me[an] the British one or phys ... losophic [not read.] ones or ones on physosophy [intended evidently for philosophy, but not read purposely, as I was not sure whether the Society was meant or certain other persons mentioned here years ago.]

or ones. can you not see my mind clearer \* \* [erased.] no cannot you see my mind clearer than [sheet changed.] than that Hyslop.

(I think I know ....)

I guess you will. [Pause.] I shall not repeat it. leave it for you to clear as a mystery.

(All I wanted you to know Hodgson was that I wanted it on the paper and not as a conjecture of my mind.)

joke. (Yes.) [Pause.] We cannot let Him [read 'them'] do all the ... H I M ... debating. (Who?) F. P. yes.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] you must not thing [think] we cannot enjoy them

796. My question about what was in the office was misunderstood. The reply is accurate enough, but too general to regard as evidential, especially as the Smeads knew I got some of his material. The question was taken as implying his household goods as well and the communications ran into the matter of his financial situation. I knew much about it, but very few did, as he would not tell any one capable of helping him. Mrs. L. knew much about it, but whether all or not I do not know. He had both the pride and the prudence here implied, facts not at all known by the Smeads, and they were very characteristic.

now at your expence [expense] just the same. [Pause.] as you did when we were there.

(I understand.) [Note 797.]

yes it is not a very sober life here. we enjoy it imes [?] [pause.] immens... [pause.] cannot get it right H.

(Immensely?)

yes. mm muns \* \* [pause, and read 'unanimously'] no, immens... [pause.] I'll get it by and by. [Pause.] But it is a pleasure to talk with you of [read 'if'] of these past times. we could see the point clearer when we could enjoy the joke.

(Yes, we did not have to put it on paper.)

[Pause.] \* \* [read 'and'] [pause.] no. but I u. d. your difficulties.

(I know it.)

more than did the Rector. he could not even after I taked [talked] it with him. but [erased.] and why we needed paper or parchments as he said to [pause.] transfer our thoughts to you.

(Capital. That is capital.)

he is sure it can be done with out it and desires it tried for him [read 'time'] hi m some day.

(Good.)

he is willing [read 'telling'] that I ... willing ... I work here as he did in the other case and is willing to help when necessary as are the Dr. and +

('Cross', Imperator.) yes. (I understand.)

S. M. likewise. u u. d. he is very [read 'way'] much ... very ... interested that his ministry be continued yes.

(I understand perfectly.)

---

797. It was a natural association to mention the British Society in this connection, as he had a period of rest from the American work due to his financial embarrassment, and the Smeads knew nothing of this.

I am not sure of the meaning in the reference to a "joke", unless it is similar to a remark by the same communicator through Mrs. Piper, when, in reply to a statement of mine about a certain matter being public if it stood in the record, he said: "Oh yes of course" (*Proceedings Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. IV, p. 718. He was apparently not aware at the time that I was getting the message in writing. If that meaning is applied here it is intelligible, implying that he admitted the joke on himself. But in a moment he intimates that it is on me, and with that in view I do not see the point, unless it is a hit at my stupidity.

and wishes you tell the husband so

(All right.) [Note 798.]

yes [written before I uttered 'All right.'] S. M. does I said H. [read 'he'] H. told me to tell you that it is a case of lightening [so read.] no enlighn [enlighten] the dark places and helping Souls out into the light by the gift [read 'hope' doubtfully] of God... Gift. to mankind yes. [first read 'man and'] there is naught to fear where God is and S. M. say[s] tell him I too will be with him that his work may grow with power from on high yes.

(Thank you.)

tell him for S. M. he will communicate with him soon [some] time about these gifts.

(I shall.)

and he will be all right. [Pause.] We will not come to thee t [read 'that'] again H. ... thee ... until after the Sabath [pause.] er ... [pause.] rod. [Period.] but we will keep the watch yes.

(I understand.)

and who did you give mine too [to] ... mine [not read first time.] to.

(Your what?)

watch. I just recalled that one when I left in my pocket.

(Describe it.)

old style [Pause.] I had had it long ago and it stopped going when I did [read 'died'] yes when I did.

(Do you know what became of it?)

I cannot recall just now, so I will go. and hope to meet you again soon. good morning. R. Hodgson.

---

798. There is a remarkably important incident here which Mrs. Smead could not know. It is the reference to what Rector felt about the record. He could never understand why Dr. Hodgson was so particular about getting the message on paper and especially every word of it, until this matter was explained to him. The term "parchments" is very pertinent for the time when Rector was supposed to have lived, but I do not know whether this term was used in the Piper records or not. It is apparent that Dr. Hodgson was working here as the amanuensis just as Rector did in the Piper case.

"Dr." evidently refers to "Doctor" in the Piper group of guides. S. M. evidently refers to Stinton Moses, who often appears here and occasionally with Mrs. Chenoweth.

(Thanks.) [Long pause.] [Note 799.]

[Change of Control.]

Tell thee [the] other friend we will speak a word wih [with] him.

(I understand. You mean at ... [this time])

now.

(Shall he be called?)

now now.

(Do you mean that I shall bring him in?)

It as is [superposed on 'as' erasing.] as I have spoken now.

(Wait till I call him.) [Brought Mr. Smead in.]

Do you know friend that we are desirous of continuing on earth together for the uplifting of the souls of mankind together, but I will not as a living [not read.] Soul ... living Soul do so without your willing concent [consent] and coöperation.

(Mr. S.: I understand.) [Reply made at my suggestion.]

it is that I desire to continue my earthly ministry wid [erased after reading it 'with'] which I was obliged to to leave for this higher life. and it is my soul [sole] desire to to help and strengthen the cause of God and mon kind [mankind] through our Savior do you friend desire my help and will you willingly give your con ... sent['s' superposed on 'c' erasing it.] to my helping through your [so read.] you. I will not do ought [aught] to injure you or your personality dou [do you] gou [you, but erased.] you here [hear] me clearly.

(Mr. S.: Yes.) [Pause.] (Mr. S.: Yes.) [Pause.]

Then I will come often th... [erased.] to talk to u [you] and advise with you as it is the desire of our co.... counsil [council] here. yes we still have them.

(Mr. S.: Who is the party?)

I will tell you when I am through talking.

(Mr. S.: All right.)

yes, it is [read 'this'] that ... it is that of continuing my ministry with my new light and you friend can help me through the material universe while I can do so from this Spiritual one.

---

799. It has not been possible to verify the incident of Dr. Hodgson's watch. He, of course, had a watch, but the incidents that would make the reference here evidential cannot be ascertained.

(Mr. S.: I understand.)

that is well. Let us pray. Grant o O most merciful Father that we may now take the ... Thy [written over 'the'] Light to this friend and work for thy Greater Light to be carried [read 'rendered'.] to the mortal souls ... carried... to tof [?] thy earthly ones that they 'may open their lives more fully and willingly [incorrectly read.] no willingly To Thee. Am [apparently for 'Amen'] and may it be done for the Glory of thy dear Son our Savior Jesus Christ. Ame... [Amen] Stanton Moses.

(Thank you.) [Note 800.]

[Change of Control.]

Thank Thank friend Hodgson. [Pencil fell.] [Left hand after pause made the sign of the cross in the air after slowly rising with my help.]

After recovery Mrs. Smead complained of her head hurting and I held it for a few moments, when the pain left. Soon she remarked that she saw the cross when her head hurt her, and then remarked that she wished she could tell who the man was that sat with his back to the window.

Both when Dr. Hodgson was speaking for Stainton Moses and when Stainton Moses was directly controlling the handwriting was *backhanded* as it is in the case of Miss B——— when Stainton Moses purports to communicate. Dr. Hodgson's writing was not backhanded when communicating for himself.

---

800. This communication with Mr. Smead, whom I had to call into the room, was a quick fulfilment of the promise that Stainton Moses would come to speak to him. It is not evidential, but it was interesting to see the timeliness of it when we consider that Mr. Smead was growing less inclined to permit or hold sittings.

The reader will observe that the prayer resembles those of Imperator through Mrs. Piper. Mrs. Smead is familiar with his character in those prayers, having had them read to her many years ago. But the interesting incident here is the apparent ending of the prayer by "Am" for "Amen" and then the probably subconscious ending with the orthodox invocation. Imperator was not in the habit of making such an appeal, but Mrs. Smead is an orthodox believer.

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 12th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* coming we are coming. [Long pause.]

when [Pause.] I was there I would try the experiments with the lady that also had the daughter that could get the telepathic messages and I believed them to be just that on your side. I know it is hard to explain it when there from our side here. we find we can go so quickly from one point to the other that it is the same as telepathy on your side. it is with us to think and it is done almost without time as we said there.

(Good, explain all you can.)

and so it is called telepathy on your side but in reality not thought transference at all but carried by messengers [read 'messages'] messengers here.

(I understand.) [Note 801.]

we find so many waiting [not read.] and ... waiting and wanting to do some good in return for this new life given them they are willing to accept the humblest of positions here as a thank offering for this new life.

(I understand. Do you remember the experiments by Miss Miles and Miss Ramsden?) [Repeated.]

[Wavy line drawn across the page for 'across the water'.]

(Yes.)

[Pause.] [Wavy line drawn again.]

(Yes, across the water.)

for our Society.

---

801. This explanation of telepathy is an interesting one and one often suggested to me by certain phenomena and certain aspects of all of them, but I have not had sufficient evidence to suggest it even as a working hypothesis. It was the apparent rapidity of transition from place to place in all mediumistic phenomena where communicators had to be called that suggested it. Mrs. Smead is not familiar with the idea, tho possibly she may have conceived it, but she does not know that other communications have intimated that to think is to act in the spiritual world, and the assertion of this would impart a clue to the explanation of messages which we have been accustomed to call telepathy. It is significant that the doctrine should be put into the mouth of Mr. Podmore, as he would not tolerate it in life. It is perhaps as significant to have put it into his mouth, as he knew I had suggested it as possible, because it occurred in my criticism of his positions and he saw the articles.

(Yes, did they conform to the explanation you have just given?)

mainly [read 'many'] so... mainly. [Pause.] in my former talk you will find an [erased.] a part of the explanation of it. it was for the same reason I said be cautious about the articles yes.

(I understand.)

I thought you could u. d. [read 'aid'] them... u. d. them. yes.

(Yes I do. Who was the lady with the daughter mentioned?)  
[Mrs. Thompson in mind.]

[Pause.] one we experimented with for so long [written 'lone' then 'g' added.] over [wavy line drawn.]

(All right, but I . . .)

not H's light but the one that remained there [wavy line drawn.]

(Yes, on which side of life was the daughter?)

at the time of our experimenting both on your side.

(All right. I shall try to identify her, but if you can make it clearer I shall be glad.)

yes [pause.] the mother would [read 'was' as it was written partly at end of line and partly at beginning of next.] would sometimes have the experiment and simultaneously the daught... [pause.] daughter [written over first attempt.] would get the impression and would often [read 'after'] often say she saw their Spirits yes [pause.] and several times we called it telepathy from your side one with the other when it was a messenger on this that carried the news.

(I understand.) [Note 802.]

---

802. Mr. Podmore knew the Thompson case well. The Smeads have the English Reports about it and Mr. Smead has read them. Mrs. Smead has not, but may have picked up casual information from remarks of Mr. Smead. She could not have known much about it, however, when she wrote automatically, as here, that both mother and daughter were living at the time of the experiments. This was not true. The daughter was her control in those experiments. But Mr. Thompson has died long since those experiments and rather recently. Mrs. Smead did not know this fact and had no opportunity to learn about it, as Mr. Smead has not been a member of the English Society since the death of Dr. Hodgson.

Miss Johnson writes me: "I believe that no telepathic experiments were

especially as Sidwic ... [pause.]

(Go ahead.) [Seeing that Sidgwick was meant I would not utter it, and left the matter with the communicator.]

did not get it just right. [Pause.] but he was especially \* \* [probably 'inter'.] interested in it. (All right.) interested in it. (I have it.) [Pause.]

and helped his wife also by impressing here [read 'her' and 'e' was erased.] yes [pause.] and he said to me when I came di [erased.] did my wife get my message

(Good. Go on.)

and we have explained it to him. [Pause.] As when he was there we were explaining so much by fraud yes. [Pause.] that [read 'and' and 'but' doubtfully.] that we have had to convince [read 'commence' and 'connect'.] him that the messa... [message] convince ... was delivered all right. [Pause.] he said M r s V—— was hanging fine [so read.] w... fire when we were putting her to the test but we did not turn her from her belief that she was helped outside of herself.

(Good, I understand.) [Note 803.]

---

ever tried with Mrs. Thompson by any member of the S. P. R., almost certainly not by Mr. Podmore."

It is actually pertinent for the allusion to be in terms of "telepathic experiments" because Mr. Podmore did not believe the sittings with Mrs. Thompson were spiritistic in contents and was such a believer in telepathy that he would most naturally describe them in these terms. It would not be natural for Mrs. Smead, as any supposed knowledge she would have of them either from Mr. Smead or from reading the Reports which he had—a thing she did not do—would represent them otherwise.

803. Professor Sidgwick when living was much interested in the Thompson case to which reference is apparent here. Through her he purported to send a message to his wife that was the subject of a great deal of sport among the English members and it is mentioned in Mr. Podmore's last book, which the Smeads have not seen and of which they have not even heard. It is very pertinent to have this come through Mr. Podmore who is the first to be able to speak of it in this way, as being the first of the group to pass away since the incident occurred. Of course we have no assurance that this is the incident meant, but it was so funny a circumstance and was the source of so much humor, and of a kind that appealed to Mr. Podmore, that, taken with the statement of the communicator that it was explained to Professor Sidgwick, probably as not evidential because Mrs. Thompson might have known his habits, it would seem a possible reference to this incident.

I was as much to blame as the others in being so very critical yes. [hand came to me to fix pencil.] felt it absolutely necessary that we maintain our Scientific reputation yes and not get mixed [read 'excited' carelessly.] mixed up with Spiritualism yes.

(Yes I understand.)

lest we lose our hold on the men of our Philosophical [pause.] side or way of thought [?] thinking. [Pause.] yes. [to delayed reading.]

(Good, I understand.)

There was one light we found fraudulent but \* \* [delay in reading 'fraudulent'.] we were in just that frame of mind to see it all that way and should we have let it alone we could have gotten more [read 'most'] of the ... no [to reading of 'more'] more of reliable kind of work, but we were in too much hurry to find the fraud connected with it.

(Can you tell what light that was?) [Thinking of Palladino.]

and if those there would give her a chance to use a pencil I would try myself—— not telling [read 'tell you'] in... telling her anything about it only desiring [not read.] a few trials [read 'treats'] no desiring a few trials [line drawn across word as if to erase.] yes [to correct reading.] for a friend letting it be all in the light.

(Good.)

yes just a pencil and paper so there could be no chance for tricks. you know to whom I refer.

(No I do not.)

no.

(And would be glad to know so that I may tell . . .)

do you not remember how much fraud we said was in our Thompson case

(Good, yes.)

tell them I said to try it \* \* \* \* [erased.] by \* \* suggestion [suggestion] this way [several words not read at time.] but tell them I said to try it by this suggestion.

There is evidence, not seen by the Smeads, that Mrs. Verrall, here meant by the V., has believed in outside help and has not been shaken by the opinions of critics.

(Good.)

there can be no chanh ... chance [superposed on to erase.]  
for fraud and I would like to try it there.

(All right. I shall write to them about it.)

Tell L. to do so.

(Yes I shall.) [Note 804.]

[Long pause.] + [pause.] 96 [Pause.] A [pause.] H. [?]  
[Pause.]

H it is ['it' like 'u' and 't' rewritten and superposed.]  
like using an elec... Electric machine. we get the int...  
intensity of the whole battery sometimes and have to stop to col-  
lect our thoughts (I understand.) not so much as it used to be  
said they had to leave because they lost themselves ['self'  
written and then 'selves' over it.] but I find it is because the  
battery works too rapidly to think clearly.

(Good, I understand.)

and I think it is being overcome on this side so that we can  
dispence [dispense] with the Sub. here yes. near [read 'never']  
contact ... nearer ... with the Earth friends altho not exactly  
our own next to it yes.

(Then some one has to be between you and the light.)  
no just we use the machine ourselves.

(What is that machine like?)

t... [pause.] his hs [this] Light's human body has a force  
[pause.] like I said power [for 'force' not read.] of electric  
motion. I said is it that u u [you] [superposed on first writing.]  
could you u. d. me the better. it is of an unknown substance  
to your side but thought [delayed reading.] to convey ... but  
thot [thought] to convey my meaning clearer but using the  
Electrical mothon [read 'motion'.] yes. it is a substance that  
is very light and yet not ether but sill [still] not electricity.

---

804. The whole passage here is not the result of normal knowledge  
about Mr. Podmore, tho we cannot well call it evidence. The reason as-  
signed for the extremely critical position taken is a good one and pertinent to  
the English situation, more imperative than in this country.

It was thought by some of them that Mrs. Thompson was a fraud and  
the suggestion here made is a correct one that she needed to be more patiently  
treated than she was. The terms "fraud" and "trickery" are characteristic  
ones in this connection, but not evidential.

we can use it much as you can the Phone System. can u. u. d.

(Yes perfectly.)

telling [read 'letting'] the ... no... telling the body or the central office and we the one at the phone yes.

(I understand.)

sometimes we have to cal [read 'cut'] H... call H. as he has also more of this power than some of us and can right it when it gets wrong just by taking command for a short time like the change of communicators in the case he used to have.

(Good, I understand.)

no way of making it clearer than the comparisson [comparison] to the Phone Hyslop.

(That is clear enough ....)

but it would be impossible to give the name of this light or power used

(I understand and do not care for the name as the description, you know, is ....)

we do not need an interpreter. there is no little guides. we are our own guide yes and each has his turn [read 'time'] or turn yes and all are given a fair chance, even those like myself that did not deserve it... des... [read and not finished.] yes. [Pause.]

(I understand. That is clear.)

and could we have done as you siggested [suggested] we could have been brought to a clearer understanding of this whole subject long ago.

(I understand.) [Note 805.]

[Pause.] P i p e r. [Pause.] no. not this time. Then H. I will turn it over to you. ['I will turn' not read.] I will turn hr [it] over to you.

(All right.)

805. The reference to "little guides" evidently refers to the little control of Mrs. Thompson where the messages all came through this guide. But at least usually they are direct in the case of Mrs. Smead, just as asserted. I have no assurance of what is meant by the suggestion that I am said to have made, unless it was the general method which I insisted on in my first Report, and that was to print all the details and to consider that the chaff was just as important a part of the problem as the evidence. If that is what is meant it is pertinent.

good morning friend Hyslop. I have just told H. I would leave it to him. did you hear me. F. R. P. [superposed on 'R']  
F. P.

(Thanks.)

yes. [Note tendency to make 'R' instead of 'P']

[Change of Control.]

F. P. wanted to begin a discussion of my case and I said no time, so he left.

(I understand.)

I can do better at that than he can and I do not consider it absolutely necessary as there is nothing doing there so what could be gained at present. [Note 806.]

(I understand. Do you know any one on your side by the name of Sylvester?)

[Pause.] The young friend has given us this place and acts [read 'a class'] [Pause.] no a c t s at our suggestion.

(Can he come once before I leave?)

[Pause.] It will now be necessary to ask + [Imperator]

(I understand. I did not mean to-day but . . .)

we do nothing without his will in this case now.

(I understand and am ready to abide by his will.)

often Friend Hyslop he will show us when some are coming here before it is known over with you that we can at once bring him [so read.] them [written above 'him'] upon their entry into this life at once to this light for proper recognition before any one of the many lights can get the knowledge [read carelessly 'personality' and then 'knowledge'.] yes of their being recognized would of course be a mater of public interest to your side.

(I understand.) [Note 807.]

---

806. Dr. Hodgson would naturally be supposed to know more about the Piper case than Mr. Podmore. It is true that there "is nothing doing" in the Piper case now, and the Smeads knew absolutely nothing about the situation. The slang expression too is not characteristic of either of the Smeads, neither having that habit nor that kind of humor, but Dr. Hodgson used slang a great deal.

807. I asked the question about Sylvester, the deceased brother of Mr. Smead, because I wanted to see if I could get a reference to the communications from him through Mrs. Chenoweth. Cf. pp. 580-592.

So he + [Imperator] says we must not use it for impractical [read 'impractical'] not. ble

(Impracticable?)

yes. knowledge of the great truth [truth] and so we ask it of + before we do anything for our own interest and if it is your desire we will make it known. Myers is our special guide. [hand came to me to fix pencil.]

(Yes.)

and the young man was desirous of learning [read 'leaving'] L, E A R ning yes. and gave over without the difficul [so read.] y of the quarrel such as my old friend Dr. P. [written slowly and with effort.] did. no antagonism. [not read.] here ... antagonism, yes. we will not have it if it arises [read 'arouses'] the communicator mig... arises ... must leave.

(I understand.)

yes, harmony is one of the necessary P O I N ts to a clear communication.

(I understand.)

goodbye H. [made with small 'h' and a stroke like crossing a 't'] I will arrange [arrange] for the morrow. R. Hodgson [Note 808.]

[Change of Control.]

\* \* [resembles 'if'] Just a word. I would say it to you my friend. do you remember once friend we talked of this life and I told you I knew I could not use the light H. used for so long and would find another to talk to you through if I found the survival [survival] of the soul was true. [Pause.] I am F. W. Myers. do you remember it.

(Yes.) [Said to encourage communicator, but do not recall such.]

and H. seemed to think his was the only case we said but I did not agree with him. hence we parted to prove I was in the right.

(Yes, the proof had to be found on the other side.)

---

808. The history of the transfer of power in this case is correct, but of course not beyond the knowledge of the subconscious. But she is not so familiar with the episode of the substitution of the Imperator group for Phinuit in the Piper case and the struggle involved in it.

surely I knew that if I survived I could help. I never was much you know Hyslop at talking.

(I understand.)

*loudly.* well good day F. M [read 'W'] Myers. [Long pause.] [Note 809.]

[Resumption of Control.]

[Hand showed signs of wanting to write and I inserted pencil.] Friend J. says don't forget he was here too.

Mrs. S. J. H. H. June 13th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* [scrawls.] [Pause.] \* \* [scrawls.] yes we are coming here. do you hear us.

(Yes I hear.)

we are here [pause.] and we would tell you about \* \* [the ?] school room. [Pause.] lecture room [pause.] at that [pause.] at college over [wavy lines drawn.]

(Yes.)

yes over [wavy lines drawn.]

(I understand.)

[Pause.] it is the old one where so many of us [pencil broke and new one inserted.] went [read 'wait'.] went do you hear. [Pause.] we [pause.] used to talk of so many things in not lecture room alone but faculty room is what I should say. we were not students but teachers there.

(I understand.)

several of our friends did so yes. [Pause.] and the interior of the room is the same as at first not changed to the new ways.

(I understand.)

yes. [pause.] why [not read at time.] [pause.] chairs and table.

(What kind of chairs?)

Single ones yes. [Pause.]

---

809. I never had any conversation with Mr. Myers living, but this allusion may be to communications with me which I do not recall. The position is characteristic of Mr. Myers, and the intimation that he could not communicate well through Mrs. Piper, "H's light", is pertinent and so far as I know correct, and probably not known by Mrs. Smead.

("A hy chairs"?) [Intended to have word corrected.]

[Pause.] also one special for the President of the college in the room of which I speak. you know [pause.] in [wavy lines drawn.] they always are ready to acknowledge the H E A D of the instution [institution, but read 'instruction'.] no [read 'institution'.] yes. [Pause.] as....

(What kind of wood was the chairs?)

old ones dark ones. [Pause.] M a h o g a n y nearly black yes.

(I understand.)

not artificial color. [Pause.]

(Was there any veneering done . . . . ?)

There was carving not surface work and long windows [pause and then vertical lines drawn when I changed sheet.]

[Long pause.] and only a fw [few] ornaments on the walls.

(Good, I understand.)

[Long pause.] the table was longer than wide. [Pause.]

(What was the table for? What was its use?)

[Pause.] when they met to write on and fro [for] the use of any member to go and read there [pause.] yes. [Note 810.]

[A half circle was drawn with heavy lines and concave surface toward the left and then at its right the same with surface toward right and then a capital A written. Pause.]

(What is that? I got only marks and the letter A.)

The President sits there when they meet. you know without my explanations.

(What does the capital letter A mean?)

[Long pause.] [circles drawn, evidently intended for letter O. as later indications prove.] C

(C?)

O C. yes there was also another new one.

(New what?)

College. Old and New Oxford.

(Good.)

[Long pause.] cannot you remember.

810. Miss Johnson writes in reply to inquiries regarding the description of this lecture or meeting room: "We do not know any of Mr. Podmore's contemporaries at college."

(I know nothing about it. You will have to complete your story.)

[Pause.] new [pause.] Buildings old ones also there, yes.

(Yes I understand.)

met in the old one [pause.] and we always used the cap and gowns an[d] collar [written 'coller' and then 'a' superposed on 'e' to erase.] too when we held these meetings.

(I understand.)

part of our special work to impress the students of our knowled[g]e

(I understand.)

[Pause.] use ful there [wavy lines drawn.] more than [wavy lines drawn to indicate America.] Hodgson says.

(I understand.)

yes. [Pause.] I never was over [mirror writing] [wavy line drawn to indicate America.] [I could not read mirror writing at time and hand paused.]

("I never was".)

over [pencil moved to right of pad and back with a wavy line to indicate America.] so only knew from those I met there [wavy line to indicate across the water and England.] the nature of the people [pause.] and H. says it was not fair for me to judge by the few I had met [wavy lines to indicate America drawn.]

(I understand.)

we always carr... [erased.] cared for outward appearances more you know.

(Yes I know.)

[Pause.] \* \* and for our P H I D E L T A. [Pause.] and for the m— a— [intended evidently for abbreviation of Master of Arts.]

(Yes.) [Note 811.]

---

811. The expression "Old and New Oxford" is pertinent, and represents ideas not familiar to Mrs. Smead, tho she may have casually seen the expression in her life. She has always spoken of Oxford in connection with Dr. Hodgson and wrongly. The comparison with American colleges is relevant tho not evidential, and it is a point to put the matter in the mouth of Dr. Hodgson as his information, tho again not evidential. I learned that Mr. Podmore went to Oxford. At the time of the message I thought it was Cambridge. Mrs. Smead knew nothing about it.

[Pause.] [wavy lines drawn.] [Long pause.]

H. says I my . . . must [superposed on 'my'] not discuss my therio. . . . [pause.] theories today.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] I wanted to tell you about one similar to telepathy yes but he will not let me. Says stick to the point.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] but \* \* \* \* was [tried to get correction but failed.]

[Long Pause.] Hyslop friend it is hard for me to learn to bow when he [the] friend comes to the [read 'with'] the light. I was not used to it. Seldom if ever went to the Churches. u u. d. and now I just have to acknowledge one over us all here with a greater power even thant {than} the King himself here there [correction of 'here' after my reading and written slightly above it.]

(I understand.)

Altho he also was much interested in this work.

(Has he appeared elsewhere?)

[Pause.] yes and came here but H. will explain why he did not communicate.

(I understand.)

he is desirous of doing all possible to help and the Greater light [hand pointed to letter 'l' to indicate that it should be a capital.] will [erased.] says he will in time be able to do so more easily.

(I understand and shall be patient.)

he was also of the same colege [college] and not so faithful a believer as the father in the immortality of the Soul. rather sceptical.

(I understand.)

but we cannot do him the same honor as when there.

(I understand.) [Note 812.]

---

Miss Johnson writes: "we do not know any of his contemporaries at college" and apropos of some expressions: "Faculty room is not, I think, a term ever used at Oxford. I feel sure Mr. Podmore was never a teacher. It is very unlikely that in any lecture room there would be a special chair for the President of the college. The Phi Delta does not sound at all like an Oxford term. There is no A. M. degree at Oxford." [Obviously an error.]

812. Of the statement about his difficulty in learning to bow when the

[Pause.] our Scientific mistake was not to look more into the religious side [pause.] we should (I) [parentheses inserted.] have made a more careful Sutdy [read 'study'] study of it together with the P. S.

[Here difficulty was met in removing sheet and it caused a break with a long pause.]

There will need be permission granted the King and it is not as we would do over [wavy line drawn.] as he has power [wavy line drawn.] to do as he desires. the Greater Light does not do over there as he did.

(I understand.)

so here the King is as any other Soul. he feels it when coming to talk.

(I understand.)

[Long pause.] ask for him over on your side.

(I am not sure what you mean.)

permission be given him.

(I understand.)

as he would try to send the wife a message.

---

friend, evidently Imperator, comes to the light, that he "was not used to it, seldom if ever went to the churches", Miss Johnson says: "I do not know whether Mr. Podmore was in the habit of attending church while at college. He certainly did not in later years." Mrs. Smead knew and could know nothing of this, whatever we may think about the possibility of guessing it. She might naturally object to the divine honors apparently paid to Imperator in the Piper case, thinking God and Christ only deserving of these, but there was no reason for the subliminal putting this sentiment in the mouth of Mr. Podmore rather than some other communicators, and she did not know that it fitted him more aptly than some of the others, tho several had the same natural repugnance as Mr. Podmore.

Inquiries had to be made in England regarding the King and my information is that he had gone to both Oxford and Cambridge Universities. The same source of information, one who lived in close contact with the royal family, states that King Edward's father, the Prince Consort, believed in immortality in the orthodox and conventional way, and that King Edward believed in it more definitely than his father and from knowledge of psychic phenomena, but reasons of state required him not to divulge the fact to any except intimates. Hence he was not sceptical as stated in the communication. If the expression "faithful believer" applied to his father means that he did not accept it on authority as did the father and so was more sceptical of the orthodox arguments the message would have a meaning consistent with the facts.

(All right. I shall be glad . . . . .)

and now I will go as H. says he would bring a friend to you

(All right.)

F. R. P. ['P' superposed on 'R'.]

[Change of Control.]

[Pencil changed.] H. do you desire the young friend now.

(Just as you wish.)

I may need to talk for him.

(All right.)

Go on we are waiting.

(I wish to ask if he remembers coming to me elsewhere?)

[Pause.] He says in the city [pause.] he tried but did not know as you surely heard him.

(Yes I did and would be glad for him to tell what he said.)

Said he would come here and [long pause.] cannot H. no [so read.] now [pause.] we must wait he is [pencil changed.] afraid that he will feel the same as when he first came over and will try another time.

(All right. Does he remember what he called his brother there?)

[Pause.] always called him the same except to please Ida, he says always [always] Billy except to please her.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] other one Joie [read Joe] J O I E.

(I understand.)

and that was all.

(Yes and does he know for whom he was himself named?)

[Pause.] Yes [slowly written and in larger script.] the not the first name you mean he says.

(Yes, the first name.)

U n c l e S. (Good.) Irving [pause.]

(I understand.)

was the. [pause.] uncle S. was sent into this life by accident also.

(I understand.)

Irving wrote I tried to ask Billy if I was a success at it. [Long pause.] The friends over here have greatly helped me in my progress yes and I wanted to send the message to father that

I have risen bove above [superposed on 'bove' to erase.] the earth's atmosphere so that unless I f. . . . [erased.] am sent to do some work for the Physophial [read 'philosophical'] Society here I do not come now.

(I understand.)

and not to worry about the use that can be made of this new life as it is a very useful one. (Yes.) I am not in the least [read 'last'.] east [superposed on first writing to make clearer for 'least'] lazy now and do not desire to sleep. [Pause.]

(I understand.)

tell father to think always of the better part of your life and especially of the things pertaining to the life in which I am now. I will help them always then and try to have them ready for anything that may come to them.

(I shall be glad to deliver the message.)

Tell mother I should have said good day instad [instead] of goodby for it is always day now.

(Good, I understand.)

[Pause.] Thank you friend. Tell Billy for me that he cannot get rid of us yes. we have him now like we used to say get even [not read.] even yes. Sylvester I. Smead.

(Thanks.) [Note 813.]

---

813. My desire in having the brother Sylvester come was to see if I got any evidence of cross reference with the Chenoweth case. None came, except such as is implied in the answer to the query for whom he was named. I got as readers may recall, the name of his Uncle Sylvester through Mrs. Chenoweth (p. 581).

He was named Sylvester Irving; Sylvester for his Uncle Sylvester and Irving for Washington Irving. The latter explains the statement: "Irving wrote". The reference to the question said to have been asked of his brother, Mr. Smead, whom he called Billy as indicated, evidently points to his work as a control, perhaps a jocular reference. The message to his father here, according to the statement of Mr. Smead, is a very pertinent one, as his father has often wondered about the boy's salvation. None the less pertinent is the reference to laziness, as the brother says he was lazy. The last words to his mother were "Good-bye", and this Mrs. Smead did not know. "Joie" is the name of a younger brother still living.

Mr. Smead sees a very interesting possibility in the allusion to getting even. Mr. Smead got a college education and Sylvester was very jealous on account of it and felt his inferiority on account of it and always wanted to "get even" with his brother.

[Change of Control.]

[Pencil changed.] I had to let him friend Hyslop. he could not talk through me. [Pause.] got mixed in our thought. we have nearly [looks like 'manly' but read 'mainly'] used the ... n i e ... [erased.] N E A R l y the light for the day, so will go. the first friend does not like to give details [not read.] details but likes to talk on his own ideas. u u. d.

(Yes.)

R. Hodgson.

(Thanks.) [Pencil relaxed.]

After recovering normal consciousness Mrs. Smead asked: "What has the letter V got to do with it. I saw the letter V plainly." [Note 814.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 14th, 1911. 10.15 A. M.

\* \* [scrawls.] we are coming nearer near. [Long pause.]

ask my wife if she does not feel near her often [a number of words not read at the time.]

(I don't get all of that.)

does not feel [read 'feed'.] my ... no [to reading.] F E E L my presence near her often.

(I shall.) [Note 815.]

yes and were it considered advisable I would do more but [pause.] I would not injure here ['e' erased.] [pause.] and you know over here we cannot always learn if our experiments if they are received rightly.

(I understand.)

if they are injurious I mean [read 'never'.] m... yes [to reading in correction.] I would not knowingly [read 'know anything'] no. knowingly do any one harm and from my earthly connection with this subject I sometimes now fear that I might do harm from this fact.

---

814. The letter V has no meaning in this connection, unless it is a sporadic reference to Mrs. Verrall and of that I have no evidence.

815. Inquiry shows that no one of the family has felt the presence of Professor James.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] but I do not think it would hurt Son Will [not read.] Will if I helped him for his mother.

(In what way could you help son Will?)

[Pause.] By impressing him and he tell what I tell him.

(I understand.)

It would be worth [read 'work'] wh... no. worth while and to his credit friend Hyslop if he would be more interested in a practical [practical] way. you can understand [Pencil broke.] what is my desire in this way of thinking.

(Yes what .....?)

I want him more sympathetic yes (Yes.) not to fear what will ... what the public will say for the [read so.] y [completing 'they'] cannot [pencil broke.] cannot control us over here and we must have the opportunity of speaking our [read 'over'] our minds clearly.

(What kind of work does son Will do?) [Designed to see which son was really meant.]

[Pause.] Something [ended in 'k' and 'g' superposed on it.] after my kind. [Long pause.]

(I do not know, myself, and hence to tell would be good evidence.)

[Long pause, of perhaps ten minutes.] \* \* [scrawls.] I will try and give you the desired information soon.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] He was a good Soon [Son] and helped me much for several years before I came over here about my duties at the [Pause.] C. [Pause.] C yes [Pause.] \* \* mbridge [Pause.] Cambridge Home [pause.] Caring for my correspondence. do you hear me.

(Yes perfectly.)

[Pause.] at the Cambridge Home Place [pencil broke.] yes answered them to relieve me of any worry yes.

(I understand.)

and did what he could at the Coledge ge [superposed to correct for 'College'] too yes. [Pause.] also helped my S C .... [pencil broke.] ientific work and it was a pity he did not take friend Hodgson's place to do the experimental part of it.

(I understand.)

and then the light would have been more useful at home not spoiled by so much [pause.] teci... [pause.] technical [written slowly and not read.] not right but you can know what I desire to say [I had thought of the syllable 'tec'] tecmacalities [read 'technicalities'] yes, minute ones over [wavy lines made.] just spoiled it all.

(I understand.) [Note 816.]

but we will watch now that our friend does not do so here. yes we know our ways of thinking and have watched carefully their effects.

(Good.)

[Long pause.]

(Had you any other son?) [Wanted unindicated uncertainty cleared.]

[Pause.] The daughter.

(Well, tell about her.)

Son to [too] was near home much [pause.]

(Tell what you can about the daughter.)

[Long pause.] some [pause.] get her to write for you. she will try to help her mother's light and I will tell you her name where you go from here as a promise.

(Good, I hope you will and if you could do that . . . .)  
not here this time.

(All right.) [Note 817.]

816. It is apparent to me that it is the son Henry that is in mind and not the son William. Neither son, it seems, helped the father with his duties about the college, but "every member of the family", as reported to me. "at some time or other during my father's absence in Europe took care of his correspondence, including my brother William and myself." I think the son Henry James, Jr., had some correspondence with the Smeads which may have suggested this message. But the allusion to the latter's taking Dr. Hodgson's place has this much truth, according to my information, that "one sitter asked whether I would consider taking charge of Mrs. Piper. But I never considered the possibility seriously." It is possible that the Smeads knew that this son had something to do with some of the sittings and this might give rise to the suggestion in the record.

The strange feature of it is that, with the normal knowledge of the son Henry's relation to the matter, the name of the son William should be mentioned when the Smeads knew nothing about him.

817. It is not probable that Mrs. Smead knew of the daughter. Inquiry

I have given my first promise here and will try to when you are not present H.

(All right. I understand.)

yes. [Pause.] you think it strange I so often think of Will but I have so much confidence in he [the] way he has always been bmy [read 'living' doubtfully.] my helper.

(I understand.)

I would I could get nearer to him and feel he knows of my present life.

(Yes, perhaps by persisting and ...)

yes I will do so.

(I shall help by telling him.)

yes I know. I must myself do my part.

(I understand.)

he has had so many opportunities to doubt and at one time thought it just a sort of whim of father's.

(Yes, I understand. Many do the same.)

yes but I must let him know the truth of my present existence.

(I understand.)

so few friend Hyslop understand the reality of this life I now live and cannot know it if they do not desire to know.

(Yes, and they do not appreciate the outlook it makes for the ethical life.)

true [read 'fine'] true. they do not try to have a good reason for what they think they know.

(I understand.)

and are as much surprised as if they were athestists [atheists] when they enter here.

(I understand that.)

this life should be as real as the one I left in so short a time.

(It is easy to believe in atoms, not a soul.)

atoms and sous le [superposed on 's' to erase and to convert into 'souls'] are not Equal. [Pause.] nor is the soul made of mad[e] up [not read.] o ... [hand came to me to have pencil fixed, the fingers having slipped down on it.] made up of them.

---

shows that there is no known reason for the implication that the daughter has psychic powers of any kind.

(I understand.)

atoms will only apply to M a t e r i a l universe the [to correct statement.]

(I understand.)

not [read 'most'] to the etherial one... *not*. [correction of reading.]

(I understand that.)

I would I could write at length on just that kind of subject now. atoms an ... [pause.] Soul ...

(I understand, but that would not ....)

atoms and S P I R I T would be better H.

(Yes but not proof of identity.)

no just to make mankind know the way it is on our side. \* \*

(I understand. Do you remember about pragmatism?)

yes but not ident... [pause.] either.

(I understand.)

only interesting to the Phi. [philosophers] over there.

(That is correct.)

you see we have to deal here without material substances. Atoms do not count for anything when we learn here.

(I understand and they .....)

and do you think the ether composed [read 'compared'] of them ... no co.... [read.] could effect [affect] the life of Spirituala [spiritual] world. it is just a Hypothesis not a reality.

(Good.) [Note 818.]

you could see we would need to feel or have feelings if we were composed of atoms here.

(Then the old theo .....) no good.-(logical idea of an indivisible soul holds good.)

can you touch your own thoughts (No.) then H. thinking is not composed of atoms.

(Suppose it be a function of combined atoms?)

no they are just to aid [not read.] your side here ... A I D.

---

818. The answer to my question about pragmatism was very pertinent considering that the primary object of these experiments was identity, as this had been spontaneously emphasized through both Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Smead. The use of the term "hypothesis" regarding the existence of ether implies a larger conception of it and its real place in human thought than Mrs. Smead knows anything about.

not here. we are able by learning to think there to remember our thoughts and that is why we appeared [not read.] to have our ...appe ... [correction of unread word.] Earthly bodies. they are real to us as yours to u [you] but not composed of atoms.

(Good, I understand.)

it is more a mental reality.

(Yes, but it is a substance nevertheless.)

no not you[r] atomic [not read.] atomic Stys ... System here.

(I meant the spiritual body is a substance, but not material.)

E t h e r.

when coming in contact with the Earth atmosphere can by our thinking be made [written 'mane' and then 'made' superposed.] visible.

(Otherwise you are not visible.)

not to Earth. [Note 819.]

(I understand. What produces the light to make a spirit visible on the earth?)

what produces light to make a Spirit seen on earth? [Interrogation mark inserted.]

(Yes, that is it.)

it is a light given the individual Spirit from the fFather [capital to correct small 'f'] of all Lights. the substance not yet revealed to us.

(All right.)

but by coming into relationship with the Ether and Earth atmosphere can be visible to Earth friends.

(I understand.)

that Light we are not yet given the power of understanding.

---

819. Apparently the remark about the aid which the conception of atoms affords to science is one that may well be characteristic of Professor James' mind, and it certainly represents a view with which Mrs. Smead is not acquainted, as she never read a word on scientific theories and the atomic doctrine or its function. Professor James well knew as a scientific man that the conception of atoms was largely, if not wholly, an aid to the imagination and memory in the description of facts. Mrs. Smead knew nothing of the kind.

This reference to thinking making them visible may be compared with G. P.'s statement about thoughts becoming visible or audible (p. 682).

a knew kn ... ['knew' erased.] a new knowledge for us to have revealed to us.

(I understand.)

we do not ... we have not only begun our work when there friend H.

(I understand.)

Mysteries are here yet to be solved.

(Always I suppose.)

it is right that it should be so else we would be too contented [not read at time.] with our existence... well satisfied [correction of unread word.] with our existence to be willing to help others [read 'this'] and ... others ... so we must continue work here. you know a self satisfied soul would be worthless.

(Yes.)

God or The Father of all Lights is wise not to let us know all.

(Yes, Arbeit, Arbeit, Arbeit.) [Pause.] [Sign of cross made.] (Do you recognize that, Arbeit, Arbeit, Arbeit?)

[Long pause.] [Sign of the cross again made and then the sign was repeated with Omega made around it. [Pause.] The truth [pause.] well spoken. [written in changed handwriting.]

(Kühn ist das Mühlen, herrlich der Lohn.) [Repeated distinctly.]

Yes. \* \* [scrawl.] [Hand came to me and I held it some moments.] [Pause, and pencil changed in position between fingers, so that it pointed out from the hand and some of the writing done in this position, and in backhand style.]

going Hyslop. you u. d. us well. in thought we are as one \* \* [evidently an attempt to make the capital letter A, the cross mark being above it.] [Then the Omega with the cross in it was made.] W. J. [Note 820.]

820. The talk about work on the "other side" is possibly a characteristic conception, tho not evidential, but it gave me an opportunity to test the communicator's familiarity with German and with Goethe in particular, and so I uttered the words "Arbeit, Arbeit", to see the reaction. It was evident that my ruse was caught and apparently Imperator was invoked to help in the crisis, and the expression: "The truth well spoken" was a correct reaction, tho not evidence of anything and possibly a mere guess of the subconscious at my general meaning, for Mrs. Smead knows nothing of German. I then repeated two lines of Goethe's *Faust* which Professor James

[Change of Control.]

did he not give you the letter on several occasions H.

(He mentioned a letter.)

no not the one you wanted \* \* of first A [capital 'A' with a cross in it.] yes he has tried to tell it to you he says.

(Yes, I got A. I got A with that in it.)

yes and \* \* says he could not [superposing.] Could not make it clear.

(I understand now.)

you must know friend H. we have many difficulties here when talking. can hear when we cannot be heard.

(Yes, shall we . . . .?) [Intended to ask about sitting tomorrow.]

we will come again, so will go now. R. Hodgson.

(Thanks.)

the A he wants to know if its meaning is clear.

(No, the *meaning* is not clear. I got the letter, that is all.)

well he will try again.

After recovering normal consciousness Mrs. Smead said she saw a Roman cross mounted by a crescent and with a star at the left. She drew the appearance on the paper.

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 15th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

\* \* we are coming nearer you [pause.] \* \* [scrawls.]  
[Pause, and circular flourishes of pencil with no meaning save scrawls.]

M a r t h a.

(Thanks, I understand.)

[Pause.] Yes I will help too.

(I shall be happy to have you do so.)

[Pause.] Even the children are anxious [to] tell about when they played with you James.

---

himself had used near the end of his article in the *American Magazine* a short time before his death. In response there was an evident attempt to get at my meaning, but it was not evidential, tho it shows apparent appreciation of my thought, possibly a guess again.

(Good.)

[Pause.] The other brother here [Pause.]

(Yes, go on.)

says so. [Pause.]

(I shall be glad to hear about him.)

looked like your mother more than me Son James.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] yes about your age not much different. [Pause.]  
ol... [Pause.] only more like her.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Long pause.] I would I could do the talking easier but  
James it is different after I stay away.

(Yes, I understand, and can be as patient as you like.) [Note  
821.]

[Pause.] I had [Long pause.] one thought to ask you about.  
(Yes, do so.)

and [Long pause and I held the hand in mine.] it is concerning  
my baby girl. we used to be together so much, yes, would bring  
me my paper an[d] read to me when I tired of it (Yes) then I  
would seep [sleep] in my chair.

(Yes, she will be able to recall it.)

yes and how I could not go to the table for some time she  
would arange [arrange] it for me.

(Yes, that is clear.)

[Pause.] Then James you came at last and when the rest  
could do no more you were my Soul [read 'solid'] comfort ...  
soul's ... doing the last any Son could do for me, my body I  
mean.

(I understand.)

821. Martha is the name of my deceased mother. It is not probable that Mrs. Smead knew the name, tho my last Report is in the possession of Mr. Smead. We cannot make a point of it however, as it is possible.

The reference to "the other brother" was apparent to me at once, as referring to the brother that died in 1904 and thus distinguished from my brother Charles who died so long ago and was mentioned through Mrs. Piper and possibly through Mrs. Chenoweth (p. 253). Mrs. Smead knew nothing about his death or about his life. I had carefully refrained from mentioning him. He died in the West. He resembled his mother far more than he did his father. In fact his whole resemblance was of his mother. He was not much younger than I, perhaps nine years.

when all the others turned away you remained and then you took from my pockets several of my personal [personal] articles. I saw you and was made glad.

(I understand. That is clear.)

[Pause.] the [so read] y [completing word 'they'] were just mere trifles but very useful for me. (Yes.) [Pause.] and my last book did the daughter keep it, the one she was reading to me r. . . . ['reading' first read 'ready' and then corrected as hand began to rewrite it.]

(I do not know, but shall inquire.)

I did not see my son George there when I left.

(He was there, having come after I did.)

[Pause.] not . . . did not stay to help as you did.

(I do not recall it, but shall . . . . .)

I say he did not stay near me as you did.

(I understand.) [Pause.] they ere [written above 'they' read 'they are']. no. [Pause.] Hettie. [Pause. and I fixed pencil.] do you know I was glad to be free from those dreadful pains in my throat.

(Yes, I believe it.) [Note 822.]

---

822. The "baby girl" referred to is evidently my sister Henrietta who was the baby of the family. She used to get him his paper, but she did not read to him, according to her testimony. My stepmother used to read to him now and then, but he preferred to do his own reading, and when he got tired he would take a nap in his chair. There is no recognizable meaning in the reference to "arranging the table", tho it might refer to some little service during his invalidism.

Immediately after his death the other members of the family who were present scattered to their homes to return to the funeral. I was left in charge of things, and as I was one of the executors named in the will I went to his pockets and found some personal belongings, among them his knife and purse, and preserved them. My sister remembers nothing of the "last book" read.

My brother George was present at his death, but he immediately left to go home, a hundred miles distant, and returned for the funeral. This I had forgotten. It was not possible for Mrs. Smead to know these facts. But she may have surmised from general knowledge of what he died with, as alluded to in my first Report, that he had pains in his throat.

It is curious to see the name Hettie given here, the name of my sister as given through Mrs. Piper and Mrs. Chenoweth. Her name was Henrietta and she was never called Hettie in the family or elsewhere. The curious part of it is that Mrs. Smead not only knows her name but knows her personally and would not normally refer to her as Hettie.

[Long pause.] \* \* [scrawls probably for 'I'] want to tell you to ask you[r] sister no [pause.] not... [pause.] no I did not tell it. [Pause.] it was only the round table in the living room on it the record was kept in a book. you will find the brother's name there James.

(Yes, what record?) [Thinking of family Bible.]

Hyslop family Record.

(Good, I understand.)

yes and this name is there with yours.

(What book is that?)

Bible that I read from so much when you bo... were [superposed on 'bo'.] a boy. [Pause.] yes you can get it there the name.

(Yes, and can you tell me about a brother on your side I am thinking about now?)

whom I was talking of when I bean [began] to tell you about this day.

(Yes, but I want it a little more definite.) [Note 823.]

[Long pause.] he wanted me to tell you about it [pause.]

(About what?)

the name.

(Yes, if I could get any part of his name it would be clear.)

[Pause.] very few of you [so read.] r [your] friends know of him James.

(Yes.)

and [pause.] \* \* [semicircular line drawn.] C [pause.] [I held hand some time.] \* \* [semicircular line drawn again.] C

\* \* [Pause.] W. Hyslop. [Pause.]

(W. Hyslop.)

[Pause.] \* \* [scrawl.] is over there.

823. My stepmother remembers no round table in the house in her time and neither do I. The family record was kept in a bible given my father at his marriage. My name as well as my brother's is in that record. It was not in the bible that he read so much, that was used for family worship and bible reading, but in this special bible. For a long time this bible lay on a table in the parlor, and I do not remember whether it was round or not. It is quite possible and that it disappeared in some way: for my stepmother remembers this bible and record as kept on a closet shelf in her time.

(Yes, that is right. Who is on your side? That is the one you are thinking about, is it not?)

over here is one also.

(Yes, that is the one I want named.)

[Long pause.] another too here.

(Yes, tell all you can.)

[Pause.] be patient with me.

(Yes, I certainly shall.)

[Pause.] and the boy that did not love [read 'come' knowing it was not correct.] to . . . love to work with me.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] he will soon learn [read 'become' and then corrected in remarking the hesitation of the hand.] better. y[es]. to do better James.

(I understand.) [Note 824.]

is ready now to help [read 'treat'] help me and you.

(Yes, I understand. That is good.)

you know we came [read 'can'] came to you before.

(Yes, I know whom you mean now.)

and Mary too. (Yes.) yes she t . . . [erased.] is most kind to him. [Pause.]

(I understand.)

[Pause.] but he fears to tak [talk] to you yet.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] sees the error of hs [his] ways yes.

(I understand.) [Pause.] (Who was the other one you referred to?)

[Pause.] [I held hand again.] G. H. and \* \* ['ae' ?] R. H. [Long pause.] gooday [good day] Son James. [Hand re-

---

824. His name was Robert. Evidently the capital C was intended for an attempt to give the name Charles, and the reason for it in this connection is apparent to me and becomes clear in the sequel. W. Hyslop is the name of the next older brother and he is still living, just as said in the record, Mrs. Smead knowing nothing about him. The statements: "over here is one also" and "another too here" are clearly attempts to associate the Robert and Charles, for reasons that will be apparent a little later. If anything would identify this brother Robert it would be the allusion to his not liking to work. He hated work on the farm and did all he could to escape it and finally left home for city employment. Very few of my acquaintances ever heard of him.

laxed and moved to me and I changed pencil seeing that another communicator was coming.] [Note 825.]

[Change of Control.]

Hyslop he says double [read 'don't be'] [Pause.] to [too] anxious. [Pause.] d o u B B l e [double] says it you will u. d. [not read.] u. d.

(Yes I do.)

yes.

(I knew what he was after, but you know.....) [Had in mind to mention the need of having it on paper.]

knew but sometimes we can be understood by illustrations as well as by stranger [stronger?] facts.

(Yes.) [Note 826.]

[Pause.] he was so desirous of helping you that it was his light he says (Yes.) and was so good to give up to to us that we let him come this day

(I understand.)

not so much of a Scientist as the rest of us but honest seeker for the truth when there.

825. The same hesitation about communicating was mentioned through Mrs. Chenoweth in connection with this brother (p. 650), and the record shows that father did appear there with him. Cf. p. 123. My wife has been previously associated with apparent references to him. The statement: "Sees the error of his ways" contains most important history in connection with this brother. R. H. represents his initials as well as father's, the name of the two being the same. The previous initials were possibly an attempt to give those of brother Charles, but as father surrenders control it may be supposed that the "R. H." is for his own initials.

826. The change of control brought Dr. Hodgson to the explanation and the word "double" told the story. I had suspected all along that the object was to repeat the idea given through Mrs. Chenoweth where it was indicated that I had two brothers of the same name. Cf. p. 651. Charles Robert Hyslop, as explained previously, was my father's namesake and his death led to the naming of the next son only Robert, and here the association of the two brothers in the communication and the use of the word "double" shows that the attempt was to give the same and make a cross reference of it. As also explained previously (p. 651) the fact and explanation of the two names were mentioned in my first Report in the body of the detailed record which, tho it is in the possession of Mr. Smead, Mrs. Smead has never read, at least in any normal state, and there is not one iota of evidence that she ever read it in any other way.

(Yes, that is correct.)

[Pause.] we will come again to the [thee] after the Sabbath [Sabbath] H.

(Yes, that is right.)

do not leave us. we . . . . [pause as I began to speak.]

(No, I shall remain for four more meetings after the Sabbath.)

good. R. Hyslop. R. Hodgson.

(Thanks.) [Hand relaxed.]

After recovery Mrs. Smead reported what she saw and asked: "What has hearts and diamonds got to do with George?" [Note 827.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H. June 19th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

we are coming. [Long pause.]

Myers is waiting here.

(I understand.)

\* \* [y ?] [Long pause.]

[Change of Control.]

do you ask for information and receiving doubt us.

(No.)

we do our best for u [you] friend H.

(Yes, I know it.)

and [pause.] we would u [you] call us else where to verify our statements that u do not u. d. [pencil broke.] call [?] up our statements I said for verification.

(Yes, I understand.)

yes what you always told me was facts [read 'fads'] not . . . No facts u know . . . to yourself or myself were best evident . . . cial [read 'evidential' and no correction.] matter [not read and pencil broke.]

(Don't press so hard.)

matter \* \* [line drawn apparently indicating word corrected.] James and I have studied together what was best, yes yes to prove us interested still and we would you ask others at the home place city about [what?] they did until I came yes. I

---

827. There is no recognizable significance in this allusion.

[Pause.] could tell you about a fact of my experience [wavy lines, three of them, drawn across the page indicating England.]

(Yes, go ahead.)

[Pause.] where the man came from Austrail ... [pencil ran off page.] [not read at time.] unknown to me ... a u s t r a l i a ...

(All right.)

to me in [wavy line drawn for same purpose as before.] (Yes.) and walked into my room and took possession of my covering [not read.] C O V E R I N G after I had distinguished [extinguished] the C A N D L E y e s.

(Good.)

I tried [read 'lived'] to ... tried ... take hold of him but u know you could not get us if you tried. so I found it that way (Yes.) after geting [getting] possession [possession] again of the covering I was soon mad[e] aware I could not keep it. 3 times it was so Hyslop friend.

(Yes, go on.)

and I began to feel my hair curl [read 'end'] c u r l. so lighted the candle to find I was alone, B having gone out by the door.

(Yes, tell all you can about that and tell me where I shall find it.) [Supposing that the message was an attempt to answer the question I put previously to Prof. James. Cf. p. 867.]

R e c o r d.

(All right.)

English Society R e c o r d s. Yes.

(I understand.)

B had promised it should he come first. [Pause.]

(I understand.)

I could [read 'would'] not ... C O U L D ... keep the covrnig [covering] over my bed [read 'head'] c... ['covering' not read at first.] b e d. I began to wonder if I had read to long.

(I understand. Did you tell any special friend of that experience?)

over [wavy line drawn.]

(I understand.)

he went out of life very suddenly by [pause.] drowning.

(All right. I understand.)

[Pause.] old fashioned fire [read 'free'] place in that room  
... fire

(What room?)

where I put out my candle. (Yes.) [Pause.] Wooden  
bedstead of dark [dark] color feathers on the bed yes yes yes  
yes [written rapidly.] [Pause.] no [pause.] outside [side]  
quilter of the kind used now ['quilter' and 'kind' not read at  
once.] [pause.] quilt of the kind used now.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] just patched [written 'prached' and read 'practical']  
one ... patched. kind our mothers made [pause.]  
u know and I did not have many [read 'any'] books there ...  
many ... books there. always my habit to read until I felt  
sleepy.

(I understand. That is good.)

no thought of the future was in my conscious conscious [cor-  
rection spontaneously made.] mind.

(I understand.)

there was a small table there near the bed that I always put  
my candle on that I might the [read 'in', but lines are 'me']  
better [attempt to erase.] the better see while reading the events  
of the day.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] two doors were there and a dresser yes. my light  
was at ... [pencil broke.] on the left side of the bed so that  
I did not see my friend enter or [thinking the word not finished.]  
and I just saw him afterwards going out \* \* [both words not  
read.] by the door at the right. O U T by ... thought some one  
was playing tricks on me.

(I understand.)

boys from the C. [College] yes yes, thought it so. b... I  
thought to it [superposed on 'to'] so but found I found I was  
wrong.

(Yes.)

[Long pause.] B [pause.] a [pause.] I think I remember  
writing [not read.] writing at once to the friend only to find one  
on the way telling me he was gone. crossed on the ocean  
letters.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] [Note 828.]

[Change of Control.]

828. Dr. Hodgson was born and educated in Australia and spent some time as a lecturer at Cambridge University in England. He there became interested in psychic research and had several experiences, some of which were reported in the publications of the Society. So much Mrs. Smead knew or might have known. The present incident was outside my knowledge and had internal probabilities from what I knew of similar experiences narrated by Dr. Hodgson and not signed in Professor James' "*Varieties of Religious Experience*." But I was obliged to make inquiries in England regarding this particular experience and as Mrs. Sidgwick was impliedly a party who would know or could ascertain the facts I quote her reply to my inquiries.

July 11th, 1911.

My dear Dr. Hyslop:

I have made what inquiries I can but fear there is no confirmation to be obtained of the statement of Mrs. Smead's Hodgson control.

In the first place, to the best of our belief we have no record of such an experience at the Society's office, and I think if so interesting an experience had really taken place Dr. Hodgson would have sent it for publication and it would have appeared in "*Phantasms of the Living*", or at least in the Society's Journal. He might, of course, have thought it for some reason undesirable to give the name of the dying person, but that could easily have been kept private, so that I do not think it would have prevented his sending an account of the case. However I have communicated with two of Dr. Hodgson's most intimate college friends, sending them your letter and questions and asking if they could throw any light on the matter. They were both ready to help in any way they could, but both felt sure that they had never heard of any vivid experience of the kind.

Friend A, however, remembered something about the pulling of the clothes or some such incident, but has 'no memory whatever of the crossing letters or the promise to appear nor the threefold apparition.' Friend B remembers that Hodgson had, on one occasion, a conscious experience in which an Australian friend seemed present in spirit and produced a strange feeling in his legs as though the friend were stretching his trousers. This, however, is not the same thing as pulling the bed-clothes, and the friend does not think that either Dr. Hodgson or himself felt any confidence in the psychical origin of the experience. They were very intimate and the friend as much interested as Hodgson in psychical phenomena, so that he feels confident had Hodgson seen this apparition vividly he (the friend) would remember it well.

As to Hodgson's bed-room, friend A cannot remember ever being in his bed-room. Friend B says he had several bed-rooms during his college days. He remembers being in one of them on one occasion when Hodgson was ill, but remembers nothing whatever about it except that the bed was in the corner of the room and that the room was not long and somewhat narrow. In

myers friend. Hodgson told me so when there [last two words not read.] w h e n t h e r e. yes.

(What did you do with the incident?) [Thinking it was Professor James trying to identify the incident wanted.]

left it with the Recorder at the Office.

(All right.)

[Pause.] my name is Myers. he said to tell you I knew about it.

(All right. I understand perfectly.)

H. I did not know the friend myself.

(I understand.)

was there anything more for me to tell? [interrogation point inserted.] about it? [inserted.] me [Pause.]

(Not that I know of. You are doing well.) [Pause.] (When I asked my question about what you did with it I had another person in mind, so it can go on.) [Note 829.]

[Change of Control.]

[Scrawls in a point.] H. it was one of my first experiences.

---

attempting to recall the picture, he says he puts a cheap iron bedstead and a patched quilt in, but he is far from clear about the latter. He does not think he kept any books in this bed-room, but had a vague remembrance of a small case over his bed.

This friend says Hodgson had a reading lamp in those days, one of the kind that has a receptacle for oil on one side of it. He used to read very late into the night, but his friend did not know that he got sleepy in so doing, nor that he read in bed usually, and the other doubts it. On the occasion when he saw Hodgson in bed there was a small table by his bedside. As a wall was on his right and the table on his left the light would of necessity have been on his left.

I ought to add that the rooms occupied at the time of the vague impression of the presence of an Australian friend mentioned above were not those to which the bed-room his friend saw him in belonged.

The friend says that he has memories of Hodgson which would prove crucial tests of identity, and he is very sorry that he can give no real help in the present instance.

I am afraid this is all we can find out in answer to your question. I am sorry not to be more helpful.

ELEANOR MILDRED SIDGWICK.

829. After the notes of Mrs. Sidgwick it is interesting to see the dramatic play of confirmation by Mr. Myers and his reference to the "recorder at the office."

(I understand.)

to \* \* [read 'record' and not corrected.] a positive belief [so read.] belief in an ['a' superposed and 'n' begins next line.] existence outside of the earth body.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] ask for Hodgson['s] first written act [read 'act' and 'fact'] account of his personal experiences while over [waving line drawn.] (Yes.) and they should give them to you.

(I understand.)

wait wait. perhaps another will [not read.] will remember too the lady S. can called [partly superposed to erase 'can'] S. yes.

(S. is not clear to me who it is?) [Thinking of Miss E., Dr. Hodgson's later Secretary.]

no. [Pause.] E d g w i c [pauses between each letter.]

(Sidgwick.)

ask it to remember it as near as possible.

(Yes, I shall.)

[Long pause.] [Note 830.]

830. It is interesting to see allusion to Mrs. Sidgwick in this connection, as she is one who would be a natural source for information on the matter. How far Mrs. Smead may have known her to be the proper source, or one of the proper sources, for information we cannot tell now and perhaps Mrs. Smead could not herself tell, when allowance is made for obliviscence.

But I must call attention to the most important feature of this incident. It is substantially a mixture of the three experiences narrated in Professor James' "*Varieties of Religious Experience*" which Mr. Smead possesses and has read, marking passages in it that have interested him. He has not, however, marked these incidents and in fact no narrative of experiences, but only certain generalizations that have touched his intellectual interest. While Mrs. Smead has not read this, it is possible that Mr. Smead may have mentioned the incidents with some details to his wife. But Professor James does not mention Dr. Hodgson's name in connection with them. He says only that they are experiences "of an intimate friend of mine, one of the keenest intellects I know" and lets the matter rest there.

Now when Professor James was communicating I asked him to tell me who had told those three experiences (p. 867), not mentioning what they were, in his book. I happened to know from Dr. Hodgson himself, after the publication of the book, that he was the author of them, and I thought it would be a good test of James' identity to have it told, maugre the telepathic hypothesis. But I did not get a clear answer, tho I did get through both Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Smead, in answer to the same question, a refer-

[Change of Control.]

M a r y we brought all to [three words not read.] brought all to you. [letters wavy.]

(Yes, go on.)

did he make you hear him James George.

(Go on.)

[Pause.] would come too [pause.] tell [written 'vell', but read 'tell' and no correction made.] about shirking [so read.] shirking \* \* [probably 'says'] he [Long pause.] did not stay at the farm yes we [so read and 'he' written above, and then 'here' superposed on 'we', intending for 'where'] we... where we went when I was first with you James.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] do you remember it.

(Yes, but I am not sure whether it is George or another that is in mind.)

ence to Dr. Hodgson (pp. 274, 867), but not indicating his authorship. It is apparently a splendid device to avoid the telepathic hypothesis to have Dr. Hodgson tell the experiences themselves instead of having Professor James merely answer my question by giving the name. In any case the incidents fit the hypothesis that they are an answer to the question, tho their evidential value is more or less completely vitiated by the presence of Professor James' volume in the house.

The points of common interest or coincidence in the story told in the volume of Professor James and the present incidents are: (1) Experience at college; (2) After retiring; (3) Thinking of intruders; (4) Reference to blowing out a candle; (5) Occurrence of the same phenomenon on three successive nights; (6) Tactile characteristics in the experience; and (7) Description of incidents that suggest to readers a visual apparition which in fact seems not to have occurred.

On the other hand, there was no allusion to the following incidents. (1) The appearance of an Australian friend; (2) Pulling of the bed-clothes; (3) Reading after retiring; (4) Description of the room; (5) The crossing of letters; (6) Name of party concerned; (7) Mr. Myers as one to whom it was told; (8) Record in the Society's office; (9) Association with Mrs. Sidgwick.

Were it not for the presence of Professor James' volume in the house the points of coincidence mentioned by Dr. Hodgson's friends, if not conclusive of some significance, would be suggestive at least, and they may be so still, tho the evidence of this is not what is desirable and would be variously interpreted by different people.

[Pause.] dark hair. dark hair James and rather thin face dark eyes.

(Yes, is he on your side?)

[Pause.] over here near me now.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] whom I wrote you.

[Pause.] [wavy line drawn.]

(That is right.)

yes yes you heard it. (Yes.) [Pause and scrawls.] dark hair and eyes I said, did you hear.

(Yes I heard that.)

dark grey suit too color [collar] to turn [not read.] down collar [collar] to turn [read 'trim' tho clearly written.] d... no. TURN too.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] P L E S type [not read.] please try for him. [pencil changed.] [Pause.] James he will not talk for himself.

(I understand.)

his eyes were darker than yours.

(Yes.) [Note 831.]

[Pause and scrawls and in the midst of them a vertical line drawn as intending to make the upright part of the cross, but the cross was not finished.] Says Martha [read 'mother'] Martha Martha.

831. Apparently my wife was acting as amanuensis for my brother Robert and an allusion to my brother George would be a mistake, if we supposed that it was meant, as is apparently the case, that he was not living. The shirking and not staying at the farm applies to my brother Robert, as explained previously, but the shirking does not apply to my brother George, still living, but he did not stay at the farm. He moved to the place where my wife says we went when she was first with me. This statement evidently alludes to our wedding trip on which we visited this brother George. None of these facts could possibly be known to Mrs. Smead, unless she may have learned casually the name of my brother George who is mentioned in the Piper Report. It also came through Mrs. Smead at earlier sittings. My brother Robert had dark hair.

I am not sure whether the reference to writing across the water has any recognizable meaning or not. If it means what is possible it represents a remarkably interesting incident which I shall not now narrate.

The reference to the suit and collar is not intelligible. This brother's eyes were darker than mine.

(Yes.)

does she hear. [Pause.] F. [not read and hand came to me which I held awhile and then it returned to its place.] F. [made of wavy lines both times.] [Pause.] Tell \* \* martha I was with \* \* him F. [pause.] here [pause.] yes [line as if to erase 'here'] there [?]. [Pause.] he would send him word Send word to him yes yes. F. yes. RANK HY [two letters not read.] Hyslop [p] [pencil ran off page.]

(Yes, I understand.)

do u [you] know now. (Yes.) and \* \* you know martha [not read.] Martha yes.

(Yes, perfectly.)

Hyslop too yes.

(Yes I do.)

but tell mother I came with Mary [pause.] and \* \* she [not read.] did the talking for ... I me She. [last few words in correction of my reading.] yes.

(I understand.)

Kiss [not read.] Mata [Martha] Kiss Martha for me.

(All right.)

yes baby [pause.] Hyslop martha [not read.] Matha [Martha.] James you know.

(Perfectly.)

yes ask her how the big grey [read 'buggy' and quickly corrected.] kitty is (Yes I shall.) for [read 'fre'] papa ... for yes yes.

(I understand.)

Mary says we lived in the Same city in the same City over there where I came from.

(That is true.) [Note 832.]

---

832. Martha is also the name of my brother's daughter and Frank the name of her father. It is possible that Mrs. Smead has heard the name mentioned in conversation with my sister, but she never saw the child. She knew that I had a brother living in Philadelphia and that Philadelphia was the home of my wife. My brother, however, is not living in that city at present, having moved into the country about two years ago. But she could not know the pertinence of the incident about "the big grey kitty". This little Martha has no cat, but on her last visit to us in the city she was so passionately fond of a big grey doll cat that we had to hide it when they

[Pause.] James tell mother for me and sister to [too] that I will come to the home and try to talk [pencil broke.] to your baby for hre [her] yes that [read 'but'] she can ... that ... know me there yes. my wife will be glad to know you had found me.

(Yes, who is this?)

it is Brother. I am trying to tell you Mary said it was easy if I did not stay too long.

(Yes, brother who?)

\* \* [looks like it might be 'W', 'M', or 'L'.] from P. yes Pa. yes [Pause.] youngest one of the boys. do you remember?

(Yes, but I understand he is still living. Is that right?)

I did not say it otherwise.

(I understand, but then ....)

I would send the word to him to [pause.] who has mixed us up.

(Wait. I wanted only to have my record straight, as your thoughts come out on paper. Sometimes they are only part of what you think. You can go on. I shall understand.)

I... now you will have to wait again f.... [friend.] he is confused.

(I understand perfectly.)

[Change of Control.]

Sometimes it seems as if when we try to talk if not used to it H. we think ourselves others so get confused.

(I understand.)

and we have to keep a clear head as we said when there.

(I understand.)

he will not try again this day say [so read.] he fail [feel] ... says... feels the fever burning over [not read.] all over yes.

(I understand.)

and the lungs [read 'lys' thinking it 'lungs'] do not ... lungs do not work easily.

(I understand.) yes. [Pause.] [Note 833.]

started for home to prevent her wanting to take it. I had known nothing whatever of this incident.

833. Apparently my brother tried to communicate for himself, with the aid of some one, but what was said is too confused to make any evidence of it. He was the youngest but one of the boys and that was Frank who was

[Apparent Change of Control.]

James I was anxious to have him try but I hope it will be all right again.

(Yes, I am sure it will.)

I was sorry to bring back the trouble to him. friend Hodgson was near so that he helped him out at once.

(I understand.)

I get so anxious for your success.

(I understand, and have done all I could to help keep things clear.)

not your trouble mine [not read.] here ... mine ... I was over anxious that he do so.

(Yes.)

now we are to go and I feel another opportunity wasted [wasted].

(No, it has not been wasted, as I know how to treat the facts.)

Mary F. H. Hyslop. R. Hodgson [Long pause.]

After recovery of normal consciousness Mrs. Smead remarked that everything was all mixed up, and then asked: "What has William Penn to do with this business? I saw him just before I came out, a picture of it. It is all mixed up." [Note 834.]

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 20th, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

myers friend. we are coming do you hear us. [fine handwriting.]

(Yes I hear.)

---

previously mentioned. He was never married. The P and Pa. are evidently references to Pennsylvania, the previous home of Frank of whom he was apparently trying to speak further. The letters not clearly decipherable have no meaning unless they were an attempt to give the name of the brother William, next older to him in age.

The allusion to his lungs giving him trouble is interesting. This brother Robert died of tuberculosis. The fact was never known to Mrs. Smead and to very few outside the family.

834. It is possible that the "picture of William Penn" is a reference to his statue on the Philadelphia public building. My wife knew it well, and if it is this the allusion to Philadelphia and the presence of my wife might explain it as one of those involuntary messages which seemed to come several times through Mrs. Chenoweth. Cf. pp. 160, 189.

[Pause.] [Figure of Turkish spire or minaret drawn surmounted with a cross, not read and so same figure repeated.]

(I see that figure but do not know what it represents.)

[Pause, and then straight line drawn with another pause, followed by an entire change of handwriting.]

If you desire you can do so.

(Do what?)

Yesiekah [spelled out to have it rewritten.] [Pause.] Yesicah. [read as written.] [Pause.] Yesisah. [Pause.]

well you will want to wait awhile George to get it through I fear [?]

(All right.) [Note 835.]

[Pause.] is [?] [Pause and scrawls.] G. P. would \* \* you \* \* [about it?] [not read.] G. P. would ask you to learn how many times his mother prayed for his Soul's [possibly 'her Son's', but not probable.] \* \* \* \* many times she would wait for him at night wondering if he would ever see as here. . . [Pause.] She did the way of truth and life. [Pause.] when he was a boy she tried to teach him to pray but [pause.] as he grew older departed from it and was sorry [erased.] sorrowful it was indeed [read 'intend'] no indeed to see her praying for the boy. he says he just could not believe without reason and so drifted away into S C E P T I - C I S M yes.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] until he met H. (myself) [parentheses inserted.] then we two made the promise for the future yes and Hyslop friend you know the rest.

(Yes I do.)

much has been done for the poor woman's prayers. She did not pray in vain. [Pause.]

(No, I . . . .) [Note 836.]

835. The figure and the name closely associated with it here are not intelligible.

836. G. P. makes here an effort to communicate through R. H. and the reader will observe some very interesting dramatic play between them at times, reflecting a knowledge by G. P. of the liabilities which coincide with what he said through Mrs. Chenoweth.

I cannot give the incidents which show the meaning of this first message, but I learned from a friend of G. P. that it is strikingly true.

there was a book that G. P. says he had when he fell ("Fell"?)  
yes [Pause.]

(I understand.)

yes. [Pause.] tells it as if it were not se . . . cerious [serious]  
at all [attempt to erase.] at all. [Pause.] always was like that H.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] only sorry at heart to have caused the trouble to  
others but for himself [written 'ef' then 'lf' added.] it was a  
joke always so.

(Yes.)

the book he says he was sorry not to finish reading. it was  
about our work [pause.] not a tec. . . [not read.] work at all.  
F [erased.] T E C. [technical].

(I understand.) [Note 837.]

and he had not quite fulfilled his earthly desires to be the  
judge of the court there in New York.

(Good, I understand.)

[Long pause and scrawls.] mastering [read 'strange'] the  
. . . no mastering the fine points all right [pause.] as far as pos-  
sible after [pause.] one gets on their own resources yes.

(Give . . . . .)

Then . . . [Pause.]

(Give my love to G. P.)

and I am glad he saus [says] we do not differ so much now  
[?] Then father felt so discouraged. thought I was surely a  
lost Soul.

Tell him Hodgson all I say.

(I understand. Take your time.)

it [pause.] was anothers carelessness that sent me here.

(I understand.) [Note 838.]

---

837. There is no known evidence that he had a book when he fell, from the consequence of which he died. Mrs. Smead, I believe, did not know how he met his death, but Mr. Smead thought it was falling from a horse, which is false, but he may have mentioned it to Mrs. Smead.

838. The ambition to be a judge is not verifiable. If true it was probably a private and personal desire and unavowed to any one. He was a lawyer and it would have been natural to entertain such an ambition, and Mrs. Smead did not know that he was a lawyer.

I have tried to save the rest of our company from coming unprepared.

(That's correct.)

and so they cannot call me now the lost soul.

(That's good.)

it is not according [according] to the Law that one be cast out without trial. therefore they should have been just to me.

(Narrow ideas . . . . .)

yes to too to much so, for here it is freedom of the mental powers always. (Yes.) expansion friend Hyslop never ceasing always moving upward toward the greater light.

(Yes, many will have to wait for the . . . .) [other side to learn.]

yes but alway[s] a chance without the condemnation of others holding them down (Yes.) as it was in my case mentally on the Spiritual Side of their thinking. I was only a little ahead of them in thought.

(Yes, the same with many others.)

yes yes, but Hyslop friend did you see the clothes I had on when I fell.

(No, I know . . . .) [nothing about the incident.]

I had a black hat yes. [Pause.] mixed suit [Pause.] and my book was w . . . [delay in reading book.] was worth more to me that [than] all I had on or with me, yes. [delay in reading.]

(I understand.)

Tell him all H. I say. he can patch it together and get out of it what is left.

(Good.) [Note 839.]

yes yes. [Pause.] I have been trying to get Hodgson to let me try alone but he says no [not all read.] that I was not . . . no [to reading.] let me try alone but cannot persuade [read 'personate'] him . . . persuade ['w' might be 'u'] says you would u. d. why.

(George, when you can, tell about the work elsewhere.)

too bad I mad[e] a mistake in judgment with Hodgson. he says it nearly spoiled the whole effect, but I did not know that

---

839. A friend of G. P.'s says that it was more probable he was wearing a dress suit when he fell, as he was on his way home from dinner.

others had the influence with + (Imperator.) as we did thinking ours [read 'ones' and had started to erase when I read it 'ours'] was all there was but It was a mistake in judgment.

(I understand.)

not for meanness.

(Good, I understand.)

and I tell H. he should let me try to prove it so [several words not read.] No, should let me prove it so .. says I must do it through him for fear of old prejudices.

(I understand.)

yes and now I feel more like the wandering boy as my fixed light is vanishing [not read.] va... [suddenly read.] yes. they on your side have spoiled that and I try now everywhere I can to help.

(Yes, tell all you can.) [Note 840.]

and at the man I went with you [read 'your'] you we would [read 'waited.] would [read 'wanted'] no [suddenly read.] help him more but sometimes he seems not so pleased to have us [read 'his'] us, the friend I mean to the n o r t h yes.

(Yes, go on. You will identify him yet more clearly.)

[Pause.] w o r k at not pictures but some kind of fancy [read 'family'] no f a n c y work with a machine. we would help him as it will hurt his eyes if he does it too much in the artificial light.

(I understand.)

then [read 'there'] each of us try [read 'by'] Then each of us try to help when you are wih [with] the lady not from [erased.] far from you.

(Good, I understand.)

we go by way of the air not cars.

(I understand.)

on the ground.

(What work or profession is that man you help?) [Physician in mind.]

S M I T H. you know the rest.

---

840. G. P. with the Piper group through Mrs. Piper had condemned the Smead case as worthless, and these remarks are relevant to that episode. Mrs. Smead knew the facts.

The reference to the wandering boy and the spoiling of his fixed light is to Mrs. Piper and now G. P. does apparently manifest at various places.

(I see.) [Recalled Thompson, the painter.]

yes, you u. d.

(You refer to the man that painted.)

[Pause.] E N G r a v i n g [not read.] [Pause.] E n g r a v i n g. \* \* \* \* Smith was near enough. could you not u. d. without having to be struck as I was.

(I had in mind another person. That is why I wanted that cleared up.)

[Pause.] When I say it it is because I know it is not I making the mistake now.

(I understand.)

it is the one on your side. I helped to improve the li... [read 'improve' as 'impress' and then corrected it.] yes, the light. I have had to do it from here of course [course].

(I understand.)

and I wanted you to know and tell about it that he could be more careful of his e y e s. (yes.) to be . . . . [Note 841.]

(Who else on your side helps him?) [Deceased physician in mind.]

that is another matter. I was only telling what I did to help Encourage him. this is our work to do and as the Gentleman was determined to make himself known I offered to do so for him to try the E x . . . [read 'experiment'] for I knew something about renewing the light and so he and I together controled him yes.

841. It is not quite clear here to what man G. P. refers. There are two or three men "in the north", their mediumship being wholly unknown to Mrs. Smead, who have represented G. P. as present. One of them is quite willing to have him communicate through him; another is not unwilling; the third has been a little shy or reluctant about the Emperor group. But the further communications show that Mr. Thompson is in mind, who was the artist apparently under the influence of the dead Gifford and to whom Vol. III of our *Proceedings* was devoted. Mrs. Smead by this time knew all about the case and the moment a male psychic was mentioned to her subconsciousness it evidently inferred that he was meant. The spontaneous correction of the error is interesting.

The allusion to helping the man with his eyes points to the physician I had in mind, as some care had to be taken of his eyes during his development of psychic power. He, however, was willing enough, tho possibly he had some conscious and subconscious fears about the consequences when he had to care for his eyes. Mrs. Smead knew none of these things.

it is an host [read 'a lost'] case Hyslop ... h O N E S T case Hyslop and there are others which you are inclined to doubt and call [read 'care', and hand started to erase when I read it correctly.] differently but if you could see the pleasure it gave us to see you trying [superposed and read 'together'] trying to solve the power you would not think we were lost Souls.

(Yes.)

we tried [read 'had' without excuse.] our best ... no t r i e d ... to get here [read 'here'] ther.. [read 'there'] no her to tell you we were there, but it was a differ... [pencil ran off page and read 'difficult'] ent kind of work and we were not sure of our succeeding.

(Tell more .....

wrapped [rapped] out to you on the table but did not know as you heard us as we cannot hear as you do.

(I understand and got some good messages through that case, but its value was for other matters.)

yes yes. it was us trying to help but as in most cases the controls do not u. d. the work we desire to do and are loath [loth] to give up to us and so we asked to help that we could get in [read 'our'] in in [written above previous 'in', and I still read the first case as 'our'] no in I N... our get in our force points.

(I understand.)

yes the lights you saw were us [read 'this'] us.

(Good.)

she cannot see only lights not persons as if in the bodily form, not advanced enough for that just beginning to have the light for practical use from our side. hence we could only be seen in that way.

(I understand. That explains much.)

yes u [you] should record it that we helped there, our group.

(Yes, I have already published it.)

yes yes yes yes we came to help but did not know you knew we were there Hyslop friend.

(Yes I knew it.)

as we cannot always be sure of success. [Pause.] It is a strange feeling to see you folks in those houses yes and not be sure by you.

(I have got used to that.)

yes so it was with us but now we would did ['die', but read as written.] over again with suffocation... we would die

(That is all right.) [Note 842.]

[Pause.] there is a lady to the west of this that could you find here [her, and so read.] we would be able to talk to you.

(Yes, tell me all about her, as I do not know about her. I may learn later.)

we will try to get for you but we cannot [cannot] \* \* ['easily'] tell you now as we have seen the light is clear there [there]. I do not know this region [read 'right now' doubtfully] b... r e g... [read.] yes but its name is that you have ... no [to reading of 'name is' as 'names'.] by the names you have. I will try to get more about her soon.

(All right.) [Note 843.]

[Pause.] there is another that you went to [line drawn across the page to right.] that I would take the friend from [wavy line drawn.] to but I do not see you going there at present. [pause.] possibly soon [pause and pencil turned on point.] I [pause.] goodbye now G. P. and I will close. you are \* \* getting confused and it will take my time [two words not read and one superposed.] my time to get you out of that hole again.

(I understand.)

go away now and leave me \* \* \* \* \* [looped scrawls made in form of a circle and attempt at some letter in it, then erased.] alone. I want to write it myself. not so I said this time. [Pause.] I will as you like it. Goodday friend Hyslop G. P.

842. The change from the male psychic to the Burton case was so gradual that no line of demarcation is perceptible till the reference to rapping came when it was clear to me that Miss Burton was meant. The allusion to raps and lights was spontaneous, as the reader will see. The account of the controls there and the case in general is accurate enough, but as the Report was in the possession of Mr. Smead no evidential importance can be attached to the statements, tho Mrs. Smead had not looked at it. for some of its phenomena had been the subject of remark by Mr. Smead.

843. I do not know to whom reference is made here, but I know of one medium west that was mentioned through Mrs. Piper by Dr. Hodgson and while I was experimenting with Mrs. Smead I received a letter from a member mentioning a case for experiment and the lady lived in the West. I have no evidence that either she or the previous one mentioned was the person in the mind of the communicator.

(Goodbye, thanks G. P.) [Note 844.]

and now leave. [Hand moved to me and I changed pencil.]

we are going to go now H. I will come again on the morrow.

(Good.)

yes.

(It has been good today.)

it is always my wish to let them try to do it if I can alone but  
I... [pencil ran off page.] I must use my own judgment in *his*  
c a s e.

(I understand.)

and one or two other ones that the light may not recoil [read  
'record'] r e c o i l from the touch of one not in harmony.

(I understand.)

G. P. is sure to wait. he is playing now that he has on a black  
gown and C A P with a tossel [tassel] on it. the gown has  
sleeves quite wide yes and says he does not intend to preach to  
you but practice at the Bar [one letter not certain and so not  
read.] bar.

(I understand. That is being a judge.)

[Pause.] b... [Pause] B [pause.] r u c e.

(What Bruce is that?)

[Pause.] good morning friend H. I must go now. R. Hodg-  
son. [Note 845.]

On recovering normal consciousness Mrs. Smead reported  
seeing a man that looked like Gladstone only it was not Glad-  
stone. The man had a broad forehead, little hair on top of his  
head but heavy hair behind, blue eyes, and full beard cut  
square. His collar was the kind that stand up and turned  
over in front. He wore a dark necktie of kind with strap that  
goes around the neck and through the tie.

---

844. This allusion to the friend across the water is a significant one,  
but I am not certain who the other person is. The lady across the water  
had a number of sittings with Mrs. Chenoweth and one with Mrs. Smead.  
Mrs. Smead, however, does not know who she is and also does not know  
that she is "across the water". This group, including G. P., was very much  
interested in the communications that came from the husband of the sitter.

845. The name Bruce in connection with Dr. Hodgson has no meaning  
whatever to me. The sequel, however, probably indicates that he was the  
person involved in the apparition described in the previous sitting (pp. 905-911).

Mrs. S. J. H. H. June 21st, 1911. 10.30 A. M.

myers friend.

(Greetings this morning.)

\* \* \* \* [' greetings friend ' ?] we are comminmg [pause.]  
we are coming.

[Pause.] do you know B. H.

(No, but shall be glad to hear what you say.)

but will come here soon.

(All right.)

R U C E [read ' ROCC ' at time.] B R U C E.

(I understand.)

yes will soon come here do you u. d.

(Yes perfectly.)

[Pause.]

[Change of Control.]

I T I S L I K E B e g i n n i n g to learn all over a g a i n to talk  
this way.

(I understand and shall be glad to hear from you.)

[Pause.] n o, I would rather experiment for myself.

(All right.)

I always did my own work not depending on others.

(Good, I understand.)

and hence I do now that my conscience [so read.] ousness  
continues to sirvive [survive and read 'serve' thinking letters  
duplicated.] v i v e yes I [pause.] did not think as deep eeply  
[superposed and not read.] deeply as I should have when there.  
was afraid it would carry me to what I am now compeled [com-  
pelled] to believe.

(I understand.)

sirvival [survival] after death (so called) [parentheses in-  
serted.] not [erased.] should not be called death but life con-  
tinued.

(Yes, I understand.)

fix it up so in a new phil [uncertain of reading.] Phil. [read  
'Philosophy'] yes never [read 'more'] say we are dead.  
never.

(I understand.)

never never never

(I understand.)

[Pause, and vertical line drawn in scrawls.] and even the other planets do have life there not all just like the Earth people but some like them on others of a different what shall [shall] I call it form [read 'for in'] fom [read 'from' and erased.] of p... form of personality.

(Good, I understand.)

but always a life element to leave it at the entrance of a new existence (Yes.) (death) [parentheses inserted.] you would call it.

(I understand. Tell me what you can about your earth life.)

[Pause.] Oh that is it yes. I would sometimes talk and others wrote yes and teach [read 'touch'.] no [read 'teach'] yes a sort of \* \* [scrawls in form of double loops.] e x p e r i m e n t e r of the himan [human] intelect [intellect] yes. [pause.] some- times I thought it was all due to [delay in reading 'due'] to the Hypnotic influence of man to to man. nothing more. [Pause.]

(Go on.)

but it surely [read 'rarely' doubtfully] goes farther ... s u r e farther than the influence of one be [erased.] conscious being over the other.

(Yes, do you recall what your profession was in the earth life?)

[Pause and scrawls and letters probably made but not made legibly.] .... F E S S O r at one \* \* ['called' ?] U n i v e r s i t y, yes yes yes. [Pause.] \* \* [at one ?]

(Yes, tell all you can.)

\* \* [scrawls.] in a [pause and pencil fixed: hand held.] P l a c e near some Highlands. do you hear me.

[Sentence read loudly.] (Yes, I do.)

yes yes. [Pause and hand held.] not far from where they look at the Stars and all other forms of life in the Universe yes.

(Yes.)

[Pause and held hand.] Logos 'Logos', but read 'Loxox' purposely.] Logos [read 'Logos'] Y E S [not read.] [Pause and I spelled letters out but not for 'Yes'] u [you] can get the in [?] some [Pause.]

[The word "Logos" was written in Greek letters, but the

sign for Gamma was made like "Xi" or the Greek for the sound "Ksi". Hence "Loxox" would be the strictly correct reading of it.]

(That last word.) [referring to 'Yes' and read 'ES']  
[Hand held.]

[Pause.] w [?] [Pause.] well It is all right any way. I am not afraid to be made known. it is my desire to be known if possible.

(Yes, I understand.)

[Pause.] the Logos [Logos] is right yes the the truth it contains means more than is given it by the ordinary thinker. Some of it is what should be called astronm... onomy and Sciences the \_\_\_\_\_ as well as what is taught for it has, friend, changed much in its thought for it is very very narrow now or we should not have had to suffer the problem to solve for it is plain to us that it was not intended to be so but it has friend H. become M i x e d with the thought of the E g y p t i a n y e s.

(I understand.)

we can se [see] it when coming here. their ways are very near the front of thought in the ages es [written above and read 'eyes' and then corrected.] yes past. they were the very best thinking people at one age age [correction of obscurity in first attempt.]

(I understand.)

clearer I mean altho to po... put it into the thought of others it became more *Mystical* [underscored.]

(Good.)

but we find they were the best clearest thinkers and did the best work in the [star and crescent drawn, but crescent not interpreted.] and also for making buildings of stone.

(What is that after the star?)

[crescent drawn.] c r e s e n t [crescent]

(All right.)

they were foremost in that. [Pencil fixed, sheet changed, and hand held, followed by long pause.] You know. do you know that they will again be foremost in the discovery of things if they will only heed the command of the higher thought.

(Good.)

they live long and do not live for earth alone.

(I understand and I understand why that may be possible.)

[Long pause and hand held.] [Note 846.]

I will be near when they say I must go from here that I can be recognised yes.

(I understand. All right.) [Long pause and hand held.]

[Change of Control.]

W. J.

(Good, greetings.)

[Pause.] we are glad to be here with you. [Changed pencil and sheet.] [Pause.] There are so many today trying to learn our method... learn [not read first time.] our method. should you not get the desired [read 'used'] no desired information do not be discouraged (No.) as we would show it from our side.

(I understand.)

[Long pause and hand held.] do you know I was thinking you could ask for the information at the other light that talks concerning the [Pause.] Phinuit regime.

(Go ahead.)

yes and about our first meetings yes you try to confirm our Statements.

(Yes.)

[Pause.] The Record I did not have it was over to the other friend turned yes [Pause.] and you can ask on your side of the first ones. [Pad change and pause.] I could [read 'would'] tell concerning the room but I fear ar [fear] you would tire of it the description [pause.] and so will leave it.

(Can you tell the incident you referred to the other day as happening across the water?)

at the other light.

(Yes, it was mentioned there.)

and you want me to tell it.

(Yes, here.)

---

846. Careful inquiry in England and Australia fails to find any identification of the name Bruce assuredly as a friend of Dr. Hodgson, and none of the incidents associated with that name can be verified. Mrs. Sidgwick made inquiries of a Cambridge friend of Dr. Hodgson and this friend seems to "vaguely remember an Australian friend of that name" but Dr. Hodgson's sister does not recall such a person.

[Long pause and held hand.] no I tried it and failed to get the other [Pause.] sign.

(You promised to bring one other here. You got . . . .)

I promised to you.

(Yes, you promised to bring a certain message about what happened to you across the water.)

and [Pause.] [Omega with cross in it made.]

(I got the Omega with the cross before. It is something more.)

[Long pause and hand held with pause after releasing it.]

\* \* ussis [Pause.] we are all here and I would tell but confusion of thought is here and now we can [not] today give clear thoughts.

[Sentence read suspecting that 'not' had been omitted.]

we [not we] cannot as each is desirous of watching . . . Each is [not read first time.] yes. [Pause.]

(I understand.) [Note 847.]

[Long pause, hand held and then long pause again after its release.] \* \* \* [apparent efforts at shorthand, and when pencil ran off page it was not renewed.] [Hand held and long pause.]

The Light is being examined on our side. [wavy writing.]

(I understand.)

tested for the benefit of the students here that they may learn [not read.] . . . yes [suddenly read.] to know a clear one.

[Long pause and hand perfectly passive for a time then began to tremble slightly, with a long pause again.]

myers and the friend with the Machine for testing are gone [Pause.] it was on with a \* \* [upright lines drawn with several for base.]

(Cross?)

no \* \* [again an upright line with base drawn.] and a balance from over [wavy line drawn across page.]

(I understand.)

it was taken from the room with glass cases [pause.] and in these fine tools are kept there.

(I understand.)

---

847. I had in mind here the "pink pajama" test which Professor James promised through Mrs. Chenoweth to give through Mrs. Smead. The reader will observe its failure. Cf. p. 781.

laboratory [laboratory] of experimental Sciences.

(I understand.)

yes. [pause.] and is well pleased with the results yes.

(I understand.)

they [read 'nothing'] left for they ... they left for they would not let the light see the machine.

(I understand.)

[Long pause and hand held.] going friend H [pause.] yslp.

(Yes, will meet again tomorrow.)

and yes but I will try to keep that promise to you. all promises to you if not at this opportunity will try without your presence.

(All right.)

[Pause.] yes I must go. It is effecting [affecting] me. [Hand quickly moved to me and I held it awhile and released it. Then a pause and a cough.]

[Change of Control.]

\* \* [you] have had a good time here today Hyslop [pause.] and So many of the faculty [not read.] present ... faculty ... present that we [Long pause and hand held.] could not resist it this ... r e s i s t ... this time.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] R. Hodgson. Bruce. W. J. ['J' written first and then 'W' inserted before it.] Friend Myers and F. P.

(Greetings to all.)

yes. good day now.

[Hand relaxed and after a pause I removed the pencil from the hand. A considerable pause followed and I noticed the hand moving again as if to write and I quickly inserted a pencil when the following came.]

albert Prince of Wales yes.

(Yes, thank you.)

[Pause.] not [pause.] king now.

(I understand.)

only one with the others.

(Good, I understand. Whom shall I tell?)

my good wife. [Hand relaxed.] [Note 848.]

---

848. The only significance that can be given to this real or alleged com-

After recovering normal consciousness Mrs. Smead: "That is funny. I just came out by a tunnel. I now see the letter G [pause.] e [pause.]" [at close she got D. making G. E. D.]

"Saw two men, one of them not clearly. The other had a broad forehead, full face, white, as if he had not been out of doors much, heavy mustache and dark, dark hair and eyes darker than blue, dark brown not black, open vest and collar with tie passing around it, the tie being one that you tie yourself. Dark clothes. The other man I merely got a glimpse of, blue eyes and sandy complexion. He went so quick I could not see any more of him. The first one stared as if getting a picture taken."

[Early in this sitting the motion of the hand toward me indicated that I was desired to hold it and as it seemed to help out the confusion I did this on every occasion when a pause might indicate the need of it. I do not know whether it was a help or not. But in all but one or two cases the writing began at once and easily on releasing my hand.]

After dinner Mrs. Smead lay down for a sleep and on awakening she saw the letters S T D. The significance, if any, is not discernible as yet. Possibly Doctor of Sacred Theology.

Mrs. S. J. H. H.

June 22d, 1911. 10 A. M.

[Scrawls.] coming nearer friend Hyslop. Myers yes.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Myers yes. we wanted to tell thee not to hope too much at the light where [read 'when'] next we meet. no ['where' correctly read.] yes. not too much I say.

(I understand. Where is that to be?) [No arrangements or expectations exist on my part.]

[Pause.] not at the city. [Pause.] but we will endeavor to remember our promises and give them to you [you] f [erased.] if possible.

(Yes, do you remember a message . . .)

[Circles drawn.]

---

munication from King Edward VII is that he was mentioned through Mrs. Chenoweth and his death predicted by her two years before its occurrence. There might have been some attempt here at something like cross reference

(two years ago I asked you to give elsewhere?)

[Pause.] about the light. (No.) [Pause.] there not there.  
(It .....) you (was simply .....) \* \* \* \* [scrawls, possibly  
for wavy line.]

[Long pause.]

("My purpose is to sail".... Now the rest of it.)

[Pause and hand came to me to be held which I did.] [Sentence repeated.]

o v e r [wavy line drawn to signify across the ocean.]

(Go on.)

w... [Pause, and circles made.] over the [wavy line.] \* \*  
['wo' or 'too'.] [Pause.]

(I can't read it.)

[Pause.] a across to the \* \* [pause.] and see how it \* \*  
[then pencil turned around making scrawls.] \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \*

[Probably attempt to say that Mrs. Verrall will send it to you,  
tho not exactly in those words.]

(All right. Never mind. Give it up.)

[Pause and scrawls.] \* \* [possibly for attempt at 'Mrs. V'.]  
\* \* [possibly 'report'.]

(Don't waste the energy.)

[Writing begins slow and wavy.] Mrs. Verrall will tell what  
I went [read 'want'] w e n t for.

(Good.)

[Pause.]and why I said so.

(All right.)

was to investigate and report to you.

(All right.)

substance is different that [than] just \* \* words.

[Intimated by attempt to read that I could not do so.]

no. substance differs little. I sailed over there. It is not  
possible to get \* \* [your] \* \* words \* \* \* \*.

[Intimated again by attempt to read that I could not do so.]

[Pause, and writing became quite clear.] over to the other  
side with H's light to see how it went and we have told you our  
results.

(I understand.) [Note 849.]

---

849. Miss Johnson recently informed me, while this report was in press,

[Hand came to me and was held and pencil fixed.] we have kept our \* \* [word ?] with it and ... [pause.] wait there is another interested one that we would ask you to tell (All right.) about letting the light be free. he is over [wavy line drawn.] and has taken f... friend P place. u [you] know him too.

(Go on.)

[Pause.] but must wait till it becomes clearer. [Pause.] it is P. also [Long pause.] I [pause.] d [pause.] i n i g t o n [Piddington] [pause.]

(Piddington.)

[Pause.] e v e r r e a d y. [wavy letters, and last word not read immediately.] [I read last three letters.] [Pause.]

('Ready?')

[Pause.] yes ever ready. [Not read at time.]

[Long pause, perhaps five minutes.] Friend \* \* \* \* do u [you] not often \* \* [talk?] here. \* \* \* \* \* \* \* \* [four lines illegible.] so but you will u. d. sometimes when he is alone he does not often try to talk with [superposed, and hand pulled down,] just shows\* \* [scrawls with double loops like 8.] [Pause.] friends \* \* [were] coming \* \* way and [pause.] I would let [read 'tel'] another try [read 'by' doubtfully.] [pause.] no I would let [read 'tel'] another try [read 'by'] cry [try] let.

("Let another try". All right.)

H. says... he says ask for Joseph at the Royal Society over [wavy line drawn.]

(Yes.)

came about 8 or ten Sabbaths ago. was in the Army of the King of England and very very much interested in the work of proving we live over here.

(Good.)

Say I had [read 'tried'] no h a d medles [so read knowing it incorrect.] m e d a l s from the Society for the services rendered her Majesty [Majesty] and the King also.

that they had found some evidence of success in the message which I had sent in the quotation from Tennyson. I find on comparing with my records that it was sent through Dr. Hodgson and not Mr. Myers. Just what the message received there was I do not yet know.

(Good.)

[Pause and scrawls and pause again.] was a life time member and from my schooldays was in the services yes. not navy [read 'many'] n a v y not \* \* but [pause.] I was interest[ed] in the Home [not read.] services and ... Home services... and went to India at [read 'and'] one time... *at one time* [under-scored.] and some of my medals were for H O N O R.

(I understand.)

yes. I was a personal friend of K. of England [read 'King of England'.] not so well acquainted with the rest of the family but you ask the Queen if she knew me.

(Thank you. I shall.)

she will tell you [Pause.] I was often there with them. [Pause.] I had a gold one.

(Gold what?) [Thinking a watch was meant.]

and bronze medals that the King gave me personally yes.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] wonder if they would not change the papers for me and give friend Lodge some of the money I left for the \* \* [read 'task' doubtfully and not corrected, tho letters seem 'tasce'] [pause.] we are all right. that it could help the others. I had enough If I had only realized it [pause.] [I] could have helped in a material way perhaps. The endorsement I can give \* \* ['will'] not be too late [not read.] now... late.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Just ask friend Lodge to identify me.

(I shall.)

he will know it as a fact. (Yes.) yes. [Pause.] They would call me a General [small 'g' first and corrected.] in your country, yes.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] [Pencil made scrawls in a line like letter 'n'] I had considerable land yes [pause.] in England itself, not in the C o l l [pause.] onies [superposing 'o' on second 'l'] [colonies]

(I understand.)

[Pause.] c h u r c h m a n.

(Good.)

not of the Wesleyan [not read.] type ... W E s l e y a n

[pause.] yes. did not agree with them. [Long pause.] my sister is on your side. [pause.] coming to her at home soon.

(Good, I understand.)

Lodge will remember my Sudden departure from the Shores of our home land. came almost without giving him word.

(I understand.)

just like receiving orders yes. [pause.] not time to change my plans.

(I understand.)

[Pause.] Else I would have talked to him more freely about the finances of his work. tell him for me and tell him I send my respect [hand paused and started to add a letter when I read it 'respects' and writing continued.] to the Queen. he will understand.

(Yes, I shall.)

all my manhood days were in the Services yes and at the call of my country. I was not a \* \* [erased.] young man either, not very old but somewhere around the sixties yes.

(Good.)

[Pause and scrawls like figure 8] and also tell Lodge I had walked East for several years and had been Knighted also yes.

(I understand.)

yes. do you think friend Hodgson they will know me yet.

(Yes, they will.)

[Pause and scrawls in form of circles.] wait I will come to you [pause.] H [written quickly.] friend. we give the full name if possible next place.

(All right.)

ask for it yes. [pause.] friend of 8 or 10 Sabaths [Sabbaths] in our midst [read 'know well at'] in our midst.

(I understand.)

yes [pause.] you will get it from Lodge as soon as you ask him. [Pause and scrawls.] E V E a r d [read 'we are' doubt- [Pause.] go with you to your journey.

fully.] λ ε γ τ [Lambda, epsilon, gamma, tau. and so read.]

(Thank you.) [Note 850.]

---

850. Careful inquiry in England for identification of the man who had been in the employ of the King fails to obtain any recognition of either the man or the incidents. Those who might know cannot identify him.

[Pause.] M [read 'in', pause and then read 'M'.] a [?] [pause.] it takes us too long to give it you. [Pause.] May the Greater light go with you in Spirit and Truth always Friend Hyslop. R. Hodgson.

(Thanks.)

[Pause.] we would all write but you ... [two words not read.] but you know our B E S T wishes are for yours and our Cause yes.

(My greetings to all until . . . .)

good morning friend [pause.] J [then pencil made a curve about the top of the letter, and then drew some straight lines followed by an apparent attempt to make Omega or a circle.]

it was engraved for me.

[While getting dinner after the sitting Mrs. Smead got the message: "It was Parliament I meant." No person was associated with it.]

[Last night also while awake and just getting ready to sleep she saw a face come up clearly near her face. She kept still and would not move. The face looked at her and began to move off, but said: "As long as you have seen me you might as well look at me." The man had a mustache and whiskers cut square. They were dark brown. Hair was combed over on the left from the right.]

[An hour or more after the sitting Mrs. Smead saw an apparition of an officer in the army with regalia, hat and plumes, white or light gauntlet gloves, strap or belt around his waist. The hat was of the Napoleonic type or resembling it. With the apparition she got the impression that he was an officer of high rank, that he was an Englishman, and that he "had travelled east to the 33rd degree", which meant that he was a Mason of that degree, according to statement of Mr. Smead, who is a Mason.]

---

I take it that Everard is a reference to Mr. Fielding of whom Mrs. Smead more than probably never heard. Mr. Piddington she may have heard of in connection with the Society's publications. Mr. Piddington's father was not named Joseph and neither is Mr. Piddington himself so named, tho his initial is J.

## ADDENDUM.

After this Report was in page proofs the allusion to a fire in connection with the railway incident (p. 669), which I did not recognize at the time or when making my note (Note 593), suggested or recalled to mind the reference to fires by my father through Mrs. Piper (*Proceedings Eng. S. P. R.*, Vol. XVI, pp. 324, 371, 372 and 430), and the incident about a fire learned long after and mentioned in the review of President G. Stanley Hall's book (*Journal Am. S. P. R.*, Vol. V. pp. 9-12). The facts are these. It was in connection with this railway described in the long messages of this Report that my father received his fright about his barn being on fire and when he arrived home he found that the fire was a mile beyond his home and "near where the train went into the village." A freight train had halted across the track and my father with my stepmother and sister had to wait there an hour feeling all the while that it might be his barn on fire. This circumstance I did not know until writing this addendum note, having learned when reviewing the above mentioned book that it was at this railway crossing that the incident occurred. It was thus quite natural that an allusion to a fire should be made when speaking of the railway. The message did not at first recall the facts and not knowing until now exactly where the fire really was I had no means of suspecting the possible meaning of the reference to it.

Now Mrs. Chenoweth has not seen my Report published in England and referred to above, so that she had no means of suspecting the significance of alluding to a fire at all. Besides there was no association whatever of a fire with this railway or any other railway in that original Report. But I had discussed the incident in the review of President Hall's book and Mrs. Chenoweth saw that number of the *Journals*. I did not, however, make the slightest allusion to the association of the fire with the railway and did not myself know where the fire had been until writing this statement. Hence

Mrs. Chenoweth, if she had noticed the discussion in the *Journal* would have had no reason to associate it with this railway and much less to locate the real fire "near where the train went into the village" which was true.

Also since writing Note 602, p. 678, and while reading the final proofs I recognize that it is quite possible the gun was at one time used to shoot skunks which were very troublesome in the early days. That animal is here fairly described, tho we should expect another mode of identification. But as the "mental picture" method is used it would probably be more difficult to resort to the method in mind. At any rate the skunk is clearly suggested in the animal with dark fur and pointed snout, the resemblance to the fox or wolf being in the last detail.

Again in reading the final proofs which came long after the Introduction had been completed and were not further revisable, I noticed that an interesting allusion had been made in the work of Mrs. Smead regarding the influence of thought in making spirits visible. As stated this view is not exactly a confirmation of the "mental picture" method of communicating, but if the idea has been distorted in the passage through Mrs. Smead's mind, it might refer to the same thing. In any case there is the recognized influence of thinking on visibility which suggests the limitations on the occurrence of apparitions, while it involves the same general principles as "mental pictures."

Again after all the page proofs had been read and returned I was reading over some of Dr. Hodgson's records returned to me from England two or three years ago and unexamined until now, and I happened upon one of a haunted house reported by Professor James. It came from the wife of an editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* confirmed by relatives and others. It was a case well calculated from its source to excite the interest of Professor James and may modify the note I wrote, regarding haunted houses, Note 280. The incidents were not evidential and some of them, apparently supernormal physical phenomena, finally obtained an easy and natural explanation by the informants. But the intelligence of the sources of them together with a number of curi-

ous mental phenomena associated with the house might well provoke interest, if only for their subjective character. They occurred in Massachusetts, as intimated in the record (Cf. p. 377), and this was spontaneously indicated in reply to my question. There is no definite evidence that he was referring to this incident. It would have required some detail of the experiences or a reference to the *Atlantic Monthly* to determine this and such reference is lacking. But it is worth noting the coincidence of a haunted house in Massachusetts and a written record of the same on file by Professor James as at least a suggestive coincidence. The additional circumstance that it was one in which he would be specially interested makes it possible that he had it in mind.

A particularly interesting incident of the same kind was the discovery of the meaning of "Ich Liebe Dich" described in Note 576, p. 653. I got the same message through Mrs. Chenoweth several years ago and had never verified it. The sequel showed how easy it would have been proved had I known how to go about it. Pure accident brought the facts within my knowledge as the Note shows. I had not recognized the song by name and only the familiar character of the music when played by my daughter led me to inquire what she was playing. The answer came at once and an incident which might have had to be declared unverifiable turned out true and especially evidential.

Now all these incidents show every clearly how additional value may be given to statements that do not appear at first to be verifiable but which become so when we are able to ascertain the facts. They throw light upon what might be said if we could in any way discover the meaning of other unverifiable incidents, and suggest that probably all the statements would prove correct and evidential if we only knew the conditions under which they were given, and which distort them in the transmission. Take the fire incident above. The allusion to fires along a railway completely threw my mind off the track as to the possible meaning of the incident and it is probably a subconscious modification of the message growing out of Mrs. Chenoweth's knowledge of such fires and the association of the allusion with a railway. But the

accident of finding that there were true and very significant statements in it in spite of this distortion cleared up the possibilities completely and suggest that, if we could determine the causes of distortion in individual instances we might give some sort of evidential value to all statements in the record. If the picture method of communicating be the one employed in all cases it would necessarily guarantee the veridicity of the facts, even tho the minds of both medium and intermediaries modified them in the passage. In any case the fact of increasing the evidential incidents with further study of the records deprives scepticism more or less of its tendency to raise doubts on the basis of unverified incidents. We find by experience that apparently false or unverified statements often yield to further inquiry and greatly strengthen the evidence where superficial investigation seemed to discover no meaning in the facts. The importance of this should be apparent to the man who is enamored of telepathy. It is the facts which prove so remote from the sitter's knowledge and presumably or provably unverifiable in his experience that must vitiate telepathic theories and sustain the spiritistic.

## INDEX

- A; 262, 404, 490, 886, 898, 899. with cross in it; 899. Old fashioned English; 856. priori possibilities; 6.  
A—; 620, 658. Aunt; 520. Miss; 504.  
A I; 463.  
Abbreviations; Use of; 526, 539.  
Abby; 658.  
Abe; Never another; 553.  
Abrupt changes of subject; 75.  
Absolute; Tapping the; 34.  
Abstruse topics and mental pictures; 27.  
Abyssinia; 307.  
Accessory problems; 42.  
Accident on a railway; 80.  
Across the water; To show something; 233.  
Ada; 691, 692.  
Adams; 521.  
Adda; 657, 658.  
Adders; 707, 708.  
Addie; 410, 411, 691, 692.  
Adeline; 411.  
Adirondacks; 732.  
Adjustment; 301. Lack of; 88. Nature of life to seek; 495. See also *Communication*.  
Affinitization; Chemical and magnetic; 507.  
Agricultural College at Amherst, Mass.; 520.  
Agriculture; 519, 520.  
Albert Prince of Wales; Communication from; 929.  
Alderberries; 599.  
Alec; 480.  
Alice; 695. Brother of; 230.  
Allen; Miss; 214, 278.  
Allie; 593.  
Amherst, Mass.; 520.  
Amnesia; 8, 14, 82, 83. of Mrs. Chenoweth; 223. Normal; 307.  
Amos; 620.  
Anæsthesia; 14.  
Andrew; 469. Picture of; 553.  
Anna; 173, 339.  
Anna Laura; 152. Death of; 561.  
Annie; 152, 173.  
Anonymous communications; 272, 414, 421, 459, 460, 579, 843.  
Aphasia; 83, 87, 88.  
Apparition; 935. of Prof. James to Mrs. Smead; 865, 866. of two men; 930. See also *Communication*.  
Apparitions; 31, 95. seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 241. may be caused by another agent than the apparent one; 32, 33, 34. Method of causing; 897. Mental pictures and; 30, 33, 34, 937. Ordinary theory of; 33. Influence of the thought in causing; 937. and thought transference; 137. Three types of; 30. See also *Communication*.  
Apple butter; 797.  
Apples; Dried; 598.  
Arbeit; 229, 898.  
Archives; 355.  
Arena; 515.  
Argumentative man; 738.  
Arlington; 475, 478.  
Arm of Mrs. Chenoweth inert; 107.  
Army;—cloak; 549. of the King of England; 932.  
Arthur; 222, 490, 740, 741.  
Article often as good as a person; 405.  
Articles;—Be cautious about the; 878. Mrs. Chenoweth does not see or touch the; 412. Desire left on the; 406. First experiment with; 417. Influence in; soon gone unless carefully guarded; 116. must not be touched by medium; 852, 867. See also *Hold, Influence, Object, Reminder, Token*.  
Association;—Law of; 435. Law of; 62. and intensity of mental states; 87.  
Associations; Marginal; 55, 56, 683 cling to spirits; 271. and spiritual life; 435. See also *Memories, Memory, Past, Recall, Recollections*.

- Assurance; Crown of: 508.  
 Astrals; Projected: 31.  
 Atlantic City; 721, 722.  
 "Atlantic Monthly"; 937.  
 Atmosphere; 301, 527, 612. Earth;  
 Spirits living in the: 130. Earth's  
 Risen above the: 891. of clear  
 and lucid expression; 507. of a  
 man; Coming into the: 410. and  
 sounds of physical world; Com-  
 municator conscious of: 59, 293,  
 of the psychic: 697. Sensitized:  
 537. Spirit: 310. Spiritual: 510.  
 diverts the thought; 697. Getting  
 used to the: 459. In your: 253.  
 Atmospheres: Like: essential to un-  
 derstanding; 434. See also *Aura*.  
 Atoms; 897. and souls; 895. and  
 spirits; 896.  
 Attacks on isolated incidents: 15.  
 Attention; Associates of constrained:  
 512.  
 Attraction; Law of: 435. spiritual:  
 Law of: 434.  
 Attuned to the harmonies of spiri-  
 tual life: 272.  
 Audile: Mrs. Piper probably more  
 of an: than Mrs. Chenoweth; 28.  
 Auditory Imagery; 28.  
 Auf wiedersehen; 478.  
 Aunt;—Illness of Dr. Hyslop's: 46,  
 439. S; 656, 657.  
 Aura Pantomines; 144. See also  
*Atmosphere*.  
 Austen; Jane: 489, 615. See also  
*Jennie P.*  
 Australia; Sister of Dr. Hodgson  
 in: 361. Man from: 906.  
 Australian friend present in spirit;  
 908.  
 Authorities; Self-constituted: 14.  
 Automatic;—communications: 512.  
 power; 301. thinking; 511, 589,  
 594. Writing. See *Writing*.  
 Automatically; Doing fine as long  
 as he went on: 511.  
 B— 517, 721, 906, 907, 924. Mrs.: 319.  
 R or: 632.  
 B—; 676, 745. (Boston); 521.  
 Miss: 836, 876. and O—; 663,  
 664.  
 Babel: 794.  
 Baby;—grand; 729. Little: 362.  
 Robbie's: 362. talk; 53, 216.  
 Badgered; Communicator should  
 not be: 855.  
 Balm of Gilead; 677, 679.  
 Balzac; 435.  
 Bancroft; 688.  
 Band of the Light; 564.  
 "Banner of Light"; 233.  
 Barn of R. Hyslop; 109.  
 Barnaby; 652.  
 Barney; 242.  
 Barnum; 640.  
 Barrel; 109, 616.  
 Battery; 881.  
 Beard; Scraggly; 363.  
 Beatrice; 320.  
 Beauchamp; Miss; 61.  
 Beds and pillows; Feather: 46.  
 Beebe; Mrs: 610.  
 Bees; 760.  
 Beeves, hogs, and rabbits; 32.  
 Bell; Light heard a: 591.  
 Bella; 233.  
 Bells; 579. in her ears; 591.  
 Bench; Cobbler's: 545.  
 Benjamin; 151.  
 Bert; 443.  
 Bertha; 349.  
 Bess; 278, 320.  
 Bessie; 129, 319.  
 Betsy; Aunt: 46, 606. (Cherry);  
 596, 598.  
 Biarritz; 745.  
 Bible; 485. Gutenberg: 82.  
 "Bigelow Papers"; 203.  
 Bill or Billy; 592.  
 Billy; 356, 592, 890, 891.  
 Bingham; Mrs.: 371.  
 Birds in the chimney; 554, 555.  
 Bishop L—; 130.  
 Bitters; Cherry; 599, 607.  
 Blackboard; 336.  
 Blackness; Liquid: 625.  
 Blacksmith shop; 629.  
 Blavatsky; 326.  
 Board sometimes disagrees; 794.  
 Boat; 44, 261, 339.  
 Bob; 792.  
 Bobbie; 46.  
 Bodies; Spirits forgetting that they  
 have left their: 130.  
 Body;—a 'dead' one for use of  
 communicator; 188. of medium  
 a cold, inanimate thing; 281. of  
 medium sleeping when under  
 control; 441. a cloak for mental  
 processes; 60, 63, 682. One: and  
 one Spirit through all creation;  
 208. See also *Adjustment, Con-  
 trol, Hold, Light, Medium, Pos-  
 session*.  
 Bœthius; 275.

- Bomb in the camp; 517.  
 Bondage: Spirits held in: by...desire of earthly friends; 323.  
 Book:—in a library; 81. with loose sheets; 461.  
 Books; R. Hyslop, Senior, did not like to mark his: 46, 103.  
 Bose; 735.  
 Boston; 430, 475, 527, 721.  
 Bournemouth; 745.  
 Bow; Hard for Frank Podmore to learn to: 888.  
 Box:—like a chest; Big: 466. White paper: 81.  
 Boy; Curly haired, dark eyed: 524. Little: in dresses; 253.  
 Boze; 735.  
 Brackets; square: Use of: 93.  
 Braid; Small: 488.  
 Brain:—Control of; of medium: 298, 306. 'Dead': 306. as a dead planet; 306. forces; Mental attitudes and: 166. inactive; 306. photographs; Wandering: 52, 171. thought pictures; 638.  
 Brass candlestick or lamp: 557, 558.  
 Breakdown:—Runaway: 80. Sudden: 150.  
 Breathing: Difficult: of Prof. James; 88.  
 Bridal gown; 607.  
 British Society; 506. Work of: too circumscribed: 393. See also *England, English, London, S. P. R.*  
 "Broken recollections"; 52.  
 Brookfield; 70.  
 Brooklyn; 447. Philosophical Association; 325.  
 Brooks; John Graham: 338.  
 Brooks; Phillips: 696.  
 Brother:—of Mrs. J. H. Hyslop; 108. of Aunt Julia; 46. Little: in the spirit land; 253.  
 Brotherhood of Humanity; 294.  
 Brothers by the same name: Two: 651, 904.  
 Brown; Frank: 611, 612, 614. Communication from: 610.  
 Brown; Dr. Howard N.: 491.  
 Browning; Robert: 299, 300, 364, 366, 443, 456.  
 Bruce; 923, 924, 927, 929. Communication from: 924.  
 Bryan; 761.  
 Building; White: with marble columns; 123.  
 Bull; Dr.: 345. See *below*.  
 Bull;—Doctoring a: 602. matter: 781.  
 Bull; Ole: 515.  
 Bull; Mrs. Ole: 208, 249, 515.  
 Bull; Dr. William T.: 493, 504, 523, 545, 781. not known to Mrs. Chenoweth; 515. Communications from: 494. seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 492. See also *W. T. B.*  
 Bull; Mrs. William T.: 495. See also *M.*  
 Bulls; Two: 781.  
 Bumble Bee; 695, 807.  
 Bundy; Colonel John C.: 358, 359. See also *John C.*  
 Bureau; Red: 46.  
 Burkitt; Joseph: 383, 384.  
 Burns; 202.  
 Burton Case;—329, 447, 450, 451, 452, 921, 922. Cross reference with the: 446. Dr. Hodgson and the: 447. Mrs. J. H. Hyslop and the: 448. Lights in: 921. Raps in: 921.  
 Burton; Miss: 168, 188, 452, 453, 864, 922. Prophecy by: and by G. P.; 454. 'Spirit painting' at home of: 453.  
 Butchering event; 32.  
 C; 690, 902.  
 C. D. W.; 512. See also *Carroll D. Wright*.  
 C. H.; 762.  
 C. H. and D. R. R.; 664.  
 C. W.; 244, 518, 523, 529, 565, 612, 639. See also *Carroll D. Wright*.  
 C——; 327, 606, 739. Mrs.; 542. R.; 749. Silas: 471. W——; 360.  
 Cablegram; 368.  
 Cablegrams; Like sending: 154.  
 Calamus; 706, 707.  
 Calculus was his God; 514.  
 Calderon; 73.  
 California; 430, 864, 869.  
 Cambridge; 239, 249, 296, 887, 889. Co.; Conservative: 259. conferences; 208. House; 893.  
 Canada; 583.  
 Candlestick; Brass: 557, 558.  
 Cap; 380.  
 Capacities of the supposed communicator; 58.  
 Carl; 411, 421, 759. Schurz; 759, 760.  
 Carlisle; John G.: 762.  
 Carlton; 387, 457.

- Carnegie; (Andrew): 269, 283, 286, 289.  
 Carny Hospital; 504.  
 Caroline; 534, 710, 713.  
 Carpenter's tools; 46.  
 Carpet; Rag; 556. Slippers; 398.  
 Carr; 381.  
 Carrie; 381, 499, 501, 523, 641, 710, 736.  
 Carrington; Hereward; 327.  
 Carroll; 240. (Gregg); 241. See also *Carroll D. Wright*.  
 Carruthers; Mr.; 558. Uncle; 645, 762. See also *Aunt Eliza*.  
 Carson; Dr.; 710.  
 Carton; 513.  
 Casabianca; 316.  
 Case of leather; 484, 485.  
 Casket; White; 389.  
 Casks; 617.  
 Catalepsy; 106, 302.  
 Catholic nurses; 504.  
 Cecil (Smead); 584.  
 Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia; 500.  
 Center Sandwich; 869.  
 Centres; Connections between the two; 444.  
 "*Century Book of Facts*"; 519.  
 Chairs with painted decorations; 557. Parlor; 557.  
 Chalk talk; 830.  
 Changes of subject; Abrupt; 75.  
 Charing Cross; 831.  
 Charles; 239, 410, 411, 519, 651, 762. (Carroll Gregg); 421. (Hyslop); 288. Robert; 651.  
 Charlotte Corday; 730.  
 Charlton Speer; 457.  
 Charybdis; Scilla and; 172.  
 Cheese;—and toasted crackers; 193. Edam; 337. press; 550.  
 Chemical and magnetic affinization; 507.  
 Chenoweth; Mrs.; 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 12, 13, 21, 23, 24, 25, 26, 132, 175, 178, 182, 203, 229, 250, 361, 844, 865, 867, 870, 874, 883, 891, 900, 901, 904, 910, 915, 916, 923, 930, 936, 937, 939. Abstruse topics of thought and mental pictures; 27. Amnesia of: Apparent; 82. Audile; Mrs. Piper probably more of an; than; 28. Auditory imagery; 28. Automatic writing; Never does; unless Dr. Hyslop is present; 25. Butchering event; 32. Charge for services; Com-  
 pelled to make; 13. Clairvoyance of; 534. Clairvoyance; Trance; 25. Clairvoyant method habitual and functional with; 25. Communications colored by subliminal influences; 26. Communicator limited by subliminal of; 27. Communicators: Less sign of abnormal condition of; than in Piper Case; 481. Comparison with Piper and Smead cases; 24. Conditions seem very good; 140. Control of matters communicated; 29. Double control; 23, 30, 83. German; Does not know any; 478. Hallucination; Telepathic; 26. Illness of; 486. interest; Primary normal; of; 21. James; Prof.; Ignorance about; 7. Mental picture of the past; 32. Mental pictures; 25, 26, 27, 28. Mental pictures and abstruse topics of thought; 8, 27. Mental pictures and direct control; 65. mission; Regards her life as a; 13. Motor system never figures in her ordinary work, except vocal organs; 25. names; proper; Difficulty with; 27. Nervous breakdown; 440, 450. observation; Under; 13. Omega through; 97. Pelham; George; Knowledge of; 10. phantasms; Telepathic; 26, 32. Piper; Mrs.; supposed by; to be superior to any other medium; 351. Podmore; Frank; Ignorance about; 7, 9. Possession less perfect than in case of Mrs. Piper; 84. Possession; Telepathy and; 26. results; Gets best with unknown communicators; 14. Sarcou; 136, 680. Sarcou she; 535. scientific investigation; Resented; 8. Sick; Complained of feeling; 438. Starlight control; 25. stepmother of Dr. Hyslop not living; Thought; 39. Subconsciousness of; a factor in the results; 26, 49. suspicion of; No reason for; 13. Telepathic phantasms or hallucinations; 26, 32. Telepathy and possession; 26. Trance clairvoyance; 25. Truthfulness of; 7. visuelle; Probably more of a; than Mrs. Piper; 28. Wright; Carroll D.; Ignorance of; 7.  
 Cherries; 598.

- Cherry; Betsy: 596, 598, 607. See *Aunt Betsy*.  
 Cherry:—bitters: 599, 607. rum: 598, 607. tree: 770, 771. wine: 607.  
 Chest; Big box like a: 466.  
 Chester and then P: 472.  
 Child:—Growing up of a: 117. Little: 45, 46, 488. Little: with Professor James; 152. Small: 316.  
 Chocorua; 98, 153, 864. Post office: 359.  
 Choice; Rights of: 176.  
 Christ; 129, 527.  
 "Christian Science"; 397, 399, 640.  
 Christopher; 762.  
 Christos; Another: 331.  
 Chrysanthemums: 329.  
 Church; 671, 700. and *Psychical Research*: 532. Spirit going to: 129. Street; 349, 361, 362.  
 Churchill; 671.  
 Churning; Dog that had done the: 32, 46.  
 Cider; 797. press; 599.  
 Cincinnati; 665.  
 Cinderella; 333.  
 Circle; Taking hands at a: 374. Prof. James sure he made a: 310. Spirits sitting in a: 536.  
 Circuit:—Complete contact would make the: 160. work; 314.  
 Circular letter; 858.  
 Cistern; 805.  
 Clairaudience of Mrs. Chenoweth; 442.  
 Claire; 572.  
 Clairvoyance; 381. of Mrs. Chenoweth; 226, 241, 534. of Mrs. Smead; 302. Trance; 25.  
 Clairvoyant method habitual and functional with Mrs. Chenoweth; 25.  
 Clarence; 458.  
 Clark:—College: 240, 513. University; 186, 189, 195, 268, 525.  
 Clarke:—family: 458. County home; 794.  
 Classification; 356. of phenomena; 498.  
 Clear; Communicator not: 84. and lucid expression; Atmosphere of: 507.  
 Clergyman; 501.  
 Cleveland; Grover; Someone like: 308.  
 Cleveland, Ohio; 387.  
 Clippings; Book of: 522.  
 Cloak; Army: 549.  
 Clothes; Home-made: 802. Spirit: 30, 33.  
 Coach; Stage or: 694.  
 Coat; Military: 550.  
 Codfish; 791, 799, 800.  
 Coffee; 193, 300. prohibited by Imperator; 46.  
 Coincidence; Chance: 34, 35.  
 Coins; 307.  
 Cold felt by communicator; 860.  
 Collective experience that proves the spiritistic hypothesis; 40.  
 College; 368. sign; 99.  
 Collegiate world; Power and prestige of the: 498.  
 Collins; Samuel: 747.  
 Collyer; 747.  
 Colored; Thought: from one sitting to another; 482.  
 Columbia; 521, 610.  
 Comanche; 515. Indian; Starlight a: 25.  
 Combination:—communication: 526. of influences; 526, 536. for work; 782, 783.  
 Combined force; 526.  
 Commissioner of Labor; 241.  
 Common:—Boston: 202, 349, 361, 362. Seat on a: 349, 361, 362.  
 Communicate without thinking; Problem to: 449.  
 Communicating:—like sending cablegrams; 154. Complexities of the problem of: 57, 114. Condition for: 188. fascinating; 281. Forces ... do not always readily blend; 293. isolation or inhibition during; Necessity for: 114, 115. methods of: Two: 89. Mistakes in: 49. Process involved in: 683. Secret of: 188. Trance state while; 188. "One word at a time"; 112, 114. See also *Communication*.  
 Communication:—affected by all spirits present; 114, 115. colored or changed; 529. Harmony necessary to clear; 884. more direct in case of Mrs. Smead; 21. easiest soon after death; 133. Process involved in: 683. Reasoning during; 51. No royal road to: 188. seems strange, remarkable and fantastic; 494. Trivialities and mistakes in: 528. truth of: Prof. James never sure of: 143. Unintentional: 189.

See also *Adjustment, Body, Concentration, Control, Hand, Hands, Hold, Light, Medium, Machine, Organism, Possession, Pressure, Psychic, Rapport.*

*Apparition, Clairaudience, Clairvoyance, Film, Mental Pictures, Phantasms, Vision.*

*Article, Articles, Influence, Influences, Reminder, Token.*

*Battery, Contact, Current, Electric, Electricity, Harmony, Hypnosis, Hypnotic, Hypnotism, Line, Lines, Link, Magnetic, Magnetizing, Nervous, Post-hypnotic, Suggestion, Telepathic, Telepathy, Thought, Thoughts, Sensation, Wireless, Wires.*

*Communicate, Communications, Communicator, Communicators. Consciousness, Express, Expressing, Expression, Expressions, Evidence, Evidential, Influence, Influences, Mental Pictures, Message, Messages, Mirror Writing, Pencil, Pencils, Secondary Personality, Trance, Transmission, Vision, Writing.*

*Confusion, Difficulties, Difficulty, Distortion, Doubt, Dream, Dream-like, Dreams, Drowsiness, Earth-bound, Guessing, Hallucination, Hear, Hearing, Identity, Illusions, Imagination, Inhibit, Inhibition, Intensity, Interfusion, Intrusion, Involuntary, Limitations, Marginal, Mixed, Personal, Personality, Personelle, Secondary Personality, Sporadic, Subconscious, Subjective, Subliminal, Think, Thinkers, Thinking, Uninhibited, Unintentional, Volition.*

*Depletion, Energy, Force, Hold, Power, Pressure, Strength, Tension.*

**Communications:**—Automatic; offer no guarantee of evidence; 512. colored by subliminal influences; 26. cannot always come in completeness; 697. Confusion in: 49, 114. caught by contact; 51. Contents of: not always known by the direct communicators; 310. Deferred: 78. direct in case of Mrs. Smead; 91. often of dual nature; 529. "Earth Souls" affect: 114. Fragmentary; 117. free and easy when automatic; 512. Human element in: 532.

Imperfections in: 12. Influence of spirits on: unintentional; 246. Intrusions in: 77. Involuntary; 146. Limitations in: 49. which discount mind-reading; 109. Mistakes in: 49, 246. Mixed: 574. Mosaic nature of: 87. Repeated: 121. If: are not spontaneous they get mixed; 517. affected by subliminal of medium; 193, 237, 238, 252. which discount telepathy; 109. Triviality in: 49. made without volition; 51. See also *Communication.*

**Communicator:**—afraid of pain; 129. should not be badgered; 855. away from body of medium; 504. Capacities of the: 58. Cold felt by: 860. concentration in the: Power of: 74. conscious of atmosphere and sounds of physical world; 59, 293. conscious of sitter; 148. cannot control the whole organism; 870. Doubt in: impregnates the aura about the Light; 353. Drowsiness of: 71. not entranced; 59. "feels the fever burning"; 914. can hear; 433. can hear, but cannot see; 495. Dr. Hodgson knew too much to be a good: 54, 254. limited by subliminal of medium; 27. Memory of: 293, 641. Name not on mind of: 482. has no sensation of nerves; 281. Ordinary person makes the best: 5, 56, 77. not conscious of pad or pencil; 494. gets partial statements through; 471. may know very little of what penetrates the veil; 82. unable to proceed as when in the body; 529. never quite sure of result; 208, 278, 310. cannot see paper while at work; 188, 282. cannot always see sitters; 432. cannot see writing; 403, 495. Self-conscious spirit makes the worst: 594. Sensations of: 495. has sensations of last illness; 914. enters a world of sense; 280, 293. helped by sitter; 536. Influence of sitter on: 118. cannot talk to a spirit while writing; 519. Effect of thinking on: 589. Thought of: independent of head of medium; 281. Thought of: influenced by sub-consciousness of medium; 88.

- Thoughts of others color those of: 470. Thoughts of: on paper sometimes before he knows it: 683. not doing as he wished: 449. See also *Communication*.
- Communicators; Change of: 882. not "clear": 84. have to concentrate: 870. dependent on the incarnate for opportunities: 135. dependent on steady and current work: 563. Differences between: 74. good: Some spirits are not: 74. helped by expressing: 332. Inexperienced: sometimes think themselves others: 914. inexperienced: Tendency of: to wander: 22. mixed in thought: 892. use phraseology and ideas of medium: 424. sure of themselves before they come: 464. do not know how much they get through: 208, 278, 310. See also *Communication*.
- Companionship; Spirit: 177.
- Compensations even for early death: 627.
- Competition; 538. See also *Evolution*.
- Concentration;—Normal life rationalized by: 73. Power of: in the communicator: 74. on specific answers: 463. See also *Communication*.
- Concessions: 12. to self-constituted authorities: 14. to advocates of telepathic hypothesis: 43. Time for: is past: 15.
- Condemnation of others; Spirits free from: 918.
- Condition best adapted; Working to produce the: 711.
- Conditions; Way to change: 612. Explanation of: 246. Good: at the Chenoweth sittings: 140. Communicator jarred the: 627. Light varies because of the: 738. Mixed: 742, 745. New: with fresh influences: 538. right for Prof. James: Making: 264. in the room: 536. Uncertain: 287.
- Confusion: 71. in mind of communicator: 560. distortion and: Causes of: 65. of instances: 682. of Junots with Gregg family: 486. in mental pictures: 487. and mistakes: Explanation of: 74. 84. of thought: 928. in verification: 559. See also *Dream*, *Influence*, *Inhibition*, *Interfusion*, *Intrusion*, *Involuntary*, *Mixed*, *Sporadic*, *Subconscious*, *Subconsciousness*, *Subjective*, *Subliminal*, *Thought*, *Transmission*, *Unintentional*, *Volition*.
- Connections between the two centres: 444.
- Consciousness; 18, 19. when communicating: Prof. James cannot lose: 147. Degrees of: 335. Fleck of: 182. Layers of: 335. of presence: 866. is regained in spirit life; Surprise when: 719. Secondary: 827. Sleeping and waking: 383. Uninhibited stream of: 72. Streets of: 401. Waves of: 335.
- Consecrated to service: 177.
- Contact;—Communications caught by: 51. Complete: 160. Complete: would make the circuit: 51. and expression: 265. Messages caught by: 160. through sympathetic vibration: 148, 149.
- Contradiction; Definite: 312.
- Contradictory evidence: 250.
- Control;—Body of medium sleeping while under: 441. of communications: 29. and communicator frequently the same: 21. Difficult to: the mind and body of another: 470. Difficulty in getting: 749, 780. Direct: 65. Some: more easily than others: 166. good: Cannot keep: with a new friend: 99. keep: Spirit left near to: 101. Loss of: 101, 171, 307, 336, 471. Loss and gain of: easily seen: 389. Loss of memory while in: 154. maintain: Struggle to: 781, 782. Muscular 383. over physical organism of the medium: 65, 88, 90, 92. Effort to recall tends to relax: 512. See also *Body*.
- Controls loth to give up to Hodgson group: 921.
- Cook: 370.
- Copperheads: 756, 757, 759.
- Cora: 320. Aunt: 45, 233, 566, 568, 569. Aunt: Death of: 572. Aunt Mother of: 569, 570.
- Corday: Charlotte: 730.
- Corn: 619.
- Correspondence;—Bunch of: 473. between Mr. Junot and Dr. Hodgson: 474.

- Cotton; 308.  
 Council; Spirit: 875.  
 Crescent; Star and: 926.  
 Critical methods; 9, 13.  
 Critics; Incompetent: 15.  
 Croquet; 244.  
 Cross; 829, 831, 833, 860. Correspondences; Limitations in: 82. Imperator; 98, 99, 117, 120, 122, 123, 178, 347, 832, 857, 863, 873, 881, 883, 884, 919. Omega and: 862, 867, 898, 928. Omega and monogram; 822. Reference; 41, 80, 81, 154, 157, 163, 196, 260, 496, 504, 515, 526, 558, 583, 613, 614, 736, 810, 904, 921. Reference with the Burton Case; 446. Reference; Difficulties of: 606. Reference between England and U. S. A.; 332. References; Definition of: 76. References; Difficulty of: 76, 80, 81, 84. References; Dream-like state and: 84. Roman; with crescent and star; 899. Seen by Mrs. Smead; 122, 123. Sign of: 898. Sign of the: made in the air; 115, 876.  
 Crown of assurance; 508.  
 Cucumber patch; 795.  
 Cucumbers; 598.  
 Cup; Loving; 44, 243, 306, 307.  
 Current; 529. Connecting; 326, 327. Electric; 463. Establish a: 565. in right direction; 536. Sympathetic; 565.  
 Currents; Mixed; 646.  
 Cut words; 154, 155.  
 D; 328, 499, 500, 502, 840, 841.  
 D—; 575, 692.  
 Dahlias; 803.  
 Dane Hall; 368.  
 Darkness; Objection to: on part of Smead controls; 100, 132.  
 Darwin; 223, 224.  
 Dashwood;—Elinor; 489. Marianne; 489.  
 Dates and incidents; Difficulty in getting; 427.  
 David; 503. Davis or; 575. Uncle; 575, 576.  
 Day; Always; now; 891.  
 de Busset; 534.  
 de Bussey; 535.  
 Dead; Spirit who did not think he was; 657.  
 Death;—Compensations even for early; 627. Experience of Prof. James immediately after: 113. of Prof. James; 5, 94, 97, 101. of Prof. James; Prediction of: 141. Old idea of: 418. Relief after: 486. Use of the word: 161. See also *Transition*.  
 Debt of old Society; 859.  
 Deceit; Possibility of: 63.  
 Deferred Messages; 78.  
 Depletion of force; 438. See also *Energy*.  
 Desire;—and salvation; 593. Selfishness of: as a ladder to the sky; 527. See also *Evolution*.  
 Deteriorated;—capacity; 59. or disintegrated capacity; 292. personality; 161.  
 Devereux; Mrs.; 252.  
 Dick; 141, 317.  
 Dick's theories; Black eye to some of: 59, 300.  
 Dictating terms; 363.  
 Dieul; 822.  
 Differences between communicators; 74, 77.  
 Difficulties;—of communication; 48, 160, 244, 265, 278, 286, 293, 403, 427, 470, 511, 528, 529, 538, 573, 694, 768, 783, 899, 900, 903. in getting control; 749, 780. of cross reference; 606. Understanding of the: 682. See also *Communication*.  
 Diploma incident; 44, 262.  
 Dishonesty and substitution; 168, 169.  
 Disintegrating processes; 175.  
 "*Dissociation of a Personality*"; 72.  
 Distortion and confusion; Causes of: 65. See also *Communication*.  
 Distortions caused by mind of medium; 12. See also *Communication*.  
 Dobson; Mrs. James C.; 290.  
 Doctor; 22, 455, 869, 873, 874. Communication from: 331, 507. interested in that road; 670.  
 Dodge; 379, 402.  
 Dog; 46, 735. that had done the churning; 32, 46. Dark colored; 590. Short-haired; 687. Short-haired light; 622, 623.  
 Doll stuffed with sawdust; 509.  
 Dome; Big glass; 456.  
 Don or Dorr; 290.  
 Donald; Mr.; 696.  
 Dora; 469.  
 Dormant state like hibernating; 207.  
 Dorr;—Don or; 290. George; 10, 48, 49, 80, 140, 176, 191, 192.

- Dots; Use of: 93.  
 Double:—control; 23, 30, 83. He says: 904.  
 Doubt in communicator impregnates aura about Light; 353.  
 Drawers; Japanese case of: 467.  
 Dream:—consciousness; Normal and: 189. of drowning; 145, 200. about Prof. James; 215. life; Material existence as a: 70, 75. life; Normal and: 72, 83, 88. Past as a: 481. of Mrs. Smead; 856. State theory: 529. talk; 58, 273, 274, 529. or trance cases; 294. Mrs. Verrall's: about Prof. James; 105. See also *Communication*.  
 Dream-like state of communicators; Theory of:—11, 48, 49, 59, 85, 149, 189, 217, 273, 292, 293, 294, 305, 306, 529, 683, 782. and cross references; 84. Dr. Hodgson tries to give message on: 49. upheld by Emperor; 59. not set aside for all cases; 82, 83, 84. Suggested by G. P.; 50. See also *Communication*.  
 Dreams;—Messages showing characteristics of: 85. Tangle of: 335. See also *Communication*.  
 Dresden; 692, 693.  
 Drifting into the great unknown; 401.  
 "Driving tandem"; 23, 30.  
 Drowning; Medium has sensation of: 748.  
 Drowsiness of communicator; 71. See also *Communication*.  
 Duchesse d'Angoulême: 635.  
 Dumaresque; Mrs. Julia: 749.  
 Dundreary; Lord: 224.  
 Duomo; 456.  
 Duties; Many of spirits; 247.  
 E; 187, 462, 479, 490, 533. Miss: 910.  
 E. E.; 829.  
 E—; 407, 408, 589.  
 Earth:—atmosphere; Spirits living in the: 130. Leaving the: never to return; 128. souls too desirous of talking; 114.  
 Earth-bound; Danger of becoming: 854.  
 East—Travelled: to the 33rd degree; 935. Walked: for several years; 934.  
 Easterly direction; Travelled in an: 133.  
 Ed; 688.  
 Eddie; 242.  
 Eddy; Mary Baker G.: 640.  
 Edith; 252, 525.  
 Edmunds; Miss: 859.  
 Edward VII; King:—889. Communication from: 929. came to Mrs. Smead, but did not communicate; 888.  
 Egotism; 342.  
 Egypt; 297.  
 Eisenach; 525.  
 Elbow; Joggled his: 712.  
 Elderberry wine; 599, 777.  
 Electric:—Current [from article]; 463. currents; Effect of: 236. machine; Like using an: 881. motion; Force like: 881. See also *Communication*.  
 Electricity; Not: 881. See also *Electric*.  
 Eliminating process; 168.  
 Eliot; Dr.: 269.  
 Eliza; 44, 191, 192, 357, 358, 582, 744. Aunt: 542, 545, 550, 552, 558, 601, 607, 644, 672, 679, 713, 744, 820, 821. Sister of Dr. Hyslop; 542.  
 Elizabeth; 131, 270, 542. Aunt: 744. Queen: 503.  
 Ella; Aunt: 46, 233, 576.  
 Ellis; 660, 661. Lennie: 590.  
 Elm tree:—near Cambridge home of Prof. James; 101. near school house; 46.  
 Emeritus; Professor: 860.  
 Emma; 129, 131, 577. Q.; 578.  
 Endowment; Need of: 15. See also *Finance*.  
 Energy; 244, 325, 365. Great difference in: between Lights; 218. excited by the advent of a new comer; 211. gone; 220, 503, 791. to hold on; all Prof. James': required: 218. drawn from Dr. Hyslop; 236. . . . in recalling small matters of identity; 526. Increasing the: 246. Losing: 145, 171, 437, 438. Loss of: 438, 440. mental; Push and pull of: 274. Much: used by Prof. James; 193. Nervous: had to be supplied; 287. New: 236. no more: Seem to have: 804. supplied to the Light; 114. directed towards pencil: 536. Pumping: 821. restoring: Signal of: 217. Devices to save: 539. Sentimental side . . . spoils: 431. Soaking up: 782. Splendid: 247.

- Sympathetic suggestion and: 246. No time, no money, no: 509. Used up all the: 479. using too much: Fear of: 695. wanes towards close of sitting: 370. Wasting the: 931. See also *Communication*.
- England; 168, 304, 343, 538. Efforts in: 163. is interested; 260. Lights in: Four: 221. Piper failures in: 499. Frank Podmore would not try in: 823. Watching affairs in: 498. Work in: 393. See also *British*.
- English; 134. cap of Prof. James; 44. friends in Spirit World; 289. James as much: as we; 203. Papers, etc. marked for the: 143. people . . . in earnest; 243. Transfer of Records to the: 113. Society; 12, 878. Society; Action of the: 336. Society and Dr. Hyslop; 477. Society; Proceedings of: 219. Society; Records of: 906. Society; Ruts of: 537. Work; 394. See also *British*.
- Englishmen;—Bunch of: 203. worked with the Piper Light; 395. See also *British*.
- Envelope; Sealed: 187.
- Ephraim; 804.
- Epoch-making days for P. R. S.; 595. Ernest; 655.
- Established order passes away; 345. See also *Evolution*.
- Estate of Mrs. J. H. Hyslop's father; 719.
- Ether; 896, 897.
- Ethereal;—sensibilities; 89. Universe; 896.
- Ethical;—development; 294. immortality; 224. principles; 388. See also *Evolution*.
- Etta; 232.
- Evelyn; 589. Hamel; 589.
- Everard; 934.
- Evergreens; 619.
- Evidence; 313, 316. best when communicators were unknown to Mrs. Chenoweth; 14. Chain of: 234. Collective and quantitative criterion of: 234. Contradictory: 250. involved in difficulty; 640. Difficulty of securing; in case of Prof. James; 5. for personal identity sufficient to convince intelligent men; 14. that proves identity; 198. Intellectual and spiritual: 510. which is purely personal; 640. poor when energy is all taken in holding on; 53. Spirit: 528. stronger than represented; 7. may suffer; 526. of the supernormal excellent; 14. seems valueless to pseudo-thinkers; 292. See also *Evidential*.
- Evidential;—expression of men who opposed the spirit hypothesis; 225. incidents; *Too numerous to be noted here.* message; Weary before we get to the: 526. Messages; Obstacles to getting; 511. See *Communication, Evidence*.
- Evolution; Process of: must make for a more spiritual world; 509. See also *Competition, Consecration, Desire, Established order, Ethical, Evolutionary, God, Godward, Growth, Incentive, Materialistic, Materiality, Missionary, Moral, Physical, Posterity, Progress, Purpose, Religious, Salvation, Save, Self, Self-satisfied, Selfishness, Spiritual, Temptations, Testing, Unity, Uplift, Uplifting, Upliftment*.
- Evolutionary; It is all: 175. See *Evolution*.
- Expansion in the Spirit World; 918.
- Expenses where they are; Keep: 142. See *Finance*.
- Experiment;—False methods of: 14. Spirit life all: 481.
- Experiments to tell whether people are Lights or not; 352.
- Explanation of the facts; 34.
- Exposition in Philadelphia; Centennial: 500.
- Express;—capacity to: Weighing and measuring: 428. Chance to: 612. only what is desired; 60, 63. Eagerness to: 138. Only the testifying spirit is allowed to: 169. when unexpected; Not easy to: 225. See also *Communication*.
- Expressing; Communicators are helped by: 332. See also *Communication*.
- Expression; 178, 284. Body of: 305. clear and lucid: Atmosphere of: 507. Cold and inanimate thing for: 281. Contact and: 265. Difficulties of: 683. distorted; 255. Evidential: 225. Feeble in: 464. Forms and methods of: 55. Full: 401. in and through the mental: 498. Partial: 225. perfect: In-

- fluences that crowd in keep communicator from: 481. of personality distorted and tempered; 255. proper: Lack of power for; 54. Sensitive plate of: 246. Spheres of: 435. Unfolded for: 247. World waits for an: 138. See also *Communication*.
- Expressions:—Evolving: 425. Fugitive: 55. See also *Communication*.
- External stimulus; Laws of: 62.
- F; 490, 711, 860, 913. J is father to: 690. and T; Confusion between: 661, 666.
- F. M.; 565.
- F. P.; 872, 883, 929. Lady helping: 841. Monogram; 822, 828, 868.
- F. S.; 661.
- Face; Vision of a: 762.
- Facts; Explanation of the: 34.
- Faculty:—present; 929. room; 885, 888.
- Faith:—and courage; Lost: 344. cure; 389. and knowledge; 331. Psychological power of: 388. and Reason; 331. Upbuilding of: through knowledge; 712.
- Fakes; 126.
- Familiar (Jennie P.); 396.
- Fannie; 46, 232, 233, 661. Jackson; 578. Titus; 222. Torrence; 233.
- Fanny; 500.
- Father; 794. of all Lights; 897, 898.
- Faust; 230, 898.
- Feather beds; 543.
- Field; Kate; 46, 289, 367, 399, 666, 667, 679, 806.
- Fielding;—Anna: 290. Mr.: 935.
- Film; Photographed on the surrounding: 433.
- Finance; 235, 272, 276, 277, 281, 283, 284, 286, 301, 396, 397, 639, 858. See also *Change of policy*, *Endowment*, *Expenses*, *Financial*, *Funds*, *Hampered*, *Money*, *Policy*.
- Financial burden; 235. See *Finance*.
- Find himself; If a man would: 594.
- Finnev;—Uncle: 46, 47, 232, 233, 658, 660, 752. Uncle: had an uncle John; 752. Uncle Stewart: 662.
- Fire; 669, 936, 938.
- Fish; 81.
- Fishing trip; 80.
- Floating away from body; Spirit of medium: 216.
- Flora; 792. McDonald; 793. McIntire; 792. Melvor; 792.
- Florence; 185, 270, 456.
- Fluidic theory; 371.
- Force:—like electric motion; 881. Vital: 336. See *Energy*.
- Forget-me-not; 486.
- Forward; Time for making a step: 14.
- Fountain pen; 174, 175, 196, 303.
- Imperator and the: 203.
- Fourth of July celebration; 630.
- Foxgloves; 46, 803.
- Fragmentary communications; Reason for: 117.
- Frank; 420, 431, 432, 660, 690. (Hyslop); 914, 915. (Podmore); 291, 363, 364.
- Frater; 332.
- Fraternity; 99.
- Fraud; 13, 518. Detective: 34.
- Fraudulent Light; 880.
- Fred; 690, 731, 768. (Myers) 458.
- Free soil; 554.
- Freedom:—of choice; Right to: 346. Delight of: in Spirit World: 11. in the Spirit World; 11, 330, 918.
- Fremont; J. C.: 554.
- French:—investigators; 395. name; 534. words uttered by Mrs. Chenoweth; 141, 149, 150, 157, 446, 459, 463, 464, 471, 472, 474, 477, 485, 515, 532, 547, 601, 614, 625, 634, 638, 647, 654, 678, 683, 687, 697, 703, 711, 717, 719, 742, 745, 769, 781, 782, 791, 805, 821, 822. work impossible with Piper: Light: 395.
- Frenchman; Little: 861.
- Friend:—Hodgson; 893, 915. J.; 885. Lodge; 933. Myers; 929. P.; 932.
- Fugitive:—Expressions; 55, 255. Ideas; 55, 254, 272. Phantasms; 52, 64.
- Funds; Circular letter asking for: 858. See also *Finance*.
- Furtherance of our plans; 794.
- G; 421. Dr.: 133, 134. Mr.: 134.
- G. E. D.; 930.
- G. M.; (Maybe S. M.) 903.
- G. P.; 159, 247, 252, 255, 272, 274, 293, 297, 489, 518, 579, 613, 639, 736, 802, 834, 845, 869, 870, 897, 919, 920, 923.
- G. P. & Co.; 651, 681, 695, 708, 734, 760, 777, 791, 794, 805, 810, 822.
- G—; 410, 418, 512, 570.
- Gabriel; Waiting for: 259.

- Gale; Lucien: 722, 723.  
 Garden; Public: 350.  
 Gate; 331.  
 Gaule; Miss: 296.  
 Geese; 543, 544.  
 Geneva; University of: 262.  
 George; 59, 180, 193, 299, 312, 314, 340, 383, 459, 483, 489, 516, 517, 531, 564, 579, 580, 637, 638, 806, 808, 911, 916. Brother: 912. a child left; 570, 571. fall dead: Did: 806. (Hyslop); 449, 561, 562. (Hyslop, Senior); 901. Impetuous: 712.  
 German; 653, 898.  
 Germany; 733, 744. Visit of Dr. Hyslop to: 104, 108.  
 Gertrude: 512.  
 Ghosts; 172.  
 Gibbons; Mrs.: 191.  
 Gifford; 920.  
 Gilmanton Iron Works; 359, 360.  
 Girl: Little: with light hair and blue eyes; 803.  
 Gladstone; Man like: 923.  
 Glass ship; 499.  
 God:—expression of: Real and tangible: 336. is far away: 177. just as far off and inexplicable in spirit life: 481. and the Universe: Ideas of: 656. is wise not to let us know all; 898. See also *Evolution*.  
 Goddard; Miss or Mrs.: 609.  
 Godward: To move the whole world: 396. See also *Evolution*.  
 Goethe; 203, 898.  
 Gold campaign of 1896: 757.  
 Good things happening: 782.  
 Gown; 95, 100.  
 Grace; 410.  
 Grant:—General: 757. Mr.: 288, 429.  
 Grave; 642.  
 Greece; 326.  
 Greek; 828.  
 Gregg:—family: Confusion of initials with: 486. John: 413, 414, 418, 424, 430, 436, 437, 485. (See also *John*.) John: Mrs. Chenoweth 'haunted' by: 423. Mr.: 399, 406, 407, 409, 410, 417, 421, 432, 433. Mr.: Mother of: 419, 421. Mr.: Trip to Olympia of: 430. Mr.: Starlight sittings of: 417. Mrs.: 399, 411, 417, 429. Will: 485.  
 Grilling of G. P. by Hodgson: 138.  
 Group picture; 229.  
 Growth and progress; 482. See also *Evolution*.  
 Guessing; 34, 35, 78, 570, 590. Case of: 931. See also *Communication*.  
 Guide posts; 139.  
 Guides; 882.  
 Gurney; Edmund: 287.  
 Gussie; 213, 214.  
 Guten; 478.  
 Gutenberg Bible; 82.  
 H; 159, 160, 181, 193, 197, 198, 217, 231, 263, 272, 277, 645, 761, 769, 827, 829, 831, 834, 883, 890, 916. (Hyslop); 924. Light of: 853, 878, 931. for P. W. J.; 101. has more of this power than some of us; 882.  
 H. J.; 454.  
 H 3; 847.  
 H—; 318, 344, 717, 718, 726, 743. W. H.: 282.  
 Habits of Medium; Mental or Neural: 65.  
 Hackley:—School; 513. Trustees; 521.  
 Hair; Piece of: 488.  
 Hale:—Dr. Edward Everett: 46, 47, 667, 679, 696. Dr. Edward Everett: Communications from: 665, 667. Susan: 667.  
 Half-heartedness; No room for: 264.  
 Hall; 507.  
 Hall:—G. Stanley: 175, 178, 179, 185, 196, 256, 455, 509, 510, 511, 512, 515, 936. Jonathan Prescott: 508. Mr.: (Father of Mrs. J. H. Hyslop); 45, 499, 719, 730, 742, 778, 847. Prescott: 222. Prescott F.: 508, 524. Prescott F.: Summary of Experiments; 321.  
 Hallucination; Telepathic: 26, 66. See also *Communication*.  
 Hamel; Evelyn: 589.  
 Hamilton; Dr.: 452.  
 Hampered; Not for you always to be: 201. See also *Finance*.  
 Hand:—like clay: 278. Difficulty in control of: 148, 174, 185, 223, 230, 241, 270, 295, 301, 305, 306, 365, 780. shows excitement and hurry; 433. Function of: must be as nearly normal as possible; 306. give him the: I will: 314. helped by Dr. Hyslop: 148, 780. limp and inert: 187. of a man: 463. of medium held by Dr. Hyslop: 930. numb; 145. as if paralyzed; 200.

- could not adjust pencil; 148. has not the usual power; 201. Releasing the: 226. rubs page; 433. Spirit: takes hold of Mrs. Chenoweth; 469. Spirit: on head of Mrs. Chenoweth; 625. Spirit places: on table; 416. See also *Hands*.
- Handkerchief; Bandanna: 471.
- Hands and feet; Management of: 388. See also *Communication*.
- Handy man: 688.
- Happiness; Pure: 256.
- Harlem; 611, 612.
- Harmony; 396. Necessary to clear communication; 884. Light may recoil from one not in: 923. See also *Communication*.
- Harper; President: 12, 280, 286, 304.
- Harriet; 468, 645, 726, 727, 770.
- Harry; 44, 153, 156, 181, 218, 219, 221, 266, 298, 327, 343, 375, 454.
- Harvard; 202, 240, 245, 475, 521, 860. Degrees in: do not count; 639. man from Hawaii; 492. men; Not all; 204.
- Harvey; 337, 338.
- Haste; Destructive power of: 334.
- Hat; 727.
- Hattie; 320, 645, 726, 727.
- Haunted house; 376, 377, 937.
- Haunting of the Light; 427, 429.
- Hawaii; 492.
- Head of communicator not clear; 464.
- Headquarters for P. S.; 871.
- Hear:—Spirits can: when they cannot be heard; 899. Spirits cannot: till in communication; 280. Spirits cannot: as we do; 921. See also *Communication*.
- Hearing; Power of: 376. See also *Communication*.
- Hearts and diamonds; 905.
- Heaven;—Earth a place of rest compared to any; 450. Missionary work in: 626. Theological; 256.
- Hebrew;—letters; 863. through Mrs. Piper; 863.
- Heidelberg; 743, 744.
- Helen; 288.
- Helena Moses; 195.
- Helpers; Dreadful; 356.
- Henrietta; 224, 232, 645, 770. Hyslop; 816.
- Henry; 280, 465, 466, 604, 632, 633, 636, 764.
- Herbert (Spencer); 224.
- Hetty; 769.
- Hety; 769.
- Hieroglyphs; 81.
- Highland costume; Man in: 699.
- Hit or miss; 127.
- Hodgson; Dr. Richard:—10, 54, 100, 101, 124, 125, 138, 139, 175, 199, 223, 227, 242, 252, 275, 280, 281, 284, 380, 384, 389, 397, 416, 429, 802, 810, 833, 841, 842, 844, 855, 856, 858, 859, 861, 863, 864, 867, 868, 870, 874, 875, 876, 878, 883, 887, 893, 894, 909, 910, 911, 912, 915, 917, 918, 929, 932, 934, 935. Coffee prohibited by Imperator; 46, 193. Communication from: 100, 125, 132, 134, 135, 141, 157, 163, 167, 193, 208, 227, 253, 285, 378, 401, 835, 840, 844, 862, 868, 869, 871, 890, 904, 905, 909, 916, 923. knew too much to be a good communicator; 54, 254. Diet of: changed by Imperator; 46, 193. limited in diet by the Piper controls; 11. an enthusiast; 198. Funeral of: 251. Huldah episode; 124. hurt when work not appreciated; 125. assisting Jennie P.; 179. Papers of: left with Prof. James; 143. Piper report of: 10 not as charitable to Frank Podmore as Dr. Hyslop; 197. Prejudices of: 198. Records of: 157, 937. Reports of: 156, 276. seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 151, 234, 400 says spirits are more sensitive than mortals; 55. has the far-seeing power of a statesman; 227. Too much subconsciousness; 126. Triviality in communications; 49. Wandering in thought difficult to prevent; 55. a weakling about communicating; 180. Zeal for future good; 227. See also *Dick, Dick's Friend, H., R. H., Richard*.
- Hogs; 605.
- Hogshead; 109, 616, 617.
- Hold;—Losing; 559. Loss of: 176, 336, 464, 511. Something ... to: 155. See also *Communication*.
- Hollis Street Theatre; 208, 249.
- Holmes;—Mrs.; 842, 853. Oliver Wendell; 212, 223.
- Home rule; 127.
- Horn; 621.
- Horse;—cars; 202. white; 46, 552.
- Hosmer; Harriet; 398.
- Hospital; Carny; 504.

- House:—Light colored: 701. in the mountain; 844.
- Houses; Mixture of two: 487.
- Howard; Fred: 655, 656.
- Howells; William Dean: 563.
- Hudson; Thompson Jay: 163, 665.
- Huldah episode; 124.
- Humps caused by other people; 506.
- Hurricane; 150, 182, 308, 390, 405, 437, 465, 512, 514, 578.
- Huxley; 223, 224.
- Hypnosis; Clairvoyance under: 426. See also *Communication*.
- Hypnotic:—experiments; 426. influence; 925. See also *Hypnosis*.
- Hypnotism; 371. in medicine and morals; 593. See also *Hypnosis*.
- Hyslop;—Charles: 253, 900, 903. (See also *Charles*.) Charles: as both child and man; 33. Charles: speaks of having "really been dreaming"; 75. Charles Robert: 904. Frank: 35, 913. George: 449. George: Senior; 591, 901. Henrietta: 816, 900, 901.
- Hyslop; Dr. James H.:
- A priori possibilities; 6. Abrupt changes of subject in communicating; 75. Abstruse topics of thought and mental pictures; 27. Accident on a railway; 80. Adjustment: Lack of: to physical organism of medium; 88. Amnesia and the associates of constrained attention; 83. Amnesia: Normal; in mediums; 8. Aphasia; 83. Aphasia; Apparent analogies with; 87, 88.
  - Apparitions;—Mental pictures and: 30, 33, 34. may be caused by another agent than the apparent one; 32, 33, 34. Perplexities of the ordinary theory of: 33. Three types of: 30.
  - Association and intensity of mental states; 87. Associations; Marginal; 56. Astrals; Hypothesis of projected: 31. Attacks on isolated incidents obscure the real issue; 15. Audile: Mrs. Piper probably more of an; than Mrs. Chenoweth; 28. Auditory imagery; 28. Authorities; Self-constituted: Concessions to: 14.
  - Bible; Gutenberg: 82. Body a cloak for mental processes; 63. Book in a library; 81. Break-down; Runaway: 80.
  - Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued*.) Cares; too busy with earthly: 132. Carnegie; Andrew: 286. changes of subject in communicating; Abrupt: 75. Claims of real or alleged spirits must be made good; 20. "Clear"; Communicator not: 84. "Clothes; Spirit"; 30. Coincidence; Chance: Intelligent persons and: 35.
  - Communicating;—Complexities of the problem of: 57. Difficulties of: 90. Two distinct methods of: 89.
  - Communications;—and power of concentration in the communicator; 74. Deferred: 78. from highly developed minds more meagre than others with regard to personal identity; 77. usually direct in case of Mrs. Smead: 91. Imperfections in: 12. Intrusions in: 77. from Prof. James; 260. Mosaic nature of: 87. Transference of thought during: 115. affected by subliminal of medium; 238, 252.
  - Communicator; Power of concentration in the: 74. may know very little about what penetrates the veil; 82. Distinction between scientific and ordinary man as a: 56. Thought of: influenced by subconsciousness of medium; 88.
  - Communicators dependent on the incarnate for opportunities; 135.
  - Communicators; Difference between: 74. Comparison with a spiritual life; Basis for: 89. Concentration; Normal life rationalized by: 73. Concentration: Power of: in communicator; 74. Concessions to self-constituted authorities; 14. Concessions make on account of possibility of leakage; 12. Concessions: Time for: is past: 15. Confusion; Causes of distortion or: 65. Confusion: Explanation of: and mistakes; 74, 84. Consciousness; Spirit implies: 18. Consciousness wholly supersensible; 19. Consciousness; Uninhibited stream of: 72. Control; Direct: 65. Control over matters communicated; 29. Control over physical organism of medium:

- Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued.*)  
 65, 88, 90, 92. Conversion of:  
 249, 250. Convert; Not the busi-  
 ness of the writer to: 14. Cor-  
 nered in 1893; 249. Critical  
 methods; Need of: 9. Critical  
 methods; Rights of: 13. Critics;  
 Time to ignore incompetent: 15.  
 Cross correspondences; Limita-  
 tions in: 82. Cross references;  
 Difficulty of: 76, 80, 81, 84.  
 Cross references; Dream state  
 and; 84.
- Darkness; objection to: in Smead  
 case; 100. Deceit and subter-  
 fuge; Possibility of: 63. De-  
 ferred messages; 78. Differences  
 in communicators; 74, 77. Dif-  
 ficulties in communicating; 90.  
 Distortion and Confusion; Causes  
 of: 65. Double Control; 23, 30, 83.  
 Dream Consciousness and nor-  
 mal consciousness; 189. Dream  
 life; Normal and; 72, 83, 88.  
 Dream theory; 85. Dream-like  
 state of communicators; 61, 72,  
 82, 83, 84, 149. Dreams; Mes-  
 sages showing characteristics of:  
 85. "Driving Tandem"; 23, 30.
- Earth-bound Souls; 127. Endow-  
 ment; Need of: 15. Etherial  
 sensibilities; 89. Evidence for  
 personality identity sufficient to  
 convince intelligent men; 14, 42.  
 Evidence of the supernormal in  
 the present Report; Excellent:  
 14. Experiment; False methods  
 of: 14.
- Father; Departure from teachings  
 of his: 104. Father-in-law of:  
 45, 46, 47, 499, 719, 730, 742, 778.  
 Fishing trip; 80. Fluidic theory;  
 371. Forward; Time has arrived  
 for making a step: 14. Fraud;  
 Detective; Theory of: 35. Fug-  
 itive ideas; 272. "Fugitive phan-  
 tasms"; 64. Fugitive phan-  
 tasms; Mental pictures and: 69.
- Germany; Trip to: 104, 108.  
 Grandfather of: 545, 556. Grand-  
 mother of: 542, 556, 607. Gut-  
 tenburg Bible; 82.
- Habits of the Medium; Mental or  
 neural: 65. hallucinations; Tel-  
 epathic: 66. Hypnotism; 371.
- Identity; Personal.—Evidence of:  
 sufficient to convince intelligent  
 men; 14, 42. Obscure men can
- Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued.*)  
 best prove: 5, 56, 77. the funda-  
 mental problem for the psychic  
 researcher; 19. proved more ef-  
 fectively by apparently sporadic  
 incidents than by many inten-  
 tional messages; 88. must be  
 proved in connection with super-  
 normal information; 5, 20.
- Images; Thinking in: 77. Impera-  
 tor group; Policy of the: 397.  
 Impersonation; Appearance of:  
 88. Incidents not known to: 44.  
 Incidents; Sporadic and remote  
 character of many: 88. Incidents  
 supposed to be unverifiable: 938.  
 Incompetence of the average  
 Philistine; 14, 15. Incredulity:  
 Resolute; no better than resolute  
 credulity; 15. Inhibit; Use of  
 the word: 256. Inhibition or iso-  
 lation while communicating; Ne-  
 cessity for: 115. Intellectual  
 jugglery without insight into  
 facts; 8. Intensity of the mental  
 states; Association and: 87. In-  
 trusions in the communications:  
 77.
- James; Mrs. William: Letter to:  
 156. James; Prof. William:  
 Mental position of: 144. James:  
 Prof. William: not as sure as:  
 143. Junot; Mr.: 406.  
 "Kept"; 252.
- Marginal associations; 56. Medi-  
 um; Lack of adjustment to the  
 physical organism of the: 88.  
 Medium; Control of the: 65, 88,  
 90, 92. Mêlée of mental states:  
 57. Memories; Recalling: 80.  
 Memory; Needful to prove sur-  
 vival of personal; 19. Mental or  
 neural habits of medium; 65.
- Mental pictures; 25, 26, 27, 28, 65,  
 74, 82, 87, 90. and apparitions:  
 30, 33, 34. and "fugitive phan-  
 tasms": 69. of the past; 32.  
 Rapid flow of: may spoil com-  
 munications; 69. not always  
 self-interpreting; 66. not appar-  
 ent in work of Mrs. Smead; 91.  
 Theory of: seems more rational  
 than dream theory; 86.
- Mental processes; Body a cloak  
 for: 64. Mental state always a  
 complicated mass of sensations  
 and reflections; 62. Messages:  
 Deferred: 78. Messages show-

- Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued.*)  
ing characteristics of dreams; 85.  
Minds of mediums studied by:  
quite as much as evidence for  
supernormal; 156. Mistakes;  
Confusion and: 74, 84. Mother  
of: 253, 546, 558. Multiple Per-  
sonality; 61.  
Names; proper: Difficulty with:  
69. Names: proper: and pho-  
netic laws; 69. Neural habits of  
the medium; 65. Normal con-  
sciousness and dream conscious-  
ness; 189. Normal and dream  
life; 72, 83, 88. Normal life ra-  
tionalized by concentration; 73.  
Numerical relations of incidents;  
Nothing depends on: 43.  
Organism of medium; Lack of ad-  
justment to: 88. Organism of  
medium; Control of: 90, 92.  
Personality; Multiple: 61. Per-  
sonation; 127. "Phantasms; Fu-  
gitive": 64. "Phantasms; Fu-  
gitive": Mental Pictures and: 69.  
Phinuit; Disappearance of: 120.  
Phonetic Considerations; 28.  
Phonetic influences in automatic  
writing; 118. Physical methods  
doomed to failure; 18, 19, 20.  
Pictures; Mental: See *Mental  
Pictures*. Philistine can never  
wait; 79. Piper Report of: 936.  
Piper Report of: not known to  
Mrs. Chenoweth; 10. Pod-  
morean intellect; 78. Possession  
in case of Mrs. Chenoweth less  
perfect than in case of Mrs.  
Piper; 84. Projected astrals:  
Hypothesis of: 31. Problems:  
Time to attack more complicated  
and perplexing: than personal  
identity; 14. Proof; False stand-  
ard of: 14. Psychological unity  
a necessity; 15.  
Railway; Accident on a: 80. Re-  
constructive influence of the con-  
clusion upon Science and phil-  
osophy; 143. Reservoir of  
knowledge; Universal: 34. Re-  
spectability; Attempt to convert  
people governed by: 15. Run-  
away breakdown; 80.  
Sceptic must convince himself if  
this work does not do it; 14.  
Sceptical superstition; 38. Sec-  
ondary personality theory; 136.  
Selection on part of control or
- Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued.*)  
medium; 87. Sensibilities;  
Ethereal: 89. Society: Work of  
the: appeals only to the intel-  
lectual; 9. Spirit implies con-  
sciousness; 18. Spirit clothes:  
30. Spirit always stationed near:  
247. Spirit a supersensible fact;  
19. Spiritistic hypothesis proved  
by collective experiences; 40.  
Spiritistic the only rational hy-  
pothesis; 40. Spiritistic theory  
demanded by the facts; 68.  
Spirits; Question of the exist-  
ence of: one of psychology and  
not of physics; 18. Spirits: Tele-  
pathy or: are alternatives; 36.  
Spiritual life; Basis for compar-  
ison with a: 89. Sporadic and re-  
mote character of many incidents,  
and personal identity; 88. Sta-  
tistical treatment of the subject  
is absurd; 44. Stepmother of:  
320. Subconsciousness of the  
psychic a factor in the total re-  
sult; 26, 37. Subject: Abrupt  
change of: in communicating; 75.  
Subliminal; Influence of: of me-  
dium; 193. Subliminal influ-  
ences; Differences of: 82. Su-  
perstition; Sceptical: 38.  
" Tandem; Driving:" 23, 30. Tap-  
ping the Absolute; 34. Tele-  
pathic experiment with geometri-  
cal figures; 66. Telepathic hal-  
lucinations; 66. Telepathic theory  
an illusion of unscientific minds;  
38.  
Telepathy; 64. as an instrument  
of the dead; 33. between the  
living, and apparitions; 30. Pop-  
ular conception of: 119. Selec-  
tive: on part of the living; 67.  
or spirits; 36.  
Tests: Individual: and psycholog-  
ical unity; 15. Thought; Diffi-  
culty of inhibiting: 63, 72.  
Thought; Transference of: dur-  
ing communications; 115. " Triv-  
ialty" of messages; 49, 74, 84.  
Uninhibited stream of conscious-  
ness; 72. Unity: Psychological:  
a necessity; 15. Unknown com-  
municators get best results with  
Mrs. Chenoweth; 14.  
Visuelle: Mrs. Chenoweth prob-  
ably more of a: than Mrs. Piper;  
28.

- Hyslop; Dr. James H.: (*Continued.*)  
 Writing; Phonetic influences in automatic: 118. See also *James, Hurricane, Professor.*
- Hyslop; Mary F. H.: 915.
- Hyslop; Mrs. James H.:—45, 107, 386, 454, 542, 547, 565, 615, 653, 655, 691, 692, 904. Brother of: 107, 108. and the Burton Case; 448. Communicated first through Mrs. Smead; 107. Communications from: 107, 911. Cousin of 741. Father of: 45, 499, 719, 730, 742, 778, 847. Grandmother of: 615, 616. Hand loom; 556, 557. Helping Prof. James; 102. Poetic and scientific power of: 227. Seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 280. See also *M. H., Mame, Mary, Mary F. H. Hyslop.*
- Hyslop; Miss: 46.
- Hyslop; Robert: Junior;—646, 647, 903, 904. Communication from: 913. Funeral of: 648, 649. died of tuberculosis; 915.
- Hyslop; Robert: Senior;—6, 32, 35, 45, 88, 97, 99, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 108, 122, 133, 134, 751, 757, 764, 767, 768, 770, 775, 776, 777, 783, 784, 785, 786, 788, 789, 791, 793, 794, 795, 797, 804, 807, 809, 810, 812, 815, 816, 819, 820, 821, 835, 836, 850, 904, 936. Barn of: 109, 936. Barrel: 109. Beeves, hogs, and rabbits; 32. Betsy; Separation from Aunt: 45. Books; Would not mark his: 45, 103. Carpet slippers; 398. Cars: 109. Cat; Big grey: 45. Communications from: 96, 97, 101, 105, 108, 122, 132, 794, 849, 899, described by Mrs. Chenoweth; 262. Example to the children; 103. Fire; 936. Dr. G.; Writes for: 133. Gun; 32, 937. Hogs; 605. Hogshhead; 109, 616, 617. Horse; White: 45, 552. Incidents of: the best in the Record; 41. particular about the pencil; 103, 104, 107, 108. seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 204. Spectacle case; 102. "Star witness"; 41. Teachings of: Dr. Hyslop departed from: 104. Writing materials; 103.
- Hyslop;—Mrs. Robert: Senior; 546. Mrs. Robert: Senior: (Mother of Dr. Hyslop); 253. Sarah: 568. W.: 902, 903.
- Hysteria; 302.  
 Hysteria and fraud; 329.
- 1; 502. (Imperator); 832. Myers' peculiar: 27, 271, 272, 625, 626, 711.
- Ich Liebe Dich; 938.
- Ida; 587, 657, 699, 890.
- Identification; 581.
- Identity; Prof. James makes no apparent effort to prove his: 22. Personal: See *Personal*. Attempt to prove: strains the medium; 440. proved by tone and spirit: 234. Small matters of: 526. Tests of: 354. See *Communication*.
- Ignorance grown wise; 355.
- Illness:—of Mrs. Chenoweth; 486. of Dr. Hyslop's aunts; 204.
- Illusions of intermediary: 694. See also *Hallucination*.
- Images; Thinking in: 77.
- Imagination; 302. See also *Hallucination*.
- Immortality; Ethical: 224.
- Imperator; 22, 117, 120, 122, 174, 175, 178, 182, 193, 195, 196, 198, 250, 297, 303, 311, 312, 325, 379, 383, 389, 394, 436, 442, 447, 454, 460, 507, 614, 873, 876, 889. autocratic; 353. College sign; 98, 99. Communications from: 174, 345, 382, 857. communications; Religious import of: 275. Cross; See *Cross*. informs Dr. Hodgson of coming deaths; 883. described, 347, 348. Divine honors apparently paid to: 889. upholds theory of dream state or trance of communicator; 59. Group; 188, 274, 317, 424, 506, 539. Group substituted for Dr. Phinuit in Piper Case; 884. Group; Policy of the: 397. invoked to help; 898. Dr. Hodgson prohibited by: from use of coffee; 46. might be Isaiah; 832. planned the work at the Piper Light; 445. controls the Smead communications; 883. Trance theory held by: 293. Writing; 185. See also *I*.
- Impersonation; 42, 88, 324, 812. Process of: 342. See also *Personation*.
- Impress; Lack of power to: 306.
- Impression; Spiritistic: 444.
- Impressions left on objects; 838, 839. "In dieser Wunderwelt ist eben"; 73.

- "In holden Wahn der wachen Träume"; 73.
- Incentive for righteousness; 294. See also *Evolution*.
- Incidents:—Attacks on isolated; obscure the issue: 15. Evidential: See note under *Evidential Incidents*. R. Hyslop, Senior, gives best: in the Record; 41. not known by Dr. Hyslop; 44, 47. Sporadic and remote character of many: 88. called unverifiable, 938.
- Incompetence of the average Philistine; 14, 15.
- Incomplete explanations; 218.
- Incredulity; Resolute; 15, 411.
- Independence of no salary; 356.
- India; 933.
- Indian:—spirits; Power from the: 564. Starlight a Comanche: 25. words uttered by Mrs. Chenoweth; 149, 157, 380, 382, 383, 388, 389, 392, 396, 405, 416, 417, 419, 421, 422, 426, 427, 431, 436, 437, 446, 453, 457, 459, 462, 481, 483, 501, 503, 509, 514, 532, 566, 569, 570, 601, 614, 625, 634, 680, 681, 696.
- Indiana; 487.
- Indians; Mrs. Chenoweth "going up to see the": 515.
- Indigestion; 359.
- Individuality in the Spirit World; 862.
- Influence:—in articles soon gone unless carefully guarded; 116. bring the: Will he: 136. Did not bring any: 121. Helpful: 666. Dr. Hodgson asks for an: 136. Hypnotic: 925. Prof. James asks for an: 861. Son James promised to send the: 133. No other: about: 246. Objects carry their: 837, 838, 839, 851. about a psychic; 697. of sitter on communicator: 118. spirit: Medium sick through: 438. Thought of a spirit has definite; on his friends: 510. See also *Communication*.
- Influences:—Combination of: 300, 526, 536. that crowd in keep communicator from perfect expression: 481. Fresh: 538. Mixture of: 718. needed to hold spirits near the earth: 117. new group of: Effect of introducing: 440. Outside: 292. Play of: on all present; 396. See also *Communication*.
- Ingersoll; 792.
- Ingersoll type; Face of the: 174.
- Inhibit; Use of the word: 256.
- Inhibition; Difficulty of: 55, 57, 63, 255, 682, 683. See also *Communication*.
- Injurious; Spirits cannot always learn if their experiments are: 892.
- Inkstand; 44, 212, 213, 348.
- Inquiry; Expression which leads to: 227.
- Insight into facts; Intellectual jugglery without: 8.
- Inspired by unseen influences; Thinkers more readily: 323.
- Insulated state; Condition in an: 390.
- Integrity of medium; 217.
- Intellectual:—and spiritual evidence: 510. jugglery: 8.
- Intelligence and physical research; 5.
- Intensity:—a disintegrating influence; 427. of mental states; Association and: 87.
- Interest:—growing; 497. ...in the old-fashioned physical phenomena: 498. Revival of: 711. Spasmodic: 498. Spirits of: 497.
- Interests: New set of: after death; 284.
- Interfusion; 559, 560. of personalities; 369. of pictures; 631. of writing; 564. See also *Communication*.
- Intermediary; Illusions of: 694.
- Interpolation; 326.
- Intrusion; 245, 404, 470, 486, 559. See also *Communication*.
- Intrusions; Subliminal; 276, 308. See also *Communication*.
- Involuntary:—Communications; 146, 270, 271, 334. Messages; 51, 915. See also *Communication*.
- Iowa; 502.
- Ira; 363.
- Irene; 699.
- Iron or Ira; 363.
- Ironton; 46, 363, 364.
- Irrelevant associations; 255.
- Irving; 890. Washington; 891.
- Isaiah; 832.
- Isenbach; 525.
- Isenberg; 525.
- Isolation; Necessity for: or inhibition: 115.

- Italy: 271. F. W. H. Myers' relation to: 11.
- J; 287, 297, 363, 414, 415, 485, 486, 490, 727, 885. is father to F.; 690.
- J. B.—; 384.
- J. P.; 286, 489, 596, 602, 616, 639, 641, 683, 726, 734, 746, 752, 782, 784. is a hustler; 750.
- J. P. H.: 507.
- J—; 181, 239, 286, 407, 408, 690, 717, 718. Miss: 10. Mr.: Picture of a: 318.
- Jack; 533, 535, 590. or Jock; 590.
- Jackson;—Andrew: 553, 554. Mrs. Elizabeth: 270. Fannie: 578.
- Jacob;—Jake or: 232, 570. James or: 232, 569, 570.
- Jake or Jacob; 232, 570.
- James; 371, 690, 713. Brother: (Professor James); 390. family: Cautiousness of the: 313. Henry: Junior; 191, 192, 201, 261, 359, 368, 376, 380, 381, 530, 867, 894. Henry: Senior; 218, 219, 266. (Hyslop); 899, 902, 903, 911, 912, 915. or Jacob; 232, 569, 570. Saint: 252, 713. Son: 133, 835, 849, 900, 903. Uncle: 570, 701. William: Junior: Worth while if; were more interested; 893. Mrs. William: 150, 153, 157, 162, 171, 203, 230, 266, 329, 376, 530, 892. Mrs. William: Letter to: 156.
- James; Professor William:—122, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 133, 136, 138, 139, 141, 142, 143, 150, 154, 180, 196, 221, 223, 233, 263, 371, 380, 391, 393, 403, 417, 424, 830, 848, 851, 862, 864, 865, 868, 897, 905, 906, 910, 911, 928, 937, 939.
- American Institute for Scientific Research: Withdrew from Board of: 111. automatic writings: Mistake re Piper: 113.
- Baby talk; 53. Boat of: 44. brain photographs: Wandering: 52. breathing; Difficulty in: 88. "Broken recollections"; 52. Brothers of: 262. cap; English: 44. cap; Square: 123. Capacities of the supposed communicator; 58. chair; Morris: 44. child; Growing up of a: 117. circle unbroken; It keeps the: 125. clear; Promised to be: 112. College sign; 99. Com-
- James; Prof. W.: (*Continued.*)  
municate first with America: Desired to: 106. Communicat- ing; Method of: 114.
- Communications;—from: 110, 115, 155, 160, 169, 216, 229, 234, 248, 265, 272, 375, 387, 397, 403, 425, 780, 857, 863, 898, 927. Frag- mentary: Reason for: 117. truth of: Never quite sure of: 143. made without volition; 51.
- Communicator; not a good: 40. Confused; 244. Conscious of atmosphere and sounds of physical world; 59. Conversations held while living: References to: 52, 53, 54, 5. Cottage at Chocorua: 98. Cross; Impera- tor: 98. Cup; Loving: 44, 243, 306, 307.
- Death of: 5, 94, 97, 101. Death. Desired America to hear first after his: 106. Death; Experi- ence immediately after: 113. Death of: Prediction of: 99, 141. Death known to Mrs. Smead, August 30th, 1910; 94, 95. Deteriorated capacity: 59. Diplo- ma incident; 44. Doubted: Never: continuance of life and expression; 426. Dream about Mrs. Chenoweth's: 215. Dream state of communicators: Dis- cusses the supposed: 50, 51, 59. Dream talk: 58. "Dreaming": Turned out of the "witness box" for: 84. Dross; Too little gold and too much: 143.
- Eliza: 44. Endowment; I might have left a small: 275. English: As much: as we; 203. En- tranced; Not; 59. Evidence: lack of: Concerned at: 143. Ex- cited: Other Spirits more: than: 154. Expression: Spontaneous: of the spirit; 375.
- Family reunion: Like a: 142. Father of: 336. Floating and unattached phantasms: 52. Foods of: 44. "Fool away the Light"; 112. "Fool away the time of Science"; 111. Frag- mentary communications: 117. French exercise book: 58. Funeral of: 196.
- Harry: 44. Haunted house: 937. heart matters; Whole interest was in: 142. Hodgson: Dr.

James; Prof. W.: (*Continued.*)

Chaffed; on his inability to talk definitely; 141. Hodgson; Dr.: Photograph of: 144.

Identity; evidence of: Difficulty of securing: 5. Identity; personal: No apparent effort to prove his: 21. Identity; personal: Failure at first to prove: 23. Illness of: 150. Incidents not as satisfactory as desirable; 40.

Influence in articles soon gone unless carefully guarded; 116. bring any; You did not: 121. Hated to give Dr. Hyslop his: 110. your: Take: from me; 118.

Influences needed to hold spirits near the earth; 117. Inkstand; 44. Interest: First: in regard to this expression; 138.

Lambda iota [phi] epsilon; 97. Letter of: placed near hand of Mrs. Smead; 96. Letters; Treatment of: 44. Library of: 201. Life not death eternal; 97. Light; Fool away the: 112. Lights: Difference in: 53. Loving cup; 44, 243, 306, 307.

Medium responsible for power of communications; 53. Memory clear; 53, 216. Mental position of: 144. Messages produced without volition; 51. Morris chair; 44. Mother of; 152, 218. Mustache: Smoothing out his: 123, 124. Myers; F. W. H.: writes for: 124.

Nauheim; Trip to: 101. Non sequitur; 119, 123. Notes: Making: of things to recall; 58.

Oedema of the lungs; 210. Omega; 44.

Paris; 101. Phi sigma mu; 98. Phinuit; 120. Photograph: The Hodgson; 44. Photograph of: recognized by Mrs. S.: 125. Posthumous messages of: 236. Pseudo thinkers; 58. Psychical research: Interest in: 5. Psychical researchers: Well known to: 7. Psychics both knew that Dr. Hyslop was experimenting to get communications from: 38. Psychometry: It is not: 116, 117. Psychometry; Views on: 117.

Reasoner of the group; 433.

James; Prof. W.: (*Continued.*)

Reasoning during communication; 51. Records by: 97. Religious aspect; 111. Reminder; Asks to have a: 98. Reservoir of human memories; 52. Reservoir for information; 121. Return of; Public interest in: 5. Return; Promise to: 111. Robes; Ask H. about the: 100. Science: Fool away the time of: 111. Seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 165. Semi-pantheistic conception; 52. Showing: Better: than H.; 141. Sigma; 98, 99. Sign or name given to: 139. Sleepy; 125. Smead; Mrs. works most easily with: 122. Son send any kind of greeting: Did my; 116. Son to continue my work; 113. Soul: Nothing has a: but man; 116.

Telepathy; 118, 119. Telepathy does not work here; 118. Token; Did you tell son to send me a: 125. Truth: Believe in almost anything but the: 119. Twaddle; 58. Typewriting; 44.

Unfinished; Left so many matters: 142.

Verrall: Mrs.: dreams of: 105, 126. Volition; Messages produced without: 51.

Watch; Father's: 44. "Witness box": Turned out of the: for "dreaming"; 84. Word: One: at a time; 112, 114. Work nearly finished; 44. Wright; man named: Talk with: 44.

See also *J. James, Omega, W. J., William.*

Jane; 614. Aunt: 659. Aunt Sarah: 684.

Janes; Dr. Lewis:—191, 208, 211, 215. Communication from; 206. left out the G; 212.

Japanese case of drawers; 467.

Jennette; 224.

Jennie:—Any other: 391, 392. Cousin: 503. More impetuous: 712.

Jennie P.: 22, 23, 193, 391, 414, 420, 451, 564, 615, 654, 667, 724, 735, 739, 768, 802, 811. Communications from: 150, 172, 179, 193, 258, 307, 332, 389, 405, 418, 427, 464, 486, 511, 578. called the Familiar by Rector; 396. helped Dr.

- Hodgson to assume control; 286.  
 Identity of; 489. turns Prof.  
 James out of the "witness box"  
 for "dreaming"; 84. Marginal  
 incidents in consciousness; 73.  
 Writing of; usually rapid and  
 confused; 147. See also *Austen*,  
*J. P.*, *Jane*, *Jennie Potter*, *Mary*  
*Ann*, *Whirlwind*.
- Jennie Potter; 489.  
 Jerusalem; 527.  
 Jessie; 554.  
 Jock; Jack or; 590.  
 Joe; 808. John or; 600, 602. Uncle;  
 684, 690, 727, 728, 808, 809. Unc-  
 cle; was brother of mother of Dr.  
 Hyslop; 809.  
 John; 310, 358, 485, 486, 569, 601,  
 623, 690, 727, 728, 751. C—;  
 358, 359. Father; 216, 395.  
 (Gregg); 418, 430, 436. (Gregg);  
 Aunt of; assumed control; 440.  
 (Gregg); Death of; 432. H.;  
 358. or Joe; 600, 602. Little;  
 400. Uncle; 718. Uncle; (of  
 Aunt Sarah); 751. Uncle; Uncle  
 Finney had an; 752.  
 Johns Hopkins University; 521.  
 Johnson, Miss; 105, 826, 835, 840,  
 878, 886, 888, 889, 931.  
 Joie; 890, 891.  
 Jones; Charles N.; 321, 322, 807.  
 General; 223.  
 Jordan; 749.  
 Joseph; 932, 935.  
 Josephine; 145.  
 Journal; 531.  
 Judge of the Federal Court; 406.  
 Jugglery; Intellectual; 8.  
 Julia; 357, 358. An earthly; 684.  
 Julia; Aunt;—683, 684, 685, 689, 690.  
 "Brother"; Wide mouth of her;  
 45. Carpenter's tools; 45. Death  
 of; 685. Depletion at time of  
 death; 45. Dog; Account of the;  
 45. Habits of family with regard  
 to sitting-room; 45. Dr. Hyslop's  
 knowledge of; 42. Post office;  
 45. Resignation of; 45. Sitting-  
 room; 45. Spread; White and  
 blue; 45. Store; 45. Tools; Car-  
 penter's; 45.  
 Julian; 515.  
 Junot;—Mr.; 400, 406, 457, 458, 462,  
 466, 467, 468, 473, 474, 475, 476,  
 478, 479, 480, 485, 486. Mr.;  
 Country place of; 487. Mr.;  
 Father of; 461, 462, 482. Mr.;  
 Mother of; 468. Mr.; Senior;  
 Communications from; 464, 481.  
 Mrs.; 486. Mrs.; Death of; 487.  
 Mrs.; Mother of; 461. Piper  
 Records; 458. Report; 474.  
 Junots; Confusion of; with Gregg  
 family; 486.
- K; Mrs.; 303.  
 Kate; 209, 257. See *Mrs. L.*  
 Kellogg; 386.  
 Kentucky; 430.  
 Kettle;—Big; 551. Brass or cop-  
 per; 796.  
 Key;—incident; 368, 454. was  
 right; 265. with a string and  
 stick of wood; 544.  
 Keys; 188.  
 Kindergarten work; 538.  
 King;—Edward VII came to Mrs  
 Smead but did not communicate;  
 888. of England; Army of the;  
 933. goes; Where the; 345. (Ed-  
 ward VII) Greater power even  
 than the; 888.  
 King's service; 868.  
 Kingdom and not a United States;  
 794.  
 Kitty; Big grey; 913.  
 Knighted; 934.  
 Knowledge;—Thought or spirit;  
 425. Universal Reservoir of; 34  
 Kühn ist das Mühen, herrlich der  
 Lohn; 898.
- L; 97, 316, 381, 448, 558, 590, 881  
 (Sir Oliver Lodge) 275, 826, 830,  
 868. Mrs.; 209, 258, 872. (See  
*Kate*, *Mrs. L.*—) S. M. and; 503.  
 L—; 500, 636, 661. Mrs.; 737,  
 738. See *Kate*, *Mrs. L.*  
 Laboratory; 279, 328. of Experi-  
 mental Sciences; 929.  
 Lady;—with dark eyes and hair;  
 410. with hair in knot; 362.  
 Middle aged; 701. of middle  
 stature; 460. Old; with curls;  
 615. Old; who is left in the  
 world; 501. Old; precise and  
 particular; 418. Old; with Car-  
 roll D. Wright; 520. Old... very  
 much wrinkled; 818, 820. Very  
 old; with wrinkled face; 542.  
 Small and rather delicate look-  
 ing; 768. to the West; 922.  
 Young; buried in bridal gown;  
 607. See also *Spirit*.
- Lambda epsilon gamma tau; 934.

- Lambda iota [phi] epsilon; 97.  
 Lamb; Brass candlestick or: 557, 558.  
 Langdon; 721.  
 Lantern; 602.  
 "Last Leaf on the Tree"; 212, 223.  
 Laura; 173, 448, 449, 559, 561, 562, 637.  
 Law:—of association; 435. of attraction; 435. different in different spheres; 435.  
 Lawrence:—Mass.; 590. Scientific School; 368.  
 Leg; Sore or wound on the: 484, 485.  
 Leighton; 660, 661.  
 Leipsic; 692, 693, 723, 744.  
 Leland; 590.  
 Lena; 195.  
 Lennie Ellis; 590.  
 Leonidas; 610.  
 "Les Misérables"; 435.  
 Letitia; 206, 547.  
 Letter:—in long envelope; 321. of Prof. James placed near hand of Mrs. Smead; 96. or Lettie; 449.  
 Letters:—Prof. James' treatment of; 44. Posthumous; 80.  
 Lettie; 206, 449, 547.  
 Level:—On the: 134. When they parted it was on the: 133.  
 Leverage; Failure to get; 150.  
 Lewis; 191.  
 Liberty:—Dash for; 138. pole; 629.  
 Library; Book in a; 81.  
 Lida; 582, 657.  
 Life:—is communicable; 147. not death eternal; 97. Drawbacks of; 626. is a farce; 496. Normal and dream; 72. Psychical; See *Psychical*. is sequence; 510.  
 Light:—Another; 301. is clear there; 922. Communicators dependent on the; 538. streaming from side of cross; 122. "dead"; 278. energy; New; 114. being examined on spirit side; 928. has failed; The old; 346. Fraudulent; 880. good, but rather slow; 446. Greater; 888, 889. H's; 878. Hodgson; 260, 261. Holding the; 867. as a continuous place for information; 121. Isolation of the; 738. New; makes all effort at communication seem like kindergarten work; 538. may recoil from one not in harmony; 923. more responsible than supposed; 217. Not a steady; 345. testing the; Spirit machine for; 928. is vanishing; 919. varies because of the conditions; 738. Visits of spirits to another; 737. See also *Communication*.  
 Lights:—in Burton Case; 921. Difference between; 53. Father of all; 897, 898. other; Tried at several; 126.  
 Lillian; 367.  
 Limitations; 286, 305, 306, 324, 403, 460. of communications; 49. See also *Communication*.  
 Lincoln; Abraham:—553. Picture of; 631. Statue of; 463.  
 Line:—Fixing the; 533. Receiving; 507. right; Get the; 594. steady; Keeping the; 60, 63, 683. See also *Communication*.  
 Lines; Hold of the; 301.  
 Link; Every soul leaves....; with all it comes in contact with; 851. See also *Communication*.  
 Linnie; 590.  
 Lionel; 610.  
 Lisbon; 505.  
 Literary considerations; Logical and; 37.  
 Little; Great-grandmother; 685.  
 Liveth to himself; No man; 55.  
 Lizzie; 438, 460, 590, 637.  
 Lodge; Friend; 933.  
 Lodge; Sir Oliver; 219, 220, 275, 868, 934. See also *L*.  
 Logical and literary considerations; 37.  
 Logos; 925.  
 Lois; 661.  
 London; 221, 289, 394. Society; 393. See also *British*.  
 Longfellow; 202, 206.  
 Loom; Hand; 556, 557.  
 Lorgnette spectacles; 125.  
 Losing hold; 497. See also *Communication*.  
 Lost soul; 917, 918.  
 Louie; 661.  
 Loving cup; 44, 243, 306, 307.  
 Lowell; 202, 206.  
 Lucien Gale; 722, 723.  
 Lucy; 483, 637, 765. Aunt; 288, 698, 700. Cousin; 697. Mac; 752, 753, 767. McClellan; 700, 702. P—; 359.  
 M; 364, 485, 486, 700, 935. (Mrs. William T. Bull); 497. Mr.; 320. or N; 572. S.; and L; 503.  
 M. H.; 158, 247.

- M—; 316, 500, 802. A—; 887.  
 Mr.: 141, 535. Mrs.: 535. Richard: 278. Mrs. Richard: 278, 320.  
 Mabel; 252, 361, 521.  
 Machine:—electric: Like using an: 881. Would not let the Light see the: 929. for testing the Light; 928. Monkey with the: 775. Removing the soul from the: 870, 871. Use of the: 266. Work of the: 272. in good working order; 96. See also *Communication*.  
 MacIntire: 700.  
 Madam; 246, 322, 389, 439, 440, 442, 527, 626. Communication from: 322.  
 Madame; 306.  
 Maggie; 334, 723.  
 Magnetic:—affinitization; 507. vibratory influence; 518. See also *Communication*.  
 Magnetizing:—the pencil; 141. the room; 414. See also *Communication*.  
 Magnus; 382.  
 Mame; 653.  
 Man:—Apparition of a: and fit of coughing; 31. Apparition of a: with hair thin on top and heavy mustache; 123. with apron; 328. Argumentative: 738. whose beard was curly; 262. with long black beard; 223. Big strong: 381. .... erect and unbending; 751. with big black eyes; 185. with blue eyes, dark hair, mustache, and light beard; 362. with dark eyes, strong face, and assertive influence; 481. Fat: with ruddy face; 600. in a frock coat; 492. like Gladstone; 923. with grey hair and a bald spot; 689. with grey in his hair; 856. with wide hat; 621. with big bald head; 174. in Highland costume; 699. with his head over Dr. Hyslop's; 505. Immense: 347. not much older than Mr. Junot; 476. who was slightly lame; 617. Large: 461. Little small: 241. from New York; 288. Very old: with white beard and hair; 621. Red headed: 206. of slender physique; 476. Small little bit of a: 535. with stooped shoulders; 280. .... stout and heavy; 620. Stout: with red face; 804. with tall spare form; 580. Ungainly old: 363. in uniform; 586. Unrecognized: 849. Young: 462. See also *Spirit*.  
 Manchester; 473, 483.  
 Maple syrup; 799, 815.  
 Marble columns; White building with: 123.  
 Margaret; 320, 616, 676, 723. Aunt: 685, 686.  
 Marginal associations; 55, 56, 683. See *Communication*.  
 Maria; 587, 676.  
 Marian; 587.  
 Marianne Dashwood; 489.  
 Marie; 497.  
 Marietta; 232.  
 Marigolds; 803.  
 Mark Twain; 47, 563.  
 Martha; 46, 468, 802, 899, 900, 912, 913.  
 Marva, Illinois; 689.  
 Marvin; 700.  
 Mary; 402, 505, 607, 692, 715, 716, 717, 724, 725, 726, 730, 731, 732, 740, 743, 745, 802, 822, 903, 911, 913, 914. Ann; 308, 531, 676. Ella; 232. Ellen; 232. Father of: 718. Watch which: had; 745, 746. connected with C. D. Wright; 512.  
 Marys; Two: 726.  
 Mason; Dr. G. a: 134.  
 Massachusetts; 938.  
 Material:—existence as a dream life; 71. substances; 896. Universe; 896. world; 'Sleeping' in the: 71.  
 Materialism and consciousness; 18.  
 Materialistic:—mind clarified and unified with spiritual life; 509. temper of the world; 527. See *Evolution*.  
 Materiality; Day of: 625. See *Evolution*.  
 Maurice; 588.  
 May; 320.  
 McClellan;—James: 320, 701, 735, 767, 810. James: Wives of: 809. John; 363, 751. Lucy; 392, 700, 701, 753. (See also *Lucy*.) Lucy: Father of: 760. Lucy: Husband of: 754. Lucy: Prophecy of death of: 754.  
 McClellan; Robert:—602, 698, 700, 702, 703, 754, 755, 756, 757, 760, 766, 767, 809. lacking in power for concentration; 74. Elm tree: 46. Piping the spring; 46. school house; 46. Spring in the woods; 46. Stepmother of: 810.

- McDonald; Flora: 793.  
 McGoskin; Rhoda: 778.  
 McIntire; Flora: 792.  
 Melvor; Flora: 792.  
 McKinley; William:—374, 665, 761.  
   Communication from: 373.  
 McSweeney; John:—363, 364. Bobbie; 46. Ironton; 46.  
 Meadow; 706.  
 Mechanical; Getting quite: 615.  
 Medal or watch; 362.  
 Medic: Spirits don't always want the: to see things; 505.  
 Medium;—Adjustment of physical organism of: 88. Control over physical organism of: 65, 88, 90, 92. feels the difference between spirits and mortals; 723. Influence of: makes Frank Podmore write "gotten"; 880. Integrity of: 217. affects results more than has been supposed; 53. Spanish: 505. Not... let the case rest on the work of one: 393, 397. to the West; 922. See also *Communication*.  
 Mediums:—liable to errors of memory or normal amnesia; 8. Payment of: 298.  
 Mehitable; 802.  
 Mehittie; 802.  
 Mêlée of mental states; 57.  
 Mellin; 326.  
 Memories:—of communicator crowding in: 357. Earth: 851. Recalling: 80. and recollections; 246. Transmitted: 591. See also *Memory*.  
 Memory:—of communicator clear; 216, 293. Errors of: in mediums; 8. not intensified or clarified by death; 217. Lapse of: 563. Loss of: while in control; 154. of spirit clear; 53. Survival of personal: 19. See also *Association, Associations, Memories, Past, Recall, Recollection*.  
 Mental:—action the same in both spheres; 60, 682. action of spirits becomes visible; 682. attitudes and brain forces; 166. energy; Rush and pull of: 274. Expression ... in and through the: 498. or neural habits of the medium; 65.  
 Mental picture:—of the past; 32. theory seems more rational than dream theory; 86.  
 Mental pictures:—25, 26, 27, 28, 65, 74, 78, 82, 87, 90, 500, 519, 566, 579, 642, 669, 768, 937, 939. Abstract topics of thought and: 27. and apparitions; 30, 33, 34, 937. get confused; 562, 631. Confusion in: 487, 814. Interfusion of: 631. mixed; 691. and "fugitive phantasms"; 69. Rapid flow of: 69. and reality; Subconscious unable to distinguish between: 681. not always self-interpreting; 66. not apparent in work of Mrs. Smead; 91. Snatches of: 757. Sound produces: 458. Translating: 519. See also *Communication*.  
 Mental:—processes; Body a cloak for: 60, 63, 682. reality; 897. State always a complicated mass of sensations and reflections; 62.  
 Merrill; Mrs.: 467.  
 Message:—direct: Sometimes unable to get a: 257. Mixed: 754. from subjective source; 593. See *Communication*.  
 Messages:—attuned to a few instruments; 265. Clearest: from those who have nothing to lose or fear; 255. caught by contact; 160. Deferred: 78. showing characteristics of dreams; 85. Most important and expected: not forthcoming; 265. Involuntary: 51, 915. caught because the key was right; 265. with no meaning to the recipients; 265. Prepared: 181. prepared; Three different: 212. Sealed: 828. Sporadic: 247. projected without volition; 160. coming at wrong sitting; 485. See also *Communication*.  
 Meyer; 693.  
 Miles; Miss: 31, 877.  
 Military coat; 550.  
 Miller; 692, 693.  
 Minaret; Turkish: 916.  
 Mind; Mysteries of the: 531.  
 Mind-reading; Communications which discount: 109, 112.  
 Minister; 807.  
 Minor work: 356.  
 Miracles; Idea of: 17.  
 Mirror Writing; 98, 825, 850, 887.  
 Miss—; 362.  
 Missionary work in heaven; 626.  
 Misstatement by subliminal; 430.  
 Mistakes in communications; 49, 71, 74, 84, 246, 528.

- Mixed:—communications; 574. currents; 646. message; 754. See also *Communication*.
- Mixture of two houses; 487.
- Money; 164. bye and bye; 525. coming for special work; 506. Influence of: reaches beyond the grave; 639. Need of: 639. No time, no: no energy; 509. See *Finance*.
- Monogram of F. and P; 822, 828, 868.
- Moody; 710.
- Mora; 615.
- Moral:—and ethical development; 294. ideas; 434. See *Evolution*.
- Morocco; Bible bound in: 82.
- Morris chair; 44, 391.
- Morse Case; 340.
- Moses; 250. Helena: 195. Your name is: 250.
- Moses; Stainton:—139, 250, 287, 332, 382, 394, 402, 421, 455, 537, 538, 565, 874. Communications from: 382, 875. Prayer by: 876. See also *S. M.*
- Mothers; Two kinds of: 808.
- Motor system of Mrs. Chenoweth never figures, except vocal organs; 25.
- Mouth; Wide: of Aunt Julia's "brother"; 46.
- Moving picture show; 579.
- Mugwumps; 757, 759.
- Müller; 692, 693.
- Multiple personality; 60.
- Muscles of medium; Action of: 166.
- Muscular shivering of medium; 158.
- Music; 299. disturbed Mrs. Chenoweth; 807.
- Musket; Old fashioned: 544.
- Muskrats; 604.
- Myers; F. W. H.:—110, 112, 128, 139, 185, 229, 270, 272, 394, 454, 456, 458, 467, 498, 530, 537, 565, 591, 626, 856, 885, 905, 928. ability; a student of: 243. Mrs. Chenoweth's knowledge of: 11. Communicates for friend of the Smeads; 128. Communications from: 123, 271, 711, 831, 884, 909, 915, 924, 930. is in his element; 517. in England; 183. Friend; 929. is our special guide; 884. Peculiar I of: 27, 271, 272, 625, 626, 711. Italy; Relation to: 11. James: advises Prof.: to keep his head clear; 112. James; Prof.: writes for: 124. mistakes; why we make; 71. muddled; Confused and: 71. Poetry of: 113. still writing poetry; 183. seen by Mrs. Chenoweth; 183, 516. slow and sure; 55. helped Teacher to write; 625. called William by Dr. Hodgson; 54.
- Myers; Mrs. F. W. H., 284.
- Mysteries not all solved in Spirit World; 898.
- N; 502. M or: 572.
- N. Y.; 344, 377, 402, 584. See also *New York*.
- Name:—not on communicator's mind; 482. Vision of: as it is spoken; 458.
- Names:—come best when unexpected and unsought; 462. Confusion of: 468. floating about; 467. proper: Difficulty with: 27, 69, 652. Proper; and phonetic laws; 69. proper: Power to get: 653.
- Nancy; 679.
- Nannie; Aunt; 734, 763.
- "*Naturalization of the Supernatural*"; 137, 828.
- Nauheim; 157, 864.
- Neck; Pain in: of Mrs. Chenoweth; 206, 234, 242, 253, 262, 269, 278, 298, 308, 329, 369, 398.
- Necktie; 155, 157, 251, 259, 268, 297, 298, 404.
- Negro; 574, 575. Old: 45. Tom; 617, 618.
- Nell or Nellie; 501.
- Nellie; 386, 501. and Siris; 279.
- Nerves; Communicator has no sensation of: 281.
- Nervous:—breakdown of Mrs. Chenoweth; 440, 450. energy; 190. excitement; 190. tension; 190.
- Nettie; 95, 96, 901.
- Neural habits of the medium; 65.
- New England; 393.
- New York;—259, 286, 343, 344, 521. (See also *N. Y.*) Case; 539. Sitings; 584.
- Newbold;—Dr.: 258. incident; 46. Professor; 357, 358.
- Newspaper; Times . . . : 483.
- Niagara Falls; 485, 491.
- "Nigger talk"; 58, 273, 529, 530, 864.
- Non compos mentis; 608, 618, 620, 621.
- Non sequitur; 119, 123.
- Nora; 615, 641.
- Norfolk jacket; 748.

- Normal:—and dream consciousness; 189. and dream life; 72, 83, 88. life rationalized by concentration; 73.
- North country; 97.
- Nurse; 718.
- Nurses; Catholic; 504.
- O.; 172, 239, 251, 268, 277, 296, 307, 312, 327, 336, 362, 369, 378, 389, 397, 405, 462.
- O. C.; 886.
- Objects;—Impressions left on; 838, 839. carry their influence; 837, 838, 839. See also *Article*.
- Obscure men can best prove personal identity; 5, 40.
- Obscuring the issue; 15.
- Occultism; Women who make a fad of; 497.
- Ocean; Wavy lines made for the: See *Wavy*.
- Office staff; 142.
- Offices in every city; 383.
- Ohio; 571, 607.
- Old gentleman with grey hair and beard; 751.
- Old old gentleman; 764.
- Olive; 783.
- Oliver Twist; 480, 555.
- Olivia; 783.
- Olympia; 430.
- Omega; 97, 98, 132, 157, 163, 172, 239, 251, 268, 823, 829, 831, 833, 860, 935. and cross; 862, 867, 898, 928. cross and monogram; 822. See also *Prof. William James*.
- Opodeldoc; 679.
- Opportunity; Temptation and; 435.
- Oral;—Trace of; 302. trance work; 301.
- Orchard; 64, 633.
- Organism of the medium;—Lack of adjustment to the physical; 88. Control over the physical; 65, 88, 90, 92. See also *Communication*.
- Organization for Psychical Research; Spirit; 811.
- Orthodox conceptions; 540.
- Outlook; 136.
- Oxford; 364, 382, 887, 888, 889. Old and new; 886.
- Owl; 391.
- Owned or own; We are either; 511.
- P; 841. also: (Piddington); 932. Dr.: My old friend: (Phinuit); 884. Friend: (Podmore); 932. William; 308.
- P. R. S.; Epoch-making days for; 595.
- P. S.; 299, 889.
- P—;—Light; 355. Lucy; 359.
- Pain;—Communicator afraid of; 129. in head of Mrs. Chenoweth; 186.
- Pajamas; Pink; 295, 296, 325, 781, 928.
- Palladino; Eusapia; 353, 880.
- Palmer; 359.
- Pantomimes; Aura; 144.
- Papers for the Society; Five; 149.
- Parentheses; Use of; 93.
- Paris; 101.
- Park Square; 349.
- Parliament; 935.
- Past;—is as a dream; 481. Picture of the; 750. Power to recall the; 148. recalled in segments; 188. Recollections of the; 198. See also *Memory*.
- Paul; 421, 430. Saint; 267, 712.
- Peary; 372.
- Pelham; George;—6, 22, 23, 26, 54, 287. Mrs. Chenoweth's knowledge of; 10. Communications from; 105, 137, 153, 159, 166, 200, 220, 225, 243, 263, 373, 383, 401, 414, 782, 794, 917. Death of; Parents' feeling after; 46. died in 1892; 202. Grilling of; by Dr. Hodgson; 138, 139. Mother's prayers; 46. Real name of; 387. Parents' feeling after death of; 46. Bits of poetry in New York; 141. See also *G. P., G. P. & Co., George P.*
- Pen; Fountain; 174, 175, 195, 303.
- Pencil;—Cold handle to the; 281. Communicator 'got right on to the'; 482. felt like stick of cord wood; 263. Difficulty in control of; 209, 263, 265, 388, 403, 426, 443, 536. Dropped off the end of the; 511. Energy of spirits directed towards; 536. too hard; 378. R. Hyslop, Senior, particular about; 103, 104, 107, 108. Magnetizing the; 141, 280. seems to move of itself; 281. George Pelham not particularly sensitive about the; 263. held in unnatural position; 148. rubbed; 350. rubbed by Dr. Hyslop to demagnetize it; 443. Rubber shield on; 826. seized, also Dr. Hyslop's

- hand; 433. thrown down, then suddenly seized; 651. Weight of: makes a difference; 254. Writing with top of: 373.
- Pencils:—absorbed the power; 478. rejected by communicators; 150, 159, 163, 173, 179, 201, 208, 229, 243, 263, 285, 389, 471, 509, 610, 611, 711, 736, 763, 780.
- Penn; William; 915.
- Pennsylvania; 915.
- Pennyroyal; 679.
- Percentage; only significance of: 47.
- Personal:—Characteristics; 394. element: 394. equation; 526. See also *Identity*.
- Personal identity:—Evidence for; sufficient to convince intelligent men; 14, 42. the fundamental problem; 19. proved more effectively by apparently sporadic incidents than by many intentional messages; 88. must be proved in connection with supernormal information; 5, 20. See also *Identity*.
- Personal:—influence; 394. touch; One needs the: 510.
- Personality:—Dissociated; 60, 71. Distorted and tempered by others; 55. Multiple; 60. Streams of: 529. unimpaired; 418. See also *Identity*.
- Personate; Some of the friends could: 126. See also *Impersonation*, *Personation*.
- Personation; 126, 168, 169. See also *Impersonation*, *Personate*.
- Personelle; 393.
- Pertinent may not always appear; 227.
- Peter; 659, 660.
- Phantasm:—of my brain; (Jennie P); 428. projected by thought; 341.
- Phantasms; 577. Fugitive; 52, 64, 171. fugitive: Mental pictures and; 69. Telepathic; 26, 32. See also *Communication*.
- "Phantasms of the Living"; 908.
- Phantom existence; Spirit life not a: 144.
- PHI DELTA; 887, 888.
- Phi; Sigma; 99.
- Phi Sigma Mu; 98.
- Philadelphia; 913.
- Philistine;—Incompetence of the average; 14. can never wait; 79.
- Philosophical:—and reasoning power; 354. Society in Spirit World; 891.
- Phinuit; Dr.: 78, 79, 127, 424, 445, 861, 869, 870. and the sitter's dog; 32. earth-bound; 120. sent to another planet; 120. Régime of: 927.
- Phonetic:—influences in automatic writing; 118. laws; Proper names and; 69.
- Photograph:—of Dr. Hodgson; 212. incident; 45. incident; Aunt Cora and the: 46.
- Photographed on the surrounding film; 433.
- Photographs; Wandering brain; 52. 171.
- Phraseology:—often borrowed; 470. and ideas of medium used by communicators; 424.
- Physical:—life: Process of: is towards unity; 509. (See also *Evolution*.) manifestations; 402. methods doomed to failure; 18, 19, 20. phenomena; 498, 518. phenomena; Magnetizing the room for: 414. science which loses sight of the spiritual; 509.
- Piano; Old square; 728, 729.
- Picture:—Dominant; 81. of a double head; 290. of Prof. James; 46, 212. in library of Prof. James; 212. Mental: of the past; 32, 750. of a woman; Old fashioned; 801.
- Pictures:—Brain thought; 638. taken in 1868; 190. Mental: See *Mental Pictures*. Touch of the past creates; 155.
- Piddington; Mr.: 199, 932, 935. See also *P*.
- Pigs; 680. Black; 604.
- Pilly; 841, 842.
- Piper Case:—140, 175, 176, 198, 237, 417, 498, 802, 883, 889. Comparison of: with Chenoweth and Smead Cases; 24. Difficulties in: 28. Substitution of Emperor Group for Dr. Phinuit in: 884.
- Piper:—experiments; 762. opinion of Frank Podmore on the: 854. Group; 139, 613. Light; 251, 326, 344, 384, 395, 528, 539, 589, 751. Light; Early work at the: 254. Light; Emperor planned the work at the: 445.
- Piper; Mrs.—13, 24, 25, 30, 120, 163, 179, 249, 260, 318, 327, 351, 354,

- 358, 359, 397, 424, 462, 463, 530, 609, 646, 651, 673, 683, 698, 703, 747, 776, 778, 810, 820, 823, 845, 846, 849, 863, 873, 876, 882, 885, 894, 900, 901, 919, 922, 936. Apparent amnesia of: 83. probably more of an audile than Mrs. Chenoweth; 28. Charge for sittings four times that made by Mrs. Chenoweth; 13. Apparent abnormal condition of communicators; 48, 49. Control of: by Dr. Hodgson; 853, 854. Experiments of Mr. Dorr; 48, 49, 80. Failure of: 346, 499. Effect of Hall sittings on: 178, 344. Hebrew through: 863. refused to work for Dr. Hyslop; 344. Mental control of: 854. Personal feelings of: enter into communications; 854. Personal feelings of: towards Dr. Hyslop; 855. Possession more perfect than in case of Mrs. Chenoweth; 84. Sang songs of Pareppa Rosa under control; 127. almost beyond use; 854. probably less of a visuelle than Mrs. Chenoweth; 28. See also *P.*
- Piper Records:—22, 78, 161, 189, 193, 196, 228, 253, 274, 297, 332, 338, 360, 363, 380, 458, 482, 485, 874. Mistake of letting sitters keep: 127. Ownership of: 127, 128. Rector; 23, 24.
- Piper Report; 645, 647, 651, 672, 673, 697, 700, 760, 767, 775, 912.
- Piper Sittings; 474, 487, 558, 601, 802.
- Piping spring to house; 46.
- Plaid; 158.
- Plains; 601.
- Planets; Life on other: 925.
- Plans; Furtherance of our: 794.
- Pluralism; 161.
- Pocket-book; Long black: 505.
- Podmore; Frank:— 6, 46, 116, 119, 131, 133, 134, 135, 137, 144, 163, 164, 166, 184, 200, 226, 472, 473, 748, 850, 851, 852, 862, 877, 878, 879, 881, 883, 886, 887, 888, 889, 922. gets over anxious; 135. Bedroom of: 205, 833. born blind; 164. Mrs. Chenoweth's knowledge of: 145. Communications from: 131, 197, 825, 833, 836, 850, 867, 877. Death of: 205, 827. Death of: not known to Mrs. Smead; 145. would not try in England; 823. enthusiastic; 135. criticized evidence, not beliefs; 835. "haunts us"; 750. too positive for his own ideas; 135. Efforts of: to prove personal identity; 21. Incidents which would have been of special value not verified; 46. sorry he did not investigate as Dr. Hyslop suggested; 135. well known to psychic researchers; 7. did not believe in the Light; 135. "*Naturalization of the Supernatural*"; 137. still obstinate; 144. Opinions of: 166. Philosophy of: 167. Picture of the past; 750. on the Piper experiments; 854. always too positive; 135. Rain in the face; 46. Reputation as a sceptic; 8. seen by Mrs. Smead; 849. Mrs. Smead and death of: 145, 823. Mrs. Smead's knowledge of: 137. Verification wanting for incidents which would have had special value; 46. See also *F. F. P., Frank, P.*
- Poem; 586.
- Poems and poetry; 202.
- Poetry:—Bits of: in New York; 141. related to Mr. M——; 141. F. W. H. Myers'; 113.
- Poets; Minor: 299, 300.
- Poke-berries; 708.
- Policies; Take no risks in changing: 142. See also *Finance*.
- Pollywogs; 88, 705, 706.
- Ponte Vecchio; 456.
- Poppies; 803.
- Possession:—in case of Mrs. Chenoweth less perfect than in case of Mrs. Piper; 84. Telepathy and: 26. theory; 844, 855. See also *Communication*.
- Possible; Doing what I did not believe: 510.
- Post office; 46.
- Post-hypnotic suggestions made to the subconscious; 844. See also *Hypnosis*.
- Posterity; Work for: 284. See also *Evolution*.
- Posthumous:—letter; Dr. Hodgson and the: 147. letter: Supposed: of Prof. James; 147. letters; 80, 182, 228, 236. See also *Message*.
- Potatoes; 619.
- Potter; Jennie: 489.
- Powder; Small paper with: in it; 519.

- Power:—comes to all alike; 353. augmented by borrowed powers of sitter or psychic; 293. Combined our: 536. to co-ordinate with the physical world; 388. Discarded: 384. Common fund of: 470. is great; 526. H... has more of this: than some of us; 882. Hand has not the usual: 201. from the Indian spirits; 564. Lack of; in impressing; 305, 306. Losing: 213, 478, 523, 733. Pencils absorbed the: 471. Psychic; 375. psychic: Weak in: 374. Renewing the: 419. Turning on more: 471. unless used grows useless; 384. waning; 158. Wasting the: 179. Working: 170. See also *Energy*.
- Pragmatism; 896.
- Pray; Spirits in purgatory: 420.
- Prayer:—by Stainton Moses; 876. not confined to the underworld; 420. Prayers of G. P's mother; 46.
- Precedence; War for: 394.
- Preconceptions are barriers; 511.
- Prejudices; 432. Grown away from; 402. Omniscient and sceptical: 15.
- Premonition; Case of: 204.
- Presence; Consciousness of: 866.
- Press;—Cheese; 550. Cider: 599. Old fashioned; 550.
- Pressure; Lessening of the: 318. See also *Energy*.
- Prestige of the scientific collegiate world; 498.
- Prince:—Consort; 889. Dr. Morton: 60, 71.
- Problem:—to be considered; 17. The fundamental: 19. Popular conception of the: 17.
- Problems;—Accessory: 42. Time to attack more complicated and perplexing; 14.
- Proceedings; 531.
- Professor; 925. Frank Podmore calls Dr. Hyslop: 198, 199.
- Progress; 345. of civilization: 294. Growth and: 482. in the Spirit World; 918. Time to ignore incompetent critics and make: 15. See also *Evolution*.
- "Progressive Thinker"; 359.
- Projected astrals; Hypothesis of: 31.
- Projecting Thought; 149.
- Promises; Profligate: 235.
- Proof; False standards of: 14.
- Prophecy:—by G. P. and Miss Burton; 454. of death of Lucy McClellan; 754. by Starlight; 506.
- Prophet of the olden dispensation; 863.
- Psychic;—Atmosphere of the: 697. Influence about a: 697. phenomena; Dined on: 780. people; 354. power is not confined; 393. Research; School for: 496. researchers; The whole world.....: 476.
- Psychical Research;—Church and: 532. Spirit organization for: 811.
- Psychological;—experiments; 403. unity a necessity; 15. unity and relevance of the facts; 47.
- Psychology; Normal and abnormal: 498.
- Psychometry; 116, 117, 407, 837, 840, 851. not telepathy; 838.
- Pump; 805.
- Punctuation; 93.
- Purpose:—is to sail; 931. of the work; 526.
- Putnam; 162, 335. Mr.: 330.
- Question of sitter sets thought working; 682.
- Questions; Communicator should not be badgered with: 855.
- Quigley; 578.
- Quimby; 578.
- R; 484, 646. or B.; 632. C—: 749. Tendency to write: for P.: 883, 890.
- r; 332.
- R. B.; 364, 365, 443, 444.
- R. H.; 154, 274, 293, 316, 318, 326, 367, 378, 393, 443, 454, 482, 521, 530, 565, 589, 640, 655, 740, 746, 749, 775, 781.
- R U ready; 526, 539.
- Radio-active substances; 116.
- Radishes; 436, 437.
- Railroad; 667, 704, 936. New: 662 train; 331. wreck; 228.
- Railway; 703. Accident on a: 80. incident; 667, 936, 938.
- Rainbow; 214, 223.
- Ram; 46, 815, 816.
- Ramsden; Miss; 31, 877.
- Rapid transit; 259.
- Rapport; Spiritual; with the Light; 434. See also *Communication*.
- Raps; 196, 279, 397, 398, 401, 402, 413, 414.
- Reality; 161.

- Reasoning during communication; 51, 171.
- Recall; Effort to: causes loss of control; 307, 336. Not hard to: 470. See also *Memory*.
- Receiver; Dr. Hyslop a good: 326.
- Receiving line; 507.
- Recollections;—Broken: 52, 171. Memories and: 246. of the past; 198. See also *Memory*.
- Reconstructive influence on science and philosophy; 143.
- Recorder at the office; 909.
- Records;—English Society's: 906. Prof. James disappointed in Dr. Hodgson's: 235. overlap; 93. Piper: kept by Sitters; 127. kept secret until finished; 14. Transferring of: to S. P. R.; 113. See also *Report, Verbatim*.
- Rector; 22, 23, 24, 122, 175, 264, 297, 397, 399, 455, 840, 841, 843, 844, 873. Communications from: 382, 392. and the record; 874.
- Reed; 764.
- Referee; 519.
- Relief after death; 486.
- "*Religio-Philosophical Journal*"; 359.
- Religious;—aspect; 111. Convictions of R. H.; 274. side; 889. See also *Ethical*.
- Reminder; Prof. James asks for a: 98. See also *Article*.
- Reservoir;—for information; 121. of knowledge; Universal: 34. of human memories; 52.
- "Respectability" and conversion; 15.
- Responsible; Light more: than supposed; 217.
- Responsibilities; Air of Spiritland relieves of: 527. Sharing the: 736.
- Rest; Place of: 450.
- Result; Never quite sure of the: 208. not always affected by thought of sinner; 702.
- Results; Passive spirit will produce better: 460.
- Retta; 320.
- Return; Why some souls do not: 128.
- Returning from heaven; Overwhelmed with the dignity of: 486.
- Reuben; 624.
- Reverberations of sound; 335.
- Revival; 334.
- Rhoda; 713, 778.
- Rhodin; 778.
- Rhythm; 396.
- Ribbon; Red, white, and blue: 187, 188.
- Rice; 748, 749. Mrs.: 362. Mrs. Cora: 749.
- Richard; 59, 149, 160, 235, 249, 297, 361, 498, 528, 531, 580, 613, 654. Inquisitors as was: 155.
- Richard's word; 548.
- Rideout; 46, 600, 601, 602.
- Righteousness; Incentive for: 294. See also *Evolution*.
- Rob; 320.
- Robbie; 362, 364.
- Robbie's baby; 362.
- Robbins; Miss: 186.
- Robert; 364, 484, 485, 646, 650, 793, 808. Brother: 808, 912. doesn't belong to your own mother; 809.
- Rockefeller; John D.: 283, 286, 289, 330.
- Rocks; 331.
- Rogars; 602.
- Rogers; 602.
- Rolle; 525.
- Rome; 270.
- Roof; Peculiar: 642.
- Room; Small: 301.
- Roquet; 244.
- Rosa; Pareppa; Songs of: sung by Mrs. Piper under control; 127.
- Royal Society; 932.
- Royalty counts if in the upper storey; 135.
- Rug;—Fur: 347. Steamer: 158.
- Rum; Cherry: 598, 607.
- Runaway breakdown; 80.
- Rush; 764.
- Ruth; 314, 316, 318, 374, 375, 384, 624.
- Ryder; 45, 600, 601, 602.
- Ryker; 600, 601, 602.
- S; 275, 455, 689, 751, 759, 872. Aunt: 656, 657. has his eyes open; 164. The lady: (Mrs. Sidgwick); 910. M. and L.; 503. Uncle: (Sylvester Smead); 890. will write; 538.
- S—; 501, 523. M—L.; 500. (Sylvester Smead); 589. (Starlight); 613.
- S. M.; 383, 394, 402, 421, 565, 873, 874, 903.
- S. P. R.; Publications of: 908.
- S. S.; 479, 829.
- S. T. D.; 930.
- Sadie; 568, 569, 696.
- Sage; 186.
- Sallie; Cousin: 131.
- Sally; 467. Aunt: 764.

- Salvation; Desire and: 593. See also *Evolution*.  
 Sam; 747.  
 Sanborn; Frank: 442.  
 Sandals; 347.  
 Sandusky; 662, 663.  
 Sap; 814, 815.  
 Sarah; 165, 349, 460, 462, 485, 486, 487, 523, 555, 568. A. P.; 462, 467.  
 Aunt; 659, 660, 689, 713, 793.  
 Aunt of Dr. Hyslop's: 751. Jane;  
 Aunt; 684. M. H.; 462, 486.  
 Sarah's; Aunt: uncle John: 751.  
 Sarahs; Two: 752.  
 Sarcou; 136, 680. she; 437, 535.  
 Sargent; Minnie: 589.  
 Sarsaparilla; 707.  
 Sassafras; 707.  
 Sauerkraut; 798.  
 Savage;—Dr. Minot J.: 380, 393, 402. Philip: 299, 666. Philip: Communication from: 299.  
 Save the world; 526. See also *Evolution*.  
 Saville; 595.  
 Saviour; 267.  
 Scarf; Long grey: 549.  
 Sceptic must convince himself if this work does not do it; 14.  
 Sceptical superstition; 38.  
 School;—Boarding: 387. house; Elm tree near: 46. for Psychic Research; 496.  
 Schubert; 653.  
 Schurz; Carl: 759, 760.  
 Science and philosophy; Reconstructive influence on: 143.  
 Scientific;—collegiate world; Power and prestige of: 498. Communications must be: 107. investigation; Mrs. Chenoweth resented: 8.  
 Scroll; 347.  
 Scylla and Charybdis; 172.  
 Seattle; 430.  
 Seaver Hall; 368.  
 Secondary;—consciousness: 827. personalities; 34. personality theory; 136, 374.  
 Secret of the work; 460.  
 Sedie; 696.  
 Sedgwick; 308.  
 Selah; 593.  
 Selection on part of control or medium; 87.  
 Self; Power to lose: 594. See also *Evolution*.  
 Self-conscious spirit makes worst communicator; 594.  
 Self-satisfied soul would be worthless; 898. See also *Self*.  
 Selfishness of desire as a ladder to the sky; 527. See also *Self*.  
 Semi-pantheistic conception of Prof. James; 52.  
 Semicircles: Two: 96, 97.  
 Seminary; 387.  
 Sensation of nerves; Communicator has no: 281.  
 Sense;—Communicator enters a world of: 280. perceptions; 299.  
 Sensibilities; Etherial: 89.  
 Sensitive;—plate of expression; 246. Spirits more: than mortals: 55, 255.  
 Sensitized atmosphere; 537.  
 Sentimental side ... spoils energy for Jennie P.; 431.  
 Sentinel; 811.  
 Serving well and faithfully; 170.  
 Setter; Irish: 748.  
 Shadows on the brain; 144.  
 Shakespeare; 730, 731.  
 Shaler; Professor: 154, 159, 326.  
 Shearing; 816.  
 Sheep; 582, 583, 816, 817. washing; 88.  
 Ship; Glass: 499.  
 Shorthand; 367.  
 Showing; Prof. James says he will make a better: than Dr. Hodgson; 141.  
 Sidgwick; Mrs.;—908, 909, 910, 927. suggested that some messages might be involuntary; 51.  
 Sidgwick; Professor: 164, 308, 309, 364, 536, 538, 827, 879.  
 Sids; Dr. Boris: 371, 372.  
 Siftings of brain power; 198.  
 Sigma; 98, 99. Phi; 99.  
 Sign; College: 98, 99.  
 Signs and cut words: 154.  
 Silas; 514. C—: 471.  
 Silver; Family: 715.  
 Singing School; 673, 674, 675.  
 Sinking; Medium has sensation of: 339.  
 Siris; 279.  
 Sitter;—Result not always affected by thought of: 702. to think hard; 869. sets thought working; Question of: 682.  
 Sitters photographed on the surrounding film; 433.  
 Sitting room; Aunt Julia's: 46.  
 Sled; 548, 549, 814.  
 Sleep-walking; 329.

- "Sleeping in the material world"; 71.
- Sleepy; Communicator becomes: 125.
- Sludge the medium; 366, 372.
- Smead:—Case; 539, 811. Case once condemned by G. P. and the Piper Group; 919. Cecil: 584. communications controlled by Imperator; 883. family; 541. hand; 781.
- Smead; Mr.:—122, 137, 540, 578, 584, 589, 822, 828, 830, 835, 845, 856, 859, 860, 863, 864, 865, 869, 870, 872, 875, 878, 880, 883, 891, 894, 900, 904, 910, 917, 922, 935. Brother of: 581. Christian name of: 892. Father of: 583. growing less inclined to permit sittings; 876.
- Smead; Mrs.:—6, 13, 21, 24, 91, 93-136, 156, 157, 168, 248, 811, 820, 822, 828, 830, 835, 836, 845, 851, 852, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 874, 876, 877, 878, 880, 882, 883, 885, 887, 889, 891, 892, 894, 896, 897, 899, 900, 901, 903, 904, 905, 908, 910, 912, 913, 915, 917, 919, 920, 922, 923, 928, 930, 935, 937. Apparition seen by: Aug. 27, 1910; 95. Arm inert during writing; 107. Automatic writing: Direct: the only method employed; 21. Cares; Too busy with earthly; 132. Catalepsy in the neck; 106. Character of: 94. Mrs. Chenoweth's knowledge of: 12. Communications usually direct in case of: 91. Comparison with Chenoweth and Piper cases; 24. Makes sign of cross in the air; 115. Makes sign of cross on the pad; 115. Cross with rounded ends and light seen by: 122. Cross seen by: 123. darkness: Objection to: 100, 132. feet: Pattering of bare: 96. gown: Long black: 95. Dr. Hyslop a help to: 248. Mrs. J. H. Hyslop communicated first through: 107. Death of Prof. James known to: Aug. 30, '10; 94, 95. Saw Prof. James with square cap on; 123. Recognizes photo of Prof. James; 125. Sees man sitting at desk; 115. Sees man with hair thin on top and heavy mustache; 123. Mental pictures not apparent in work of: 91. Mirror writing; 98. Omega; 44. saw news of Frank Podmore's death in "*The Outlook*"; 136. Pattering of bare feet; 96. Knowledge of Frank Podmore; 136, 137. Receives no remuneration; 13, 94. More spasmodic than Mrs. Chenoweth; 248. Should give more time to the Light; 132. u u d; 101.
- Smead:—Record of 1901; 825, 826. Sylvester: 582, 584, 589. Sylvester: Communication from: 890.
- SMITH; 919.
- Smyth; Dr.: 452.
- Snakes; 707, 708.
- Snow; 709.
- Snowy time; 478.
- Soap making; 551.
- Society:—American: Campaign for an: 477. New: Dr. Hodgson intended to leave much of his work with the: 447. Old: Debts of the: 859. Old: Disbanding of the: 858, 859. One man: 537. for Psychological Research in Spirit World; 263, 283. Work of the: appeals only to the intellectual; 9.
- Soda biscuits; 545, 546.
- Solomon; 627.
- Sorrow: Prof. James cannot feel: as Mrs. James does; 150.
- Soul:—Everything having a: 850. Removing the: from the machine: 870, 871. Survival of the: 884. of things: 867.
- Souls:—Atoms and: 895. are supreme; 346.
- Sound:—produces mental pictures; 458. Reverberations of: 335.
- South; 303. Station; 349, 361, 362.
- Spanish medium; 505.
- Special work; money coming for: 506.
- Specializing the work; 354.
- Specific answers; effort to concentrate on: 463.
- Spectacle case; 484.
- Speer:—Charlton: 457. Dr.: 382.
- Spencer; 223.
- Sphinx; 297.
- Spirit:—bodies real, but not composed of atoms; 897. implies consciousness; 18. Council; 875. who did not think he was dead: 657. with grey curly hair; 442.

- hypothesis; 444. life different from expectations; 481. life all experiment; 481. life not a life to fear; 481. life; God just as far off in: 481. Life and light of the: 625. life a substantial existence; 172. life; Surprise when consciousness is regained in: 719. likeness; 434. One: through all creation; 208. Organization for Psychical Research; 811. painting; 453. Peaceful when we come to the: 516. Popular conception of a: 19. a supersensible fact; 19. tramps; 626. unconscious of his own state; 612. duplicate of a watch; 201. World impinging on this; 203. World: Life in: more spicy and livable; 296. See also *Gentleman, Man, Woman*.
- "Spirit Teachings"; 250, 332.
- Spiritistic hypothesis:—proved by collective experience; 40. the only rational one; 40. Rejecting the: 36.
- Spiritistic theory;—305. demanded by the facts; 68.
- Spirits; 34. Atoms and: 896. often dependent on people in the body; 225. Question of existence of: one of psychology and not of physics; 18. hurt medium when they think about her too much; 516. and mortals; Medium feels difference between: 723. Some: can see their living friends; 495. more sensitive than mortals; 55, 255.
- Spiritual:—atmosphere; 510. evidence: Intellectual and: 510.
- Spiritual life:—often determined by associations; 435. Basis for comparison with a: 89. Everybody has a: 434. Materialistic mind clarified and unified with: 509. Meaning of: 434. See also *Evolution*.
- Spiritual:—perception; 434. Physical science which loses sight of the: 509. status; 434. world; a more: 509.
- Spiritualism; mixed up with: 880. Spitzfindigkeiten; 8.
- Spontaneous: If communications are not: they get mixed; 517.
- Sporadic:—incidents and personal identity; 88. messages; 247. See also *Communication*.
- Spread; White and blue: 46, 685.
- Spring; 704, 705. Large: 64. Little: in the woods; 46, 595. McClellan; 88. Piping: to house; 46. Sulphur: 595.
- Springfield; 711.
- Springs; Two: 595.
- Square; on the: 133.
- Squiers; 680.
- Squirrels; 602, 603.
- Stage:—or coach; 694. fright; 383.
- Star and crescent; 926.
- Starlight; 137, 144, 288, 341, 399, 407, 414, 416, 424, 455, 458, 491, 515. a Comanche Indian; 25. communications from: 372. control; 26, 505, 806. Prophecy by: 506. sitting for daughter of Carroll D. Wright; 41. sittings of Mr. Gregg; 417. trances; 351, 441. See also *S*.
- State; Spirit unconscious of his own: 612.
- Statistics; 520.
- Statues in gable of white building: 123.
- Stead; William T.:—384. makes Frank Podmore weary; 197.
- Steady; keeping the line: 60, 63.
- Stella; 658, 659, 660, 684, 686, 689, 778.
- Stenographer; 805.
- Steps; Stone: 389.
- Stiles; Mrs.: 310, 345.
- Stimulant; 300.
- Stimulus; external: Laws of: 62.
- Store; 46, 689. window in a little town; 214.
- Storey; Royalty ... in the upper: 135.
- Strain: Effect of long continued: on medium; 440.
- Stream of consciousness; Uninhibited: 72.
- Streams of personality; 529.
- Strength:—Lapse of: 563. Losing: 545. See also *Energy*.
- Stuttgart; 692, 693.
- Subconscious:—Influence of the: 520, 659. mind; 528. or super-normal minds; 532. self of the medium; 425. is the real self: 593. Post-hypnotic suggestions made to the: 844. See also *Communication*.
- Subconsciousness:—of medium a

- factor in the result; 26, 37, 42, 49 of Mrs. Piper affecting the results; 352. Too much; 126. See also *Communication*.
- Subject; abrupt changes of: 75.
- Subjective source; Message from: 593.
- Subliminal:—activities; 305. Dispensing with the: 881. gives facts wrong for party desired but correct for party present; 429. Influence of: 193, 237, 252, 310. influences; Communications colored by: 26. influences; communicator's thought influenced by: 88. influences; Differences between: 82. intrusion; 276, 308. drawing on normal knowledge; 445. of medium always on the watch; 126. Misstatements by: 430.
- Suffocating at time of death; Prof. James felt as though: 113.
- Suffocation; 922.
- Suggestion; 880. Chance for: 312. Sympathetic: 246. See also *Hypnosis*.
- Suggestions: Post-hypnotic: made to the subconscious; 844. See also *Hypnosis*.
- Sulphur spring; 595.
- Summary of the facts will appear in the *Journal*; 16.
- Supernormal;—Evidence of: 14. information and personal identity; 5. minds; 532. requires telepathy or spirits; 36.
- Superposing; 167, 190, 197, 282, 301, 315, 428, 435, 443, 454, 460, 461, 473, 474, 485, 531, 543, 548, 583, 585, 589, 604, 621, 625, 643, 648, 714, 715, 718, 724, 730, 731, 739, 740, 742, 749, 754, 755, 758, 774, 776, 811, 812, 832, 834, 840, 850, 854, 860, 861, 863, 866, 875, 881, 888, 890, 891, 893, 895, 899, 902, 910, 921, 922, 924, 932.
- Supersensible;—Consciousness wholly: 19. Spirit is: 19.
- Superstition; Sceptical: 38.
- Survival of the soul; 884.
- Susan; 643. Aunt; 309.
- Suspended between the two realms; 713.
- Swamp; 706.
- Sweeney; 363.
- Sylvester; 591, 592. (Smead); 883. (Uncle of Mr. Smead); 580, 581.
- Symbols used in the Records; 93.
- Sympathetic;—current; 565. suggestion and energy; 246. line of thought; 565. understanding; 171.
- Syncope of communicator; Theory of: 114.
- T; Brother: 336.
- t; Final: of the Teacher; 271, 287.
- T—; 316, 661.
- T. T.; 511.
- Table;—and red bureau; 46. Talk better at his; 96.
- Tabular account of incidents; 47.
- Tacoma; 430.
- Talk best soon after coming; 133.
- Tamworth Iron Works; 359.
- "Tandem; Driving;" 23, 30, 564, 578.
- Tangible; Spirit World more: than expected; 161.
- Tangled up; 498.
- Tanner affair; 781.
- Tapping the Absolute; 34.
- Tavern Club; 193.
- Teacher;—Communications from: 287, 625. Sign of: 287. Final t of: 625, 626.
- Technicalities; 894.
- Telegram; 256.
- Telekinesis; 18.
- Telepathic;—experiment with geometrical figures; 66. experiments; 911, 939. hallucinations; 26, 32, 66. hypothesis; 911, 939. messages; 877. phantasms; 26, 32, 66. possibilities; 532. theory; Concessions to advocates of the: 43. theory an illusion of unscientific minds; 38. See also *Communication*.
- Telepathy; 64, 118, 119, 306, 665, 759, 870, 871, 888. an instrument of the dead; 33. Communications which discount; 109, 112. Explanation of: 877. between the living; 30, 34. and possession in the process of communication; 26. Psychometry not; 838. Selective: 67. selective: Facts which contradict: 67. of souls; 869. does not work in Spirit World; 118. and spirits as alternatives; 36. between spirits and mortals; 419. worldwide; 163. See also *Communication*.
- Temptations and opportunity; 435. See also *Ethical*.
- Tennis; 242.

- Tennyson; 206.  
 Tension:—Nervous: at a sitting; 190.  
 Relieving the: 179. See also *Communication*.  
 Testing:—the Light; Machine for: 928. room for souls; 436.  
 Tests: Individual: and psychological unity; 15.  
 Thaws; The: 315.  
 Theology; The old: 896.  
 Theories were knocked sky high; 498.  
 Think:—clearly; Battery works too rapidly to: 881. hard; Sitter to: 869. Do not: but write; 511. See also *Thinking, Thought*.  
 Thinkers more readily inspired by unseen influences; 323.  
 Thinking:—Automatic: 511, 589, 594. Problem to communicate without: 449. about any special matter makes communicator bewildered; 589. in spite of myself; (Dr. Hodgson); 449. See also *Communication*.  
 Thirty-third degree; 935.  
 Thomas; Saint: 252.  
 Thompson Case; 541, 878, 880, 920.  
 Thompson; Mrs.:—878, 879, 881. Control of: 882.  
 Thompson Report; 23.  
 Thought;—Atmosphere diverts the: 697. colored from one sitting to another; 482. of a spirit has definite influence on his friends; 510. Difficulty of inhibiting: 55, 57, 63. Involuntary transmission of: 60. of sitter helping communicator; 536. Train of: 528. Trains of: 682. transference; 869, 877. Transient: of communicator ... finding expression; 334. Transmission of: 589. in making spirits visible; Influence of: 937. waves; 335. Writing automatically without: 248, 449. See also *Communication, Hypnosis*.  
 Thoughts;—Have to stop to collect our: 881. of others color those of communicator; 470. on the paper sometimes before communicators know it; 60. becoming visible or audible; 897.  
 Time:—No: no money, no energy; 509. The Smeads should give more: to the Light; 132.  
 Times ... Newspaper; 483.  
 Titus; Fannie: 222.  
 Token; 125. See also *Article*.  
 Tom; 617, 618.  
 Tomb; 803.  
 Tommy; 561.  
 Tools; 688. Carpenter's: 46.  
 Torrence; Fannie: 233.  
 Town meeting; 628.  
 Train; Railroad: 331. Wreck of: 228.  
 Trains of thought; 682.  
 Tramps; Spirit: 626.  
 Trance:—of Mrs. Chenoweth; 625. clairvoyance; 25. or dream-like state of communicator's; Theory of: 11, 48, 49, 50, 59, 114, 188, 189, 293, 641. theory held by Imperator; 293. See also *Dream-like*.  
 Transference; Thought:—869, 877. during communications; 115. Voluntary: between communicator and medium; 189.  
 Transition; Some do not revive instantly after: 207.  
 Transmission of thought; 589.  
 Trap; Steel: 604.  
 Traps; Box: 604.  
 Travelled in an easterly direction; 133.  
 Triple personality; 60.  
 Tripod; 347.  
 Trivialities in communications; 49, 74, 84, 528.  
 Triviality of the facts; 267.  
 Truth;—Believing in almost anything but the: 119. Universities and: 510.  
 Twaddle; 58.  
 Twain; Mark: 47, 563.  
 Typewriter; 266.  
 Typewriting; 44.  
 U: Do: know? 526.  
 U. D.; 539.  
 u u d; 101.  
 Umbrella; 358.  
 Understanding; Like atmospheres essential to: 434.  
 Unfinished statements; 218.  
 Unfolded: Some psychics better: for one expression and some for another; 247.  
 Uninhibited stream of consciousness; 72.  
 Unintentional:—communication; 189. influence of spirits on communications; 246.  
 Unity;—Process of physical life is towards: 509. Psychological: a

- necessity; 15. Psychological: and relevance of the facts; 47.
- Universities and truth; 510.
- University; Foreign; 743.
- Unknown communicators get best results with Mrs. Chenoweth; 14.
- Uplift through spirit communication; 170. See also *Evolution*.
- Uplifting of the souls of mankind; 875. See also *Evolution*.
- Upliftment:—of the human race; 526. of the people; 811. See also *Evolution*.
- Upper room; Meeting in the: 831.
- Urbana; 793.
- V; 105, 892. (Mrs. Verrall); 836. Mrs.; 379.
- V—; 261. Mrs.; 879. Mrs.; had a visit from W. J.; 304.
- Van Vleck; Professor: George Pelham wrote through Mrs. Chenoweth for: 10.
- "*Varieties of Religious Experience*"; 274, 867, 908.
- Variety; Power of: 393.
- Vase incident; 46, 360, 361.
- Verbatim records of sittings of strangers with Mrs. Chenoweth; 13.
- "*Veridical Hallucinations; A Case of*:" 23.
- Verification;—Confusion in: 559. Hard to get proper: 228.
- Verrall; Miss: 357.
- Verrall; Mrs.:—105, 183, 184, 260, 261, 498, 880, 892, 931. hardly known at all to Mrs. Chenoweth; 10. Communicators went to: 126. had dream of Prof. James, Sept. 12th, 1910; 105, 106. See also *V, V—*.
- Ves; 591.
- Vest: White; with black spots; 513.
- Vester; 592.
- Vesuvius; 526.
- Vibration;—Lowest plane of: 335. Sympathetic: 148, 149.
- Vibrations; 186.
- Vibratory influence; Magnetic: 518.
- Vinegar; Making: 616, 617.
- Violet; Lady: 278.
- Virginia; 539, 607.
- Visible; Thought making spirits: 937.
- Vision:—of a face: 762. of name as it is spoken; 762.
- Visuelle: Mrs. Chenoweth probably more of a: than Mrs. Piper; 28.
- Vital force; 336.
- Voice; Holding on by: 216.
- Volition; Messages projected without: 51, 160. See also *Involuntary, Unintentional*.
- W; 201, 304, 360, 392, 448.
- W. H. H—; 282.
- W. J.; 260, 261, 264, 265, 304, 325, 333, 344, 360, 367, 375, 379, 385, 387, 401, 402, 404, 405, 406, 433, 444, 469, 482, 517, 518, 565, 590, 613, 655, 736, 782, 840, 927, 929.
- W. T. B.; 523.
- Waking in the light; 463.
- Wall Street; 284.
- Walter; 288, 563.
- Wandering in mind; 60, 63.
- Warts; 693, 694.
- Washington; 241, 268, 289, 422, 521.
- Watch; 378, 485, 589. of Prof. James' father; 44. which Mary had; 745, 746.
- Water;—Drinking: 704. Stretch of: 316.
- Watering trough; 629.
- Wavy lines made to represent the ocean; 105, 109, 121, 134, 135, 868, 877, 878, 885, 886, 887, 889, 894, 906, 910, 912, 922, 931, 932.
- Weariness:—of communicators; 526. Sense of: 161.
- Well;—Abandoned: 705. Old: 337. with long pole: 627.
- Welsh rarebit; 193.
- Westfield; 711.
- Wheeler; Judge Edward: 406, 407, 409, 417.
- Whirling wheel; 450.
- Whirlwind; 23, 25, 27, 151, 163, 173, 179, 182, 252, 286, 289, 308, 391, 407, 437, 450, 465, 511, 514, 531, 562, 578, 579, 655, 740, 811. Represent the: by some pictures; 811.
- White Cloud; 328, 439.
- White:—Mountains; 145. vest with black spots; 514.
- Whiting; Miss Lillian:—10, 145, 186, 289, 362, 371, 398, 491, 609, 666, 667, 679, 695, 806. Message to: 289, 367.
- Whittier; 206.
- Wied; 478.
- Wiggin; Rev. F. A.: 126, 127.

- Will; 421, 485, 591, 748, 750, 857, 858, 894. Son: 893.
- William; 159, 164, 169, 181, 193, 201, 210, 212, 225, 226, 229, 291, 311, 313, 337, 338, 359, 378, 379, 380, 402, 470, 477, 509, 536, 638. Cautious: 157. (Hyslop); 915. (related to Mrs. J. H. Hyslop); 717, 718. J—; 498. (Myers); 54. P.; 308. Uncle: 580, 583, 587.
- Willie; 505, 524.
- Wilson; 469, 748, 750.
- Window;—Communicator thinks of a: 64. sill; Man leaning on: 123.
- Wine;—Cherry: 607. Elderberry: 599, 777.
- Winifred; 563.
- Wireless; Like the: 265.
- Wires; Crossed: 255.
- Wives who .... will accept no messages; 284.
- Woman;—Delicate looking: 792. with dark eyes; 597. Funny little: 309. or girl ... black hair; 565. Black haired and dark eyed: 675. with brown hair; 842. not large but plump; 621. Very large: 531. Picture of a: 801. Pretty; with dark eyes and hair; 961. who was red haired; 782. with ruff around her neck; 503. about sixty years old; 657. with plaid skirt; 551. of rather slender form; 802. Spirit of a: 735. ... very stout ... red face; 752. Young; Busy bustling sort of a: 658. See also *Spirit*.
- Wood; 710.
- Woods; Spring in the: 46.
- Wool; 817.
- Wooster, Ohio; 363.
- Worcester; 195.
- Words; Spirit trying to form knowledge into: 500.
- Work;—Bright colored: 488. Combination for: 782, 783. Hole in Dr. Hyslop's stack of: 138. of Prof. James nearly finished; 44. Knowledge and éclat of the: 594. Much more: to do; 782.
- World of purer light; 129.
- Worry spoils the work; 458.
- Wreck; Railroad: 228.
- Wreckage; 176.
- Wright; 191.
- Wright; Carroll D.: 6, 22, 35, 239, 240, 241, 244, 268, 269, 338, 360, 455, 521, 522, 536, 565, 612, 613, 736. affair; 781. Bust of: 513. Communication with the dead unsatisfactory to: 518. Communications from: 41, 328, 509. affected by previous communicator; 482. Cross reference; Experiment amounting to: 41. Daughter of: has sittings; 41, 513. Facts about: 510. Identity; Personal: Did not at first attempt to prove: 22. Large and varied interests of: 520. not acquainted with Prof. James; 239. Physical phenomena; 518. not a psychologist; 518. a sort of referee; 519. sceptical and doubting; 518. See also *C. D. W., C. W., Carroll*.
- Wright; Mrs. Carroll D.: 521.
- Wright; Chauncey: 191, 240, 360.
- Wright; Prof. James' talk with man named: 44.
- Writing;—Automatic: Phonetic influences in: 118. automatically without thought; 248. Back-handed: 876, 898. changed; 781, 840, 898, 916. changes greatly; 460. Mrs. Chenoweth contradicts statement made in: 11. Mrs. Chenoweth never does automatic; unless Dr. Hyslop is present; 25. Communicator cannot see the: 403. Communicator cannot talk to spirit while: 519. Composite: 683. desk; 741. Direct: the only method in case of Mrs. Smead; 21. Dr. Hodgson and J. P.: together; 289. Illegible: 105, 404, 840. Interfusion of: 564. of Prof. James; 158, 165. materials of Robert Hyslop; 103. without pencil; 291. Piper: Mistake re: 113. Correct position for: 441. becomes rapid; 803. very scrawly; 509. sometimes difficult to start; 536. Zigzag: 264.
- X.; 96, 97.
- Xenia; 664.
- Y.; 101.
- Yale; 521.
- Yesisah; 916.
- Yokes; 596.
- Z.; 721, 723, 745.
- Z s; Inferior: 264.
- Zanesville; 664.
- Zones of consciousness; 335.
- I II III; 479.
- VIII; 479.
- 96; 881.